McGILL
UNIVER-
SITY
LIBRARY

B'68-11

THE FRASER INSTITUTE FREE PUBLIC LIBRARY
MONTREAL
JE SUIS PRÊT

PRESENTED BY

33750 B68-11

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND.

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

FROM

The INVASION of JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

The REVOLUTION in 1688.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

By DAVID HUME, Esq.

VOL. III.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.

LONDON:
Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand.
MDCC LXII.

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

FROM

The INVASION of JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

The REVOLUTION in 1688.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

By DAVID HUME, Esq.

A NEW EDITION, CORRECTED.

LONDON:

Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand.

MDCCLIV.

CONTENTS.

HENRY VII.

CHAP. I.

Acceſſion of Henry VII.——*His title to the crown.*——*King's prejudice againſt the Houſe of York.*——*His joyful reception in London.*——*His coronation.*——*Sweating ſickneſs.*——*A parliament.*——*Entail of the crown.*——*King's marriage.*——*An inſurrection.*——*Diſcontents of the people.*——*Lambert Simnel.*——*Revolt of Ireland.*——*Intrigues of the Dutcheſs of Burgundy.*——*Lambert Simnel invades England.*——*Battle of Stoke.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

State of foreign affairs.——*State of Scotland*——*of Spain*——*of the Low Countries*——*of France*——*of Britanny.*——*French invaſion of Britanny.*——*French embaſſy to England.*——*Diſſimulation of the French Court.*——*An inſurrection in the North*——*ſuppreſſed.*——*King ſends forces into Britanny.*——*Annexation of Britanny to France.*——*A Parliament.*——*War with France.*——*Invaſion of France.*——*Peace with France.*——*Perkin Warbec.*——*His impoſture.*——*He is avowed by the dutcheſs of Burgundy*——*and by many of the Engliſh nobility.*——*Trial and execution of Stanley.*——*A Parliament.* 18

CHAP. III.

Perkin returns to Scotland.——*Inſurrection in the Weſt.*——*Battle of Blackheath.*——*Truce with Scotland.*——*Perkin taken priſoner.*——*Perkin executed.*——*The earl of Warwic executed.*——*Marriage of prince Arthur with Catherine of Arragon.*——*His death.*——*Marriage of the princeſs Margaret with the King of Scotland.*——*Oppreſſions of the people.*——*A Parliament.*——*Arrival of the King of Caſtile.*——*Intrigues of the earl of Suffolk.*——*Sickneſs of the King.*——*His death*——*and character.*——*His laws.* 43

HENRY

33750

CONTENTS.

HENRY VIII.

CHAP. I.

Popularity of the new King.——His miniſters.——Puniſhment of Empſon and Dudley.——King's marriage.——Foreign affairs.——Julius the ſecond.——League of Cambray.——War with France.——Expedition to Fontarabia.——Deceit of Ferdinand.——Return of the Engliſh.——Leo the tenth.——A Parliament.——War with Scotland.——Wolſey miniſter.——His character.——Invaſion of France.——Battle of Guinegate.——Battle of Flouden.——Peace with France. 69

CHAP. II.

Wolſey's adminiſtration.——Scots affairs.——Progreſs of Francis the firſt.——Jealouſy of Henry.——Tournay delivered to France.——Wolſey appointed legate.——His manner of exerciſing that office.——Death of the emperor Maximilian.——Charles, King of Spain, choſen emperor.——Interview between Henry and Francis at Calais.——The emperor Charles arrives in England.——Mediation of Henry.——Trial and condemnation of the duke of Buckingham. 96

CHAP. III.

Digreſſion concerning the eccleſiaſtical ſtate.——Origin of the reformation.——Martin Luther.——Henry receives the title of Defender of the Faith.——Cauſes of the progreſs of the reformation.——War with France.——Invaſion of France.——War with Scotland.——A Parliament.——Invaſion of France.——Italian wars.——The King of France invades Italy.——Battle of Pavia and captivity of Francis.——Francis recovers his liberty.——Sack of Rome.——League with France. 116

CHAP. IV.

Scruples concerning the King's marriage.——The King enters into theſe ſcruples.——Anne Boleyn.——Henry applies to the pope for a divorce.——The pope favourable.——The emperor threatens him.——The pope's ambiguous conduct.——The cauſe evoked to Rome.——Wolſey's fall.——Commencement of the reformation in England.——Foreign affairs.——Wolſey's death.——A Parliament.——Progreſs of the reformation.——A Parliament.——King's final breach with Rome.——A Parliament. 149

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Religious principles of the people——of the King——of the miniſters.——Farther progreſs of the reformation.——Sir Thomas More.——The maid of Kent.——Trial and execution of Fiſher biſhop of Rocheſter——of Sir Thomas More.——King excommunicated.——Death of Queen Catherine.——Suppreſſion of the leſſer monaſteries.——A Parliament.——A Convocation.——Tranſlation of the Bible. Diſgrace of Queen Anne.——Her trial——and execution.——A Parliament.——A Convocation.——Diſcontents among the people.——Inſurrection.——Birth of prince Edward and death of Queen Jane.——Suppreſſion of the greater monaſteries.——Cardinal Pole. 183

CHAP. VI.

Diſputation with Lambert.——A Parliament.——Law of the ſix articles.——Proclamations made equal to laws.——Settlement of the ſucceſſion.——King's projects of marriage.——He marries Anne of Cleves.——He diſlikes her.——A Parliament.——Fall of Cromwel.——His execution.——King's divorce from Anne of Cleves.——His marriage with Catherine Howard.——State of affairs in Scotland.——Diſcovery of the Queen's crimes.——A Parliament.——Eccleſiaſtical affairs. 227

CHAP. VII.

War with Scotland.——Victory at Solway.——Death of James the fifth.——Treaty with Scotland.——New rupture.——Rupture with France.——A Parliament.——Affairs of Scotland.——A Parliament.——Campaign in France.——A Parliament.——Peace with France and Scotland.——Perſecutions.——Execution of the earl of Surrey.——Attainder of the duke of Norfolk.——Death of the King.——His character.——His laws. 253

EDWARD VI.

CHAP. I.

State of the regency.——Innovations in the regency.——Somerſet protector.——Reformation compleated.——Gardiner's oppoſition.——Foreign affairs.——Progreſs of the reformation in Scotland.——Aſſaſſination of cardinal Beaton.——Conduct of the

the war with Scotland.——Battle of Pinkey.——A Parliament.——Farther progreſs of the reformation.——Affairs of Scotland.——Young Queen of Scots ſent into France.——Cabals of lord Seymour——Dudley earl of Warwick.——A Parliament.——Attainder of lord Seymour———His execution.———Eccleſiaſtical affairs. 289

CHAP. II.

Diſcontents of the people.——Inſurrections.——Conduct of the war with Scotland ——with France.——Factions in the council.——Conſpiracy againſt Somerſet.—— Somerſet reſigns the protectorſhip.——A Parliament.——Peace with France and Scotland.——Boulogne ſurrendered.——Perſecution of Gardiner.——Warwick created duke of Northumberland.——His ambition.——Trial of Somerſet.——— His execution.——A Parliament.——A new Parliament.——Succeſſion changed. ———The King's ſickneſs——and death. 321

MARY.

CHAP. I.

Lady Jane Gray proclaimed Queen.——Deſerted by the people.——The Queen proclaimed and acknowledged.——Northumberland executed.——Catholic religion reſtored. — A Parliament.——Deliberations with regard to the Queen's marriage. ——Queen's marriage with Philip.——Wyat's inſurrection.——Suppreſſed.—— Execution of lady Jane Gray.——A Parliament.——Philip's arrival in England. 349

CHAP. II.

Reaſons for and againſt Toleration.——Perſecutions.——A Parliament.——The Queen's extortions.——The Emperor reſigns his crown.——Execution of Cranmer. ——War with France.——Battle of St. Quintin.——Calais taken by the French. ——Affairs of Scotland.——Marriage of the Dauphin and the Queen of Scots. ———A Parliament.———Death of the Queen. 375

THE

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

UNDER THE

HOUSE of TUDOR.

HENRY VII.

CHAP. I.

Acceſſion of Henry VII.——*His title to the crown.*——*King's prejudice againſt the Houſe of York.*——*His joyful reception in London.*——*His Coronation.*——*Sweating ſickneſs.*——*A Parliament*——*Entail of the crown.*——*King's marriage.*——*An inſurrection.*——*Diſcontents of the people.*——*Lambert Simnel.*——*Revolt of Ireland.*——*Intrigues of the Dutcheſs of Burgundy.*——*Lambert Simnel invades England.*——*Battle of Stoke.*

THE victory, which the Earl of Richmond gained at Boſworth over Richard the third, was entirely deciſive; being attended, as well with the total rout and diſperſion of the royal army, as with the death of the King himſelf. The joy of ſo great ſucceſs ſuddenly prompted the ſoldiers, in the field of battle, to beſtow on their victorious general the appellation of King, which he had not hitherto aſſumed; and the acclamations of *Long live Henry the ſeventh*, by a natural and unpremeditated movement, reſounded from all quarters. To beſtow ſome appearance of formality on this ſpecies of military election, Sir William Stanley brought a crown of ornament, which Richard wore in battle, and which had been found among the ſpoils; and he put it on the head of the conqueror. Henry himſelf remained not in ſuſpenſe; but immediately, without

1485. Auguſt 22. Acceſſion of Henry VII.

heſitation,

Chap. I. 1485.

heſitation, accepted of the magnificent preſent, which was tendered him. He was come to the great criſis of his fortune; and being obliged ſuddenly to determine himſelf, amidſt great difficulties, which he muſt have frequently revolved in his mind, he choſe that part, which his ambition ſuggeſted to him, and to which he ſeemed to be conducted by his preſent proſperous ſucceſs.

His title to the crown.

THERE were many titles, on which Henry could found his right to the throne; but no one of them free from great objections, if conſidered, either with reſpect to juſtice or to policy.

DURING ſome years, Henry had been regarded as heir to the houſe of Lancaſter, by the party attached to that family; but the title of the houſe of Lancaſter itſelf to the crown was generally thought to be very ill founded. Henry the fourth, who had firſt raiſed that family to royal dignity, had never clearly determined the foundation of his claim; and while he plainly invaded the order of ſucceſſion, he had not acknowledged the election of the people. The Parliament had indeed often recognized the title of the Lancaſtrian princes; but theſe votes had little authority, being conſidered as inſtances of prudent complaiſance towards a family in poſſeſſion of preſent power: And they had accordingly been often reverſed during the late prevalence of the houſe of York. Prudent men alſo, who had been willing, for the ſake of peace, to ſubmit to any eſtabliſhed authority, deſired not to ſee the claims of a family revived, which muſt produce many convulſions at preſent, and which disjointed for the future the whole ſyſtem of hereditary right. Beſides; allowing the title of the houſe of Lancaſter to be legal, Henry himſelf was not the true heir of that family; and nothing but the obſtinacy natural to a faction, which never, without the utmoſt reluctance, will ſubmit to their antagoniſts, could have engaged the partizans of that houſe to adopt the earl of Richmond as their head. His mother indeed, Margaret, counteſs of Richmond, was ſole daughter and heir of the houſe of Somerſet, deſcended from John of Gaunt duke of Lancaſter: But the birth of the firſt of the Somerſet line was itſelf illegitimate and even adulterous. And tho' the duke of Lancaſter had obtained the legitimation of his natural children by a patent from Richard the ſecond, confirmed in parliament; it might juſtly be doubted, whether this deed could beſtow any title to the crown; ſince in the patent itſelf all the privileges conferred by it are fully enumerated, and the ſucceſſion to the kingdom is expreſly excluded *. In all the ſettlements of the crown, made during the reigns of the Lancaſtrian princes, the line of Somerſet had been entirely overlooked; and it was not till the failure of the legitimate branch, that men had paid any attention to their claim. And to add to the general diſſatisfaction againſt Henry's title, his

* Rymer, tom. vii. p. 849. Coke's Inſt. 4 Inſt. part i. p. 37.

mother,

mother, from whom he derived all his right, was ſtill alive; and evidently preceded him in the order of ſucceſſion. Chap. I. 1485.

THE title of the houſe of York, both from the plain reaſon of the caſe, and from the late popular government of Edward the fourth, had obtained univerſally the preference in the ſentiments of the people; and Henry might engraft his claim on the right of that family, by his intended marriage with the princeſs Elizabeth, the heireſs of it; a marriage, which he had ſolemnly promiſed to celebrate, and to the expectation of which he had chiefly owed all his paſt ſucceſſes. But many reaſons diſſuaded Henry from adopting this expedient. Were he to receive the crown only in right of his ſpouſe, his power, he knew, would be very limited; and he muſt expect rather to enjoy the bare title of king by a ſort of courteſy, than poſſeſs the real authority which belongs to it. Should the princeſs die before him without iſſue, he muſt deſcend from the throne, and give place to the next in ſucceſſion: And even, if his bed ſhould be bleſt with offſpring, it ſeemed dangerous to expect, that filial piety in his children would prevail over the ambition of obtaining preſent poſſeſſion of regal power. An act of Parliament, indeed, might be eaſily procured to ſettle the crown on him during his life, but Henry knew how much ſuperior the claim of ſucceſſion by blood was to the votes of an aſſembly *, which had always been overborne by violence in the ſhock of contending titles, and which had ever been more governed by the conjunctures of the times, than by any conſiderations derived from reaſon or public intereſt.

THERE was yet a third foundation, on which Henry might reſt his claim, the right of conqueſt, by his victory over Richard, the preſent poſſeſſor of the crown. But beſides that Richard himſelf was deemed no better than an uſurper, the army, which fought againſt him, conſiſted chiefly of Engliſhmen; and a right of conqueſt over England could never be eſtabliſhed by ſuch a victory. Nothing alſo would give greater umbrage to the nation than a claim of this nature; which might be conſtrued as an abolition of all their rights and privileges, and the eſtabliſhment of deſpotic authority in the ſovereign †. William himſelf, the Norman, tho' at the head of a powerful and victorious army of foreigners, had at firſt declined the invidious title of conqueror; and it was not till the full eſtabliſhment of his authority that he had ventured to advance ſo violent and deſtructive a pretenſion.

BUT Henry knew, that there was another foundation of authority, ſomewhat reſembling the right of conqueſt, to wit, preſent poſſeſſion; and that this title, guarded by vigour and ability, would be ſufficient to ſecure perpetual poſſeſſion of the throne. He had before him the example of Henry the fourth; who, ſupported by no better pretenſion, had ſubdued many inſurrections, and had been

* Bacon in Kennet's compleat Hiſtory, p. 579. † Bacon, p. 579.

Chap. I. 1485.

able to tranſmit the crown peaceably to his poſterity. He was ſenſible, that this title, which had been perpetuated thro' three ſucceſſions of the family of Lancaſter, might ſtill have ſubſiſted, notwithſtanding the preferable claim of the houſe of York; had not the ſcepter devolved into the hands of Henry the ſixth, which were too feeble to ſuſtain it. Inſtructed by theſe recent experiences, Henry was determined to put himſelf in preſent poſſeſſion of regal authority; and to ſhew all oppoſers, that nothing but force of arms and a ſucceſsful war ſhould be able to expel him. His claim as heir to the houſe of Lancaſter he was reſolved to advance; and never allow it to be diſcuſſed: And he hoped that this title, favoured by the partizans of that family, and ſeconded by preſent power, would ſecure him a perpetual and an independant authority.

THESE views of Henry are not expoſed to much blame; becauſe founded on good policy, and even on a ſpecies of neceſſity: But there entered into all his meaſures and councils another motive, which admits not of the ſame apology. The violent contentions, which, during ſo long a period, had been maintained between the rival families of York and Lancaſter, and the many ſanguinary revenges which they had mutually exerciſed on each other, had inflamed the oppoſite factions to a high pitch of animoſity. Henry himſelf, who had ſeen moſt of his near friends and relations periſh in the field or on the ſcaffold, and who had been expoſed in his own perſon to many hardſhips and dangers, had imbibed a violent antipathy to the York party, which no time nor experience were ever able to efface. Inſtead of embracing the preſent happy opportunity of aboliſhing theſe fatal diſtinctions, of uniting his title with that of his ſpouſe, and of beſtowing favour indiſcriminately on the friends of both families; he carried into the throne all the partialities which belong to the head of a faction, and even the paſſions, which are carefully guarded againſt by every true politician in that ſituation. To exalt the Lancaſtrian party, to depreſs the retainers of the houſe of York, were ſtill the favourite objects of his purſuit; and thro' the whole courſe of his reign, he never forgot theſe early prepoſſeſſions. Incapable from his natural temper of a more enlarged and more benevolent ſyſtem of policy, he expoſed himſelf to many preſent inconveniences, by too anxiouſly guarding againſt that future poſſible event, which might diſjoin his title from that of the princeſs, whom he eſpouſed. And while he treated the Yorkiſts as enemies, he ſoon rendered them ſuch, and taught them to diſcuſs that right to the crown, which he ſo carefully kept ſeparate; and to perceive its weakneſs and invalidity.

King's prejudice againſt the houſe of York.

To theſe paſſions of Henry, as well as to his ſuſpicious politics, we are to aſcribe the meaſure, which he embraced two days after the battle of Boſworth. Edward Plantagenet, earl of Warwic, ſon to the unfortunate duke of Clarence, was detained in a kind of confinement at Sherif-Hutton in Yorkſhire by the jea-

louſy of his uncle, Richard; whoſe title to the throne was inferior to that of the young prince. Warwic had now reaſon to expect better treatment, as he was no obſtacle to the ſucceſſion either of Henry or Elizabeth; and from a boy of ſuch tender years no danger could reaſonably be apprehended. But Sir Robert Willoughby was diſpatched by Henry with orders to take him from Sherif-Hutton, to convey him to the Tower, and to retain him in cloſe cuſtody *. The ſame meſſenger carried directions, that the princeſs Elizabeth, who had been confined to the ſame place, ſhould be conducted to London, in order to meet Henry, and there celebrate her eſpouſals. Chap. I. 1485.

HENRY himſelf ſet out for the capital, and advanced by ſlow journies. Not to rouſe the jealouſy of the people, he took care to avoid all appearance of military triumph; and ſo to reſtrain the inſolence of victory, that every thing about him bore the appearance of an eſtabliſhed monarch, making a peaceable progreſs thro' his dominions, rather than of a prince who had opened a way to the throne by force of arms. The acclamations of the people were every where loud, and no leſs ſincere and hearty. Beſides that a young and victorious prince, on his acceſſion, was naturally the object of popularity; the nation promiſed themſelves great felicity from the new ſcene, which opened before them. During the courſe of near a whole century the kingdom had been laid waſte by domeſtic wars and convulſions; and if at any time the noiſe of arms had ceaſed, the ſound of faction and diſcontent ſtill threatened new diſorders. Henry, by his marriage with Elizabeth, ſeemed to enſure an union of the contending titles of the two families; and having prevailed over a hated tyrant, who had anew disjointed the ſucceſſion even of the houſe of York, and filled his own family with blood and murder, an unfeigned favour was obſerved every where to attend him. Numerous and ſplendid troops of gentry and nobility accompanied his progreſs. The mayor and companies of London received him as he approached the city: The crouds of people and citizens were zealous in their expreſſions of ſatisfaction. But Henry, amidſt theſe general effuſions of joy, diſcovered ſtill the ſtatelineſs and reſerve of his temper, which made him ſcorn to court popularity: He entered London in a cloſe chariot, and would not gratify the people with a ſight of their new monarch. He went firſt to St. Paul's church, where he offered up the ſtandards, taken in the field of battle; and ſung oriſons for the victory which he had there obtained. He departed thence to the biſhop of London's palace, where lodgings were prepared for him. His joyful reception in London.

BUT Henry did not ſo much neglect the favour of the people, as to delay giving them aſſurance of his marriage with the princeſs Elizabeth, which he knew

* Bacon, p. 579. Polydore Virgil, p. 565.

to

Chap. I. 1485.

to be ſo paſſionately deſired by the whole nation. On his leaving Britanny, he had artfully dropt ſome hopes, that, if he ſhould ſucceed in his enterprize, and obtain the crown of England, he would eſpouſe Anne, the heireſs of that dutchy; and the report of this engagement had already reached England, and had begot anxiety in the people, and even in the princeſs Elizabeth herſelf. Henry took care to diſſipate theſe apprehenſions, by ſolemnly renewing, before the council and principal nobility, the promiſe, which he had already given, to celebrate his marriage with Elizabeth. But tho' bound by honour, as well as intereſt, to compleat this alliance, he was reſolved to poſtpone it, till the ceremony of his own coronation ſhould be finiſhed, and till his title ſhould be recognized by the Parliament. Anxious ſtill to ſupport his perſonal and hereditary right to the throne, he dreaded leſt a preceding marriage with the princeſs ſhould imply a participation of ſovereignty in her, and raiſe doubts of his own title by the houſe of Lancaſter.

His coronation.

Sweating ſickneſs.

THERE raged at that time in London, and other parts of the kingdom, a ſpecies of malady, unknown to any other age or nation, the Sweating ſickneſs, which occaſioned a ſudden death to great multitudes; tho' it was not propagated by any contagious infection, but aroſe from the general diſpoſition of the air and of the human body. In leſs than twenty-four hours the patient commonly died or recovered; but when the peſtilence had committed ravages for a few weeks, it was obſerved, either from alterations in the air, or from a more proper regimen, which had been diſcovered, to be conſiderably abated *. Preparations were then made for the ceremony of Henry's coronation. In order to heighten the ſplendor of that appearance, he beſtowed the rank of knights banneret on twelve perſons; and he conferred peerages on three. Jaſper earl of Pembroke, his uncle, he created duke of Bedford; Thomas lord Stanley, his father-in-law, earl of Darby; and Edward Courteney, earl of Devonſhire. At the coronation likewiſe there appeared a new inſtitution, which the king had eſtabliſhed for ſecurity as well as pomp, a band of fifty archers, who were denominated yeomen of the guard. But leſt the people ſhould take umbrage at this unuſual ſymptom of jealouſy in the prince, as if it implied a perſonal diffidence of his ſubjects, he declared the inſtitution to be perpetual. The ceremony of coronation was performed by cardinal Bourchier, archbiſhop of Canterbury.

30th of October.

THE Parliament being aſſembled at Weſtminſter, the majority immediately appeared to be devoted partizans of Henry; all perſons of another diſpoſition, either declining to ſtand in theſe dangerous times, or being obliged to diſſemble their principles and inclinations. The Lancaſtrian party had every where been

7th of November. A Parliament.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 567.

ſucceſsful

ſucceſsful in the elections; and even many of them had been returned knights and burgeſſes, who, during the prevalence of the houſe of York, had been expoſed to the rigour of the law, and been condemned by ſentence of attainder or outlawry. Their right to take ſeats in the houſe being queſtioned, the caſe was referred to all the judges, who aſſembled in the Exchequer Chamber, in order to deliberate on ſo delicate a ſubject. The ſentence pronounced was very prudent, and contained a juſt temperament between law and expediency *. The judges determined, that the members attainted ſhould forbear taking their ſeats till an act were paſſed for the reverſal of their attainder. There was no difficulty of obtaining this act; and in it were comprehended an hundred and ſeven perſons of the King's party! † Chap. I. 1485.

But a difficulty was ſtarted of a nature ſtill more important. The King himſelf had been attainted; and his right of ſucceſſion to the crown might thence be expoſed to ſome doubt. The judges extricated themſelves from this dangerous queſtion, by a ſingular poſition, which they eſtabliſhed, "That the crown takes "away all defects and ſtops in blood; and that from the time the King aſſumed "royal authority, the fountain was cleared, and all attainders and corruptions of "blood diſcharged ‡." Beſides that the caſe, from its urgent neceſſity, admitted of no deliberation; the judges probably thought, that no ſentence of a court of judicature ought to bar the right of ſucceſſion; that the jealouſy of a King towards his heir might readily occaſion ſtretches of law and juſtice againſt him; and that a prince might even be engaged in unjuſtifiable meaſures during his predeceſſor's reign, without meriting on that account to be excluded from the throne, which was his birth-right.

With a Parliament ſo obſequious as the preſent, the King could not fail to obtain whatever act of ſettlement he was pleaſed to require. He ſeems only to have entertained ſome doubts within himſelf on what title he ſhould found his pretenſions. In his firſt addreſs to the parliament he mentioned his juſt title by hereditary right: But leſt that title ſhould not be eſteemed ſufficient, he ſubjoined his claim by the judgment of God, who had given him victory over his enemies in the field of battle. And again, leſt this pretenſion ſhould be interpreted as aſſuming a right of conqueſt, he enſured to his ſubjects the entire enjoyment of their former properties and poſſeſſions.

The entail of the crown was drawn, according to the ſenſe of the King, and probably in the words, dictated by him. He made no mention in it of the princeſs Elizabeth, nor any branch of the family of York; but in other reſpects the act was compoſed with ſufficient reſerve and moderation. He did not inſiſt, that it ſhould contain a declaration or recognition of his preceding right; as on the Entail of the crown.

* Bacon, p. 581. † Rot. Parl. 1 Hen. VII. n. 2, 3, 4.—15, 17, 26—65. ‡ Bacon, p. 581.

Chap. I. 1485. other hand, he avoided the appearance of a new law or ordinance. He choſe a middle courſe, which, as is generally unavoidable in ſuch caſes, was not entirely free from uncertainty and obſcurity. It was voted, "That the inheritance "of the crown ſhould reſt, remain, and abide in the king *;" but whether as rightful heir, or only as preſent poſſeſſor, was not determined. In like manner, the King was contented that the ſucceſſion ſhould be ſecured to the heirs of his body; but he pretended not, in caſe of their failure, to exclude the houſe of York, or give the preference to that of Lancaſter: He left that great point ambiguous for the preſent; and truſted, that, if ever its determination ſhould become requiſite, future incidents would open the way for the deciſion.

But after all theſe precautions, the King was ſo little ſatisfied with his own title to the crown, that, in the following year, he applied to Rome for a confirmation of it; and as that court gladly laid hold of all opportunities, which the imprudence, weakneſs, or neceſſities of princes afforded it to extend its authority, Innocent the eighth, the reigning pope, readily granted a bull, in whatever terms the King was pleaſed to deſire. All Henry's titles, by ſucceſſion, marriage, parliamentary choice, even conqueſt, are there enumerated; and to the whole the ſanction of religion is added; excommunication is denounced againſt every one who ſhould either diſturb him in the preſent poſſeſſion, or the heirs of his body in their future ſucceſſion to the crown; and from this penalty, no criminal, except in the article of death, can be abſolved but by the pope himſelf, or his ſpecial commiſſioners. It is difficult to imagine, that the ſecurity derived from this bull, could be a compenſation for the defect which it betrayed in Henry's title, and for the danger of thus inviting the pope to interpoſe in theſe concerns.

It was natural, and even laudable in Henry to reverſe the attainders, which had paſſed againſt the partizans of the houſe of Lancaſter: But the revenges, which he exerciſed againſt the retainers of the York family, to which he was ſo ſoon to be allied, cannot be conſidered in the ſame light. Yet the parliament, at his inſtigation, paſſed an act of attainder againſt the late King himſelf, againſt the duke of Norfolk, the earl of Surrey, viſcount Lovel, the lords Zouche and Ferrars of Chartley, Sir Walter and Sir James Harrington, Sir William Berkeley, Sir Humphrey Stafford, Cateſby, and about twenty other gentlemen, who had fought on Richard's ſide in the battle of Boſworth. How men could be guilty of treaſon, by ſupporting the King in poſſeſſion againſt the earl of Richmond, who aſſumed not the title of King, it was not eaſy to determine; and nothing but a ſervile complaiſance in the Parliament could have engaged them to make this ſtretch of juſtice. Nor was it a ſmall mortification to

* Bacon, p. 581.

the

the people in general, to find, that the King, prompted either by avarice or resentment, could, in the very beginning of his reign, ſo far violate the cordial union, which had been previouſly concerted between the parties, and to the expectation of which he had plainly owed his ſucceſſion to the throne. Chap. I. 1485.

THE King, having gained ſo many points of conſequence from his Parliament, thought it not expedient to demand any ſupply from them, which the profound peace enjoyed by the nation, and the late forfeitures of Richard's adherents, ſeemed to render ſomewhat ſuperfluous. The Parliament, however, conferred on him during life the duty of tonnage and poundage, which had been enjoyed in the ſame manner by ſome of his immediate predeceſſors; and they added, before they broke up, other lucrative bills of no great moment. The King, on his part, made ſome returns of grace and favour to his people. He publiſhed his royal proclamation, offering pardon to all ſuch as had taken arms, or formed any attempts againſt him; provided they ſubmitted themſelves to mercy by a certain day, and took the uſual oath of fealty and allegiance. Upon this proclamation many came out of their ſanctuaries, and the minds of men were every where much quieted. Henry choſe to take wholly to himſelf the merit of an act of grace, ſo agreeable to the nation; rather than communicate it with the Parliament, (as was his firſt intention) by paſſing a bill to that purpoſe. The earl of Surrey, however, though he had ſubmitted, and delivered himſelf into the King's hands, was ſent priſoner to the Tower. 10th of December.

DURING this parliament, the King alſo beſtowed favours and honours on ſome particular perſons, who were attached to him. Edward Stafford, eldeſt ſon to the duke of Buckingham, forfeited in the late reign, was reſtored to all the honours of his family, as well as to all its fortune, which was very ample. This generoſity, ſo unuſual in Henry, was the effect of his gratitude to the memory of Buckingham, who had firſt concerted the plan of his ſucceſſion to the crown, and who by his own ruin had made way for that great event. Chandos of Britanny was created earl of Bath, Sir Giles Daubeny lord Daubeny, and Sir Robert Willoughby lord Broke. Theſe were all the titles of nobility, conferred by the King *.

BUT the miniſters, whom the King moſt truſted and favoured, were not choſen from among the nobility, or even from among the laity. John Morton, and Richard Fox, two clergymen, perſons of induſtry, vigilance, and capacity, were the men to whom he chiefly confided his affairs and ſecret councils. They had ſhared with him all his former dangers and diſtreſſes; and he now took care to make them participate in his good fortune. They were both called to the privy

* Polydore Virgil, p. 566.

Chap. I. 1485. council; and Morton was created biſhop of Ely, Fox of Exeter. The former ſoon after, upon the death of Bourchier, was raiſed to the ſee of Canterbury. The latter was made lord privy ſeal; and ſucceſſively, biſhop of Bath and Wells, Durham, and Wincheſter. For Henry, as lord Bacon obſerves, loved to employ and advance prelates, becauſe, having rich biſhoprics to beſtow, it was eaſy for him to reward their ſervices: And it was his maxim to raiſe them by ſlow ſteps, and make them firſt paſs thro' the inferior biſhoprics *. He probably expected, that as they were naturally more dependant on him than the nobility, who, during that age, enjoyed poſſeſſions and juriſdictions dangerous to royal authority; ſo the proſpect of ſome farther elevation would render them ſtill more active in his ſervice, and more obſequious to his commands.

1486. 18th of January. In preſenting the bill of tonnage and poundage, the Parliament, anxious to preſerve the true and undiſputed ſucceſſion to the crown, had petitioned Henry, with demonſtrations of the greateſt earneſtneſs, to eſpouſe the princeſs Elizabeth; but they covered their real reaſon under the dutiful pretence of their deſire to have heirs of his body. He now thought in earneſt of ſatisfying the minds of his people in that particular. His marriage was celebrated at London; and that with greater appearance of univerſal joy, than either his firſt entry or his coronation. Henry remarked with much diſpleaſure this general favour which was borne the houſe of York. The ſuſpicions, which aroſe from it, not only diſturbed his tranquillity during his whole reign; but bred diſguſt towards his ſpouſe herſelf, and poiſoned all his domeſtic enjoyments. Tho' virtuous, amiable, and obſequious to the laſt degree, ſhe never met with a proper return of affection, or even of complaiſance from her huſband; and the malignant ideas of faction ſtill, in his ſullen mind, prevailed over all the ſentiments of conjugal tenderneſs.

King's marriage.

The King had been carried along with ſuch a tide of ſucceſs ever ſince his arrival in England, that he thought nothing could withſtand the fortune and authority which attended him. He now reſolved to make a progreſs into the North, where the friends of the houſe of York, and even the partizans of Richard were moſt numerous; in hopes of curing, by his preſence and converſation, the prejudices of the malecontents. When he arrived at Nottingham, he heard that viſcount Lovel, with Sir Humphry Stafford and Thomas, his brother, had withdrawn themſelves ſecretly from their ſanctuary at Colcheſter: But this news appeared not to him of ſuch importance as to ſtop his journey; and he proceeded forward to York. He there heard, that the Staffords had levied an army in the

An inſurrection.

* Bacon, p. 582.

county of Worceſter, and were approaching to beſiege that city: And that Lovel, at the head of an army of three or four thouſand men, was marching to attack him in York. Henry was not diſmayed with this intelligence. His active courage, full of reſources, immediately prompted him to find the proper remedy. Tho' he knew himſelf to be ſurrounded with enemies in theſe diſaffected counties, he aſſembled a ſmall body of troops, in whom he could confide; and he put them under the command of the duke of Bedford. He joined to them all his own attendants; but he found that this haſty armament was more formidable by their ſpirit and their zealous attachment to him, than by the arms or military ſtores of which they were provided. He therefore gave Bedford orders not to approach the enemy; but previouſly to try every proper expedient to diſſipate them. Bedford publiſhed a general promiſe of pardon to the rebels, which had a greater effect on their leader than on his followers. Lovel, who had undertaken an enterprize, that exceeded his courage and capacity, was ſo terrified with the fears of deſertion among his troops, that he ſuddenly withdrew himſelf, and, after lurking ſome time in Lancaſhire, he made his eſcape into Flanders, where he was protected by the dutcheſs of Burgundy. His army ſubmitted to the King's clemency; and the other rebels, hearing of this ſucceſs, raiſed the ſiege of Worceſter, and diſperſed themſelves. The Staffords took ſanctuary in the church of Colnham, a village near Abingdon; but as it was found, that that church had not the privilege of giving protection to rebels, they were taken thence: The eldeſt Stafford was executed at Tyburn; the younger, pleading that he was miſled by his brother, obtained a pardon *. Chap. I. 1486.

Henry's joy for this ſucceſs was followed, ſome time after, by the birth of a prince, to whom he gave the name of Arthur, in memory of the famous Britiſh King of that name, from whom, it was pretended, the family of Tudor derived their deſcent. 20th of September.

Tho' Henry had been able to diſſipate that haſty rebellion, which was raiſed by the relicts of Richard's partizans, his government was become in general very unpopular: The ſource of the public diſcontent aroſe chiefly from his prejudice againſt the houſe of York, which was univerſally beloved by the nation, and which, for that very reaſon, became every day more the object of his hatred and jealouſy. Not only a preference on all occaſions, it was obſerved, was given to the Lancaſtrians; but many of the oppoſite party had been expoſed to great ſeverity, and had been bereaved of their fortunes by acts of attainder. A general reſumption likewiſe had paſſed of all grants made by the princes of the houſe of York; and tho' this rigour had been covered under the pretence, that the revenue Diſcontents of the people.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 569.

Chap. I. 1486.

was become insufficient to support the crown, and tho' the liberalities, granted during the latter years of Henry the sixth, were resumed by the same law, yet the York-party, as they were the principal sufferers by the resumption, thought it chiefly levelled against them. The severity, exercised against the earl of Warwic, begot compassion towards youth and innocence, exposed to such oppression; and his confinement in the tower, the very place where Edward's children had been murdered by their uncle, made the public expect a like catastrophe for him, and led them to make a comparison between Henry and that detested tyrant. And when it was remarked, that the queen herself met with harsh treatment, and even after the birth of a son, was not admitted to the honour of a public coronation, Henry's prepossessions were then concluded to be absolutely incurable, and men became equally obstinate in their disgust against his government. Nor was the manner and address of the King calculated to cure these prejudices contracted against his administration; but had, in every thing, a tendency to promote fear, or at best reverence, rather than good-will and affection *. And while the high idea, entertained of his policy and vigour, retained the nobility and men of character in obedience; the effects of his unpopular government soon appeared in the public, by incidents of a very extraordinary nature.

THERE lived in Oxford, one Richard Simon, a priest, who possessed some subtlety, and still more boldness and temerity. This man had entertained the design of disturbing Henry's government, by raising up a pretender to his crown; and for that purpose, he cast his eyes on Lambert Simnel, a youth of fifteen years of age, who was son of a baker, and who, being endowed with understanding above his years, and address above his condition, seemed well fitted to personate a prince of royal extraction. A report had been spread among the people, and received with great avidity, that Richard, duke of York, second son to Edward the fourth, had, by a secret escape, saved himself from his uncle's cruelty, and lay somewhere concealed in England. Simon, taking advantage of this rumour, had at first instructed his pupil to assume that name, which he found to be so fondly cherished by the public: But hearing afterwards a new report, that Warwic had made his escape from the Tower, and observing that this news was attended with no less general satisfaction, he changed the plan of his imposture, and made Simnel personate that unfortunate prince †. Tho' the youth was qualified by nature for the part which he was instructed to act; yet was it remarked, that he was better informed in circumstances relating to the royal family, and particularly in the adventures of the earl of Warwic, than he could be supposed to have learned from one of Simon's condition: And it was thence conjectured, that

Lambert Simnel.

* Bacon, p. 583.

† Polydore Virgil, p. 569, 570.

persons

perſons of higher rank, partizans of the houſe of York, had laid the plan of this conſpiracy, and had conveyed proper inſtructions to the actors. The queen dowager herſelf was expoſed to great ſuſpicion; and it was indeed the general opinion, however unlikely it might ſeem, that ſhe had ſecretly given her conſent to this impoſture. This woman was of a very reſtleſs diſpoſition. That character of ambition and intrigue, which ſhe had betrayed during the reign of her huſband, had not abandoned her during the uſurpation of Richard; and in her cloſet was firſt laid the plan of the great confederacy, which overturned the throne of the tyrant, and raiſed the earl of Richmond to royal dignity. Finding, that, inſtead of receiving the reward of theſe ſervices, ſhe herſelf was fallen into abſolute inſignificance, her daughter treated with ſeverity, and all her friends brought under ſubjection, ſhe had conceived the moſt violent animoſity againſt Henry, and had reſolved to make him feel the effects of her reſentment. The impoſtor, ſhe knew, however ſucceſsful, might eaſily at laſt be ſet aſide; and if a way could be found at his riſque to ſubvert the King's government, ſhe hoped that a ſcene would be opened, which, tho' difficult at preſent exactly to foreſee, would gratify her revenge, and be on the whole leſs irkſome to her than that ſlavery and contempt, to which ſhe was reduced *. Chap. I. 1486.

BUT whatever care Simon might take to convey inſtruction to his pupil, Simnel, he knew, that the impoſture would not bear a cloſe inſpection; and he was therefore determined to open the firſt public ſcene of it in Ireland. That iſland, which was zealouſly attached to the houſe of York, and bore an affectionate regard to the memory of Clarence, Warwic's father, who had been their lieutenant, was improvidently allowed by Henry to remain in the ſame condition, in which he found it; and all the counſellors and officers, who had been appointed by his predeceſſor, ſtill retained their authority. No ſooner did Simnel preſent himſelf to Thomas Fitzgerald, earl of Kildare, the deputy, and claim his protection, as the unfortunate Warwic, than that credulous nobleman, not ſuſpecting ſo bold a fiction, lent attention to him, and began to conſult ſome perſons of rank with regard to this extraordinary incident. Theſe he found even more ſanguine in their zeal and belief than himſelf: And in proportion as the ſtory diffuſed itſelf among thoſe of lower condition, it became the object of ſtill higher paſſion and credulity; till the people in Dublin with one conſent tendered their allegiance to Simnel as to the true Plantagenet. Fond of a novelty, which flattered their natural propenſion, they overlooked the daughters of Edward the fourth, who ſtood before Warwic in the order of ſucceſſion; they payed the pretended prince attendance as their ſovereign, lodged him in the caſtle of Dublin, crowned him with a diadem taken from a ſtatue of the Virgin, and publicly proclaimed him King, under the ap- Revolt of Ireland.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 570.

pellation

Chap. I. 1486.

pellation of Edward the ſixth. The whole iſland followed the example of the capital; and not a ſword was any where drawn in Henry's quarrel.

When this intelligence was conveyed to Henry, it reduced him to ſome perplexity. Determined always to face his enemies in perſon, he yet ſcrupled at preſent to leave England, where he ſuſpected the conſpiracy was firſt framed, and where, he knew, many perſons of condition, and the people in general were much diſpoſed to give it countenance. In order to diſcover the ſecret ſource of the contrivance, and take meaſures againſt this open revolt, he held frequent conſultations with his miniſters and counſellors, and laid plans for a vigorous defence of his authority, and the ſuppreſſion of his enemies.

The firſt event, which followed theſe deliberations, gave great ſurprize to the public: It was the ſeizure of the queen dowager, the forfeiture of all her lands and revenue, and the cloſe confinement of her perſon in the nunnery of Bermondeſey. So arbitrary and violent an act of authority was covered with a very thin pretence. It was alledged, that, notwithſtanding the ſecret agreement to marry her daughter to Henry, ſhe had yet yielded to the ſolicitations and menaces of Richard, and delivered that princeſs and her ſiſters into the hands of the tyrant. This crime, which was now become obſolete, and might admit of alleviations, was therefore ſuſpected not to be the real cauſe of the ſeverity, with which ſhe was treated; and men believed, that the King, unwilling to accuſe ſo near a relation of a conſpiracy againſt him, had cloaked his vengeance or precaution under the pretext of an offence, known to the whole world *. They were afterwards the more confirmed in this ſuſpicion, when they found, that the unfortunate queen, tho' ſhe ſurvived this diſgrace ſeveral years, was never treated with any more lenity, but was allowed to end her life in poverty, ſolitude, and confinement.

The next meaſure of the King was of a leſs exceptionable nature. He ordered that Warwic ſhould be taken from the Tower, be led in proceſſion through the ſtreets of London, be conducted to St. Paul's, and there expoſed to the eyes of the whole people. He even gave directions, that ſome perſons of condition, who were attached to the houſe of York, and were beſt acquainted with the perſon of this prince, ſhould approach him and converſe with him: And he truſted, that theſe, being convinced of the abſurd impoſture of Simnel, would put a ſtop to the credulity of the people. The expedient had its effect in England: But in Ireland the people ſtill perſiſted in their revolt, and zealouſly retorted on the King the reproach of propagating an impoſture, and of having ſhown a counterfeit Warwic to the people.

* Bacon, p. 583. Polydore Virgil, p. 571.

Henry

Chap. I. 1486.

HENRY had ſoon reaſon to apprehend, that the deſign againſt him was not laid on ſuch ſlight foundations as the abſurdity of the contrivance ſeemed to promiſe. John earl of Lincoln, ſon of John de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, and of Elizabeth, eldeſt ſiſter to Edward the fourth, was engaged to take part in the conſpiracy. This nobleman, who poſſeſt capacity and courage, had entertained very aſpiring views; and his ambition was encouraged by the known intentions of his uncle, Richard, who had formed a deſign, in caſe himſelf ſhould die without iſſue, of declaring Lincoln ſucceſſor to the crown. The King's jealouſy againſt all eminent perſons of the York-party, and his rigour towards Warwic, had farther ſtruck Lincoln with apprehenſions, and made him reſolve to ſeek for ſafety in the moſt dangerous councils. Having fixed a ſecret correſpondence with ſir Thomas Broughton, a man of great intereſt in Lancaſhire, he ſet out for Flanders, where Lovel had arrived a little before him; and he lived, during ſome time, in the court of his aunt, the dutcheſs of Burgundy, by whom he had been invited over.

Intrigues of the dutcheſs of Burgundy.

MARGARET, widow of Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy, having born no children to her huſband, attached herſelf with an entire friendſhip to her daughter-in-law, married to Maximilian, archduke of Auſtria; and after the death of that princeſs, ſhe perſevered in her affection to Philip and Margaret, her children, and occupied herſelf in the care of their education and of their perſons. By her virtuous conduct and demeanour, ſhe had acquired great authority among the Flemings; and lived with much dignity, as well as œconomy, upon that ample dowry, which ſhe inherited from her huſband. The reſentments of this princeſs were no leſs warm than her friendſhips; and that ſpirit of faction, which it is ſo difficult for a ſocial and ſanguine temper to guard againſt, had taken ſtrong poſſeſſion of her heart, and entrenched ſomewhat on the probity, which ſhone forth in other parts of her character. Hearing of the malignant jealouſy, entertained by Henry againſt her family, and his oppreſſion of all its partizans; ſhe was moved with the higheſt indignation, and ſhe determined to make him repent of that enmity, of which ſo many of her friends, without any reaſon or neceſſity, had fallen the victims. After conſulting with Lincoln and Lovel, ſhe hired a body of two thouſand veteran Germans, under the command of Martin Swart, a brave and experienced officer *; and ſent them over, together with theſe two noblemen, to join Simnel in Ireland. The countenance, given by perſons of ſuch high condition, and the acceſſion of this military force, raiſed extremely the courage of the Iriſh, and made them entertain the reſolution of invading England, where they believed the ſpirit of diſaffection to prevail as much as it had appeared to do in Ireland. The poverty alſo, under which they laboured, made it impoſſible for them to main-

Lambert Simnel invades England.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 572, 573.

tain

Chap. I. 1487.

tain any longer their new court and army, and inſpired them with a ſtrong deſire of enriching themſelves by plunder and preferment in England.

HENRY was not ignorant of theſe intentions of his enemies; and he prepared himſelf for reſiſtance. He ordered troops to be muſtered in different parts of the kingdom, and put them under the command of the duke of Bedford, and the earl of Oxford. He confined from jealouſy the marquis of Dorſet, who, he ſuſpected, would revenge the injuries ſuffered by his mother, the queen dowager. And to gratify the people by an appearance of devotion, he made a pilgrimage to our lady of Walſingham, famous for miracles; and there offered up prayers for ſucceſs and for deliverance from his enemies.

BEING informed that Simnel and his forces were landed at Foudrey in Lancaſhire, he drew together his own troops, and advanced towards them as far as Coventry. The rebels had entertained hopes, that the diſaffected counties in the North would riſe in their favour: But the people, averſe to join Iriſh and German invaders, convinced of Lambert's impoſture, and kept in awe by the King's reputation for ſucceſs and conduct, either remained in tranquillity, or gave all aſſiſtance to the royal army. The earl of Lincoln, therefore, who commanded the rebels, finding no hopes but in ſpeedy victory, was determined to bring the matter to a deciſion; and the King, ſupported by the native courage of his temper, and emboldened by a great acceſſion of volunteers, which had joined him, under the earl of Shrewſbury and lord Strange, declined not the combat. The oppoſite armies met at Stoke in the county of Nottingham, and fought a battle, which was more bloody and more obſtinately diſputed than could have been expected from the inequality of their force. All the leaders of the rebels were reſolved to conquer or to die, and they inſpired their troops with a like reſolution. The Germans alſo, being veteran and experienced ſoldiers, kept the victory long doubtful; and even the Iriſh, tho' ill-armed and almoſt defenceleſs, ſhowed themſelves not defective in ſpirit and bravery. The King's victory was purchaſed with loſs, but was entirely deciſive. Lincoln, Broughton and Swart periſhed in the field of battle, with four thouſand of their troops. As Lovel was never more heard of, he was believed to have undergone the ſame fate. Simnel, with his tutor, Simon, was taken priſoner. Simon, being a prieſt, was not tried at law, and was only committed to cloſe cuſtody: Simnel was too contemptible either to excite apprehenſion or reſentment in Henry. He was pardoned, and made a ſcullion in the King's kitchen; whence he was afterwards advanced to the rank of a falconer *.

6th of June. Battle of Stoke.

* Bacon, p. 586. Pol. Virg. p. 574.

HENRY

HENRY had now leiſure to revenge himſelf of his enemies. He made a progreſs into the northern parts, where he gave many proofs of the rigours of his juſtice. A ſtrict inquiry was made after thoſe who had aſſiſted or favoured the rebels. The puniſhments were not all ſanguinary. The King made his revenge ſubſervient to his avarice. Heavy fines were levied upon the delinquents. In giving ſentence, the proceedings of the courts, and even the courts themſelves, were entirely arbitrary. Either the criminals were tried by commiſſioners appointed for that purpoſe, or they ſuffered puniſhment by ſentence of a court martial. And as a rumour had prevailed before the battle of Stoke, that the rebels had gained the victory, that the King's army was cut in pieces, and that the King himſelf had eſcaped by flight, Henry was reſolved to interpret the belief or propagation of this report as a mark of diſaffection; and he puniſhed many for that pretended crime. But ſuch, in this age, was the ſituation of the Engliſh government, that the royal prerogative, which was but imperfectly reſtrained during the moſt peaceable periods, was ſure, in tumultuous, or even ſuſpicious times, which frequently occurred, to break all bounds of law and order. Chap. I. 1487.

AFTER the King had ſatisfied his rigour by the puniſhment of his enemies, he reſolved to give contentment to the people, in a point, which, tho' a mere ceremony, was very paſſionately deſired by them. The Queen had been married near two years, but had not yet been crowned; and this affectation of delay had given great diſcontent to the public, and had been one principal ſource of the diſaffection which prevailed. The King, inſtructed by experience, now finiſhed the ceremony of her coronation; and to ſhew a ſtill more gracious diſpoſition, he gave liberty to her half-brother, the marquiſs of Dorſet, who had been able to clear himſelf of all the crimes of which he was accuſed. 25th of November.

CHAP. II.

State of foreign affairs.——State of Scotland——of Spain——of the Low Countries——of France——of Britanny.——French invaſion of Britanny.——French embaſſy to England.——Diſſimulation of the French Court.——An inſurrection in the North——ſuppreſſed.——King ſends forces into Britany.——Annexation of Britannny to France. ——A Parliament.——War with France.——Invaſion of France. ——Peace with France.——Perkin Warbec.——His impoſture. ——He is avowed by the dutcheſs of Burgundy——and by many of the Engliſh nobility.——Trial and execution of Stanley.——A Parliament.

1488. State of foreign affairs.

THE King acquired great reputation throughout all Europe by the proſperous and vigorous conduct of his domeſtic affairs; and as ſome incidents, about this time, invited him to look abroad, and exert himſelf in behalf of his allies, it will be neceſſary, in order to give a juſt account of his foreign meaſures, to explain the condition of the neighbouring kingdoms; begnning with Scotland, which lies moſt contiguous.

State of Scotland.

THE kingdom of Scotland had not as yet attained that ſtate, which diſtinguiſhes a civilized monarchy, and which enables the government, by the force of its laws and inſtitutions alone, without any extraordinary capacity in the ſovereign, to maintain itſelf in order and tranquillity. James the third, who now filled the throne, was a prince of little induſtry and of a narrow genius; and tho' it behoved him to yield the reins of government to his miniſters, he had never been able to make any choice, which could give contentment both to himſelf and to his people. When he beſtowed his confidence on any of the principal nobility, he found, that they exalted their own family to ſuch a height, as was dangerous to the prince, and gave umbrage to the ſtate: When he conferred favour on any perſon of meaner birth, on whoſe ſubmiſſion he could more depend, the barons of his kingdom, enraged at the power of an upſtart minion, proceeded to the utmoſt extremities againſt their ſovereign. Had Henry entertained the ambition of conqueſts,

queſts, a tempting opportunity now offered of reducing that kingdom to ſubjection; but as he was probably ſenſible, that a warlike people, tho' they might be over-run by reaſon of their domeſtic diviſions, could not be retained in obedience without a regular military force, which was then unknown in England, he rather propoſed the renewal of the peace with Scotland, and ſent an embaſſy to James for that purpoſe. But the Scots, who never deſired a long peace with England, and who thought that their ſecurity conſiſted in preſerving themſelves conſtantly in a warlike poſture, would not agree to more than a ſeven years truce, which was accordingly concluded *. Chap. II. 1488.

THE European ſtates on the continent were then haſtening faſt to that ſituation, in which they have remained, without any material alterations, for near three centuries; and began to unite themſelves into one extenſive ſyſtem of policy, which comprehended the chief powers of Chriſtendom. Spain, which had hitherto been almoſt entirely occupied within herſelf, now became formidable by the union of Arragon and Caſtile, in the perſons of Ferdinand and Iſabella, who, being princes of great capacity, employed their force in enterprizes the moſt advantageous to their combined monarchy. The conqueſt of Granada from the Moors was then undertaken, and brought near to a happy concluſion. And in that expedition the military genius of Spain was revived; honour and ſecurity were attained; and her princes, no longer held in fear by a domeſtic enemy ſo dangerous, began to enter into all the tranſactions of Europe, and make a great figure in every war and negotiation. State of Spain.

MAXIMILIAN, King of the Romans, ſon to the emperor Frederic, had, by his marriage with the heireſs of the houſe of Burgundy, acquired an intereſt in the Low Country provinces; and tho' the death of his ſpouſe had weakened his connexion with that territory, he ſtill pretended to the government as tutor to his ſon Philip, and his authority had been acknowledged by Brabant, Holland, and ſeveral of the provinces. But as Flanders and Hainault ſtill refuſed to ſubmit to his regency, and even appointed other tutors to Philip, he had been engaged in long wars againſt that obſtinate people, and never was able thoroughly to ſubdue their ſpirit. That he might free himſelf from the oppoſition of France, he had concluded a peace with Lewis the eleventh, and had given his daughter, Margaret, then an infant, in marriage to the Dauphin; together with Artois, Franche-comté, and Charolois as her dowry. But this alliance had not produced the deſired effect. The dauphin ſucceeded to the crown of France under the appellation of Charles the eighth; but Maximilian ſtill found the mutinies of the Flemings fomented by the intrigues of the Court of France. Of the Low Countries.

* Iolyd. Virg. p. 575.

Chap. II. 1488. State of France.

FRANCE, during the two preceding reigns, had made a mighty encreaſe in power and greatneſs; and had not other ſtates of Europe at the ſame time received an acceſſion of force, it had been impoſſible to have retained her within her antient boundaries. Moſt of the great fiefs, Normandy, Champagne, Anjou, Dauphiny, Guienne, Provence, and Burgundy had been united to the crown; the Engliſh had been expelled from all their conqueſts; the authority of the prince had been raiſed to ſuch a condition as enabled him to maintain law and order; a conſiderable military force was kept on foot, and the finances were able to ſupport them. Lewis the eleventh indeed, from whom many of theſe advantages were derived, was dead, and had left his ſon, in very early youth and ill educated, to ſuſtain the weight of the monarchy: But having entruſted the government to his daughter, Anne Lady of Beaujeu, a woman of ſpirit and capacity, the French power ſuffered no check or decline. On the contrary, this princeſs formed the great project, which at laſt ſhe happily effected, of uniting to the crown Britanny, the laſt and moſt independent fief of the monarchy.

Of Britanny.

FRANCIS the ſecond, duke of Britanny, was a good, but a weak prince, who conſcious of his own unfitneſs for government, had reſigned himſelf entirely to the direction of Peter Landais, a man of very mean birth, more remarkable for his ability than for his virtue or integrity. The nobles of Britanny, diſpleaſed with the great advancement of this favourite, had even proceeded to diſaffection againſt their ſovereign; and after many tumults and conſpiracies, they at laſt united among themſelves, and in a violent manner, ſeized, tried, and put to death the obnoxious miniſter. Fearing the reſentment of the prince for this invaſion of his authority, many of them retired to France; and others, for their protection and ſafety, maintained a correſpondence with that court. The French miniſtry, obſerving the great diſſentions among the Bretons, thought the opportunity favourable for invading that dutchy; and ſo much the rather, as they could cover their ambition under the ſpecious pretence of providing for domeſtic ſecurity.

LEWIS, duke of Orleans, firſt prince of the blood, and preſumptive heir of the monarchy, had diſputed the adminiſtration with the lady of Beaujeu; and tho' his pretenſions had been rejected by the ſtates, he ſtill maintained cabals with many of the grandees, and laid ſchemes for ſubverting the authority of that princeſs. Finding his conſpiracies detected, he took arms, and fortified himſelf in Beaugenci; but as his revolt was precipitate, before his confederates were ready to riſe with him, he had been obliged to ſubmit, and to receive whatever conditions the French miniſtry were pleaſed to impoſe upon him. Actuated however by his ambition, and even by his fears, he ſoon retired out of France, and took ſhelter with the duke

duke of Britanny, who was deſirous of ſtrengthening himſelf againſt the deſigns of the lady of Beaujeu by the friendſhip and credit of the duke of Orleans. This prihce alſo, obſerving the aſcendant which he ſoon acquired over the duke of Britanny, had engaged many of his partizans to join him at that court, and had formed the deſign of aggrandizing himſelf by a marriage with Anne, the heireſs of that opulent dutchy. Chap. II. 1488.

THE barons of Britanny, who ſaw all favour engroſſed by the duke of Orleans and his train, renewed a ſtricter correſpondence with France, and even invited the French King to make an invaſion on their country. Deſirous however to preſerve its independency, they had regulated the number of ſuccours, which France was to ſend them, and had ſtipulated that no fortified place in Britanny ſhould remain in the poſſeſſion of that monarchy. A vain precaution, where revolted ſubjects treat with a power ſo much ſuperior! The French invaded Britanny with forces three times more numerous than thoſe which they had promiſed to the barons; and advancing into the heart of the country, laid ſiege to Ploermel. To oppoſe them, the duke raiſed a numerous, but ill diſciplined army, which he put under the command of the duke of Orleans, the count of Dunois, and others of the French nobility. The army, diſcontented with this choice, and jealous of their confederates, ſoon diſbanded, and left their prince with too ſmall a force to keep the field againſt his invaders. He retired to Vannes; but being hotly purſued by the French, who had made themſelves maſters of Ploermel, he eſcaped to Nantz; and the enemy having taken and garriſoned Vannes, Dinant, and other places, laid cloſe ſiege to that city. The barons of Britanny, finding their country menaced with total ſubjection, began gradually to withdraw from the French army, and to make peace with their ſovereign. French invaſion of Britanny.

THIS deſertion, however, of the Bretons diſcouraged not the court of France from purſuing her favourite project of reducing Britanny to ſubjection. The ſituation of Europe appeared very favourable to the execution of this deſign. Maximilian was engaged in cloſe alliance with the duke of Britanny, and had even opened a treaty for marrying his daughter; but he was on all occaſions ſo neceſſitous of money, and at that time ſo diſquieted by the mutinies of the Flemings, that little effectual aſſiſtance could be expected from him. Ferdinand was entirely occupied in the conqueſt of Granada; and it was alſo known, that if France reſigned to him Rouſillon and Cerdagne, to which he had pretenſions, ſhe could at any time engage him to abandon the intereſts of Britanny. England alone was both enabled by her power, and engaged by her intereſts, to ſupport the independency of that dutchy; and the moſt dangerous oppoſition was therefore, by the French, expected from that quarter. In order to cover their real deſigns, no

Chap. II. 1488.

no boner were they informed of Henry's ſucceſs againſt Simnel and his partizans, thar they diſpatched ambaſſadors to the court of London, and made profeſſions of the utmoſt truſt and confidence in that monarch.

French embaſſy to England.

THE ambaſſadors, after congratulating Henry on the late victory, and communicaing to him in the moſt cordial manner, as to an intimate friend, ſome ſucceſſes of their maſter againſt Maximilian, came in the progreſs of their diſcourſe, to nention the late tranſactions in Britanny. They told him that the duke of Britanny having given protection to French fugitives and rebels, the King had been neceſſitated, contrary to his intention and inclination, to carry war into that duchy: That the honour of the crown was intereſted not to ſuffer a vaſſal ſo far to forget his duty to his liege lord; nor was the ſecurity of the government of France leſs concerned to prevent the conſequences of this dangerous temerity: That the fugitives were no mean nor obſcure perſons; but, among others, the duke of Orleans, firſt prince of the blood, who finding himſelf obnoxous to juſtice for treaſonable practices in France, had fled into Britanny; where he ſtill perſevered in laying ſchemes of rebellion againſt his ſovereign: That the war being thus, on the part of the French monarch, entirely defenſive, it would immediately ceaſe, when the duke of Britanny, by returning to his duty, ſhould remove the cauſes of it: That their maſter was ſenſible of the obligations which that duke, in very critical times, had conferred on Henry; but it was known alſo, that, in times ſtill more critical, he or his mercenary counſellors had deſerted him, and put his life in the utmoſt hazard: That his ſole refuge in ſuch deſperate extremities had been the court of France, which not only protected his perſon, but ſupplied him with men and money, with which, aided by his own valour and conduct, he had been enabled to mount the throne of England: That France, in this tranſaction, had, from friendſhip to Henry, acted contrary to what, in a narrow view, might be eſteemed her own intereſt; ſince, inſtead of an odious tyrant, ſhe had contributed to eſtabliſh on a rival throne, a prince endowed with ſuch virtue and ability: And that as both the juſtice of the cauſe and the obligations conferred on Henry thus preponderated on the ſide of France, their maſter expected, that, if the ſituation of Henry's affairs allowed him not to give aſſiſtance to that kingdom, he would at leaſt preſerve a neutrality between the contending parties *.

THIS diſcourſe of the French ambaſſadors was plauſible; and to give it greater weight, they communicated to Henry, as in confidence, their maſter's intention, after he ſhould have compoſed the differences with Britanny, to lead an army into Italy, and make good his pretenſions to the kingdom of Naples: A project,

* Bacon, p. 589.

which,

which, they knew, would give no umbrage to the court of England. But all these artifices were in vain employed against the penetration of the King. He clearly saw, that France had entertained the view of subduing Britanny; but he also perceived, that she would meet with great, and, as he thought, insupeable difficulties in the execution of her project. The native force of that dutchy, he knew, had always been considerable, and had often, without any foreign assistance, resisted the power of France; the natural temper of the French nation, he imagined, would make them easily abandon every enterprize, which required perseverance; and as the heir of the crown was confederated with the duke of Britanny, the courtiers would be still more remiss in prosecuting a scheme which must draw on them his resentment and displeasure. Should even these internal obstructions be removed, Maximilian, whose enmity to France was well known, and who now paid his addresses to the heiress of Britanny, would be able to make a diversion on the side of Flanders; nor could it be expected, that France, if she prosecuted such ambitious projects, would be allowed to remain in tranquillity by Ferdinand and Isabella. Above all, he thought, the French court could never expect, that England, so deeply interested to preserve the independancy of Britanny, so able by her power and situation to give effectual and prompt assistance, would permit such an accession of force to her rival. He imagined, therefore, that the ministers of France, convinced of the impracticability of their schemes, would at last embrace pacific views, and would abandon an enterprize, so obnoxious to all the potentates of Europe. Chap. II. 1488.

This reasoning of Henry was solid, and might very justly engage him in dilatory and cautious measures: But there entered into his conduct another motive, which was apt to draw him beyond the just bounds, because founded on a ruling passion. His frugality, which by degrees degenerated into avarice, made him averse to all warlike enterprizes and distant expeditions; and engaged him previously to try the expedient of negotiation. He dispatched Urswic, his almoner, a man of address and ability, to make offer of his mediation to the contending parties. An offer, which, he thought, if accepted by France, would soon lead to a compose of all differences; if refused or eluded, would at least discover the perseverance of that court in their ambitious projects. Urswic found the lady of Beaujeu, now dutchess of Bourbon, engaged in the siege of Nantz, and had the satisfaction to find that his master's mediation was very readily embraced, and with many expressions of confidence and moderation. That able princess concluded, that the duke of Orleans, who governed the court of Britanny, foreseeing that every accommodation must be made at his expence, would use all his interest to have Henry's proposal rejected; and would by that means make an effectual apology for the French measures and draw

Dissimulation of the French Court.

Chap. II. 1488. draw on the Bretons the reproach of obſtinacy and injuſtice. The event juſtified her prudence. When the Engliſh ambaſſador made the ſame applications to the duke of Britanny, he received for anſwer, in name of that Prince, that having ſo long acted the part of protector and guardian to Henry, during his youth and adverſity, he had expected, from a monarch of ſuch virtue, more effectual aſſiſtance, in his preſent diſtreſſes, than a barren offer of mediation, which ſuſpended not the progreſs of the French arms: That if Henry's gratitude was not ſufficient to engage him in ſuch a meaſure, his prudence, as King of England, ſhould diſcover to him the pernicious conſequences attending the conqueſt of Britanny, and its annexation to the crown of France: That that kingdom, already become too powerful, would be enabled, by ſo great an acceſſion of force, to diſplay, to the ruin of England, that hoſtile diſpoſition, which had always ſubſiſted between thoſe rival nations: That Britanny, ſo uſeful an ally, which, by its ſituation, gave the Engliſh an entrance into the heart of France; being annexed to that kingdom, would be equally enabled from its ſituation to diſturb, either by piracies or naval armaments, the commerce and peace of England: And that if the duke refuſed Henry's mediation, it proceeded neither from an inclination to a war, which he experienced to be ſo ruinous to him, nor from a confidence in his own force, which he knew to be ſo much inferior to that of the enemy; but merely from a ſenſe of his preſent neceſſity, which muſt engage the King to act the part of his confederate, not of a mediator.

When this anſwer was reported to the King, he abandoned not the ſyſtem of conduct which he had formed: He only concluded, that ſome more time was requiſite to quell the obſtinacy of the Bretons and make them ſubmit to reaſon. And when he learned, that the people of Britanny, anxious for their duke's ſafety, had formed a tumultuary army of 60,000 men, and had obliged the French to raiſe the ſiege of Nantz, he fortified himſelf the more in his opinion, that the court of France would at laſt be reduced, by multiplied obſtacles and difficulties, to abandon the project of reducing Britanny to ſubjection. He continued therefore the ſcheme of negotiation, and thereby expoſed himſelf to be deceived by the artifices of the French miniſtry; who, ſtill pretending pacific intentions, ſent Lord Bernard Daubigni, a Scotſman of quality, to London, and preſſed Henry not to be diſcouraged in offering his mediation to the court of Britanny. The King on his part diſpatched another embaſſy compoſed of Urſwic, the abbot of Abingdon, and Sir Richard Tonſtal, who carried new propoſals for an amicable accommodation. No effectual ſuccours, meanwhile, were provided for the diſtreſſed Bretons. The lord Woodville, brother to the queen dowager, a man

man of courage and enterprize, having aſked leave to raiſe underhand a body of volunteers and tranſport them into Britanny, met with a refuſal from the King, who was deſirous of preſerving the appearance of a ſtrict neutrality. That nobleman, however, ſtill perſiſted in his intentions. He went over to the Iſle of Wight, of which he was governor; levied a body of 400 men; and having at laſt obtained, as is ſuppoſed, the ſecret permiſſion of Henry, ſailed with them to Britanny. This enterprize proved fatal to the leader, and brought ſmall relief to the unhappy Duke. The Bretons raſhly engaged in a general action with the French at St. Aubin, and were totally diſcomfited. Woodville and all the Engliſh were put to the ſword; together with a body of Bretons, who had been accouttered in the garb of Engliſhmen, in order to ſtrike a greater terror into the French, to whom the martial proweſs of that nation was always formidable *. The Duke of Orleans, the Prince of Orange, and many other perſons of rank were taken priſoners. And the military force of Britanny was totally diſſipated. The death of the Duke, which followed ſoon after, threw affairs into ſtill greater confuſion, and ſeemed to threaten the ſtate with a final ſubjection.

Chap. II. 1488.

28th of July.

9th September.

THO' the King prepared not againſt theſe events, ſo hurtful to the intereſts of England, with ſufficient vigour and precaution, he had not altogether overlooked them. Determined to maintain a pacific conduct, as far as the ſituation of affairs would permit, he yet knew the warlike diſpoſition of his ſubjects, and obſerved, that their antient and inveterate animoſity to France was now revived by the proſpect of this great acceſſion to its power and grandeur. He reſolved therefore to make advantage of thoſe humours, and to draw ſome ſupplies of money from the people, on pretence of giving aſſiſtance to the Duke of Britanny. He had ſummoned a parliament to meet at Weſtminſter †; and he ſoon perſuaded them to grant him a conſiderable ſubſidy ‡. But this ſupply, tho' voted by Parliament, involved the King in unexpected difficulties. The counties of Durham and York, always diſcontented with Henry's government, and farther provoked by the late oppreſſions, under which they had laboured, after the ſuppreſſion of Simnel's rebellion, reſiſted the commiſſioners who were appointed to levy the new tax. The commiſſioners, terrified with this appearance of ſedition, made application to the Earl of Northumberland, and deſired of him advice and aſſiſtance in the execution of their office. That nobleman thought the matter of importance enough to conſult the King; who, unwilling to yield to the humours of a diſcontented populace, and foreſeeing the per-

An inſurrection in the North.

* Argentré Hiſt. de Bretagne, Liv. 12.

† 9th November, 148-.

‡ Polydore Virgil, p. 579, ſays that this impoſition was a capitation tax; the other hiſtorians ſay it was a tax of two ſhillings on the pound.

Chap. II. 1488. nicious conſequences of ſuch a precedent, renewed his orders for a ſtrict levy of the impoſition. Northumberland ſummoned together the juſtices and chief freeholders, and delivered the King's commands in the moſt imperious terms, which, he thought, would inforce obedience, but which tended only to provoke the people, and make them believe him the adviſer of thoſe orders which he delivered to them *. They flew to arms, and attacked Northumberland's houſe, whom they put to death. Having incurred ſuch deep guilt, their mutinous humour prompted them to declare againſt the King himſelf; and being inſtigated by one John Achamber, a ſeditious fellow of mean birth, they choſe Sir John Egremond their leader, and prepared themſelves for a vigorous reſiſtance. Henry was not diſmayed with an inſurrection ſo precipitant and ill ſupported. He immediately levied a force which he put under the command of the Earl of Surrey, whom he had delivered from confinement, and reſtored to his favour. His intention was to ſend down theſe troops, in order to check the progreſs of the rebels; while he himſelf ſhould follow with a greater body, which would abſolutely inſure ſucceſs. But Surrey thought himſelf ſtrong enough to encounter a raw and unarmed multitude; and he ſucceeded in the attempt. The rebels were diſſipated; John Achamber taken priſoner, and afterwards executed with ſome of his accomplices; Sir John Egremond fled to the Dutcheſs of Burgundy, who gave him protection; the greater number of the rebels received a pardon.

Suppreſſed.

Henry had probably expected, when he obtained this grant from the Parliament, that he ſhould be able to terminate the affair of Britanny by negotiation, and that he might thereby fill his coffers with the money levied by the impoſition. But as the diſtreſſes of the Bretons ſtill multiplied, and became every day more urgent; he found himſelf under the neceſſity of taking ſome meaſures, in order to ſupport them. On the death of the duke, the French had revived ſome antiquated claims to the dominion of the dutchy; and as the Duke of Orleans was now captive in France, their former pretence for hoſtilities could no longer ſerve as a cover to their ambition. The King reſolved therefore to engage as auxiliary to Britanny; and to conſult the intereſts as well as deſires of his people, by oppoſing himſelf to the progreſs of the French power. Beſides entering into a league with Maximilian, and another with Ferdinand, which were diſtant reſources, he levied a body of troops, to the number of 6000 men, with an intention of tranſporting them into Britanny. Still anxious, however, for the payment of his expences, he concluded a treaty with the young dutcheſs, by which ſhe engaged to deliver into his hands two ſea-port towns, there to remain till ſhe ſhould entirely refund the charges of the armament †. Tho' he engaged for

1489.

* Bacon, p. 595. † Du Tillet, Recueil des Traitez.

the

the ſervice of thoſe troops during the ſpace of eight months only, yet was the dutcheſs obliged, by the neceſſity of her affairs, to ſubmit to ſuch rigid conditions, impoſed by an ally, ſo much concerned in intereſt to protect her. The forces arrived under the command of lord Willoughby of Broke; and made the Bretons, during ſome time, maſters of the field. The French retired into their garriſons; and propoſed by dilatory meaſures to waſte the fire of the Engliſh, and diſguſt them with their enterprize. The ſcheme was well laid, and met with ſucceſs. Lord Broke found ſuch diſcord and confuſion in the councils of Britanny, that no meaſures could be concerted for any undertaking; no ſupply obtained; no proviſions, carriages, artillery, or military ſtores procured. The whole court was rent into factions: No one miniſter had acquired the aſcendant: And whatever project was formed by one, was ſure to be traverſed by another. The Engliſh, diſconcerted in every enterprize, by theſe animoſities and uncertain councils, returned home as ſoon as the time of their ſervice was elapſed; leaving only a ſmall garriſon in thoſe towns which had been put into their hands. During their ſtay in Britanny, they had only contributed ſtill farther to waſte the country; and by their departure, they left it entirely at the mercy of the enemy. So feeble was the ſuccour which Henry in this important conjuncture afforded his ally, whom the invaſion of a foreign enemy, concurring with domeſtic diſſenſions, had reduced to the utmoſt diſtreſs!

Chap. II. 1489.

King ſends forces into Britanny.

THE great object of diſſenſion among the Bretons was the diſpoſal of the young dutcheſs in marriage. The mareſchal Rieux ſeconded the ſuit of the Lord Albert, who led ſome forces to her aſſiſtance. The chancellor Montauban, obſerving the averſion of the Dutcheſs to this ſuitor, inſiſted, that a petty prince, ſuch as Albert, was unable to ſupport Anne in her preſent extremities; and he recommended ſome more powerful alliance, particularly that of Maximilian, King of the Romans. This party at laſt prevailed; the marriage with Maximilian was celebrated by proxy; and the dutcheſs thenceforth aſſumed the title of queen of the Romans. But this magnificent appellation was all ſhe gained by her marriage. Maximilian, deſtitute of troops and money, and embarraſſed with the continual revolts of the Flemings, could give no aſſiſtance to his diſtreſſed conſort: While Albert, enraged at the preference given his rival, deſerted her cauſe, and received the French into Nantz, the moſt important place in the dutchy, both for ſtrength and riches.

1490.

THE French court began now to change their ſcheme with regard to the ſubjection of Britanny. Charles had formerly been affianced to Margaret daughter of Maximilian; who, though too young to conſummate her marriage, had been

Chap. II. 1489.

ſent to Paris to be educated, and at this time bore the title of queen of France. Beſides the rich dowry, which ſhe brought the King, ſhe was, after her brother, Philip, then in early youth, heireſs to all the dominions of the houſe of Burgundy; and ſeemed in many reſpects the moſt proper match, which could be choſen for the young monarch. Theſe circumſtances had ſo blinded the councils both of Maximilian and Henry, that they never ſuſpected any other intentions in the French court; nor were able to diſcover, that engagements, ſeemingly ſo advantageous and ſo ſolemnly entered into, could be infringed and ſet aſide. But Charles began to perceive, that the conqueſt of Britanny, in oppoſition to the natives, and to all the great powers in Chriſtendom, would prove a very difficult enterprize; and that even, if he ſhould over-run the country, and make himſelf maſter of the fortreſſes, it would be impoſſible for him long to retain poſſeſſion of them. The marriage alone of the dutcheſs could fully re-annex that fief to the crown; and the preſent and certain enjoyment of ſo conſiderable a territory ſeemed preferable to the proſpect of inheriting the dominions of the houſe of Burgundy; a proſpect which became every day more diſtant and precarious. Above all, the marriage of Maximilian and Anne appeared deſtructive to the grandeur and even ſecurity of the French monarchy; while that Prince, poſſeſſing Flanders on the one hand, and Britanny on the other, might thus from both quarters make inroads into the heart of the country. The only remedy for theſe evils was therefore concluded to be the diſſolution of the two marriages, which had been celebrated, but not conſummated; and the eſpouſal of the dutcheſs of Britanny by the King of France.

It was requiſite that this expedient, which had not been foreſeen by any court of Europe, and which they were, all of them, ſo much engaged in point of intereſt to oppoſe, ſhould be kept a profound ſecret, and ſhould be diſcovered to the world only by the full execution of it. The meaſures of the French miniſtry were in the conduct of this delicate enterprize very wiſe and political. While they preſſed Britanny with all the rigours of war, they ſecretly gained the count of Dunois, who poſſeſſed great authority with the Bretons; and having alſo engaged in their intereſts the prince of Orange, couſin-german to the dutcheſs, they gave him his liberty, and ſent him into Britanny. Theſe perſons, ſupported by other emiſſaries of France, prepared the minds of men for the great revolution projected, and diſplayed, tho' ſtill with many precautions, all the advantages of an union with the French monarchy. They repreſented to the barons of Britanny, that their country, harraſſed during ſo many years with perpetual war, had need of ſome repoſe, and of a ſolid and laſting peace with the only power that was formidable to them: That their alliance with Maximilian was not able to afford them

even

even preſent protection; and by uniting them cloſely with a power, which was rival to the greatneſs of France, fixed them in perpetual enmity with that powerful monarchy: That their near neighbourhood expoſed them firſt to the inroads of the enemy; and the happieſt event, which in ſuch a ſituation could befal them, would be to attain to peace, tho' by a final ſubjection to France, and by the loſs of that liberty, tranſmitted to them from their anceſtors: And that any other expedient, compatible with the honour of the ſtate, and their duty to their ſovereign, was preferable to a ſcene of ſuch diſorder and devaſtation. Chap. II. 1490.

THESE ſuggeſtions had influence on the Bretons: But the chief difficulty lay in ſurmounting the prejudices of the young dutcheſs herſelf. That princeſs had imbibed a ſtrong prejudice againſt the French nation, and particularly againſt Charles, who had been the author of all the calamities, which, from her earlieſt infancy, had befallen her family. She had alſo fixed her affections on Maximilian; and as ſhe now deemed him her husband, ſhe could not, ſhe thought, without incurring the greateſt guilt, and violating the moſt ſolemn engagements, contract a marriage with another perſon. In order to overcome her obſtinacy, Charles gave the Duke of Orleans his liberty, who, tho' formerly a ſuitor of the dutcheſs, was now contented to ingratiate himſelf with the King, by employing in his favour all the intereſt which he ſtill poſſeſſed in Britanny. The mareſchal Rieux and chancellor Montauban were reconciled by his negotiations; and theſe rival miniſters now concurred with the Prince of Orange, and the count of Dunois, in preſſing the concluſion of a marriage with Charles. By their ſuggeſtion, Charles advanced with a powerful army, and inveſted Rennes, at that time the reſidence of the Dutcheſs, who, aſſailed on all hands, and finding none to ſupport her in her inflexibility, at laſt opened the gates of the city, and agreed to eſpouſe the King of France. She was married at Langey in Touraine; conducted to St. Denis, where ſhe was crowned; and thence made her entry into Paris, amidſt the joyful acclamations of the people, who regarded this marriage as the moſt proſperous event that could have befallen their monarchy. 1491. Annexation of Britanny to France.

THE triumph and ſucceſs of Charles was the moſt ſenſible mortification to the King of the Romans. He had loſt a conſiderable territory, which he thought he had acquired, and an accompliſhed princeſs whom he had eſpouſed; he was affronted in the perſon of his daughter Margaret, who was ſent back to him, after ſhe had been treated during ſome years as Queen of France; he had reaſon to reproach himſelf with his own ſupine ſecurity, in neglecting the conſummation of his marriage, which was eaſily practicable for him, and which would have rendered

Chap. II. 1491. dered the tye indiſſoluble: Theſe conſiderations threw him into the moſt violent rage, which he vented in very indecent expreſſions; and he threatened France with an invaſion from the united arms of Auſtria, Spain, and England.

THE King of England had alſo juſt reaſon to reproach himſelf with miſconduct in this important tranſaction; and tho' the affair had terminated in a manner which he could not preciſely foreſee, his negligence, in leaving his moſt uſeful ally ſo long expoſed to the invaſion of ſuperior power, could not but appear on reflection the reſult of timid caution and narrow politics. As he valued himſelf very much on his extenſive foreſight and profound judgment, the aſcendant acquired over him, by a raw youth, ſuch as Charles, could not but give him the higheſt diſpleaſure, and prompt him to ſeek vengeance, after all remedy for his miſcarriage was become abſolutely impracticable. But he was farther actuated by avarice, a motive ſtill more predominant with him than either pride or revenge; and he ſought, even from his preſent diſappointments, the gratification of this ruling paſſion. On pretence of a French war, he iſſued a commiſſion for levying
7th July. a *Benevolence* on his people *; an arbitrary taxation, which had been aboliſhed by a recent law of Richard the third, and which was the more provoking, becauſe, tho' really raiſed by menaces and extortion, it was nevertheleſs pretended to be given by the voluntary conſent of the people. This violence fell chiefly on the commercial part of the nation, who were poſſeſſed of the ready money. London alone contributed to the amount of near 10,000 pounds. Archbiſhop Morton, the chancellor, inſtructed the commiſſioners to employ a dilemma, in which every one might be comprehended: If the perſons applied to lived frugally, they were told, that their parſimony muſt neceſſarily have enriched them: If their method of living was ſplendid and hoſpitable, they were concluded opulent on account of their expences. This device by ſome was called Chancellor Morton's fork, and by others his crutch.

So little apprehenſive was the King of a parliament, on account of his levying this arbitrary impoſition, that he ſoon after ſummoned that aſſembly to meet at
27th October. Weſtminſter; and he even expected to enrich himſelf farther by working on their paſſions and prejudices. He knew the reſentment which the Engliſh had conceived againſt France, on account of the conqueſt of Britanny; and he took care to
A parliament. inſiſt on that topic, in the ſpeech, which he himſelf pronounced to the parliament. He told them, that France, elevated with her late ſucceſſes, had even proceeded to a contempt of England, and had refuſed to pay the tribute, which Lewis the eleventh had ſtipulated to Edward the fourth: That it became ſo warlike a

* Rymer, Vol. XII. p. 446. Bacon ſays that the benevolence was levied with conſent of parliament, which is a miſtake.

nation

nation as the Engliſh to be rouzed by this indignity, and not to limit their pretenſions merely to repreſſing the preſent injury: That, for his part, he was determined to lay claim to the crown of France itſelf, and to maintain by force of arms ſo juſt a title tranſmitted to him by his gallant anceſtors: That Crecy, Poictiers, and Azincourt were ſufficient to inſtruct them in their ſuperiority over the enemy; nor did he deſpair of adding new names to the glorious catalogue: That a King of France had been priſoner at London, and a King of England had been crowned at Paris; events which ſhould animate them to an emulation of like glory with that enjoyed by their forefathers: That the domeſtic diſſenſions of England had been the ſole cauſe of her loſing theſe foreign dominions; and her preſent union and harmony would be the effectual means of recovering them: That where ſuch laſting honour was in view, and ſuch an important acquiſition, it became not brave men to repine at the advance of a little treaſure: And that, for his part, he was determined to make the war maintain itſelf, and hoped, by the invaſion of ſo opulent a kingdom as France, to increaſe, rather than diminiſh, the riches of the nation *. Chap. II. 1491.

NOTWITHSTANDING theſe magnificent vaunts of the King, all men of penetration concluded, from the perſonal character of the man, and ſtill more, from the ſituation of his affairs, that he had no ſerious intention of puſhing the war to ſuch extremity as he pretended. France was not now in the ſame condition as when ſuch ſucceſsful inroads had been made into her by the former Kings of England. The great fiefs were united to the crown; the princes of the blood were deſirous of peace and tranquillity; the kingdom abounded with able captains and veteran ſoldiers; and the general aſpect of its affairs ſeemed rather to threaten its neighbours, than to promiſe them any conſiderable advantages againſt it. The levity and vain-glory of Maximilian were ſupported by his pompous titles; but were ill ſeconded by military power, and ſtill leſs, by any revenue, proportioned to them. The politic Ferdinand, while he made a ſhow of war, was actually negotiating for peace; and rather than expoſe himſelf to any hazard, would accept of very moderate conceſſions from France. Even England was not free from domeſtic diſcontents; and in Scotland, the death of Henry's friend and ally, James the third, who had been murdered by his rebellious ſubjects, had made way for the ſucceſſion of his ſon, James the fourth, who was devoted to the French intereſt, and would ſurely be alarmed at any progreſs of the Engliſh arms. But all theſe obvious conſiderations had no influence with the parliament. Inflamed by the ideas of ſubduing France, and of inriching themſelves with the ſpoils of that 1492.

* Bacon, p. 601.

Chap. II. 1492.

kingdom, they gave into the ſnare prepared for them, and voted the ſupply which the King demanded. Two fifteenths were granted him; and the better to enable his vaſſals and nobility to attend him, an act was paſſed, empowering them to ſell their eſtates, without paying any fines for alienation.

THE nobility were univerſally ſeized with a deſire of military glory; and having credulouſly ſwallowed all the boaſts of the king, they dreamed of no leſs than carrying their triumphant arms to the gates of Paris, and putting the crown of France on Henry's head. Many of them borrowed large ſums or ſold off manors, that they might appear in the field with greater ſplendour, and lead out their followers in more complete order. The King croſſed the ſeas, and arrived at Calais on the ſixth of October, with an army of twenty-five thouſand foot and ſixteen hundred horſe, which he put under the command of the Duke of Bedford and the earl of Oxford: But as ſome inferred, from his opening the campaign in ſo late a ſeaſon, that peace would ſoon be concluded between the crowns, he was deſirous of ſuggeſting a contrary inference. "He had come over, he ſaid, to "make an entire conqueſt of France, which was not the work of one ſummer. "It was therefore of no conſequence at what ſeaſon he began the invaſion; eſpe- "cially as he had Calais ready for winter-quarters." As if he had ſeriouſly intended this enterprize, he inſtantly marched with his army into the enemy's country, and laid ſiege to Bulloigne: But notwithſtanding this appearance of a hoſtile diſpoſition, there had been ſecret advances made towards a peace above three months before; and commiſſioners had been appointed to treat of the terms. The better to reconcile the minds of men to this unexpected meaſure, the king's ambaſſadors arrived in the camp from the Low Countries, and informed him, that Maximilian was in no readineſs to join him; nor was any aſſiſtance to be hoped for from that quarter. Soon after, meſſengers came from Spain, and brought news of a peace concluded between that kingdom and France, in which Charles had made a ceſſion of the counties of Rouſſillon and Cerdagne to Ferdinand. Tho' theſe articles of intelligence were carefully diſperſed thro' the army, the King was ſtill apprehenſive, leſt a ſudden peace, after ſuch magnificent promiſes and high expectations, might expoſe him to great reproach. In order the more effectually to cover the intended meaſures, he ſecretly engaged the marquiſs of Dorſet, together with twenty-three perſons of condition, to preſent him a petition for his agreeing to a treaty with France. The pretence was founded on the late ſeaſon of the year, the difficulty of ſupplying the army at Calais during winter, the obſtacles which aroſe in the ſiege of Bulloigne, the deſertion of thoſe allies whoſe aſſiſtance had been moſt relied on: Events which might, all of them, have been foreſeen before the embarkation of the troops.

War with France.

Invaſion of France.

Chap. II. 1492.

In conſequence of theſe preparatory ſteps, the biſhop of Exeter and the lord Daubeney were ſent to confer at Eſtaples with the mareſchal de Cordes, and to put the laſt hand to the treaty. A few days ſufficed for this purpoſe: The demands of Henry were wholly pecuniary; and the King of France, who deemed the peaceable poſſeſſion of Britanny an equivalent for any money, and who was all on fire for his projected expedition into Italy, readily agreed to the propoſals made him. He engaged to pay Henry ſeven hundred and forty-five thouſand crowns, about one hundred and eighty-ſix thouſand pounds ſterling; partly as a reimburſement of the ſums advanced for Brittany, partly as arrears of the penſion due to Edward the fourth. And he ſtipulated a yearly penſion to Henry and his heirs of twenty-five thouſand crowns. Thus the King, as remarked by his hiſtorian, made profit upon his ſubjects for the war; and upon his enemies for the peace *. And the people agreed, that he had fulfilled his promiſe, when he ſaid to the parliament, that he would make the war maintain itſelf. Maximilian was comprehended in Henry's treaty, if he pleaſed to accept of it; but he diſdained to be in any reſpect beholden to an ally, of whom, he thought, he had reaſon to complain: He made a ſeparate peace with France, and obtained reſtitution of Artois, Franchecomte and Charolois, which had been given as the dowry of his daughter, when ſhe was affianced to the King of France.

3d of November. Peace with France.

The peace, concluded between England and France, was the more likely to continue, becauſe Charles, full of ambition and youthful hopes, bent all his attention to the ſide of Italy, and ſoon after undertook the conqueſt of Naples; an enterprize, which Henry regarded with the greater indifference, as Naples lay remote from him, and France had never, in any age, been ſucceſsful on that quarter. The King's authority was fully eſtabliſhed at home; and every rebellion, which had been attempted againſt him, had hitherto tended only to confound his enemies, and conſolidate his power and influence. His reputation for policy and conduct was every day augmenting; his treaſures had encreaſed even from the moſt unproſperous events; the hopes of all pretenders to his throne were cut off, as well by his marriage, as by the iſſue which it had brought him. In this promiſing ſituation, the King had reaſon to flatter himſelf with the proſpect of a durable peace and tranquillity: But his inveterate and indefatigable enemies, whom he had wantonly provoked, raiſed him up an adverſary, who kept him long in inquietude, and ſometimes even brought him into danger.

The dutcheſs of Burgundy, full of reſentment for the depreſſion of her family and its partizans, rather irritated than diſcouraged by the ill ſucceſs of her paſt

* Bacon, p. 605. Pol. Virg. p. 586.

Chap. II. 1492.

enterprizes, was determined at leaſt to diſturb that government, which ſhe found it ſo difficult to ſubvert. By means of her emiſſaries, ſhe propagated the report, that her nephew, Richard Plantagenet, duke of York, had eſcaped from the Tower when his elder brother was murdered, and that he lay ſtill ſomewhere concealed: and finding this rumour, however improbable, to be greedily received by the people, ſhe had been looking out for ſome young man, proper to perſonate that unfortunate prince.

Perkin Warbec.

THERE was one Oſbec or Warbec, a renegado Jew of Tournay, who had been carried by ſome buſineſs to London in the reign of Edward the fourth, and had there a ſon born to him. Having had opportunities of being known to the King, and obtaining his favour, he prevailed with that prince, whoſe manners were very affable, to ſtand godfather to his ſon, to whom he gave the name of Peter, corrupted after the Flemiſh manner into Peter-kin, or Perkin. It was by ſome believed, that Edward, among his other amorous adventures, had had a ſecret correſpondence with Warbec's wife; and from this incident people accounted for that reſemblance, which was afterwards remarked between young Perkin and that monarch *. Some years after the birth of this child, Warbec returned to Tournay; where Perkin his ſon remained not long, but by different accidents was carried from place to place, and his birth and fortunes became thereby unknown, and difficult to be traced by the moſt diligent enquiry. The variety of his adventures had happily favoured the natural verſatility and ſagacity of his genius; and he ſeemed to be a youth perfectly fitted to act any part, or aſſume any character. In this light he had been repreſented to the dutcheſs of Burgundy, who, ſtruck with the concurrence of ſo many circumſtances ſuited to her purpoſe, deſired to be made acquainted with the man, on whom ſhe began already to ground her hopes of ſucceſs. She found him to exceed her moſt ſanguine expectations; ſo beautiful did he appear in his perſon, ſo graceful in his air, ſo courtly in his addreſs, ſo full of docility and good ſenſe in his behaviour and converſation. The leſſons, which were neceſſary to be taught him, in order to his perſonating the duke of York, were ſoon learned by a youth of ſuch quick apprehenſion; but as the ſeaſon ſeemed not then favourable for his enterprize, Margaret, in order the better to conceal him, ſent him, under the care of Lady Brampton, into Portugal, where he remained a year, unknown to all the world.

His impoſture.

THE war, which was then ready to break out between France and England, ſeemed to afford a proper opportunity for the diſcovery of this new phænomenon; and Ireland, which ſtill retained its attachments to the houſe of York, was pitched on as the proper place for his firſt appearance †. He landed at Corke; and im-

* Bacon, p. 606. † Polyd. Virg. p. 589.

mediately

mediately assuming the name of Richard Plantagenet, drew to him partizans among that ignorant and credulous people. He wrote letters to the earls of Desmond and Kildare, inviting them to join his party: He dispersed every where the strange intelligence of his escape from his uncle Richard's cruelty; and men, fond of every thing new and wonderful, began to make him the general subject of their discourse, and even the object of their favour.

The news soon reached France; and Charles, prompted by the private solicitations of the dutchess of Burgundy, and the intrigues of one Frion, a secretary of Henry, who had deserted his service, sent Perkin an invitation to repair to him at Paris. He received him with all the marks of regard due to the duke of York; settled on him a handsome pension, assigned him magnificent lodgings, and in order to provide at once for his dignity and security, gave him a guard for his person, of which lord Congresall accepted the office of captain. The French courtiers readily embraced a fiction, which their sovereign thought it his interest to adopt: Perkin, both by his deportment and person, supported the prepossession, which was spread abroad, of his royal pedigree: And the whole kingdom was full of the accomplishments, as well as singular adventures and misfortunes, of the young Plantagenet. Wonders of this nature are commonly augmented at a distance. From France, the admiration and credulity diffused themselves into England: Sir George Neville, Sir John Taylor, and above a hundred gentlemen more came to Paris, in order to offer their service to the supposed duke of York, and to share his fortunes: And the impostor had now the appearance of a court attending him, and began to entertain hopes of final success in his undertakings.

When peace was concluded between France and England at Estaples, Henry applied to have Perkin put into his hands; but Charles, resolute not to betray a young man, of whatever birth, whom he had invited into his kingdom, would agree only to dismiss him. The pretended Plantagenet retired to the dutchess of Burgundy in Flanders, and craving her protection and assistance, offered to lay before her all the proofs of that birth, to which he laid claim. The princess affected ignorance of his pretensions; even put on the appearance of distrust; and having, as she said, been already deceived by Simnel's claim, she was determined never again to be seduced by any impostor. She desired before all the world to be instructed in his reasons for assuming the name which he bore; seemed to examine every circumstance with the most scrupulous nicety; put many particular questions to him; affected astonishment at his answers; and at last, after long and severe scrutiny, burst out into joy and admiration at his wonderful delivery, embraced him as her nephew, the true image of Edward, the sole heir of the Plantagenets, and the legitimate successor of the English throne. She immediately

He is avowed by the dutchess of Burgundy,

Chap. II. 1493.

diately assigned him an equipage, suited to his pretended birth; appointed him a guard of thirty halberdiers; engaged every one to pay court to him; and on all occasions honoured him with the appellation of the *White Rose of England*. The Flemings, moved by the authority, which Margaret, both from her rank and personal character, enjoyed among them, readily adopted the fiction of Perkin's royal descent: No surmize of his true birth was as yet heard of: Little contradiction was made to the prevailing opinion: And the English, from their great communication with the natives of the Low Countries, were every day more and more prepossessed in favour of the impostor.

and by many of the English nobility.

It was not the populace alone of England, that gave credit to Perkin's pretensions. Men of the highest birth and quality, disgusted with Henry's government, by which they found the nobility depressed, began to turn their eyes towards this new claimant, and some of them even entered into a correspondence with him. Lord Fitzwater, Sir Simon Mountfort, Sir Thomas Thwaites betrayed their inclination towards him: Sir William Stanley himself, lord chamberlain, who had been so active in raising Henry to the throne, moved either by blind credulity or a restless ambition, entertained the project of a revolt in favour of his enemy *. Sir Robert Clifford and William Barley were still more open in their measures: They went over to Flanders, offered their service to Perkin, and were introduced by the dutchess of Burgundy to his acquaintance. Clifford wrote back to England, that he knew perfectly the person of Richard duke of York, that this young man was undoubtedly that prince himself, and that no circumstance of his story was exposed to the least difficulty. Such positive intelligence, conveyed by a person of such high rank and character, was sufficient with many to put the matter beyond all question, and excited the wonder and attention even of the most indifferent. The whole nation was held in suspence; a regular conspiracy was formed against the King's authority; and a correspondence settled between the malecontents in Flanders and those in England.

The King was well informed of all these particulars; but agreeable to his character, which was both cautious and resolute, he proceeded very deliberately, but steadily, in counter-working the projects of his enemies. His first object was to ascertain the death of the real duke of York, and to confirm the opinion, which had always prevailed with regard to that event. Five persons had been employed by Richard in the murder of his nephews; Sir James Tirrel, to whom he had committed the government of the Tower for that purpose, and who had seen the dead princes; Forrest, Dighton and Slater who perpetrated the action; and the priest who buried the bodies. Tirrel and Dighton alone were alive, and they agreed in the same story; but as the priest was dead, and as the bodies had

* Bacon, p. 608.

been removed by Richard's orders from the place where they were firſt interred, and could not now be found, it was not in Henry's power to put the fact, ſo much as he wiſhed, beyond all doubt and controverſy. Chap. II. 1493.

He met at firſt with more difficulty, but was in the end more ſucceſsful, in detecting who this wonderful perſon was that thus boldly advanced pretenſions to his crown. He diſperſed his ſpies all over Flanders and England; he engaged many to pretend, that they had embraced Perkin's party; he directed them to inſinuate themſelves into the confidence of his friends; in proportion as they conveyed intelligence of any conſpirator, he bribed his retainers, his domeſtic ſervants, nay ſometimes his confeſſor, and by theſe means traced up ſome other confederate; Clifford himſelf he engaged by hopes of reward and pardon, to betray the ſecrets committed to him; the more truſt he gave any of his ſpies, the higher reſentment did he feign againſt them; ſome of them he even cauſed to be excommunicated and publicly anathematized, in order the better to procure them the confidence of his enemies: And in the iſſue, the whole plan of the conſpiracy was laid clearly before him; and the pedigree, adventures, life and converſation of the pretended duke of York. This latter part of the ſtory was immediately publiſhed for the ſatisfaction of the nation: The conſpirators he reſerved for a ſlower and more ſecure vengeance.

Meanwhile, he remonſtrated with the archduke Philip, on account of the countenance and protection, which was afforded in his dominions to ſo infamous an impoſture; contrary to treaties ſubſiſting between the ſovereigns, and to the mutual amity, which had ſo long been maintained by the ſubjects of both ſtates. Margaret had intereſt enough to get his applications rejected; on pretence that Philip had no authority over the demeſnes of the dutcheſs dowager. And the King, in reſentment of this injury, cut off all commerce with the Low Countries, baniſhed the Flemings from England, and recalled his own ſubjects from theſe provinces. Philip retaliated by like edicts; but Henry knew, that ſo mutinous a people as the Flemings would not long bear, in compliance with the humours of their prince, to be deprived of ſo beneficial a branch of commerce as that which they carried on with England. 1494.

He had it in his power to inflict more effectual puniſhment on his domeſtic enemies; and when his projects were ſufficiently matured, he failed not to make them feel the effects of his reſentment. Almoſt in the ſame inſtant, he arreſted Fitzwater, Mountfort, and Thwaites, together with William Daubeney, Robert Ratcliff, Thomas Creſſenor, and Thomas Aſtwood. All theſe were arraigned, convicted, and condemned for high treaſon, in adhering and promiſing aid to Perkin.

Chap. II. 1494.

kin. Mountfort, Ratcliff, and Daubeney were immediately executed: Fitzwater was sent over to Calais, and retained in custody; but having practised on his keeper for an escape, he soon after underwent the same fate. The rest were pardoned, together with William Worseley, dean of St. Paul's, and some others, who had been accused and examined, but not brought to public trial *.

GREATER and more solemn preparations were deemed requisite for the trial of Stanley, lord chamberlain, whose authority in the nation, whose domestic connexions with the King, as well as his former great services, seemed to secure him against any accusation or punishment. Clifford was directed to come over privately to England, and to throw himself at the King's feet, while placed at the council table; craving pardon for his past offences, and offering to atone for them by any services, which should be required of him. Henry told him, that the best proof he could give of penitence, and the only service he could now render him, was the full confession of his guilt, and the discovery of all his accomplices, however distinguished by rank or character. Encouraged by this exhortation, Clifford accused Stanley then present, as his chief abettor; and offered to lay before the council the whole proof of his guilt. Stanley himself could not discover more surprize than was affected by Henry on this occasion. He received the intelligence as absolutely false and incredible; that a man, to whom he was, in a great measure, beholden for his crown, and even for his life; a man, to whom, by every honour and favour, he had endeavoured to express his gratitude; whose brother, the earl of Derby, was the King's father-in-law; to whom he had even committed the trust of his person, by creating him lord chamberlain: That this man, enjoying his full confidence and affection, not actuated by any motive of discontent or apprehension, should engage in a conspiracy against him. Clifford was therefore exhorted to weigh well the consequences of this accusation; but as he persisted in the same positive asseverations, Stanley was committed to custody, and was soon after examined before the council †. He denied not the guilt imputed to him by Clifford; he did not even endeavour much to extenuate it; whether he thought that a frank and open confession would serve for an atonement, or trusted to his present connexions, and his former services, for pardon and security. But princes are often apt to regard great services as a ground of jealousy, especially if accompanied with a craving and restless disposition, in the person who has performed them. The general discontent also, and mutinous humour of the people, seemed to require some great example of severity. And as Stanley was one of the most opulent subjects in the kingdom, being possessed

Trial and execution of Stanley.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 592. † Bacon, p. 611. Polyd. Virg. p. 593.

of

of above three thouſand pounds a year in land, and forty thouſand marks in plate and money, beſides other property of great value, the proſpect of ſo rich a forfeiture was deemed no ſmall motive in Henry for proceeding to extremity againſt him. After ſix weeks delay, which was interpoſed in order to ſhew that the King was reſtrained by doubts and ſcruples; he was brought to his trial, condemned, and preſently after beheaded. Hiſtorians are not well agreed with regard to the crime which was proved againſt him. The general report is, that he ſhould have ſaid in confidence to Clifford, that, if he was ſure the young man, who appeared in Flanders, was really ſon to King Edward, he never would bear arms againſt him. This ſentiment might diſguſt Henry as implying a preference of the houſe of York to that of Lancaſter, but could ſcarcely be the ground, even in thoſe arbitrary times, of a ſentence of high treaſon againſt Stanley. It is more probable, therefore, as is aſſerted by ſome hiſtorians, that he had expreſsly engaged to aſſiſt Perkin, and had actually ſent him ſome ſupply of money. Chap. II. 1495. 15th of February.

THE fate of Stanley made great impreſſion on the whole kingdom, and ſtruck all Perkin's retainers with the deepeſt diſmay. From Clifford's deſertion, they found that all their ſecrets were diſcovered; and as it appeared, that Stanley, while he ſeemed to live in the greateſt confidence with the King, had been continually ſurrounded by ſpies, who reported and regiſtered every action which he committed, nay, every word which fell from him, a general diſtruſt took place, and all mutual confidence was deſtroyed, even among the moſt intimate friends and acquaintance. The jealous and ſevere temper of the King, together with his great reputation for ſagacity and penetration, kept men in awe, and quelled not only the movements of ſedition, but the very murmurs of faction. Libels, however, crept out againſt Henry's perſon and adminiſtration; and being greedily propagated, by every ſecret art, ſhowed that there ſtill remained among the people a conſiderable root of diſcontent, which wanted only a proper opportunity to diſcover itſelf.

BUT Henry continued more intent on increaſing the terrors of his people, than on gaining their affections. Truſting to the great ſucceſs which attended him in all his enterprizes, he gave every day, more and more, a looſe to his rapacious temper, and employed the arts of perverted law and juſtice, in order to exact fines and compoſitions from his people. Sir William Capel, alderman of London, was condemned on ſome penal ſtatutes to pay the ſum of 2743 pounds, and was obliged to compound for ſixteen hundred and fifteen. This was the firſt noted caſe of that nature; but it became a precedent, which prepared the

Chap. II. 1495. way for many others. The management, indeed, of theſe oppreſſive arts was the great ſecret of the King's adminiſtration. While he depreſſed the nobility, he exalted, and honoured and careſſed the lawyers; and by that means both beſtowed authority on the laws, and was enabled, whenever he pleaſed, to pervert them to his own advantage. His government was oppreſſive; but it was ſo much the leſs burthenſome, as, by extending his own authority, and curbing the nobles, he became in reality the ſole oppreſſor in his kingdom.

As Perkin found, that the King's authority gained ground daily among the people, and that his own pretenſions were becoming obſolete, he reſolved to attempt ſomething, which might revive the hopes and expectations of his partizans. Having gathered together a band of outlaws, pirates, robbers, and neceſſitous perſons of all nations, to the number of 600 men, he put to ſea with a reſolution of making a deſcent in England; and of exciting the common people to arms, ſince all his correſpondence with the nobility was cut off by Henry's vigilance and ſeverity. Information being brought him, that the King had made a progreſs to the north, he caſt anchor on the coaſt of Kent, and ſent ſome of his retainers aſhore, who invited the country to join him. The gentlemen of Kent gathered together ſome troops to oppoſe him; but they propoſed to do more eſſential ſervice than by repelling the invaſion: They carried the ſemblance of friendſhip to Perkin, and invited him to come himſelf aſhore, in order to take the command over them. But the wary youth, obſerving that they had more order and regularity in their movements than could be ſuppoſed in new levied forces, who had taken arms againſt eſtabliſhed authority, refuſed to commit himſelf into their hands; and the Kentiſh troops deſpairing of ſucceſs in their ſtratagem, ſet upon ſuch of his retainers, as were already landed; and beſides ſome who were ſlain and ſome who eſcaped, they took an hundred and fifty priſoners. Theſe were tried and condemned; and all of them executed, by order from the King, who was reſolved to uſe no mixture of lenity towards men of ſuch deſperate fortunes *.

A Parliament. THIS year a parliament was ſummoned in England, and another in Ireland; and ſome remarkable laws were paſſed in both countries. The Engliſh Parliament enacted, that no perſon who ſhould by arms or otherwiſe aſſiſt the King for the time being ſhould ever afterwards, either by courſe of law or act of Parliament, be attainted for ſuch an inſtance of obedience. This ſtatute might be expoſed to ſome blame, as favourable to uſurpers; were there any preciſe rules, which always, even during the moſt factious times, could determine the true ſucceſſor, and render every one inexcuſable, who did not ſubmit to him. But as the titles of princes are then the great ſubject of diſpute, and each party pleads

* Polydore Virgil, p. 595.

topics

topics in their own favour, it ſeems but equitable to ſecure thoſe who act in ſupport of public tranquillity, an object at all times of undoubted benefit and importance. Henry, conſcious of his diſputed title, promoted this law in order to ſecure his partizans againſt all events; but as he had himſelf obſerved a different practice with regard to Richard's adherents, he had reaſon to apprehend, that, during the violence which uſually enſues on public convulſions, his example, rather than his law, would, in caſe of a new revolution, be followed by his enemies. And the attempt to bind the legiſlature itſelf, by preſcribing rules to future parliaments, was plainly contradictory to the fundamental principles of political government. Chap. II. 1495.

THIS Parliament alſo paſſed an act, impowering the King to levy by courſe of law, all the ſums which any perſon had agreed to pay by way of benevolence: A ſtatute, by which that arbitrary method of taxation was indirectly authorized and juſtified.

THE King's authority appeared equally prevalent and uncontroulable in Ireland. Sir Edward Poynings had been ſent over with ſome troops into that country, with an intention of quelling the partizans of the houſe of York, and of reducing the natives to ſubjection. He was not ſupported with forces ſufficient for that important enterprize: The Iriſh, by flying into their woods, and moraſſes, and mountains, in ſome meaſure, eluded his efforts: But Poynings ſummoned a parliament at Dublin, where he was more ſucceſsful. He paſſed that memorable ſtatute, which ſtill bears his name, and which eſtabliſhes the authority of the Engliſh government in Ireland. By this ſtatute, all the former laws of England were made to be of force in Ireland; and no bill can be introduced into the Iriſh parliament, unleſs it previouſly receive the ſanction of the council of England. This latter law ſeems calculated for enſuring the dominion of the Engliſh over Ireland; but was really granted at the deſire of the Iriſh commons, who propoſed, by that means, to ſecure themſelves from the tyranny of their lords, particularly of ſuch lieutenants as were of Iriſh birth *.

WHILE Henry's authority was thus eſtabliſhed throughout his dominions, and general tranquillity prevailed, the whole continent was thrown into combuſtion by the French invaſion of Italy, and by the rapid ſucceſs which attended Charles in that raſh and ill-concerted enterprize. The Italians, who had entirely loſt the uſe of arms, and who, in the midſt of continual wars, had become every day more unwarlike, were aſtoniſhed to meet with an enemy, that made the field of battle, not a pompous tournament, but a ſcene of blood, and fought at the

* Sir John Davis, p. 235.

Chap. II. 1495. hazard of their own lives, the death of their enemy. Their effeminate troops were diſſipated every where on the approach of the French army: Their beſt fortified cities opened their gates: Kingdoms and ſtates were in an inſtant overturned: And thro' the whole length of Italy, which the French penetrated without reſiſtance, they ſeemed rather to be taking quarters in their own country, than making conqueſts over an enemy. The maxims, which the Italians, during that age, followed in negotiations, were as ill calculated to ſupport their ſtates, as the habits to which they were addicted in war. A treacherous, deceitful, and inconſtant ſyſtem of politics prevailed; and even thoſe ſmall remains of fidelity and honour, which were preſerved in the councils of the other European princes, were ridiculed in Italy, as proofs of ignorance and ruſticity. Ludovico, duke of Milan, who invited the French to invade Naples, had never deſired nor expected their ſucceſs; and was the firſt alarmed at the proſperous iſſue of thoſe projects, which he himſelf had concerted. By his intrigues a league was formed among ſeveral potentates to oppoſe the progreſs of Charles's conqueſts, and ſecure their own independency. This league was compoſed of Ludovico himſelf, the pope, Maximilian King of the Romans, Ferdinand of Spain, and the republic of Venice. Henry too, entered into the confederacy; but was not put to any expence or trouble in conſequence of his engagements. The King of France, terrified by ſo powerful a combination, retired from Naples with the greateſt part of his army, and returned to France. The forces, which he left in his new conqueſts, partly by the revolt of the inhabitants, partly by the invaſion of the Spaniards, were ſoon after ſubdued; and the whole kingdom of Naples ſuddenly returned to its allegiance under Ferdinand, ſon to Alphonſo, who had been ſuddenly expelled by the irruption of the French. Ferdinand died ſoon after; and left his uncle, Frederic, in peaceable poſſeſſion of the throne.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Perkin returns to Scotland.——Inſurrection in the Weſt.——Battle of Blackheath.——Truce with Scotland.——Perkin taken priſoner.——Perkin executed.——The earl of Warwic executed.——Marriage of prince Arthur with Catherine of Arragon.——His death.——Marriage of the princeſs Margaret with the King of Scotland.——Oppreſſions of the People.——A Parliament.——Arrival of the King of Caſtile.——Intrigues of the earl of Suffolk.——Sickneſs of the King——his death——and character.——His laws.

Chap. III. 1495.

AFTER Perkin was repulſed from the coaſt of Kent, he retired into Flanders; butas he found it impoſſible to find ſubſiſtence for himſelf and his followers, while he remained in tranquillity, he ſoon after made an attempt upon Ireland, which had always appeared forward to join every invader of Henry's authority. But Poynings had now put the affairs of that iſland in ſo good a poſture, that Perkin met with little ſucceſs; and being tired of the ſavage life, which he was obliged to lead, while ſkulking among the wild Iriſh, he bent his courſe towards Scotland, and preſented himſelf to James the fourth, who then governed that kingdom. He had been previouſly recommended to that prince by the King of France, who was diſguſted at Henry for entering into the league againſt him; and this recommendation was even ſeconded by Maximilian, who, tho' one of the confederates, ſtood on ill terms with the King, on account of his prohibition of commerce with the Low Countries. The countenance given to Perkin by theſe princes, procured him a favourable reception with the King of Scotland, who aſſured him, that whatever he were, he never ſhould repent the putting himſelf into his hands*. The inſinuating addreſs and plauſible behaviour of the youth himſelf ſeem even to have gained him credit and authority. James, whom years had not yet taught diſtruſt and caution, was ſeduced to believe the ſtory of Perkin's birth and adventures; and he carried his confidence ſo far as to give him in marriage the lady Catherine Gordon, daughter of the Earl of Huntley, and a near kinſwoman of his own; a young lady too, eminent for virtue as well as beauty.

Perkin retires to Scotland.

* Bacon, p. 615. Pol. Virg. p. 596, 597.

Chap. III. 1496. THERE ſubſiſted at that time a great jealouſy between the courts of England and Scotland; and James was probably the more forward on that account to adopt any fiction, which, he thought, might reduce his enemy to diſtreſs or difficulty. He ſuddenly reſolved to make an inroad into England, attended with ſome of the borderers; and he carried Perkin along with him, in hopes, that the appearance of the pretended prince might raiſe an inſurrection in the northern counties. Perkin himſelf diſperſed a manifeſto, in which he ſet forth his own ſtory, and craved the aſſiſtance of all his ſubjects in expelling the uſurper, whoſe tyranny and mal-adminiſtration, whoſe depreſſion of the nobility by the elevation of mean perſons, whoſe oppreſſion of the people by multiplied impoſitions and vexations, had juſtly, he ſaid, rendered him odious to all men. But Perkin's pretenſions, attended by repeated diſappointments, were now become ſtale in the eyes even of the populace; and the hoſtile diſpoſitions, which ſubſiſted between the kingdoms, rendered a prince, ſupported by the Scots, but an unwelcome preſent to the Engliſh nation. The ravages alſo, committed by the borderers, accuſtomed to licence and diſorder, ſtruck a terror into all men; and made the people prepare rather for repelling the invaders than for joining them. Perkin, that he might ſupport his pretenſions to royal birth, feigned great compaſſion for the miſery of his plundered ſubjects; and publicly remonſtrated with his ally againſt the depredations exerciſed by the Scots army *. But James told him, that he doubted his concern was employed only in behalf of his enemy, and that he was anxious to preſerve what never ſhould belong to him. That prince now began to perceive, that his attempt would be fruitleſs; and hearing of an army, which was on its march to attack him, he thought proper to retreat into his own country.

THE King diſcovered little anxiety to procure either reparation or vengeance for this inſult committed on him by the Scots nation: His chief concern was to draw advantage from it, by the pretence which it would afford him to levy impoſitions on his own ſubjects. He ſummoned a Parliament, to whom he made bitter complaints againſt the irruption of the Scots, the abſurd impoſture which was countenanced by that nation, the cruel devaſtation which they had ſpread in the northern counties, and the multiplied inſults which had thus been offered both to the King and kingdom of England. The Parliament made the expected return to this diſcourſe of the King, by granting him a ſubſidy to the amount of 120,000 pounds, together with two fifteenths. After making this grant, they were diſmiſſed.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 598.

THE

Chap. III. 1497.

THE vote of parliament for impoſing the tax was without much difficulty procured by the authority of Henry; but he found it not ſo eaſy to levy the money upon his ſubjects. The people, who were acquainted with the immenſe treaſures amaſſed by the King, could ill brook the new impoſitions raiſed on every ſlight occaſion; and it is probable, that the flaw, which was univerſally known to lie in his title, made his reign the more ſubject to inſurrections and rebellions. When the ſubſidy began to be levied in Cornwal, the inhabitants, numerous and poor, robuſt and courageous, murmured againſt a tax, occaſioned by a ſudden inroad of the Scots, from which they eſteemed themſelves entirely ſecure, and which had uſually been repelled by the force of the northern counties. Their ill humour was farther incited by one Michael Joſeph, a farrier of Bodmin, a notable, talking fellow, who, by thruſting himſelf forward on every occaſion, and being loudeſt in every complaint againſt the government, had acquired an authority among theſe rude people. Thomas Flammoc too, a lawyer, who had become the oracle of the neighbourhood, encouraged the ſedition, by informing them, that the tax, tho' impoſed by Parliament, was entirely illegal; that the northern nobility, were obliged, by their tenures, to defend the nation againſt the Scots; and that if theſe new impoſitions were tamely ſubmitted to, the avarice of Henry and of his courtiers would ſoon render the burthern intolerable to the nation. A petition, he ſaid, muſt be delivered to the King, ſeconded by ſuch force as would give it authority; and in order to procure the concurrence of the reſt of the kingdom, care muſt be taken, by their orderly deportment, to ſhew that they had nothing in view but the public good, and the redreſs of all thoſe grievances, under which the people had ſo long laboured.

Inſurrection in the Weſt.

ENCOURAGED by theſe ſpeeches, the multitude flocked together, and armed themſelves with axes, bills, bows, and ſuch weapons as country people are uſually poſſeſſed of. Flammoc and Joſeph were choſen their leaders. They ſoon conducted the Corniſh through the county of Devon, and reached that of Somerſet. At Taunton the rebels killed in their fury an officious and eager commiſſioner of the ſubſidy, whom they called the provoſt of Perin. When they reached Wells, they were joined by lord Audley, a nobleman of an antient family, popular in his deportment, but vain, ambitious, and reſtleſs in his temper. He had from the beginning entertained a ſecret correſpondence with the firſt movers of the inſurrection; and was now joyfully received by them as their leader. Proud of the countenance given them by ſo conſiderable a nobleman, they puſhed on their march; breathing deſtruction to the King's miniſters and favourites, particularly Morton, now a cardinal, and Sir Reginald Bray, who were deemed his moſt active inſtruments in all his oppreſſions. Amidſt their rage againſt the adminiſtration, they carefully followed the di-

Chap. III. 1497.

rections given them by their leaders; and as they met with no reſiſtance, they committed, during their march, no violence or diſorder.

THE rebels had been told by Flammoc, that the inhabitants of Kent, as they had ever, during all ages, remained unſubdued, and had even maintained their independancy during the Norman conqueſt, would ſurely embrace their party, and declare themſelves for a cauſe, which was no other than that of public good and general liberty. But the Kentiſh people had very lately diſtinguiſhed themſelves by repelling Perkin's invaſion; and having received from the King many gracious acknowledgements for this ſervice, their affections were, by that means, much conciliated to his government. It was eaſy therefore, for the earl of Kent, lord Abergavenny, and lord Cobham, who poſſeſſed great authority in thoſe parts, to retain the people in obedience; and the Corniſh rebels, though they pitched their camp near Eltham, at the very gates of London, and invited all the people to join them, got reinforcement from no quarter. There wanted not diſcontents every where, but no one would take part in ſo raſh and ill-concerted an enterprize; and the ſituation in which the King's affairs then ſtood, diſcouraged even the boldeſt and moſt daring.

HENRY, in order to oppoſe the Scots, had already levied an army, which he put under the command of Lord Daubeney, the chamberlain; and ſo ſoon as he heard of the Corniſh inſurrection, he ordered it to march ſouthwards, and ſuppreſs the rebels. Not to leave the northern frontier defenceleſs, he diſpatched thither the earl of Surry, who ſummoned out the forces on the borders, and made head againſt the enemy. Henry found here the concurrence of the three moſt fatal incidents, which can befal a monarchy; a foreign enemy, a domeſtic rebellion, and a pretender to his throne; but he enjoyed great reſources in his army and treaſure, and ſtill more, in the intrepidity and courage of his own temper. He gave not, however, immediately full ſcope to his military ſpirit. On other occaſions, he had always haſtened to a deciſion, and it was an uſual ſaying with him, *that he deſired but to ſee his rebels:* But as the Corniſh inſurgents behaved in an inoffenſive manner, and committed no ſpoil on the country; as they received no acceſſion of force on their march or in their incampment; and as ſuch haſty and popular tumults might be expected to diminiſh every moment by delay; he took poſt in London, and carefully prepared the means of enſuring the victory.

AFTER all his forces were collected, he divided them into three bodies, and marched out to aſſail the enemy. The firſt body, commanded by the earl of Oxford, and under him by the earls of Eſſex and Suffolk, were appointed to place themſelves behind the hill on which the rebels were encamped: The ſecond

Battle of Blackheath.

and

and moſt conſiderable Henry put under the command of Lord Daubeney, and ordered him to attack the enemy in front, and bring on the action. The third, he kept as a body of reſerve about his own perſon, and took poſt in St. George's field; where he ſecured the city, and could eaſily, as occaſion ſerved, either reſtore the fight or finiſh the victory. To put the enemy off their guard, he had ſpread a report that he was not to attack them till ſome days after; and the better to confirm them in this opinion, he began not the action till near the evening. Daubeney beat a detachment of the rebels from Deptford-bridge; and before the main body could be in order to receive him, he had gained the aſcent of the hill, and placed himſelf in array before them. They were very formidable for their numbers, being ſixteen thouſand ſtrong, and were not defective in valour; but being tumultuary troops, ill armed, and unprovided of cavalry or artillery, they were but an unequal match for the King's forces. Daubeney began the attack with courage, and even with a contempt of the enemy, which had almoſt proved fatal to him. He ruſhed into the midſt of them, and was taken priſoner; but ſoon after was relieved by his own troops. After ſome reſiſtance, the rebels were broke, and put to flight *. Lord Audley, Flammoc, and Joſeph, their leaders, were taken, and all three executed. The latter ſeemed even to exult in his end, and boaſted, with a prepoſterous ambition, that he ſhould make a figure in hiſtory. The rebels, being ſurrounded on every ſide by the King's troops, were almoſt all made priſoners; and immediately diſmiſſed without farther puniſhment: Whether, that Henry was ſatisfied with the victims who had fallen in the field, and who amounted to near two thouſand, or that he pitied the ignorance and ſimplicity of the multitude, or favoured them on account of their inoffenſive behaviour, or was pleaſed that they had never, during their inſurrection, diſputed his title, and had ſhewn no attachment to the houſe of York, the moſt capital crime of which in his eyes they could have been guilty.

Chap. III. 1497.

22d of June.

The Scottiſh King was not idle during theſe commotions in England. He levied a conſiderable army, and ſat down before the caſtle of Norham in Northumberland; but found that place, by the precaution of Fox, biſhop of Durham, ſo well provided both in men and ammunition, that he made little or no progreſs in the ſiege. Hearing that the Earl of Surrey had collected ſome forces, and was advancing upon him, he retreated backwards into his own country, and left the frontiers expoſed to the inroads of the Engliſh general, who beſieged and took Aiton, a ſmall caſtle lying a few miles beyond Berwic. Theſe unſucceſsful or frivolous attempts on both ſides prognoſticated a ſpeedy end to the war; and Henry, notwithſtanding his ſuperior force, was no leſs deſirous than James of terminating

* Polydore Virgil, p. 601.

Chap. III. 1497. the differences between the nations. Not to depart, however, from his dignity, by making the firſt advances towards peace, he employed in this friendly office Peter Hialas, a man of addreſs and learning, who had come to him as ambaſſador from Ferdinand and Iſabella, and who was charged with a commiſſion of negotiating the marriage of the infanta Catherine, their daughter, with Arthur prince of Wales *.

Hialas took a journey northwards, and offered his mediation between James and Henry, as miniſter of a prince, who was in alliance with both potentates. Commiſſioners were ſoon appointed to meet, and confer on the terms of accommodation. The firſt demand of the Engliſh was, that Perkin ſhould be put into their hands; but James replied, that he himſelf was no judge of Perkin's pretenſions, but having received him as a ſupplicant, and promiſed him protection, he was determined not to betray a man, whatever he was, who had truſted to his good faith and his generoſity. The next demand of the Engliſh met with no better reception: They required reparation for the ravages committed by the late inroads into England: The Scots commiſſioners replied, that the ſpoils were like water ſpilt upon the ground, which never could be recovered, and that Henry's ſubjects were better able to bear the loſs than their maſter's to repair it. Henry's commiſſioners next propoſed, that the two Kings ſhould have an interview at Newcaſtle, in order to adjuſt all differences; but James ſaid, that he meant to treat of a peace, not to go a begging for it. Leſt the conferences ſhould break off altogether without effect, a truce was concluded for ſome months; and James perceiving, that while Perkin remained in Scotland, he never ſhould enjoy a ſolid peace with Henry, privately deſired him to depart the kingdom.

Truce with Scotland.

Access was now barred Perkin into the Low Countries; his uſual retreat in all his diſappointments. The Flemiſh merchants, who felt ſeverely the loſs reſulting from their want of commerce with England, had made ſuch intereſt in the arch-duke's council, that commiſſioners were ſent to London, in order to treat of an accommodation. The Flemiſh court agreed that all Engliſh rebels ſhould be excluded the Low Countries; and in this prohibition the demeſnes of the dutcheſs dowager were expreſsly comprehended. When this principal article was agreed to, all the other terms were eaſily adjuſted. A treaty of commerce was finiſhed, which was favourable to the Flemings, and to which they gave long the appellation of *Intercurſus magnus*, the great treaty. And when the Engliſh merchants returned to their uſual abode at Antwerp, they were publicly received, as in proceſſion, with great joy and feſtivity.

* Polydore Virgil, p. 603.

Perkin

Chap. III. 1497.

PERKIN was a Fleming by deſcent, tho' born in England; and it might therefore be doubted, whether he was comprehended in the treaty between the two nations: But as he muſt diſmiſs all his Engliſh retainers if he took ſhelter in the Low Countries, and as he was ſure of a cold reception, if not bad uſage, among a people who were determined to keep on terms of friendſhip with the court of England; he thought fit rather to hide himſelf, during ſome time, in the wilds and faſtneſſes of Ireland. Impatient however of a retreat, which was both diſagreeable and dangerous, he held conſultations with his followers, Herne, Skelton, and Aſtley, three broken tradeſmen; and by their advice, he reſolved to try the affections of the Corniſh, whoſe mutinous diſpoſition, notwithſtanding the King's lenity ſtill ſubſiſted, after the ſuppreſſion of their rebellion. No ſooner did he appear at Bodmin in Cornwal, than the populace, to the number of three thouſand men, flocked to his ſtandard; and Perkin, elated with this appearance of ſucceſs, took on him, for the firſt time, the appellation of Richard the fourth, King of England. Not to ſuffer the expectations of his followers to languiſh, he preſented himſelf before Exeter; and by many fair promiſes, invited that city to join his cauſe. Finding that the inhabitants ſhut their gates againſt him, he laid ſiege to the place; but being unprovided of artillery, ammunition, and of every thing requiſite for that attempt, he made no progreſs in his undertaking. Meſſengers were ſent to the King, informing him of this inſurrection; and the citizens of Exeter meanwhile were determined to hold out to the laſt extremity, in expectation of receiving ſuccour from the known vigilance of that monarch.

WHEN Henry was informed that Perkin was landed in England, he expreſſed great joy, and prepared himſelf with alacrity to attack him, in hopes of being able, at laſt, to put a period to a pretenſion, which had ſo long given him vexation and inquietude. All the courtiers, ſenſible that their activity on this occaſion would be the moſt acceptable ſervice which they could render the King, prepared themſelves for the enterprize, and forwarded his preparations. The lords Daubeney, and Broke, with Sir Rice ap Thomas, haſtened forward with a ſmall body of troops to the relief of Exeter. The Earl of Devonſhire, and the moſt conſiderable gentlemen in the county of that name, took arms of their own accord, and marched to join the King's generals. The Duke of Buckingham put himſelf at the head of a troop of young nobility and gentry, who ſerved as volunteers, and who longed for an opportunity of diſplaying their courage and their loyalty. The King himſelf prepared to follow with a conſiderable army; and thus all England ſeemed united againſt a pretender, who had at firſt engaged their attention, and divided their affections.

Chap. III. 1497. PERKIN, informed of these great preparations, immediately broke up the siege of Exeter, and retired to Taunton. Tho' his followers now amounted to the number of near seven thousand men, and seemed still resolute to defend his cause, he himself despaired of success, and secretly withdrew to the sanctuary of Beaulieu in the new forest. The Cornish rebels submitted themselves to the King's mercy, and found that it was not yet exhausted in their behalf. Except a few persons of desperate fortunes, who were executed, and some others who were severely fined, all the rest were dismissed with impunity. The lady Catherine Gordon, wife to Perkin, fell into the conqueror's hands, and was treated with a generosity, which does him honour. He soothed her mind with many tokens of regard, placed her in a reputable station about the Queen, and assigned her a pension, which she enjoyed even under his successor.

HENRY next deliberated what course to take with Perkin himself. Some counselled him to make the privileges of the church yield to reasons of state, to take him by violence from the sanctuary, to inflict on him the punishment due to his temerity, and thus at once to put an end to an imposture which had long disturbed the government, and which the credulity of the people, and the artifices of malecontents were still capable of reviving. But the King deemed not the matter of such importance as to merit so violent a remedy. He employed some persons to deal with Perkin, and persuade him, under promise of pardon, to deliver himself into the King's hands *. The King conducted him in a species of mock triumph to London. As Perkin passed along the road, and through the streets of that city, men of all ranks flocked about him, and the populace treated with the highest derision his fallen fortunes. They seemed desirous of revenging themselves by their insults for the shame which their former belief of his impostures had thrown upon them. Tho' the eyes of the nation were generally opened with regard to Perkin's real parentage and station, Henry thought proper to require of him a confession of his life and adventures; and he ordered the account of the whole to be published soon after for the satisfaction of the public. But as his regard to decency made him suppress entirely the share which the Dutchess of Burgundy had had in contriving and conducting the imposture, the people, who knew that she had been the chief instrument in the whole affair, were inclined, on account of the silence on that head, to pay the less credit to the authenticity of the narrative.

Perkin taken prisoner.

1498.

1499. BUT Perkin, tho' his life was granted him, was still detained in custody; and keepers were appointed to guard him. Impatient of confinement, he broke loose from his keepers, and flying to the sanctuary of Shyne, put himself into the hands

* Polydore Virgil, p. 606.

of the prior of that monaſtery. The prior had obtained great credit by his character of ſanctity; and he prevailed with the King again to grant a pardon to Perkin. But in order to reduce him to ſtill greater contempt, he was ſet in the ſtocks at Weſtminſter and Cheapſide, and obliged in both places to read aloud to the people the confeſſion which had been formerly publiſhed in his name. He was then thrown into the Tower, where his habits of reſtleſs intrigue and enterprize ſtill followed him. He inſinuated himſelf into the intimacy of four ſervants of Sir John Digby, lieutenant of the Tower; and, by their means, opened a correſpondence with the earl of Warwic, who was confined to the ſame priſon. That unfortunate prince, who had from his earlieſt infancy been ſhut up from the commerce of men, and who was ignorant even of the moſt common affairs of life, had fallen into a ſimplicity which made him ſuſceptible of any impreſſions. The continued dread alſo of the more violent effects of Henry's tyranny, joined to the natural love of liberty, engaged him to embrace a project for his eſcape, by the murder of the lieutenant; and Perkin offered to conduct the whole enterprize. The conſpiracy eſcaped not the King's vigilance: It was even very generally believed, that the ſcheme was laid by himſelf, in order to draw Perkin and Warwic into the ſnare: But the ſubſequent execution of two of Digby's ſervants for the contrivance, ſeems to clear the King of that imputation, which was indeed founded more on the general idea entertained of his character, than on any poſitive evidence. Chap. III. 1499.

Perkin, by this new attempt, after ſo many enormities, had rendered himſelf totally unworthy of mercy; and he was accordingly arraigned, condemned, and ſoon after hanged at Tyburn, perſiſting ſtill in the confeſſion of his impoſture *. Perkin executed.

Stowe, Baker, Speed, Biondi, Holingſhed, Bacon. Some late writers have been ſo whimſical as to doubt whether Perkin was an impoſtor, and even to aſſert him to be the real Richard Plantagenet, duke of York. But to refute this fancy, we need but reflect on the few following particulars. 1. Had not the queen mother, and the other heads of the York party, been fully aſſured of the death of both the young princes, would they have agreed to call over the earl of Richmond, the head of the Lancaſtrian party, and marry him to the princeſs Elizabeth? 2. The ſtory told conſtantly by Perkin of his eſcape, is utterly incredible, that thoſe who were ſent to murder his brother took pity on him, and granted him his liberty. 3. What became of him during the courſe of ſeven years, from his ſuppoſed death till his appearance in Ireland in 1491? Why was not the queen mother, the dutcheſs of Burgundy, and the other friends of the family applied to, during that time, for his ſupport and education? 4. Tho' the Dutcheſs of Burgundy at laſt acknowledged him for her nephew, ſhe had loſt all pretence to authority by her former acknowledgment and ſupport of Lambert Simnel, an avowed impoſtor. It is remarkable, that Mr. Carte, in order to preſerve the weight of the dutcheſs's teſtimony, in favour of Perkin, ſuppreſſes entirely this material fact. A remarkable effect of party prejudices, and the author's deſire of blackening Henry the ſeventh, whoſe hereditary title to the crown was defective. 5. Perkin himſelf confeſſed his impoſture more than once, and read his confeſſion before the whole

Chap. III. 1499. It happened about that very time, that one Wilford, a cordwainer's ſon, encouraged by the ſurprizing credit which had been given to other impoſtures, had undertaken to perſonate the earl of Warwic; and a prieſt had even ventured from the pulpit to recommend his cauſe to the people, who ſeemed ſtill to retain a propenſity to adopt it. This incident ſerved Henry as an apology for his ſeverity towards that unfortunate prince. He was brought to trial, and accuſed, not of contriving his eſcape, (for as he was committed for no crime, the deſire of liberty muſt have been regarded as natural and innocent) but of forming deſigns to diſturb the government, and raiſe an inſurrection among the people. Warwic confeſſed the indictment, was condemned, and the ſentence was executed upon him.

The earl of Warwic executed. 21ſt of November.

THIS violent tyranny, the great ſtain of Henry's reign, by which he deſtroyed the laſt remaining male of the line of Plantagenet, begot great diſcontent among the people, who ſaw an unhappy prince, that had long been denied all the privileges of his high birth, even cut off from the common benefits of nature, now at laſt deprived of life itſelf, merely for reſiſting that oppreſſion under which he laboured. In vain did Henry endeavour to alleviate the odium of this guilt, by ſharing it with his ally, Ferdinand of Arragon, who, he ſaid, had ſcrupled to give his daughter Catherine in marriage to Arthur, while any prince of the houſe of York remained alive. Men, on the contrary, felt higher indignation at ſeeing a young prince ſacrificed, not to law and juſtice, but to the jealous politics of two ſubtle and crafty tyrants.

BUT tho' theſe diſcontents feſtered in the minds of men, they were ſo checked by Henry's watchful policy and ſteady ſeverity, that they ſeemed not to weaken his government; and foreign princes, deeming his throne now entirely ſecure, payed him rather the greater courtſhip and attention. The arch-duke Philip, in particular, deſired an interview with the King; and this monarch, who had paſſed over to Calais, agreed to meet him at St. Peter's church near that city. The arch-duke, on his approaching the King, made haſte to alight, and offered to hold Henry's ſtirrup; a mark of condeſcenſion which that prince would not admit of. He called the King *father*, *patron*, *protector*; and by his whole behaviour expreſſed a ſtrong deſire of conciliating the friendſhip of England. The

whole people. It is pretended that this confeſſion was drawn from him by torture; but no antient hiſtorian gives any ground for this ſurmiſe. 6. He renewed his confeſſion at the foot of the gibbet on which he was executed. 7. After Henry the eighth's acceſſion, the titles of the houſe of York and Lancaſter were fully confounded, and there was no longer any neceſſity for defending Henry the ſeventh and his title; yet all the hiſtorians of that time, when the events were recent, ſome of theſe hiſtorians too, ſuch as Sir Thomas More, of the higheſt authority, agree in treating Perkin as an impoſtor.

duke

duke of Orleans had ſucceeded to the kingdom of France under the appellation of Lewis the twelfth; and having carried his arms into Italy, and ſubdued the dutchy of Milan, his progreſs begot jealouſy in Maximilian, Philip's father, as well as in Ferdinand, his father-in-law. By the council, therefore, of theſe monarchs, the young prince endeavoured by every art to acquire the amity of Henry, whom they regarded as the chief counterpoize to the greatneſs of France. No particular plan however of alliance ſeems to have been concerted between theſe two princes in their interview: All paſſed in general profeſſions of affection and regard; at leaſt, in remote projects of a cloſer union, by the future intermarriages of their children, who were then in a ſtate of infancy. Chap. III. 1499.

THE pope too, Alexander the ſixth, neglected not the friendſhip of a monarch, whoſe reputation was ſpread over all Europe. He ſent a nuntio to England, who exorted the King to take part in the great alliance projected for the recovery of the Holy Land, and to lead in perſon his forces againſt the Turk. The general frenzy for cruſades was now entirely exhauſted in Europe; but it was ſtill thought a neceſſary piece of decency to pretend zeal for thoſe pious enterprizes. Henry regretted the diſtance of his ſituation, which rendered it inconvenient for him to expoſe his perſon in defence of the chriſtian cauſe. He promiſed, however, his utmoſt aſſiſtance by aids and contributions; and rather than the pope ſhould go alone to the holy wars, unaccompanied by any monarch, he even promiſed to overlook all other conſiderations, and to attend him in perſon. He only required as a neceſſary condition, that all differences ſhould be previouſly compoſed among chriſtian princes, and that ſome ſea-port towns in Italy ſhould be put into his hands for his retreat and ſecurity. It was eaſy to conclude from this anſwer, that Henry had determined with himſelf not to intermeddle in any wars againſt the Turk: But as a great name, without any real aſſiſtance, is ſometimes of ſervice, the Knights of Rhodes, who were at that time eſteemed the bulwark of Chriſtendom, choſe the King protector of their order. 1500.

BUT the prince, whoſe alliance Henry valued the moſt, was that of Ferdinand of Arragon, whoſe vigorous and ſteady policy, always attended with ſucceſs, had rendered him, in many reſpects, the moſt conſiderable monarch in Europe. There was alſo a remarkable ſimilarity of character between theſe two princes: Both were full of craft, intrigue, and deſign; and tho' a reſemblance of this nature be a ſlender foundation of confidence and friendſhip, where the intereſts of the parties in the leaſt interfere; yet ſuch was the ſituation of Henry and Ferdinand, that no jealouſy ever on any occaſion aroſe between them. The King had now the ſatisfaction of compleating a marriage, which had been projected and negotiated during the courſe of ſeven years, between Arthur prince of Wales and the 1501. Marriage of prince Arthur with Catherine of Arragon. 12th of November.

Chap. III. 1502. the infanta Catherine, fourth daughter of Ferdinand and Iſabella; he near ſixteen years of age, ſhe eighteen. But this marriage proved in the iſſue unproſperous. 2d of April. His death. The young prince, a few months after, ſickened and died, very much regretted by the whole nation. Henry, deſirous to continue his alliance with Spain, and alſo unwilling to reſtore Catherine's dowry, which was two hundred thouſand ducats, obliged his ſecond ſon Henry, whom he created prince of Wales, to be contracted to the princeſs. The prince made all the oppoſition which a youth of twelve years of age was capable of; but as the King perſiſted in his reſolution, the eſpouſals were at laſt, by means of the pope's diſpenſation, concluded between the parties: An event, which was afterwards attended with the moſt important conſequences.

Marriage of the princeſs Margaret with the King of Scotland. THE ſame year, another marriage was concluded, which was alſo, in the next age, productive of great events: The marriage of Margaret, the King's eldeſt daughter, with James King of Scotland. This alliance had been negotiated during three years, tho' interrupted by ſeveral broils; and Henry hoped, from the completion of it, to remove all ſource of diſcord with that neighbouring kingdom, by whoſe animoſity England had been ſo often infeſted. When this marriage was deliberated on in the Engliſh council, ſome objected, that England might, by means of that alliance, fall under the dominion of Scotland. "No;" replied Henry, "Scotland, in that event, would only become an acceſſion to "England." Amidſt theſe proſperous events, the King met with a domeſtic calamity, which made not ſuch impreſſion on him as it merited. His queen died in child-bed; and the infant lived not long after. This princeſs was deſervedly a great favourite of the nation; and the general affection for her increaſed, on account of the harſh treatment, which, it was thought, ſhe met with from her conſort.

1503. 11th of February.

THE ſituation of the King's affairs, both at home and abroad, was now, in every reſpect, very fortunate. All the efforts of the European princes, both in war and negotiation, were turned to the ſide of Italy; and the various events, which there aroſe, made Henry's alliance be courted by every party, and yet intereſted him ſo little as never to touch him with concern or anxiety. His cloſe connexions with Spain and Scotland inſured his tranquillity; and his continued ſucceſſes over domeſtic enemies, owing to the prudence and vigour of his conduct, had reduced the people to intire ſubmiſſion and obedience. Henry therefore, uncontrouled by apprehenſion or oppoſition of any kind, gave full ſcope to his natural propenſity; and avarice, which had ever been his predominant paſſion, being increaſed by age, and encouraged by abſolute authority, broke all reſtraints of ſhame or juſtice. He had found two miniſters, Empſon and Dudley, perfectly qualified to ſecond his rapacious and tyrannical inclinations, and to prey upon

Oppreſſions of the people.

upon his defenceleſs people. Theſe inſtruments of oppreſſion were both lawyers, the firſt of mean birth, of brutal manners, of an unrelenting temper; the ſecond better born, better educated, and better bred, but equally unjuſt, ſevere, and inflexible. By their knowledge in the law, theſe men were qualified to pervert the forms of juſtice to the oppreſſion of the innocent; and the formidable authority of the King ſupported them in all their iniquities. Chap. III. 1503.

It was their uſual practice at firſt to obſerve ſo far the appearance of law as to give indictments to thoſe whom they intended to oppreſs: Upon which the perſons were committed to priſon, but never brought to trial; and were at laſt obliged to recover their liberty, by paying heavy fines and ranſoms, which were called mitigations and compoſitions. By degrees, the very appearance of law was neglected: They ſent forth their precepts to attach men, and ſummon them before themſelves and ſome others, at their private houſes, in a court of commiſſion; where, in a ſummary manner, without trial or jury, arbitrary decrees were iſſued, both in pleas of the crown, and controverſies between private parties. Juries themſelves, when ſummoned, proved but ſmall ſecurity to the ſubject; being brow-beat by theſe oppreſſors; nay, fined, impriſoned and puniſhed, if they gave ſentence againſt the inclination of the miniſters. The whole ſyſtem of the feudal law, which ſtill prevailed, was turned into a ſcheme of oppreſſion. Even the King's wards, after they came to full age, were not ſuffered to enter in poſſeſſion of their lands without paying exorbitant fines. Men were alſo harraſſed with informations of intruſion upon ſcarce colourable titles. When an outlawry in a perſonal action was iſſued againſt any man, he was not allowed to purchaſe his charter of pardon, except on the payment of a great ſum; and if he refuſed the compoſition required of him, the ſtrict law, which, in ſuch caſes, allows forfeiture of goods, was rigorouſly inſiſted on. Nay, without any colour of law, the half of men's lands and rents were ſeized during two years, as a penalty in caſe of outlawry. But the chief inſtruments of oppreſſion employed by theſe miniſters, were the penal ſtatutes, which, without conſideration of rank, quality, or ſervices, were rigidly put in execution againſt all men: Spies, informers, and inquiſitors were rewarded and encouraged in every corner of the kingdom: And no difference was made whether the ſtatute was beneficial or hurtful, recent or obſolete, poſſible or impoſſible to be executed. The ſole end of the King and his miniſters, was to amaſs money, and bring every one under the laſh of their authority *.

Thro' the prevalence of ſuch an arbitrary and iniquitous adminiſtration, the Engliſh, it may ſafely be affirmed, were conſiderable loſers by the ancient privi-

* Bacon, 629, 30. Hollingſhed, p. 504. Polyd. Virg. p. 613, 615.

lege,

Chap. III. 1503. lege, which ſecured them from all taxations and impoſitions, except ſuch as were levied by their own conſent. Had the King been empowered to lay on general taxes at pleaſure, he would naturally have abſtained from theſe oppreſſive expedients, which deſtroyed all ſecurity in private property, and begot an univerſal diffidence thro' the nation. In vain did the people look for protection from the Parliament, which was pretty frequently ſummoned during this reign. That aſſembly was ſo overawed, that, at this very time, during the greateſt rage of Henry's oppreſſions, the commons choſe Dudley their ſpeaker, the very man who was the chief inſtrument of his oppreſſions. And tho' the King was known to be immenſely opulent, and had no pretence of wars or expenſive enterprizes of any kind, they granted him the ſubſidy, which he demanded. But ſo inſatiable was his avarice, that next year he levied a new benevolence, and renewed that arbitrary and oppreſſive method of taxation. By all theſe arts of accumulation, joined to a rigid frugality in his expence, he ſo filled his coffers, that he is ſaid to have poſſeſſed in ready money the ſum of 1,800,000 pounds: An incredible treaſure, if we conſider the ſcarcity of money in thoſe days *.

1504. 25th January. A parliament.

1505.

But while Henry was enriching himſelf with the ſpoils of his oppreſſed people, there happened an event abroad, which engaged his attention, and was even the object of his anxiety and concern. Iſabella, queen of Caſtile, died about this time; and it was foreſeen, that by this incident the fortunes of Ferdinand, her huſband, would be much affected. The King was not only attentive to the fate of his ally, and watchful leſt the general ſyſtem of Europe ſhould be affected by ſo important an event: He alſo conſidered the ſimilarity of his own ſituation with that of Ferdinand, and regarded the iſſue of theſe tranſactions as a precedent for himſelf. Joan, the daughter of Ferdinand by Iſabella, was married to the archduke Philip, and being, in right of her mother, heireſs of Caſtile, ſeemed entitled to diſpute with Ferdinand the preſent adminiſtration of that kingdom. Henry knew, that, notwithſtanding his own pretenſions by the houſe of Lancaſter, the greateſt part of the nation were convinced of the ſuperiority of his wife's title; and he dreaded leſt the prince, who was daily advancing towards manhood, might be tempted by ambition to lay immediate claim to

* Silver was, during this reign, at 37 ſhillings and ſixpence a pound, which makes Henry's treaſure above 2,750,000 pounds ſterling. Beſides, many commodities have become thrice as dear by the increaſe of gold and ſilver in Europe. And what is a circumſtance of ſtill greater weight, all other ſtates were then very poor, in compariſon of what they are at preſent: Theſe circumſtances make Henry's treaſure appear very great; and may lead us to conceive the oppreſſions of his government.

the

the throne. By his perpetual attention to depreſs the partizans of the York family, he had more cloſely united them into one party, and encreaſed their deſire of ſhaking off that yoke, under which they had ſo long laboured, and of taking every advantage, which his oppreſſive government ſhould give his enemies againſt him. And as he poſſeſſed no independent force like Ferdinand, and governed a kingdom more turbulent and unruly, which he himſelf, by his narrow politics, had confirmed in factious prejudices; he apprehended that his ſituation would prove in the iſſue ſtill more precarious. Chap. III. 1505.

NOTHING could turn out more contrary to the King's inclinations than the tranſactions in Spain. Ferdinand had become very unpopular in Caſtile, chiefly by reaſon of his former exactions and impoſitions; and the ſtates of the kingdom diſcovered an evident reſolution of preferring the title of Philip and Joan. In order to take advantage of theſe favourable diſpoſitions, the archduke, now King of Caſtile, attended by his conſort, embarked for Spain during the winter ſeaſon; and meeting with a violent tempeſt in the channel, was obliged ſo take ſhelter in the harbour of Weymouth. Sir John Trenchard, a gentleman of authority in the county of Dorſet, hearing of a fleet upon the coaſt, had aſſembled ſome forces; and being joined by Sir John Cary, who was alſo at the head of an armed body, he came to that town. Finding, that Philip, in order to relieve his ſickneſs and fatigue, was already come aſhore, he invited him to his houſe; and immediately diſpatched an expreſs to inform the court of this important incident. The King ſent in all haſte the earl of Arundel to compliment the archduke on his arrival in England, and to inform him, that he intended to pay him a viſit in perſon, and to give him a ſuitable reception in his kingdom. Philip knew, that he could not now depart without the King's conſent; and therefore, for the ſake of diſpatch, he reſolved to anticipate his viſit, and to have an interview with him at Windſor. Henry received him with all the magnificence poſſible, and with all the ſeeming cordiality; but he reſolved, notwithſtanding, to extract ſome advantage from this involuntary viſit, payed him by his royal gueſt. 1506. Arrival of the King of Caſtile.

EDMOND de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, nephew to Edward the fourth, and brother to the earl of Lincoln, ſlain at the battle of Stoke, had ſome years before killed a man in a ſudden fit of paſſion, and had been obliged to apply to the King for a remiſſion of his crime. The King had granted his requeſt; but being little indulgent to all perſons connected with the houſe of York, he obliged him to appear openly in court and plead his pardon. Suffolk, more reſenting the affront, than grateful for the favour, had fled into Flanders, and taken ſhelter with his aunt, the dutcheſs of Burgundy: But being promiſed forgiveneſs by the King, he returned into England, and obtained a new pardon. Actuated, however, by the Intrigues of the Earl of Suffolk.

Chap. III. 1506.

natural inquietude of his temper, and uneasy from debts which he had contracted by his expences at prince Arthur's marriage, he again made an elopement into Flanders. The King, well acquainted with the general discontent which prevailed against his administration, neglected not this incident, which might become of importance; and he employed his usual artifices to elude the efforts of his enemies. He directed Sir Robert Curson, governor of the castle of Hammes, to fly from his charge, and to insinuate himself into the confidence of Suffolk, by making him a tender of his services. Upon information secretly conveyed by Curson, the King seized William Courtney, earl of Devonshire, his brother in law, married to the lady Catharine, daughter of Edward the fourth; William de la Pole, brother to the earl of Suffolk; Sir James Tirrel, and Sir James Windham, with some persons of inferior quality; and he committed them al to custody. The lord Abergavenny and Sir Thomas Green were also apprehended; but were soon after freed from their confinement. William de la Pole was detained in prison during a long time: And the earl of Devonshire recovered not his freedom during the King's life. But Henry's chief severity fell upon Sir James Windham, and Sir James Tirrel, who were both brought to their trial, condemned, and executed: The fate of the latter gave universal satisfaction, on account of his participation in the murder of the young princes, sons to Edward the fourth. Notwithstanding these discoveries and executions, Curson was still able to maintain his credit with the earl of Suffolk; and Henry, in order to remove all suspicions, had ordered him to be excommunicated, together with Suffolk himself, for his pretended rebellion. But after that traitor had performed all the services expected from him, he suddenly deserted the earl, and came over to England, where the King received him with unusual marks of favour and confidence. Suffolk, astonished at this instance of perfidy, finding that even the dutchess of Burgundy, tired with so many fruitless attempts, had become indifferent to his cause, fled secretly into France, thence into Germany, and returned at last into the Low Countries; where he was protected, tho' not countenanced, by the archduke Philip, then in close alliance with the King.

Henry neglected not the present opportunity of complaining to Philip of the reception, which Suffolk had met with in his dominions. "I really thought," replied the King of Castile, "that your greatness and felicity had set you far "above apprehensions from any person of so little consequence: But to give "you satisfaction, I shall banish him my state." "I expect, that you will carry "your complaisance farther," said the King: "I desire to have Suffolk put "into my hands, where alone I can depend upon his submission and obedience." "That measure," said Philip, "will reflect dishonour upon you as well as "myself.

" myſelf. You will be thought to have uſed me as a priſoner." " Then the " matter is at an end," replied the King, " for I will take that diſhonour upon " me; and ſo your honour is ſaved *." The King of Caſtile found himſelf under a neceſſity of complying; but he firſt exacted Henry's promiſe that he would ſpare Suffolk's life. That nobleman was invited over to England by Philip; as if the King would grant him a pardon, by the interceſſion of his friend and ally. Upon his appearance, he was committed to the Tower; and the King of Caſtile, having fully ſatisfied Henry, as well by this conceſſion, as by ſigning a treaty of commerce between England and Caſtile, which was advantageous to the former kingdom †, was at laſt allowed to depart, after a ſtay of three months. He landed in Spain, was joyfully received by the Caſtilians, and put in poſſeſſion of the throne. He died ſoon after; and Joan, his widow, falling into deep melancholy, Ferdinand was again enabled to reinſtate himſelf in his authority, and to govern, till the day of his death, the whole Spaniſh monarchy. Chap. III. 1506. 1507.

THE King ſurvived theſe tranſactions two years; but little memorable occurs in the remaining part of his reign, except his affiancing his ſecond daughter Mary with the young archduke Charles, ſon of Philip of Caſtile. He entertained alſo ſome intention of marriage for himſelf; firſt with the queen dowager of Naples, relict of Ferdinand; afterwards with the dutcheſs dowager of Savoy, daughter of Maximilian, and ſiſter of Philip. But the decline of his health put an end to all ſuch thoughts; and he began to caſt his eye towards that future exiſtence, which the iniquities and ſeverities of his reign rendered a very diſmal proſpect to him. To allay the terrors, under which he laboured, he endeavoured, by diſtributing alms and founding religious houſes, to make attonement for his crimes, and to purchaſe, by the ſacrifice of part of his ill-gotten treaſures, a reconciliation with his offended Maker. Remorſe even ſeized him at intervals for the abuſes of his authority by Empſon and Dudley; but not ſufficient to make him ſtop the rapacious hands of thoſe oppreſſors. Sir William Capel was again fined two thouſand pounds under ſome frivolous pretences, and was committed to the Tower for daring to murmur againſt that iniquity. Harris, an alderman of London, was indicted, and died of vexation before his trial came to an iſſue. Sir Lawrence Ailmer, who had been mayor, and his two ſheriffs, were condemned in heavy fines, and ſent to priſon till they made payment. The King gave countenance to all theſe oppreſſions; till death, by its nearer approaches, impreſſed new terrors upon him; and he then ordered, by a general clauſe in his will, that reſtitution ſhould be made to all thoſe whom he had injured. He died of a 1508. Sickneſs of the King.

* Bacon, p. 633. † Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 142.

Chap. III. 1509. His death. 22d April.

consumption at his favourite palæ of Richmond, after a reign of twenty-three years and eight months, and in the fifty-second year of his age †.

And character.

THE reign of Henry the seventh was, in the main, fortunate for his people at home, and honourable abroad. He put an end to the civil wars with which the nation had been long harrassed, he maintained peace and order in the state, he depressed the former exorbitant power of the nobility, and together with the friendship of some foreign princes, he acquired the consideration and regard of all. He loved peace without fearing war; tho' agitated with continual suspicions of his servants and ministers, he discovered no timidity either in the conduct of his affairs, or in the day of battle; and tho' often severe in his punishments, he was commonly less actuated by revenge than by the maxims of policy. The services, which he rendered the people, were derived from his views of private interest, rather than the motives of public spirit; and where he deviated from selfish regards, it was unknown to himself, and ever from the malignant prejudices of faction or the mean projects of avarice; not from the sallies of passion, or allurements of pleasure; still less, from the benign motives of friendship and generosity. His capacity was excellent, but somewhat contracted, by the narrowness of his heart; he possessed insinuation and address, but never employed these talents, except where some great point of interest was to be gained; and while he neglected to conciliate the affections of his people, he often felt the danger of resting his authority on their fear and reverence alone. He was always extremely attentive to his affairs, but possessed not the faculty of seeing far into futurity; and was more expert at providing a remedy for his mistakes than judicious in avoiding them. Avarice was on the whole his ruling passion *; and he remains an instance, almost singular, of a man, placed in a high station, and possessed of talents for great affairs, in whom that passion predominated above ambition. Even among private persons, avarice is commonly nothing but a species of ambition, and is chiefly incited by the prospect of that regard, distinction and consideration which attend on riches.

THE power of the Kings of England had always been somewhat irregular or discretionary; but was scarce ever so absolute during any former reign, at least after the establishment of the great charter, as during that of

† Dugdale's Baronage, ii. p. 237.

* As a proof of Henry's attention to the smallest profits, Bacon tells us, that he had seen a book of accompts kept by Empson, and subscribed in almost every leaf by the King's own hand. Among other articles was the following. *Item*, Received of such a one five marks for a pardon, which, if "it do not pass, the money to be repayed, or the party otherwise satisfied." Opposite to this memorandum, the King had wrote with his own hand, "otherwise satisfied." Bacon, p. 630.

Henry. Beſides the perſonal character of the man, full of vigour, induſtry, and ſeverity, deliberate in all projects, ſteady in every purpoſe, and attended with caution, as well as good fortune, in each enterprize; he came to the throne after long and bloody civil wars, which had deſtroyed all the great nobility, who alone could reſiſt the encroachments of his authority: The people were tired with diſcord and inteſtine convulſions, and willing to ſubmit to uſurpations, and even to injuries, rather than plunge themſelves anew into like miſeries: The fruitleſs efforts made againſt him ſerved always, as is uſual, to confirm his authority: As he ruled by a faction, and the leſſer faction, all thoſe on whom he conferred offices, ſenſible that they owed every thing to his protection, were content to ſupport his power, tho' at the expence of juſtice and national privileges. Theſe ſeem the chief cauſes which at this time beſtowed on the crown ſo conſiderable an addition of prerogative, and rendered the preſent reign a kind of epoch in the Engliſh conſtitution. Chap. III. 1509.

THIS prince, tho' he exalted his own prerogative above law, is celebrated by his hiſtorian for many good laws, which he cauſed to be enacted for the government of his ſubjects. Several conſiderable regulations, indeed, are found among the ſtatutes of this reign, both with regard to the police of the kingdom, and its commerce: But the former are generally contrived with much better judgment than the latter. The more ſimple ideas of order and equity are ſufficient to guide a legiſlator in every thing that regards the internal adminiſtration of juſtice: But the principles of commerce are much more complicated, and require long experience and deep reflection to be well underſtood in any ſtate. The real conſequence of a law or practice is there often contrary to firſt appearances. No wonder, that during the reign of Henry the ſeventh, theſe matters were often miſunderſtood; and it may ſafely be affirmed, that even in the age of lord Bacon, very imperfect and erroneous ideas were formed on that ſubject. His laws.

EARLY in Henry's reign, the authority of the ſtar-chamber, which was before founded on common law and very ancient practice, was in ſome caſes confirmed by act of Parliament *: Lord Bacon extols the uſe of this court; but men began, during the age of that hiſtorian, to feel that ſo arbitrary a juriſdiction was totally incompatible with liberty; and in proportion as the ſpirit of independance roſe ſtill higher in the nation, the averſion againſt it increaſed, till it was entirely aboliſhed by act of Parliament in the reign of Charles the firſt, a little before the commencement of the civil wars.

LAWS were paſſed in this reign, ordering the King's ſuit for murder to be carried on within a year and day †. Formerly, it did not uſually commence till

* Rot. Parl. 3 H. 7. n. 17. † 4 H. 7. cap. 1.

after

Chap. III. 1509.

after that term; and as the friends of the person murdered, in the interval, often compounded matters with the criminal, that crime very frequently passed unpunished. Suits were given to the poor *in forma pauperis*, as it is called: That is, without paying dues for the writs, or any fees to the council *: A good law at all times, especially in that age, when the people laboured under the oppression of the great; but a law very difficult to be reduced to execution. A law was made against carrying off any woman by force †. The benefit of clergy was abridged ‡, and the criminal, on the first offence, was ordered to be burned in the hand with a letter marking his crime; after which, he was punished capitally for any new offence. This law was much too indulgent, yet was in those days regarded as a violation of the rights of the church. Sheriffs were no longer allowed to fine any person, without previously summoning him before their court §. It is strange, that such a practice should ever have prevailed. Attaint of juries was granted in cases which exceeded forty pounds value ‖. A law which has an appearance of equity, but which was afterwards found inconvenient. Actions popular were not allowed to be eluded by fraud or covin. If any servant of the King conspired against the life of the steward, treasurer, or comptroller of the King's household, this design, tho' not followed by any act, was made liable to the punishment of felony **. This statute was procured by the jealousy of archbishop Morton, who found himself exposed to the enmity of great numbers.

THERE scarce passed any session during this reign without some statute against engaging retainers, and giving them badges or liveries ††; a practice, by which they were, in a manner, inlisted under some great lord, and were kept in readiness to assist him in all wars, insurrections, riots, violences, and even in bearing evidence for him in courts of justice ‡‡. This disorder, which had arisen during turbulent times, when the law could give little protection to the subject, was then deeply rooted in England; and it required all the vigilance and rigour of Henry to extirpate it. There is a story of his severity against that abuse; which seems to merit praise, tho' it is commonly cited as an instance of his avarice and rapacity. The earl of Oxford, his favourite general, in whom he always placed great and deserved trust, having splendidly entertained him at his castle of Heningham, was desirous of making a show of his magnificence at the departure of his royal guest; and ordered all his retainers, with their liveries and badges, to be drawn up in two lines, that their appearance might be more gallant and splendid. "My lord," said the King, "I have heard much of your "hospitality; but the truth far exceeds the report. These handsome gentlemen

* 11 H. 7. cap. 12. † 3 H. 7. cap. 2. ‡ 4 H. 7. cap. 13. § 11 H. 7. cap. 15.
‖ 11 H. 7. cap. 24. 19 H. 7. cap. 3. ** 3 H. 7. cap. 13. †† 3 H. 7. cap. 1. & 12. 11 H. 7. cap. 3. 19 H. 7. cap. 14. ‡‡ 3 H. 7. cap. 12. 11 H. 7. cap. 25.

"and

" and yeomen, whom I ſee on both ſides of me, are, no doubt, your menial ſervants." The earl ſmiled, and confeſſed that his fortune was too narrow for ſuch magnificence. " They are moſt of them," ſubjoined he, " my retainers, who are come " to do me ſervice at ſuch a time, when they knew I was honoured with your " majeſty's preſence." The King ſtarted a little, and ſaid, " By my faith, my " lord, I thank you for my good cheer, but I muſt not allow my laws to be brok- " en in my ſight. My attorney muſt ſpeak with you." Oxford is ſaid to have payed no leſs than fifteen thouſand marks, as a compoſition for his offence. Chap. III. 1509.

THE encreaſe of the arts, more effectually than all the ſeverities of laws, put an end to this pernicious practice. The nobility, inſtead of vying with each other, in the number and boldneſs of their retainers, acquired by degrees a more civilized ſpecies of emulation, and endeavoured to excel in the ſplendor and elegance of their equipage, houſes, and tables. The common people, no longer maintained in a vicious idleneſs by their ſuperiors, were obliged to learn ſome calling or induſtry, and became uſeful both to themſelves and others. And it muſt be acknowledged, in ſpite of thoſe who declaim ſo violently againſt the refinement of the arts, or what they are pleaſed to call luxury, that, as much as an induſtrious tradeſman is both a better man and a better citizen than one of thoſe idle retainers, who formerly depended on the great families; ſo much is the life of a modern nobleman more laudable than that of an antient baron.

BUT the moſt important law in its conſequences, which was enacted during the reign of Henry, was that by which the nobility and gentry acquired a power of breaking the antient entails, and of alienating their eſtates *. By means of this law, joined to the beginning luxury and refinements of the age, the great fortunes of the barons were gradually diſſipated, and the property of the commons encreaſed in England. It is probable, that Henry foreſaw and intended this conſequence; becauſe the conſtant ſcheme of his policy conſiſted in depreſſing the great, and exalting churchmen, lawyers, and men of new families, who were more dependant on him.

THIS King's love of money naturally led him to encourage commerce, which encreaſed his cuſtoms; but, if we may judge by moſt of the laws enacted during his reign, trade and induſtry were rather hurt than promoted by the care and attention which were given to them. Severe laws were made againſt taking intereſt for money, which was then denominated uſury †. Even the profits of exchange were prohibited, as favouring of uſury ‡, which the ſuperſtition of that

* 4 H. 7. cap. 24. The practice of breaking entails, by means of a fine and recovery, was introduced in the reign of Edward IV. but it was not properly ſpeaking law, till the ſtatute of Henry VII. which, by correcting ſome abuſes that attended the practice, gave indirectly a ſanction to it.

† 3 H. 7. cap. 5. ‡ 3 H. 7. cap. 6.

Chap. III. 1509.

age zealouſly proſcribed. All evaſive contracts, by which profits could be made from the loan of money, were alſo carefully guarded againſt §. It is needleſs to obſerve how unreaſonable and iniquitous theſe laws, how impoſſible to be executed, and how hurtful to trade, if they could take place. We may obſerve, however, to the praiſe of this King, that ſometimes, in order to promote commerce, he lent to merchants ſums of money, without intereſt; when he knew, that their ſtock was not ſufficient for thoſe enterprizes, which they had in view *.

LAWS were made againſt the exportation of money, plate, or bullion †. A precaution, which ſerves to no other purpoſe than to make more be exported. But ſo far was the anxiety on this head carried, that merchant aliens, who imported commodities into the kingdom, were obliged to inveſt, in Engliſh commodities, all the money acquired by their ſales, in order to prevent their conveying it away in a clandeſtine manner ‡.

HORSES were forbid to be exported; as if that exportation did not encourage the breed, and render them more plentiful in the kingdom ¶. To promote archery, no bows were to be ſold at a higher price than ſix ſhillings and four pence ‖, reducing money to the denomination of our time. The only effect of this regulation muſt be either that the people would be ſupplied with bad bows or none at all. Prices were alſo affixed to woollen cloth **, to caps and hats††: And labourers wages were regulated by law ‡‡. It is evident, that theſe circumſtances ought always to be left free, and be truſted to the common courſe of buſineſs and commerce. To ſome it may appear ſurprizing, that the price of a yard of ſcarlet cloth ſhould be limited to ſix and twenty ſhillings, that of a yard of coloured cloth to eighteen; higher prices than theſe commodities bear at preſent: And that the wages of a tradeſman, ſuch as a maſon, bricklayer, tyler, &c. ſhould be regulated at near ten-pence a day; which is not much inferior to the preſent wages given in ſome places of England. Labour and commodities have certainly riſen very much ſince the diſcovery of the Weſt Indies; but not ſo much in every particular as is generally imagined. The greater induſtry of the preſent times has encreaſed the number of tradeſmen and labourers, ſo as to keep wages nearer a par than could be expected from the great encreaſe of gold and ſilver. And the additional art employed in the finer manufactures, has even made ſome of theſe commodities fall below their former value. Not to mention that merchants and dealers, being contented with leſs profit than formerly, afford the goods cheaper to their cuſtomers. It appears by a ſtatute of this reign §§, that goods bought

§ 7 H. 7. cap. 8. * Polyd. Virg. † 4 H. 7. cap. 23. ‡ 3 H. 7. cap. 8.
¶ 11 H. 7. cap. 13. ‖ 3 H. 7. cap. 12. ** 4 H. 7. cap. 8. †† 4 H. 7. cap. 9.
‡‡ 11 H. 7. cap. 22. §§ 4 H. 7. cap. 9.

for

for ſixteen-pence would ſometimes be ſold by the merchants for three ſhillings. The commodities, whoſe price has chiefly riſen, are butcher's meat, fowl, and fiſh, (eſpecially the latter) which cannot be much augmented in quantity by the increaſe of art and induſtry. The profeſſion which then abounded moſt, and was embraced by perſons of the loweſt rank, was the church: By a clauſe of a ſtatute, all clerks or ſtudents of the univerſity were forbid to beg, without a permiſſion from the vice-chancellor *.

ONE great cauſe of the low ſtate of induſtry during this period, was the reſtraints put upon it; and the parliament, or rather the King, (for he was the prime mover in every thing) enlarged a little ſome of theſe limitations; but not to the degree that was requiſite. A law had been enacted during the reign of Henry the fourth †, that no man ſhould bind his ſon or daughter to an apprenticeſhip, unleſs he was poſſeſſed of twenty ſhillings a year in land; and Henry the ſeventh, becauſe the decay of manufactures was complained of in Norwich from the want of hands, exempted that city from the penalties of this law ‡. Afterwards, the whole county of Norfolk obtained a like exemption with regard to ſome branches of the woollen manufacture §. Theſe abſurd limitations proceeded from a deſire of promoting huſbandry, which however is never more effectually encouraged than by the encreaſe of manufactures. For a like reaſon, the law enacted againſt incloſures, and for the keeping up farm houſes ‖, ſcarce deſerves the high praiſes beſtowed on it by lord Bacon. If huſbandmen underſtand agriculture, and have a ready vent for their commodities, we need never dread a diminution of the people, employed in the country. All methods of ſupporting populouſneſs, except by the intereſt of the proprietors, are violent and ineffectual. During a century and a half after this period, there was a continual renewal of laws and edicts againſt depopulation; whence we may infer, that none of them were ever executed. The natural courſe of improvement at laſt provided a remedy.

ONE great check to induſtry in England was the erecting corporations; an abuſe which is not yet entirely corrected. A law was enacted, that corporations ſhould not paſs any bye-laws without the conſent of three of the chief officers of ſtate **. They were prohibited to impoſe tolls at their gates ††. The cities of Gloceſter and Worceſter had even impoſed tolls on the Severne, which were aboliſhed ‡‡.

THERE is a law of this reign §§, containing a preamble, from which it appears, that the company of merchant adventurers in London, had, by their own authority, debarred all the other merchants of the kingdom, from trading to the

* 11 H. 7. cap. 22. † 7 H. 7. cap. 17. ‡ 11 H. 7. cap. 11. § 12 H. 7. cap. 1.
‖ 4 H. 7. cap. 19. ** 19 H. 7. cap. 7. †† 19 H. 7. cap. 8. ‡‡ 19 H. 7. cap. 18.
§§ 12 H. 7. cap. 6.

Chap. III. 1509.

great marts in the low countries, unleſs each trader previouſly payed them the ſum of near ſeventy pounds. It is ſurpriſing that ſuch a by-law (if it deſerves that name) could ever be carried into execution, and that the authority of Parliament ſhould be requiſite to abrogate it.

It was during this reign, on the ſecond of Auguſt 1492, a little before ſun ſet, that Chriſtopher Columbus, a Florentine, ſet out from Cadiz on his memorable voyage for the diſcovery of the weſtern world; and a few years after, Vaſquez de Gama, a Portugueſe, paſſed the cape of Good Hope, and opened a new paſſage to the Eaſt Indies. Theſe great events were attended with the moſt important conſequences to all the nations of Europe, even to ſuch as were not immediately concerned in thoſe naval enterprizes. The enlargement of commerce and navigation encreaſed induſtry and the arts every where: The nobles diſſipated their fortunes in expenſive pleaſures: Men of an inferior rank both acquired a ſhare in the landed property, and created to themſelves a conſiderable property of a new kind, in ſtock, commodities, art, credit, and correſpondence. In ſome nations the privileges of the commons encreaſed, by this encreaſe of property: In moſt nations, the Kings, finding arms to be dropped by the barons, who could no longer endure their former rude manner of life, eſtabliſhed ſtanding armies, and maſtered the liberties of the kingdom: But in all places the condition of the people, from the depreſſion of the petty tyrants, by whom they had formerly been oppreſſed, rather than governed, received great improvement, and they acquired, if not entire liberty, at leaſt the moſt conſiderable advantages of it. And as the general courſe of events thus tended to depreſs the nobles and exalt the people, Henry the ſeventh, who alſo embraced that ſyſtem of policy, has acquired more praiſe, than his inſtitutions, ſtrictly ſpeaking, ſeem of themſelves to deſerve, on account of any profound wiſdom attending them.

It was by accident only, that the King had not a conſiderable hand in thoſe great naval diſcoveries, by which the preſent age was ſo much diſtinguiſhed. Columbus, after meeting many repulſes from the courts of Portugal and Spain, ſent his brother Bartholomew into England, in order to explain his projects to Henry, and crave his protection for the execution of them. Henry invited him to England; but his brother, in returning to Spain, being taken by pyrates, was detained in his voyage; and Columbus, mean-while, having obtained the countenance of Iſabella, was ſupplied, with a ſmall fleet, and happily executed his enterprize. Henry was not diſcouraged by this diſappointment: He fitted out Sebaſtian Cabot, a Venetian, dwelling in Briſtol; and ſent him weſtwards in 1498, in ſearch of new countries. Cabot diſcovered the main land of America towards the ſixtieth degree of northern latitude: He ſailed ſouthwards along the coaſt,

and

and discovered Newfoundland, and other countries: But returned to England without making any conquest or settlement. Elliot and other merchants in Bristol made a like attempt in 1502 *. The King expended fourteen thousand pounds in building one ship called the *Great Harry* †. This was properly speaking the first ship in the English navy. Before this period, when the prince wanted a fleet, he had no other expedient but hiring ships from the merchants.

But tho' this improvement of navigation, and the discovery of both the Indies, was the most memorable incident that happened during this or any other period, it was not the only great event by which the age was distinguished. In 1453 Constantinople was taken by the Turks; and the Greeks, among whom some remains of learning were still preserved, being scattered by these Barbarians, took shelter in Italy, and imported, together with their admirable language, a tincture of their science and their refined taste in poetry and eloquence. About the same time the purity of the Latin tongue was revived, the study of antiquity became fashionable, and the esteem for literature gradually propagated itself throughout every nation of Europe. The art of printing, invented about that time, facilitated extremely the progress of all these improvements: The invention of gunpowder changed the whole art of war: Mighty innovations were soon after made in religion, such as not only affected those states that embraced them, but even those that adhered to the antient faith and worship: And thus a general revolution was made in human affairs throughout this part of the world; and men gradually attained that situation with regard to commerce, arts, sciences, government, police, and cultivation, in which they have ever since persevered. Here therefore commences the useful, as well as the most agreeable part of modern annals; certainty has place in all the considerable, and even most of the minute parts of historical narration; a great variety of events, preserved by printing, give the author the power of selecting, as well as adorning, the facts, which he relates; and as each incident has a reference to our present manners and situation, instructive lessons occur every moment during the course of the narration. Whoever carries his anxious researches into preceding periods is moved by a curiosity, liberal indeed and commendable; not by any necessity for acquiring a knowledge of public affairs, or the arts of civil government.

* Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 37. † Stowe, p. 484.

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, UNDER THE HOUSE of TUDOR.

HENRY VIII.

CHAP. I.

Popularity of the new King.——His miniſters.——Puniſhment of Empſon and Dudley.——King's marriage.——Foreign affairs.——Julius the ſecond.——League of Cambray.——War with France.——Expedition to Fontarabia.——Deceit of Ferdinand.——Return of the Engliſh.——Leo the tenth.——A Parliament.——War with Scotland.——Wolſey miniſter.——His character.——Invaſion of France.——Battle of Guinegate.——Battle of Flouden.——Peace with France.

THE death of Henry the ſeventh had been attended with as open and viſible a joy among the people as decency would permit; and the acceſſion and coronation of his ſon, Henry the eighth, ſpread univerſally a declared and unfeigned ſatisfaction. Inſtead of a monarch, jealous, ſevere, and avaritious, who, in proportion as he advanced in years, was ſinking ſtill deeper in thoſe unpopular vices; a young prince of eighteen had ſucceeded to the throne; who, even in the eyes of men of ſenſe, gave very promiſing hopes of his future con-

1509.

Popularity of the new King.

Chap. I. 1509.

conduct, much more in those of the people, always enchanted with novelty, youth, and royal dignity. The beauty and vigour of his person, accompanied with dexterity in every manly exercise, was farther adorned with a blooming and ruddy countenance, with a lively air, with the appearance of spirit and activity in all his demeanour *. His father, in order to remove him from the knowledge of public business, had hitherto occupied him entirely in the study of literature; and the proficiency, which he made, gave no bad prognostic of his parts and capacity †. Even the vices of vehemence, ardour, and impatience, to which he was subject, and which afterwards degenerated into tyranny, were considered only as faults, incident to unguarded youth, which would be corrected, when time had brought him to greater moderation and maturity. And as the contending titles of York and Lancaster were now at last fully united in his person, men justly expected from a prince, obnoxious to no party, that impartiality of administration, which had so long been unknown in England.

The favourable prepossessions of the public were encouraged by the measures, which Henry embraced in the commencement of his reign. His grandmother, the countess of Richmond and Derby, was still alive; and as she was a woman much celebrated for prudence and virtue, he very wisely shewed great deference to her opinion in the establishment of his new council. The members were, Warham, archbishop of Canterbury, and Chancellor; the earl of Shrewsbury, steward; lord Herbert, chamberlain; Sir Thomas Lovel, master of the wards and constable of the Tower; Sir Edward Poynings, knight of the garter, comptroller; Sir Henry Marney, afterwards lord Marney; Sir Thomas Darcy, afterwards lord Darcy; Thomas Ruthal, doctor of laws; and Sir Henry Wyat ‡. These men had long been accustomed to business under the late King, and were the least unpopular of all the ministers employed by that monarch.

His ministers.

But the chief competitors for favour and authority under the new King were the earl of Surrey, treasurer, and Fox, bishop of Winchester, secretary and privy seal. This prelate, who enjoyed great credit during all the former reign, had acquired such habits of caution and frugality as he could not easily lay aside; and he still opposed, by his remonstrances, those schemes of dissipation and expence, which the youth and passions of Henry rendered agreeable to him. But Surrey was a more dexterous courtier; and tho' few had borne a greater share in the frugal politics of the last King, he knew how to conform himself to the humours of his new master; and no one was so forward in promoting that liberality, pleasure, and magnificence, which began to prevail under the young monarch §. By this policy he ingratiated himself with Henry; he made profit, as well

* T. Mori, Lucubr. p. 182. † Father Paul, lib. 1.
‡ Herbert, Stowe, p. 486. Hollingshed, p. 799. § Lord Herbert.

well as the other courtiers, of the laviſh diſpoſition of his maſter; and he engaged him in ſuch a courſe of play and idleneſs as rendered him negligent of affairs, and willing to entruſt the government of the ſtate entirely into the hands of his miniſters. The immenſe treaſures, amaſſed by the late King, were gradually diſſipated in the giddy expences of Henry. One party of pleaſure ſucceeded to another: Tilts, tournaments and carauſels were exhibited with all the magnificence of that age: And as the preſent tranquillity of the public permitted the court to indulge itſelf in every amuſement, ſerious buſineſs was but little attended to. Or if the King intermitted the courſe of his feſtivity, he employed himſelf chiefly in an application to muſic and literature, which were his favourite purſuits, and which were well adapted to his genius. He had made ſuch proficiency in the former art, as even to compoſe ſome pieces of church muſic which were ſung in his chapel †. He was initiated in the elegant learning of the antients. And tho he was ſo unfortunate as to be ſeduced into a ſtudy of the barren controverſies of the ſchools, which were then faſhionable, and had choſen Thomas Aquinas for his favourite author, he ſtill diſcovered a capacity fitted for more uſeful and entertaining knowledge. Chap. I. 1509.

THE frank and careleſs humour of the King, as it led him to diſſipate the treaſures, amaſſed by his father, rendered him negligent in protecting the inſtruments, whom that prince had employed in his extortions. A proclamation being iſſued to encourage complaints, the rage of the people was let looſe on all the informers, who had ſo long exerciſed an unbounded tyranny over the nation *: They were thrown into priſon, condemned to the pillory, and moſt of them loſt their lives by the violence of the populace. Empſon and Dudley, who were moſt expoſed to public hatred, were immediately cited before the council, in order to anſwer for their conduct, which had rendered them ſo obnoxious. Empſon made a ſhrewd apology for himſelf, as well as for his aſſociate. He told the council, that ſo far from his being juſtly obnoxious to cenſure for his paſt conduct, his enemies themſelves grounded their clamour on actions, which ſeemed rather to merit reward and approbation: That a ſtrict execution of law was the crime, of which he and Dudley were accuſed; tho' that law had been eſtabliſhed by the voluntary conſent of the people, and tho' they had acted in obedience to the King, to whom the adminiſtration of juſtice was entruſted by the conſtitution: That it belonged not to them, who were inſtruments in the hands of the ſupreme power, to determine what laws were recent or obſolete, expedient or hurtful; ſince they were all alike valid, ſo long Puniſhment of Empſon and Dudley.

† Lord Herbert. * Herbert, Stowe, p. 486. Hollingſhed, p. 799. Pol. Virg. lib. 27.

Chap. I. 1509.

as they remained unrepealed by the legiſlature: That it was natural for a licentious populace to murmur againſt the reſtraints of authority; but all wiſe ſtates had ever made their glory to conſiſt in the juſt diſtribution of reward and puniſhment, and had annexed the former to the obſervance and enforcement of the laws, the latter to their violation and infraction: And that a ſudden overthrow of all government might be expected; where the judges were committed to the mercy of the criminals, the rulers to that of the ſubjects †.

NOTWITHSTANDING this defence, Empſon and Dudley were ſent to the Tower; and ſoon after brought to their trial. The ſtrict execution of laws, however obſolete, could never be imputed to them as a crime in a court of judicature; and it is likely, that even where they had exerciſed arbitrary power, the King, as they had acted by the ſecret commands of his father, was not willing that their conduct ſhould undergo too ſevere a ſcrutiny. In order, therefore, to gratify the people with the puniſhment of theſe obnoxious miniſters, crimes very improbable, or indeed abſolutely impoſſible, were charged upon them, that they had entered into a conſpiracy againſt the King, and had intended, on the death of the late King, to have ſeized by force the adminiſtration of the government. The jury were ſo far moved by popular prejudices, joined to court influence, as to give a verdict againſt them; which was afterwards confirmed by a bill of attainder in Parliament *, and, at the earneſt deſire of the people, was executed by a warrant from the King. Thus, in thoſe arbitrary times, juſtice was equally violated, whether the King ſought power and riches, or courted popularity.

THE King, while he puniſhed the inſtruments of paſt tyranny, had yet ſuch deference to former engagements as to deliberate, immediately after his acceſſion, concerning the conſummation of his marriage with the infanta Catharine, to whom he was affianced during his father's lifetime. Her former marriage with his brother, and the inequality of their years, were the chief objections, which were urged againſt the eſpouſing her: But on the other hand, the advantages of her known virtue, modeſty, and ſweetneſs of diſpoſition were inſiſted on; the affection which ſhe bore the King; the large dowry to which ſhe was entitled as princeſs of Wales; the intereſt of cementing a cloſe alliance with Spain; the

King's marriage.

† Herbert, Hollinſhed, p. 804.

* This parliament met on the 21ſt January, 1510. A law was there enacted, in order to prevent ſome abuſes which had prevailed during the late reign. The forfeiture upon the penal ſtatutes was reduced to the term of three years. Coſts and damages were given againſt informers upon acquital of the accuſed: More ſevere puniſhments were enacted againſt perjury: The falſe inquiſitions procured by Empſon and Dudley were declared null and invalid. Traverſes were allowed; and the time of tendering them enlarged. 1. H. 8. c. 8, 10, 11, 12.

neceſſity of finding ſome confederate to counterbalance the power of France; the expediency of fulfilling the engagements of the late king. When theſe conſiderations were weighed, they determined the council, tho' contrary to the opinion of the primate, to give Henry their advice for compleating the marriage; which was done accordingly. The counteſs of Richmond, who had concurred in the ſame ſentiments, died ſoon after the marriage of her grandſon. Chap. I. 1509. June 3.

THE popularity of Henry's government, his indiſputed title to the throne, his extenſive authority, his large treaſures, the tranquillity of his ſubjects, were circumſtances which rendered his domeſtic adminiſtration eaſy and proſperous: The ſituation of foreign affairs was no leſs happy and deſirable. Italy continued ſtill, as during the late reign, to be the center of all the wars and negotiations of the European princes; and Henry's alliance was courted by both ſides; at the ſame time, that he was not engaged by any immediate intereſt or neceſſity to take part with either. Lewis the twelfth of France, after the conqueſt of Milan, was the only great prince who poſſeſſed any territory in Italy; and could he have remained in tranquillity, he was enabled by his ſituation to preſcribe laws to all the Italian princes and republics, and to hold the balance among them. But the deſire of making a conqueſt of Naples, to which he had the ſame title or pretenſion with his predeceſſor, ſtill engaged him in new enterprizes; and as he foreſaw oppoſition from Ferdinand, who was connected both by treaties and affinity with Frederic of Naples, he endeavoured, by the offers of intereſt, to which the ears of that monarch were ever open, to engage him in an oppoſite confederacy. He ſettled with him a plan for the partition of the kingdom of Naples and the expulſion of Frederic: A plan, which the politicians of that age regarded as the moſt egregious imprudence in the French monarch, and the baſeſt treachery in the Spaniſh. Frederic, ſupported only by ſubjects, who were either diſcontented with his government, or indifferent about his fortunes, was unable to reſiſt ſo powerful a confederacy, and was deprived of his dominions: But he had the ſatisfaction to ſee Naples immediately prove the ſource of contention among his enemies. Ferdinand gave ſecret orders to his general, Gonſalvo, whom the Spaniards honour with the appellation of the *great captain*, to attack the armies of France, and make himſelf maſter of all the dominions of Naples. Gonſalvo prevailed in every enterprize, defeated the French in two pitched battles, and enſured to his prince the entire poſſeſſion of that kingdom. Lewis, unable to procure redreſs by force of arms, was obliged to enter into a fruitleſs negotiation with Ferdinand, for the recovery of his ſhare of the partition; 1510. Foreign affairs.

Chap. I. 1510.

and all Italy, during ſome time, was held in ſuſpence between theſe two powerful monarchs.

THERE ſcarce has been any period, when the balance of power was better ſecured in Europe, and ſeemed more able to maintain itſelf, without any anxious concern or attention of the princes. Several great monarchies were eſtabliſhed; and no one ſo far ſurpaſſed the reſt as to give any foundation, or even pretence, for jealouſy. England was united in domeſtic peace, and by its ſituation happily ſecured from the invaſion of foreigners. The coalition of the ſeveral kingdoms of Spain, had formed one powerful monarchy, which Ferdinand adminiſtered with arts, fraudulent indeed and deceitful, but full of vigour and ability. Lewis the twelfth of France, a gallant and generous prince, by eſpouſing Anne of Britanny, widow to his predeceſſor, had preſerved the union with that principality, on which the ſafety of his kingdom ſo much depended. Maximilian, the emperor, beſides the hereditary dominions of the Auſtrian family, maintained authority in the empire, and notwithſtanding his levity of diſpoſition, was able to unite the German princes in any great plan of intereſt, at leaſt, of defence. Charles, prince of Caſtile, grandſon to Maximilian and Ferdinand, had already ſucceeded to the rich dominions of the houſe of Burgundy; and being as yet in early youth, the government was entruſted to Margaret of Savoy, his aunt, a princeſs endowed with ſignal prudence and virtue. The internal force of theſe ſeveral powerful ſtates, which balanced each other, might long have maintained general tranquillity, had not the active and enterprizing genius of an ambitious pontiff firſt excited the flames of war and diſcord among them.

Julius the 2d.

ALEXANDER the ſixth was dead; a man of a ſingular character, and, excepting his ſon Cæſar Borgia, almoſt the only man we read of in hiſtory who has joined great capacity with the blackeſt vices and the moſt abandoned profligacy of manners. After a ſhort interval, Julius the ſecond had ſucceeded to the papal throne, who, tho' endowed with many virtues, gave almoſt as much ſcandal to the world as his deteſted predeceſſor. His virtues were deemed unſuitable to his ſtation of ſovereign pontiff, the ſpiritual judge and common father of all chriſtians. Animated with an unextinguiſhable thirſt of glory, inflexible in his ſchemes, undaunted in his enterprizes, indefatigable in his purſuits; magnanimous, imperious, domineering; his vaſt ſoul broke thro' all the fetters, which old age and a prieſtly character impoſed upon it, and, during his pontificate, kept the world in perpetual agitation. By his intrigues, a league had been formed at Cambray *, between himſelf, Maximilian the emperor, Lewis the twelfth of France, and Fer-

League of Cambray.

7

* In 1508.

dinand

dinand of Arragon; and the object of this great confederacy was to overwhelm, by their united arms, the commonwealth of Venice. Chap. I. 1510.

This illuſtrious commonwealth, the great bulwark of Europe againſt the Barbarians, and the admired model of civil polity, had riſen to a conſiderable power, and began to make a figure, which during that age bore ſome proportion to that of the great monarchies. Her riches ſurpaſſed thoſe of any European city, her finances were great, her commerce extenſive, her naval power formidable, her armies numerous and well ſupplied. Truſting only to her own power, ſhe had neglected to maintain a cordial friendſhip with any other ſtate; and by the endleſs political ſuſpicions, which ſhe entertained even of her beſt allies, ſhe had taught them to regard her progreſs with like jealouſy. No ſtate could reaſonably complain of any injuſtice and uſurpations in her meaſures: But as great monarchs never ſee without diſpleaſure a republic nearly on a level with themſelves, it was eaſy for Julius, by his negotiations among the European princes, to compleat his ſcheme of a confederacy againſt her. Ferdinand deſired to wreſt from the Venetians ſome towns on the coaſt of Naples, which his predeceſſor had voluntarily, for money, conſigned into their hand: Lewis propoſed to recover a part of the territory of Milan, which he himſelf had delivered to them by treaty: Maximilian laid claim to great part of their dominions, which they had acquired from petty princes or tyrants, that had formerly, as he pretended, in ſome diſtant period, uſurped them from the empire: The pope, from like pretences, challenged another part of their dominions, as the patrimony of the church. In order to cover the ſcheme of this confederacy, the cardinal d'Amboiſe, prime miniſter of France, had met at Cambray with Margaret of Savoy, under colour of accommodating a difference between her and the duke of Guelders; and it was there, that the alliance againſt Venice was ſecretly ſigned by the contracting powers; and all the meaſures of operation concerted *.

The Venetians were appriſed of their danger, and prepared themſelves for reſiſtance. They provided every means of defence, except the moſt eſſential, brave and warlike forces, which it is impoſſible to raiſe, where the ideas of military glory are extinguiſhed, and men have, from long habit, acquired other objects of ambition. They ſent into the field an army of 40,000 men, under experienced leaders, the count of Pitigliano and Bartholomew Alviano; and hoped, that ſo great a force would ſecure them from the invaſion of Lewis who had led an army into Italy, and firſt took the field againſt them. But the martial nobility of France, headed by their gallant ſovereign, utterly diſcomfited theſe enervated forces; and in the action of Ghierradadda the power and

* Guicciardini, lib. 8. Bembo.

Chap. I. 1510.

glory of Venice, the result of consummate wisdom, and the work of ages, suffered in one day a check, which it has never yet been able thoroughly to recover *. Dismayed with this loss, the Venetians took a hasty resolution of abandoning all their dominions on the continent of Italy; and they accordingly withdrew their garrisons from every place, and freed their subjects from their oaths of allegiance. Lewis immediately put himself in possession of Cremona, Bergamo, Brescia, Creme, and all the places which had been dismembered from the Milanese. Even Verona, Padua, Vicenza, and other towns, which, by the treaty of Cambray, fell under the partition of Maximilian, offered to open their gates to the French monarch. Had Maximilian, instead of wasting his time at Trent, led his forces early into Italy, an end had been put for ever to the power and dominion of Venice. But Lewis, well acquainted with the fickleness and inconstancy of that prince, was determined to give him no pretext for deserting his alliance; and therefore ordered the magistrates of those towns to make their submissions to the emperor, whom, he told them, they were now to regard as their lawful sovereign †. The Venetian senate, observing those delays, and remarking the extreme regret, which their subjects discovered on losing the mild and equitable government of the republic ‡, began again to assume courage, and reinstated themselves in the dominion of those cities, which they had abandoned. From this time, their prudence and sound policy gave a check to the malignity of their fortune and the superiority of their enemies. They voluntarily made a sacrifice to Ferdinand of those towns, which he laid claim to, and thereby detached him from the alliance §. They gratified the ambition of the Pope by a like sacrifice; and farther flattered his vanity by the lowest obeisance and the most dutiful submissions ‖. After trying like arts with Maximilian, and finding his pretensions to be utterly exorbitant, they rouzed their patriot spirit, and prepared themselves for resistance, with a courage, which, tho' ill seconded by the unwarlike genius of their people, might have done honour to the Roman senate during the most flourishing period of the republic.

THE great force and secure situation of the considerable monarchies, prevented any one of them from aspiring to any conquest of moment; and tho' this confideration could not maintain general peace, or remedy the natural inquietude of men, it rendered the princes of this age more easy in deserting engagements and changing their alliances, in which they were retained more by humour and caprice than by any natural or durable interest. Julius had no sooner humbled the Venetian republic, than he was inspired with a nobler ambition, that of

* Seissel. hist. Louis XII. St. Gelais, Guicciard. lib. 8. † Buonacorsi, Petrus de Angleria, epist. 418. ‡ Guicciard. lib. 8. § Petrus de Angleria. ‖ Bembo.

expelling

expelling all foreigners from Italy, or, to ſpeak in the ſtile affected by the Italians of that age, the freeing that country entirely from the dominion of the Barbarians *. He was determined to make the tempeſt fall firſt upon Lewis; and in order to pave the way for this great enterprize, he at once ſought for a ground of quarrel with that monarch, and courted the alliance of other princes. He declared war againſt the Duke of Ferrara, the confederate of Lewis. He ſolicited the favour of England, by ſending Henry a ſacred roſe, perfumed with muſk and anointed with chriſm †. He engaged in his intereſt Bambridge, archbiſhop of York, and Henry's ambaſſador at Rome, whom he ſoon after created cardinal. He drew over Ferdinand to his ſide, tho' that monarch, at firſt, made no declaration of his intentions. And what he chiefly valued, he framed a treaty with the Swiſs cantons, who, enraged by ſome neglects put upon them by Lewis, accompanied with contumelious expreſſions, had deſerted the alliance of France, and waited an opportunity of revenging themſelves on that nation. Chap. I. 1510.

Lewis was determined not to abandon the duke of Ferrara, who ſuffered merely for his attachment to the crown of France. Chaumont, his lieutenant in the Milaneſe, received orders to defend him againſt Julius, who, ſupported by his own dauntleſs ſpirit, and confiding in the ſacredneſs of his character, had ſet his enemy at defiance. By a happy and unexpected movement, Chaumont ſurrounded the pope and all his court at Bologna; and had he not allowed himſelf to be amuſed by a treaty, which his profound reſpect for the holy father made him the more willing to hearken to, he had been able, without any bloodſhed, to have reduced him to captivity. Finding himſelf expoſed to ſevere cenſure for not puſhing his advantages, he was agitated with ſuch violent regret that he fell into a languiſhing illneſs, of which he ſoon after died; tho' oppoſite remorſes took place on his death-bed, and he very humbly craved of his holineſs a remiſſion of his grievous ſin, in having at all born arms againſt him ‡

While the French monarch repelled the attacks of his enemies, he thought it alſo requiſite to make an atatck on the pope himſelf, and to deſpoil him, as much as poſſible, of that ſacred character, which chiefly rendered him formidable. He engaged ſome cardinals, diſguſted with the violence of Julius, to deſert him; and by their authority, he was determined, in conjunction with Maximilian who ſtill adhered to his alliance, to call a general council, which might reform the church, and check the exorbitancies of the Roman pontiff. A council was 1511.

* Guicciard. lib. 8. † Spelman, Concil. vol. ii. p. 725. ‡ L'abbé du Bos, Hiſtoire de la Ligue de Cambray.

ſummoned

Chap. I. 1511. ſummoned at Piſa, which from the beginning bore a very inauſpicious aſpect, and promiſed little ſucceſs to its adherents. Except a few French biſhops, who unwillingly obeyed their King's orders in attending the council, all the other prelates kept at a diſtance from an aſſembly, which they regarded as the offspring of faction, intrigue, and worldly politics. Even Piſa, the place of their reſidence, ſhowed them ſigns of contempt; which engaged them to transfer their ſeſſion to Milan, a town under the dominion of the French monarch. Notwithſtanding this advantage, they did not experience much more reſpectful treatment from the inhabitants of Milan; and found it neceſſary to make another remove to Lyons *. Lewis himſelf fortified theſe violent prejudices in favour of the papal authority, by the ſymptoms which he diſcovered of regard, deference, and ſubmiſſion to Julius, whom he always ſpared, even when fortune had thrown into his hands the moſt inviting opportunities of humbling him. And as it was known, that his conſort, who had great authority with him, was extremely diſquieted in mind, on account of his diſſentions with the holy father, all men prognoſticated to Julius final ſucceſs in this unequal conteſt.

THAT enterprizing pope knew his advantages, and availed himſelf of them with the utmoſt temerity and inſolence. So much had he neglected his pontifical character, that he aſſiſted in perſon at the ſiege of Mirandola, viſited the trenches, ſaw ſome of his attendants killed by his ſide, and, like a young ſoldier, chearfully bore all the rigours of winter and a ſevere ſeaſon, in purſuit of military glory †: Yet was he ſtill able to throw, even on his moſt moderate opponents, the charge of impiety and prophaneneſs. He ſummoned a council at the Lateran: He put Piſa under an interdict, and all the places which gave ſhelter to the ſchiſmatical council: He excommunicated the cardinals and prelates who attended it: He even directed his ſpiritual thunders againſt the princes who adhered to it: He freed their ſubjects from all oaths of allegiance, and gave their dominions, to every one, who could take poſſeſſion of them.

1512. FERDINAND of Arragon, who had acquired the ſirname of the Catholic, regarded the cauſe of the pope and of religion only as a cover to his ambition and ſelfiſh politics: Henry, naturally ſincere and ſanguine in his temper, and the more ſo on account of his youth and inexperience, was moved with a hearty deſire of protecting the pope from that oppreſſion, to which he believed him expoſed from the ambitious enterprizes of Lewis. Hopes had been given him by Julius, that the title of the *moſt Chriſtian King*, which had hitherto been annexed to the crown of France, and which was regarded as its moſt precious ornament, would,

* Guicciardini, lib. 10. † Guicciardini, lib. 9.

in

in reward of his ſervices, be transferred to that of England *. Impatient alſo of acquiring that diſtinction in Europe, to which his power and opulence entitled him, he could not long remain neuter amidſt the noiſe of arms; and the natural enmity of the Engliſh againſt France, as well as their antient claims upon that kingdom, led Henry to join that alliance which the pope, Spain, and Venice had formed againſt the French monarch. A herald was ſent to Paris, to exhort Lewis not to wage impious war againſt the pope; and when he returned without ſucceſs, another was ſent to make a demand of the antient patrimonial provinces, Anjou, Maine, Guienne, and Normandy. This meſſage was underſtood as a declaration of war; and a Parliament, being ſummoned, readily granted ſupplies for a purpoſe ſo much favoured by the Engliſh nation †. Chap. I. 1512. War with France. 4th of February.

Buonaviso, an agent of the pope at London, had been corrupted by the court of France, and had previouſly revealed to Lewis all the meaſures which Henry was concerting againſt him. But this infidelity did the King inconſiderable prejudice, in compariſon of what he experienced from the ſelfiſh purpoſes of the ally, to whom he chiefly truſted for aſſiſtance. Ferdinand, his father-in-law, had ſo long perſevered in a courſe of crooked politics, that he began even to value himſelf on his dexterity in fraud and artifice; and he made a boaſt of thoſe ſhameful ſucceſſes. Being told one day, that Lewis the twelfth, a prince of a very different character, had complained that he had once cheated him: "He lies, "the drunkard!" ſaid he, "I have cheated him above twenty times." This prince conſidered his cloſe connexion with Henry, only as the means which enabled him the better to take advantage of his want of experience. He adviſed him not to invade France by the way of Calais, where he himſelf ſhould not have it in his power to aſſiſt him: He exhorted him rather to ſend forces to Fontarabia, whence he could eaſily make a conqueſt of Guienne, a province, in which, it was imagined, the Engliſh had ſtill ſome adherents. He promiſed to aſſiſt this conqueſt by the junction of a Spaniſh army. And ſo forward did he ſeem to promote the intereſt of his ſon-in-law, that he even ſent veſſels into England, to tranſport over the forces which Henry had levied for that purpoſe. The marqueſs of Dorſet commanded theſe troops, which conſiſted of ten thouſand men, moſtly infantry; the lord Howard, ſon to the earl of Surrey, the lord Broke, lord Ferrars, and many others of the young gentry and nobility, accompanied him in this ſervice. All were on fire to diſtinguiſh themſelves by military atchievements, and to make a conqueſt of importance for their maſter. The ſecret purpoſe of Ferdinand in this unexampled generoſity was ſuſpected by no body. Expedition to Fontarabia.

* Guicciard. lib. 11. P. Daniel, vol II. p. 1893. Herbert. Hollingſhed, p. 831.
† Herbert. Hollingſhed, p. 811.

Chap. I. 1512.

THE ſmall kingdom of Navarre lies on the frontiers between France and Spain; and as John d' Albert, the preſent King, was connected in friendſhip and alliance with Lewis, the opportunity ſeemed favourable to Ferdinand, while the Engliſh forces were conjoined with his own, and while all adherents to the council of Piſa lay under the ſentence of excommunication, to put himſelf in poſſeſſion of theſe dominions. No ſooner, therefore, was Dorſet landed in Guipiſcoa, than the Spaniſh monarch declared his readineſs to join him with his forces, to make jointly an invaſion of France, and to form the ſiege of Bayonne, which opened the way into Guienne *: But he remarked to the Engliſh general how dangerous it might prove to leave behind them the kingdom of Navarre, which, being in cloſe alliance with France, could eaſily give admittance to the enemy, and cut off all communication between Spain and the combined armies. To provide againſt ſo dangerous an event, he required, that John ſhould ſtipulate a neutrality in the preſent war; and when that prince expreſſed his willingneſs to enter into any engagement for that purpoſe, he alſo required that he ſhould give ſecurity for his ſtrict obſervance of it. John having likewiſe agreed to this condition, Ferdinand demanded, that he ſhould deliver into his hands ſix of the moſt conſiderable places of his dominions, together with his eldeſt ſon as a hoſtage. Theſe were not conditions to be propoſed to a ſovereign; and as the Spaniſh monarch expected a refuſal, he gave immediate orders to the duke of Alva, his general, to make an invaſion of Navarre, and to reduce the whole kingdom to ſubjection. Alva ſoon made himſelf maſter of all the ſmaller towns; and being ready to form the ſiege of Pampeluna, the capital, he ſummoned the marquiſs of Dorſet to join him with the Engliſh army, and to concert together all their operations.

Deceit of Ferdinand.

DORSET began to ſuſpect, that his maſter's intereſts were very little regarded in all theſe tranſactions; and having no orders to invade the kingdom of Navarre, or make war any where but in France, he refuſed to take any part in that enterprize. He remained therefore in his quarters at Fontarabia; but ſo politic was the contrivance of Ferdinand, that even while the Engliſh army lay in that ſituation, it was almoſt equally ſerviceable to his purpoſes, as if it had acted in conjunction with his own. It kept the French army in awe, and prevented it from advancing to ſuccour the kingdom of Navarre; ſo that Alva, having full leiſure to conduct the ſiege, made himſelf maſter of Pampeluna, and obliged John to ſeek for ſhelter in France. The Spaniſh general applied again to Dorſet, and propoſed to conduct with united councils the operations of the *holy league*, ſo it was called, againſt Lewis: But as he ſtill declined forming the ſiege of Bayonne, and rather inſiſted on the invaſion of the principality of Bearne, a part of the king

* Herbert. Hollingſhed, p. 813.

of

of Navarre's dominions, which lies on the French ſide of the Pyrenees, Dorſet, juſtly ſuſpicious of his ſiniſter intentions, repreſented, that, without new orders from his maſter, he could not concur in ſuch an undertaking. In order to procure ſuch orders, Ferdinand diſpatched Martin de Ampios, as his envoy, to London; and perſuaded Henry, that, by the refractory and ſcrupulous humour of the Engliſh general, the moſt favourable opportunities were loſt, and that it was neceſſary he ſhould, in all things, act in concert with the Spaniſh commander, who was beſt acquainted with the ſituation of the country, and the reaſons of every operation. But before orders to this purpoſe reached Spain, Dorſet had become extremely impatient; and obſerving that his farther ſtay ſerved not to promote the main undertaking, and that his army was daily periſhing by want and ſickneſs, he demanded ſhipping from Ferdinand to tranſport them back into England. Ferdinand, who was bound by treaty to furniſh him with this ſupply, whenever demanded, was at laſt, after many delays, obliged to yield to his importunity; and Dorſet, embarking his troops, prepared himſelf for the voyage. Meanwhile, a meſſenger arrived with orders from Henry, that the troops ſhould remain in Spain; but the ſoldiers were ſo diſcontented with the treatment which they had met with, that they mutinied, and obliged their commanders to ſet ſail for England. Henry was much diſpleaſed with the ill ſucceſs of this enterprize; and it was with difficulty, that Dorſet, by explaining the fraudulent intentions of Ferdinand, was at laſt able to appeaſe him.

Chap. I. 1512.

Return of the Engliſh.

THERE happened this ſummer an action at ſea, which brought not any more deciſive advantage to the Engliſh. Sir Thomas Knevet, maſter of Horſe, was ſent to the coaſt of Britanny with a fleet of forty-five ſail; and he carried with him Sir Charles Brandon, Sir John Carew, and many other young courtiers, who longed for an opportunity of diſplaying their valour. After committing ſome depredations, a French fleet of thirty-nine ſail iſſued from Breſt, under the command of Primauget *, and began an engagement with the Engliſh. Primauget's ſhip was ſet on fire, who finding his deſtruction inevitable, bore down upon the veſſel of the Engliſh admiral, and grappling with her, reſolved to make her ſhare the ſame fate. The ſhips of both fleets ſtood for ſome time in ſuſpence, as ſpectators of this dreadful engagement; and all men ſaw with horror the flames which conſumed both veſſels, and heard the cries of fury and deſpair which came from the miſerable combatants. At laſt, the French veſſel blew up; and at the ſame time deſtroyed the Engliſh †. The reſt of the French fleet made their eſcape into different harbours.

* Or rather Porſmauget, according to P. Daniel's conjecture, vol. II. p. 1901. Hence the Engliſh ſeamen called him Sir Pierce Morgan.

† Polydore Virg. lib. 27. Stowe, p. 490. Lanquet's epitome of chronicles, fol. 273.

Chap. I. 1512.

THE war, which England waged againſt France, though it brought little advantage to the former kingdom, was of infinite prejudice to the latter; and by obliging Lewis to withdraw his forces for the defence of his own dominions, loſt him that ſuperiority, which his arms in the beginning of the campaign, had attained in Italy. Gaſton de Foix, his nephew, a young hero, had been entruſted with the command of the French forces; and in a few months performed ſuch feats of military art and proweſs, as were ſufficient to render illuſtrious the whole life of the oldeſt captain *. His career finiſhed with the great battle of Ravenna, which, after the moſt obſtinate conflict, he gained over the Spaniſh and papal armies. He periſhed the very moment his victory was compleat; and with him periſhed the fortune of the French arms in Italy. The Swiſs, who had rendered themſelves extremely formidable by their bands of diſciplined infantry, invaded the Milaneſe with a numerous army, and raiſed up that inconſtant people to a revolt againſt the dominion of France. Genoa followed the example of that dutchy; and thus Lewis, in a few weeks, entirely loſt his Italian conqueſts, except ſome garriſons; and Maximilian Sforza, the ſon of Ludovic, was again re-inſtated in poſſeſſion of Milan.

1513.

JULIUS diſcovered extreme joy on the diſcomfiture of the French; and the more ſo, as he had been beholden for it to the Swiſs, a people, whoſe councils, he hoped, he ſhould always be able to govern and direct. The pontiff ſurvived this ſucceſs a very little time; and in his place was choſen John de Medici, who took the appellation of Leo the tenth, and proved one of the moſt illuſtrious princes that ever ſat on that throne. Humane, beneficent, generous, affable; the patron of every art, and friend of every virtue †; he had a ſoul no leſs capable of forming great deſigns than his predeceſſor, but was more gentle, pliant, and artful in employing means for the execution of them. By his negotiations, the emperor Maximilian was detached from the French intereſt; and Henry, notwithſtanding his diſappointments in the former campaign, was ſtill encouraged to proſecute his warlike meaſures againſt Lewis.

21ſt of February.

Leo the tenth.

A Parliament.

HENRY had ſummoned a new ſeſſion of parliament ‡, and obtained a ſupply for his enterprize. It was a poll-tax, and impoſed different ſums, according to the ſtation and riches of the perſon. A duke payed ten marks, an earl five pounds, a lord four pounds, a knight four marks; every man valued at eight hundred pounds in goods, four marks. An impoſition was alſo granted of two fifteenths and four tenths §. With theſe ſupplies, joined to the treaſure which had been left by his father, and which was not yet entirely diſſipated, he was enabled to levy a great army, and render himſelf very formidable to his enemy. The

* Guicciard. lib. 10. † Father Paul, lib. 1. ‡ 4th of November, 1512. § Stowe.

Engliſh are ſaid to have been much encouraged in this enterprize, by the arrival of a veſſel in the Thames under the papal banner. It carried preſents of wine and hams to the King, and all the moſt eminent courtiers; and ſuch fond devotion was at that time entertained towards the court of Rome, that theſe trivial preſents were every where received with the greateſt triumph and exultation. Chap. I. 1513.

In order to prevent all diſturbance from Scotland, while Henry's arms ſhould be employed on the continent, Dr. Weſt, Dean of Windſor, was diſpatched on an embaſſy to James, the King's brother-in-law; and inſtructions were given him to accommodate all differences between the kingdoms, as well as to diſcover the intentions of the court of Scotland *. Some complaints had already paſſed on both ſides. One Barton, a Scotſman, having ſuffered injuries from the Portugueze, for which he could obtain no redreſs, had procured letters of marque againſt that nation; but he had no ſooner got to ſea, than he abuſed this liberty, committed depredations upon the Engliſh, and much infeſted the narrow ſeas †. Lord Howard and Sir Edward Howard, admirals, and ſons to the earl of Surrey, ſailing out againſt him, fought him in a deſperate rencounter, where the pyrate was killed; and they brought his ſhips into the Thames. As Henry refuſed all ſatisfaction for this act of juſtice, ſome of the borderers, who wanted but a pretence for depredations, entered England, under the command of Lord Hume, warden of the marches, and committed great ravages on that kingdom. Notwithſtanding theſe mutual grounds of diſſatisfaction, matters might eaſily have been accommodated, had it not been for Henry's intended invaſion of France, which rouzed up the jealouſy of the Scottiſh nation ‡. The antient league, which ſubſiſted between France and Scotland, was conceived to be the ſtrongeſt band of connexion; and the Scots univerſally believed, that, were it not for the countenance which they received from this foreign alliance, they had never been able ſo long to maintain their independence againſt a people ſo much ſuperior in force and riches. James was farther incited to take part in the quarrel by the invitations of Anne, queen of France, whoſe knight he had ever in all tournaments profeſt himſelf, and who ſummoned him, according to the ideas of romantic gallantry, prevalent in that age, to take the field in her defence, and prove himſelf her true and valorous champion. The remonſtrances of his conſort and of his wiſeſt counſellors, were in vain oppoſed to the martial ardour of that prince. He firſt ſent a ſquadron of ſhips to the aſſiſtance of France; the only fleet which Scotland ſeems ever to have poſſeſſed. And though he made profeſſion ſtill to maintain a neutrality, the Engliſh ambaſſador eaſily foreſaw, that a war would War with Scotland.

* Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. † Stowe, p. 489. Hollingſhed, p. 811. ‡ Buchannan, lib. 13. Drummond in the life of James IV.

Chap. I. 1513.

prove in the end inevitable, and he gave warning of the danger to his maſter, who ſent the earl of Surrey to put the borders in a poſture of defence, and to reſiſt the invaſion of the enemy.

HENRY, all on fire for military fame, was little diſcouraged by this appearance of a diverſion from the North; and ſo much the leſs, as he flattered himſelf with the aſſiſtance of all the conſiderable potentates of Europe in his invaſion of France. The pope ſtill continued to thunder out his excommunications againſt Lewis, and all the adherents to the ſchiſmatical council: The Swiſs cantons made profeſſions of the moſt violent animoſity againſt France: The ambaſſadors of Ferdinand and Maximilian had ſigned with thoſe of Henry a treaty of alliance againſt that power, and had ſtipulated the time and place of their intended invaſion: And though Ferdinand diſavowed his ambaſſador, and even ſigned a truce for a twelvemonth with the common enemy; Henry was not yet fully convinced of his ſelfiſh and ſiniſter intentions, and ſtill hoped for his concurrence after the expiration of that term. He had now got a miniſter who complied with all his inclinations, and flattered him in every ſcheme to which his ſanguine and impetuous temper was inclined.

Wolſey, miniſter.

THOMAS WOLSEY, dean of Lincoln, and almoner to the King, ſurpaſſed in favour all his miniſters and courtiers, and was faſt advancing towards that unrivalled grandeur, which he afterwards attained. This man was the ſon of a butcher at Ipſwich; but having got a learned education, and being endowed with an excellent capacity, he was admitted into the marquis of Dorſet's family as tutor to that nobleman's children, and ſoon gained the friendſhip and countenance of his patron *. He was recommended as chaplain to Henry the ſeventh, and being employed by that monarch in a ſecret negotiation, which regarded his intended marriage with Margaret of Savoy, Maximilian's daughter, he acquitted himſelf to the King's ſatisfaction, and obtained the praiſe both of diligence and dexterity in his conduct †. That prince having given him a commiſſion to Maximilian, who at that time reſided in Bruſſels, was ſurprized, in leſs than three days after, to ſee Wolſey preſent himſelf before him; and ſuppoſing that he had protracted his departure, he began to reprove him for the dilatory execution of his orders. Wolſey informed him, that he was juſt returned from Bruſſels, and had ſucceſſfully fulfilled all his majeſty's commands. "But on ſecond thoughts," ſaid the King, "I found that ſomewhat was omitted in your orders; and have ſent "a meſſenger after you with fuller inſtructions." "I met the meſſenger," replied Wolſey, "on my return: But as I had reflected on that omiſſion, I ven-

* Stowe, p. 997.

† Cavendiſh, Fiddes's life of Wolſey. Stowe.

" tured of myſelf to execute what, I knew, muſt be your majeſty's intentions." The death of Henry, ſoon after this incident, was the reaſon why Wolſey reaped no advantage from the good opinion, which that monarch had entertained of him: But from that moment he was looked on at court as a riſing man; and Fox, biſhop of Wincheſter, caſt his eye upon him as one, who might be ſerviceable to him in his preſent ſituation *. This prelate, obſerving that the earl of Surrey had totally eclipſed him in favour, reſolved to introduce Wolſey into the young prince's familiarity, and hoped that he might rival Surrey in his inſinuating arts, and yet be contented to act in the cabinet a part ſubordinate to Fox himſelf, who had promoted him. In a very little time, Wolſey gained ſo much on Henry's good graces, that he ſupplanted both Surrey in his favour, and Fox in his truſt and confidence. Being admitted to the King's parties of pleaſure, he took the lead in every jovial converſation, and promoted all that frolic and entertainment, which he found ſuitable to the age and inclination of the young monarch. Neither his own years, which were near forty, nor his character of a clergyman, were any reſtraint upon him, or engaged him to check, by any uſeleſs ſeverity, the gaiety, in which Henry, who had ſmall propenſion to debauchery, paſſed his careleſs hours. During the intervals of amuſement he introduced buſineſs and ſtate affairs, and inſinuated thoſe maxims of conduct, which he was deſirous his maſter ſhould adopt. He obſerved to him, that, while he entruſted his affairs into the hands of his father's counſellors, he had the advantage indeed of employing men of wiſdom and experience, but men who owed not their promotion to his favour, and who ſcarce thought themſelves accountable to him for the exerciſe of their authority: That by the factions, and cabals, and jealouſies, which prevailed among them, they more obſtructed the advancement of his affairs, than they promoted it by the knowledge which age and practice had conferred upon them: That while he thought proper to paſs his time in thoſe pleaſures, to which his age and royal fortune invited him, and in thoſe ſtudies, which would in time enable him to ſway the ſceptre with abſolute authority, his beſt ſyſtem of government would be to intruſt his authority into the hands of ſome one perſon, who was the creature of his will, and who could entertain no view but that of promoting his ſervice: And that if this miniſter had alſo the ſame reliſh for pleaſure with himſelf, and the ſame taſte for ſcience; he could the more eaſily, at intervals, account to him for his whole conduct, and introduce his maſter gradually into the knowledge of public buſineſs, and thus, without tedious conſtraint or application, initiate him in the ſcience of government †.

Chap. I. 1513.

* Antiq. Brit. Eccleſ. p. 309. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. † Cavendiſh, p. 12. Stowe, 499.

HENRY

Chap. I. 1513.

HENRY entered into all the views of Wolſey; and finding no one ſo capable of executing this plan of adminiſtration as the perſon who propoſed it, he ſoon advanced his favourite, from being the companion of his careleſs hours, to be a member of his council; and from being a member of his council, to be his ſole and abſolute miniſter. By this rapid advancement and uncontrouled authority, the character and genius of Wolſey had full opportunity to diſplay itſelf. Inſatiable in his acquiſitions, but ſtill more magnificent in his expence: Of extenſive capacity, but ſtill more unbounded enterprize: Ambitious of power, but ſtill more deſirous of glory: Inſinuating, engaging, perſuaſive; and, by turns, lofty, elevated, commanding: Haughty to his equals, but affable to his dependants; oppreſſive to the people, but liberal to his friends; more generous than grateful; leſs moved by injuries than by contempt; he ſeemed framed to take the aſcendant in every intercourſe with others, but exerted this ſuperiority of *nature* with ſuch oſtentation as expoſed him to envy, and made every one willing to recal the original inferiority or rather meanneſs of his *fortune*.

His character.

THE branch of adminiſtration, in which Henry moſt exerted himſelf, while he gave his entire confidence to Wolſey, was the military, which, as it ſuited the natural gallantry and bravery of his temper, as well as the ardour of his youth, was the principal object of his attention. Finding, that Lewis had made great preparations both by ſea and land to reſiſt him, he was no leſs attentive to raiſe a formidable army and equip a conſiderable fleet for the invaſion of France. The command of the fleet was intruſted to Sir Edward Howard; who, after ſcouring the channel ſome time, preſented himſelf before Breſt, where the French navy then lay; and he challenged them to a combat. The French admiral, who expected from the Mediterranean a reinforcement of ſome gallies under the command of Prejeant de Bidoux, kept within the harbour, and ſaw with patience the Engliſh burn and deſtroy the country in the neighbourhood. At laſt Prejeant arrived with ſix gallies, and put into Conquet, a place within a few leagues of Breſt, where he ſecured himſelf behind ſome batteries, which he had planted on rocks, that lay on each ſide of him. Howard was notwithſtanding determined to make an attack; and as he had but two gallies, he took himſelf the command of one, and gave the other to Devereux lord Ferrars. He was followed by ſome row-barges and ſome crayers under the command of Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir William Sidney, and other officers of diſtinction. He immediately faſtened on Prejeant's ſhip, and leapt on board of her, attended with one Carroz, a Spaniſh cavalier, and ſeventeen Engliſhmen. The cable, meanwhile, which faſtened his ſhip to that of the enemy, being cut, the admiral was thus left in the hands of the French; and as he ſtill continued the fight with great gallantry, he was puſhed

25th April.

puſhed overboard by their pikes *. Lord Ferrars, ſeeing the admiral's galley fall off, followed with the other veſſels; and the whole fleet was ſo diſcouraged by the loſs of their admiral, that they retired from before Breſt †. The French navy came out of harbour; and even ventured to invade the coaſt of Suſſex. They were repulſed, and Prejeant, their admiral, loſt an eye by the ſhot of an arrow. Lord Howard, brother to the deceaſed admiral, received the command of the Engliſh fleet; and little memorable paſſed at ſea during this ſummer.

GREAT preparations had been making at land, during the whole winter, for an invaſion of France by the way of Calais; but the ſummer was well advanced before every thing was in ſufficient readineſs for the intended enterprize. The long peace, which the kingdom had enjoyed, had ſomewhat unfitted the Engliſh for military expeditions; and the great change, which had lately been introduced in the art of war, had rendered it ſtill more difficult to inure them to the uſe of the weapons now employed in action. The Swiſs, and after them the Spaniards, had ſhewn the advantage of a ſtable infantry, who fought with pike and ſword, and were able to repulſe even the heavy-armed cavalry, in which the great force of the armies formerly conſiſted. The practice of fire-arms was become very common; tho' the caliver, which was the weapon now uſed, was ſo inconvenient, and attended with ſo many diſadvantages, that it had not entirely diſcredited the uſe of bows, a weapon in which the Engliſh excelled all European nations. The Engliſh archers ſtill maintained their reputation; and even during the preſent reign, the king's allies had ſolicited him for ſupplies of this kind. The ſecond year after his acceſſion, he ſent a thouſand archers, under the command of lord Dacres, to the aſſiſtance of Ferdinand, his father-in-law, in his projected expedition againſt the Moors of Barbary; but as that prince turned his arms againſt the French in Italy, Darcy was ſent back without being employed in any ſervice. The King had alſo ſent fifteen hundred archers under the command of Sir Edward Poinings to the aſſiſtance of Margaret, dutcheſs of Savoy, who made uſe of them with great advantage againſt the duke of Guelders, the great diſturber of the Netherlands. A conſiderable part of the forces, which Henry now levied for the invaſion of France, conſiſted alſo of archers; and ſo ſoon as affairs were in readineſs, the vanguard of the army, amounting to 8000 men, under the command of the earl of Shrewſbury, ſailed over to Calais. Shrewſbury was accom-

* It was a maxim of Howard's, that no admiral was good for any thing, that was not brave even to a degree of madneſs. As the ſea ſervice requires much leſs plan and contrivance and capacity than the land, this maxim has great plauſibility and appearance of truth: Though the fate of Howard himſelf may ſerve as a proof that even there courage ought to be tempered with diſcretion.

† Stowe, p. 491. Herbert, Hollingſhed, p. 816.

panied

Chap. I. 1513.

panied with the earl of Derby, the lords Fitzwater, Haſtings, Cobham, and Sir Rice ap Thomas, captain of the light horſe. Another body of 6000 men ſoon after followed under the command of lord Herbert, the chamberlain, attended with the earls of Northumberland and Kent, the lords Audley and Delawar, together with Carew, Curſon, and other gentlemen.

THE King himſelf prepared to follow with the main body and rear of the army; and he appointed the queen regent of the kingdom during his abſence. That he might ſecure her adminiſtration from all diſturbance, he ordered Edmond de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, to be beheaded in the Tower, the nobleman who had been attainted and impriſoned during the late reign. The King was led to commit this act of violence by the dying commands, as is imagined, of his father, who told him, that he never would be free from danger, while a man of ſo turbulent a diſpoſition as Suffolk was alive. And as his brother, Richard de la Pole, had accepted of a command in the French ſervice, and attempted very fooliſhly to revive the York faction, and to animate them againſt Henry, he probably drew more ſuddenly the King's vengeance on the unhappy Suffolk.

30th of June.

AT laſt, Henry, attended with the duke of Buckingham and many others of the nobility, arrived in Calais, and entered upon his French expedition, whence he fondly expected ſo much ſucceſs and glory *. Of all thoſe allies, on whoſe aſſiſtance he ſo much relied, the Swiſs alone fully performed their engagements. Being put in motion by a ſum of money ſent them by Henry, and incited by their victories obtained in Italy, and by their animoſity againſt France, they were preparing to enter that kingdom with an army of twenty-five thouſand men; and no equal force could be oppoſed to their incurſion. Maximilian had received an advance of 120,000 crowns from Henry, and had engaged to reinforce the Swiſs with 8000 men, but failed in his engagements. That he might make atonement to the King, he himſelf appeared in the Low Countries, and joined the Engliſh army with ſome German and Flemiſh ſoldiers, who were uſeful in giving an example of diſcipline to Henry's new levied forces. Obſerving the diſpoſition of the Engliſh monarch to be more bent on glory than on intereſt, he inliſted himſelf in his ſervice, wore the croſs of St. George, and received pay, a hundred crowns a-day, as one of his ſubjects and captains. But while he exhibited this extraordinary ſpectacle, of an emperor of Germany ſerving under a King of England, he was treated with the higheſt reſpect by Henry, and really directed all the operations of the combined army.

Invaſion of France.

BEFORE the arrival of Henry and Maximilian in the camp, the earl of Shrewſbury and lord Herbert had formed the ſiege of Teroüane, a town ſituate on

* Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Belcarius, lib. 14.

the

the frontiers of Picardy; and they began to attack the place with vigour. Teligini and Crequi commanded in the town, and had a garriſon, which did not exceed a thouſand men; yet made they ſuch ſtout reſiſtance as protracted the ſiege a month; and they found themſelves at laſt more in danger from want of proviſions and ammunition than from the aſſaults of the beſiegers. Having conveyed intelligence of their ſituation to Lewis, who had advanced to Amiens with his army, that prince gave orders to throw relief into the place. Fontrailles appeared at the head of 800 horſemen, each of whom carried a ſack of gunpowder behind him, and two quarters of bacon. With this ſmall force he made a ſudden and unexpected irruption into the Engliſh camp, and ſurmounting all reſiſtance, advanced to the foſſee of the town, where each horſeman threw down his burden. They immediately returned at the gallop, and were ſo fortunate as again to break thro' the Engliſh, and to receive little or no loſs, in this dangerous attempt *. Chap. I. 1513. 16th Auguſt.

But the Engliſh had, ſoon after, full revenge for that inſult. Henry had received intelligence of the approach of the French Horſe, who had advanced to protect this incurſion of Fontrailles; and he ordered ſome troops to paſs the Lis, in order to oppoſe them. The cavalry of France, tho' they conſiſted chiefly of gentlemen, who had behaved with great valour in many deſperate actions in Italy, were, on ſight of the enemy, ſeized with ſo unaccountable a panic, that they immediately took to flight, and were purſued by the Engliſh. The duke of Longueville, who commanded the French, Buſſi d'Amboiſe, Clermont, Imbercourt, the chevalier Bayard, and many other officers of diſtinction were taken priſoners †. This action, or rather rout, is ſometimes called the battle of Guinegate, from the place where it was fought; but more commonly the *battle of Spurs*, becauſe the French, that day, made more uſe of their ſpurs than of their ſwords or military weapons. Battle of Guinegate.

After ſo conſiderable an advantage, the King, who was at the head of a complete army of above 50,000 men, might have made incurſions to the gates of Paris, and ſpread confuſion and deſolation every where. It gave Lewis great joy, when he heard, that the Engliſh, inſtead of puſhing their victory, and attacking the diſmayed troops of France, returned to the ſiege of an inconſiderable place like Teroüane. The governors were obliged ſoon after to ſurrender the town; and Henry found his acquiſition of ſo little conſequence, tho' gained at the expence of ſome blood, and what, in his preſent circumſtances, was more important, of much valuable time, that he immediately demoliſhed the fortifi-

* Hiſt. de Chev. Bayard, ch. 57. Memoires de Bellai.

† Memoires de Bellai, liv. 1. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Hollingſhed, p. 822. Herbert.

Chap. I. 1513. cations. The anxieties of the French were again renewed with regard to the motions of the Engliſh. The Swiſs at the ſame time had entered Burgundy with a very formidable army, and laid ſiege to Dijon, which was in no condition to reſiſt them. Ferdinand himſelf, tho' he had made a truce with Lewis, ſeemed diſpoſed to lay hold of every advantage which fortune ſhould preſent to him. Scarce ever was the French monarchy in greater danger, or leſs in a condition to defend itſelf againſt thoſe powerful armies, which on every ſide aſſailed or threatened it. Even many of the inhabitants of Paris, who believed themſelves expoſed to the rapacity and violence of the enemy, began to diſlodge, without knowing what place could afford them greater ſafety and protection.

But Lewis was extricated from his preſent difficulties by the manifeſt blunders of his enemies. The Swiſs allowed themſelves to be ſeduced into a negotiation by Tremoüille, governor of Burgundy; and without making enquiry, whether that nobleman had any powers to treat, they accepted of the conditions which he offered them. Tremoüille, who knew, that he ſhould be diſavowed by his maſter, ſtipulated whatever they were pleaſed to demand; and thought himſelf happy, at the expence of ſome payments, and very large promiſes, to get rid of ſo formidable an enemy ‡.

The meaſures of Henry ſhowed equal ignorance in the art of war with that of the Swiſs in negotiation. Tournay was a great and rich city, which, tho' it lay within the frontiers of Flanders, belonged entirely to France, and afforded the troops of that kingdom a paſſage into the middle of the Netherlands. Maximilian, who was deſirous to free his grandſon from ſo troubleſome a neighbourhood, adviſed Henry to lay ſiege to this place; and the Engliſh monarch, not conſidering that ſuch an acquiſition nowiſe advanced his conqueſts in France, was ſo imprudent as to follow this intereſted council. The city of Tournay, by its antient charters, being exempted from the burden of a garriſon, the burghers, even againſt the remonſtrance of their ſovereign, ſtrenuouſly inſiſted on maintaining this dangerous privilege; and they engaged, by themſelves, to make a vigorous defence againſt the enemy *. Their courage failed them when matters came to extremity; and after a few days ſiege, the place was ſurrendered to the Engliſh. Henry ſo little regarded its privileges, that he immediately quartered a garriſon in it, under the command of Sir Edward Poinings. The biſhop of Tournay was lately dead; and as a new biſhop was already elected by the chapter, but not inſtalled in his office, the King beſtowed the adminiſtration of the ſee on his favourite, Wolſey, and put him in immediate poſſeſſion of the

24th September.

‡ Memoires du mareſchal de Fleuranges Beliarius, lib. 14.

* Memoires de Fleuranges.

revenues,

revenues, which were conſiderable †. Hearing of the retreat of the Swiſs, and obſerving the ſeaſon to be far advanced, he thought proper to retire into England; and he carried the greateſt part of his army with him. Succeſs had attended him in every enterprize; and his youthful mind was much elated with this ſeeming proſperity; but all men of judgment, comparing the advantages of his ſituation with his progreſs, his expences with his acquiſitions, were convinced, that this campaign, ſo much vaunted, was, in reality, both ruinous and inglorious to him ‡. Chap. I. 1513.

The ſucceſs, which, during this ſummer, had attended Henry's arms in the north, was much more deciſive. The King of Scotland had ſummoned out the whole force of his kingdom; and having paſſed the Tweed with a brave, tho' a tumultuary army of above 50,000 men, he ravaged thoſe parts of Northumberland which lay neareſt that river, and employed himſelf in taking the caſtles of Norham, Etal, Werke, Ford, and other places of little importance. The lady Ford, a woman of great beauty, being taken priſoner in her caſtle, was preſented to James, and ſo gained on the affections of that monarch, that he waſted in idle pleaſure that critical time, which, during the abſence of his enemy, he ſhould have employed in puſhing his conqueſts. His troops, lying in a barren country, where they ſoon conſumed all the proviſions, began to be pinched with neceſſity; and as the authority of the prince was feeble, and military diſcipline, during that age, extremely relaxed, many of them had ſtolen from the camp, and retired homewards. Meanwhile, the earl of Surrey, having collected a force of 26,000 men, of which 5000 had been ſent over from the King's army in France, marched to the defence of the country, and approached the Scots, who lay on ſome high ground near the hills of Cheviot. The river Till ran between the armies, and prevented an engagement: Surrey therefore ſent a herald to the Scots camp, challenging the enemy to deſcend into the plain of Milfield, which lay towards the ſouth; and there, appointing a day for the combat, try their valour on equal ground. As he received no ſatisfactory anſwer, he made a feint of marching towards Berwic; as if he intended to enter Scotland, to lay waſte the borders, and cut off the proviſions of the enemy. The Scots army, in order to prevent his purpoſe, put themſelves in motion; and having ſet fire to the huts in which they had quartered, they deſcended from the hills. Surrey, taking advantage of the ſmoke, which was blown towards him, and which covered his movements, paſſed the Till with his artillery and vanguard at the bridge of Twiſel, and ſent the reſt of his army to find a ford farther up the river.

† Strype's Memorials, vol. 1. p. 5, 6. ‡ Guicciardini.

Chap. I. 1513.

9th September.

Battle of Flouden.

An engagement was now become inevitable between the armies, and both ſides prepared for it with great tranquillity and order *. The Engliſh divided their army into two lines: Lord Howard led the main body of the firſt line, Sir Edmond Howard the right wing, Sir Marmaduke Conſtable the left. The earl of Surrey himſelf commanded the main body of the ſecond line, lord Dacres the right wing, Sir Edward Stanley the left. The Scots front preſented three diviſions to the enemy: The middle was led by the King himſelf: The right by the earl of Huntley, aſſiſted by lord Hume: The left by the earls of Lenox and Argyle. A fourth diviſion under the earl of Bothwel made a body of reſerve. Huntley began the battle; and after a ſharp conflict, put to flight the left wing of the Engliſh, and chaced them off the field: But on returning from the purſuit, he found the whole Scots army in great diſorder. The diviſion under Lenox and Argyle, elated with the ſucceſs of the other wing, had broke their ranks, and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances and entreaties of La Motte, the French ambaſſador, had ruſhed headlong upon the enemy. Not only Sir Edmond Howard, at the head of his diviſion, received them with great valour; but Dacres, who commanded in the ſecond line, wheeling about during the action, fell upon their rear, and put them to the ſword without reſiſtance. The diviſion under the King himſelf and that under Bothwel, animated by the valour of their leaders, ſtill made head againſt the Engliſh, and throwing themſelves into a circle, protracted the action till night ſeparated the combatants. The victory ſeemed yet uncertain, and the numbers which fell on each ſide were nearly equal, amounting to above 5000 men: But the morning diſcovered evidently where the advantage lay. The Engliſh had loſt only perſons of ſmall note; but the flower of the Scots nobility had fallen in battle, and the King himſelf, after the moſt diligent enquiry, could no where be found. In ſearching the field, the Engliſh met with a dead body, which reſembled him, and was arrayed in a ſimilar habit; and they put it in a leaden coffin and ſent it to London. During ſome time it was kept unburied; becauſe James died under ſentence of excommunication, on account of his confederacy with France, and his oppoſition to the holy ſee †: But upon Henry's application, who pretended that that prince, in the inſtant before his death, had diſcovered ſigns of repentance, abſolution was given him, and his body was interred. The Scots, however, ſtill aſſerted, that it was not James's body, which was found in the field of battle, but that of one Elphinſton, who had been arrayed in arms reſembling the King's, in order to divide the attention of the Engliſh, and ſhare the danger with his maſter.

* Buchannan, lib. 13. Drummond, Herbert. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Stowe, p. 493. Paullus Jovius.

† Buchannan, lib. 13. Herbert.

It

It was believed that James had been ſeen croſſing the Tweed at Kelſo; and ſome imagined that he had been killed by the vaſſals of lord Hume, whom that nobleman had inſtigated to commit ſo enormous a crime. But the populace entertained the opinion, that he was ſtill alive, and having gone ſecretly in pilgrimage to the holy land, would ſoon return, and take poſſeſſion of the throne. This fond conceit was long entertained in Scotland. Chap. I. 1513.

THE King of Scots and moſt of the chief nobility being killed in the field of Flouden, ſo this battle was called, a very inviting opportunity was offered to Henry of gaining advantages over that kingdom, perhaps of reducing it to ſubjection. But he diſcovered on this occaſion a mind truly great and generous. When the Queen of Scotland, Margaret, who was created regent during the infancy of her ſon, applied for peace, he readily granted it; and took compaſſion of the helpleſs condition of his ſiſter and nephew. The earl of Surrey, who had gained him ſo great a victory, he reſtored to the title of Duke of Norfolk, 1514. which had been forfeited by his father, for engaging on the ſide of Richard the third. His ſon, lord Howard, was honoured with the title of earl of Surrey. Sir Charles Brandon, his favourite, whom he had before created viſcount Liſle, was now raiſed to the dignity of duke of Suffolk. Wolſey, who was both his favourite and his miniſter, was created biſhop of Lincoln. Lord Herbert obtained the title of earl of Worceſter. Sir Edward Stanley, that of lord Monteagle.

THO' peace with Scotland gave Henry ſecurity towards the north, and enabled him to proſecute in tranquillity his enterprize againſt France, ſome other incidents had happened, which more than counterbalanced this fortunate event, and ſerved to open his eyes with regard to the raſhneſs of an undertaking, into which his youth and high fortune had betrayed him.

LEWIS, fully ſenſible of the dangerous ſituation to which his kingdom had been reduced during the former campaign, was reſolved, by every expedient, to prevent the return of like perils, and to break the confederacy of his enemies. The pope was nowiſe diſpoſed to puſh the French to extremity; and provided they did not return to take poſſeſſion of Milan, his intereſt rather led him to preſerve the balance among the contending parties. He accepted therefore of Lewis's offer to renounce the council of Lyons; and he took off the excommunication which his predeceſſor and himſelf had denounced againſt that King and his kingdom. Ferdinand was now faſt declining in years, and as he entertained no farther ambition than that of keeping poſſeſſion of Navarre, which he had ſubdued by his arms and policy, he readily hearkened to the propoſals of Lewis for prolonging the truce another year; and he even ſhowed an inclination of forming

Chap. I. 1514. forming a more intimate connexion with that Monarch. Lewis had dropped hints of his intention to marry his ſecond daughter, Renée, either to Charles, prince of Spain, or his brother, Ferdinand, both of them grandchildren to the Spaniſh monarch; and he declared his reſolution of beſtowing on her, as her portion, his claim to the dutchy of Milan. Ferdinand not only embraced theſe ſchemes with avidity; but alſo engaged the emperor, Maximilian, in the ſame views, and procured his conſent to a treaty, which opened ſo inviting a proſpect of aggrandizing their common grand children.

When Henry was informed of Ferdinand's renewal of the truce with Lewis, he fell into the moſt violent rage, and loudly complained, that his father-in-law had firſt, by the higheſt promiſes and profeſſions, engaged him in enmity with France, and afterwards, without giving him the leaſt warning, had now again ſacrificed his intereſt to his own ſelfiſh purpoſes, and had left him expoſed alone to all the dangers and expences of the war. In proportion to his eaſy credulity and unſuſpecting reliance on Ferdinand, was the vehemence with which he exclaimed againſt the treatment, which he met with; and he threatened revenge for this egregious treachery and breach of faith *. But he loſt all patience when informed of the other negotiation, by which Maximilian was alſo ſeduced from his alliance, and where propoſals had been hearkened to, for the marriage of the prince of Spain with the daughter of France. Charles, during the life-time of the late King, had been affianced to Mary, Henry's ſecond ſiſter; and as the prince now approached the age of puberty, the King had expected the immediate completion of the marriage, and the honourable ſettlement of a ſiſter, for whom he had entertained a very tender affection. Such a complication, therefore, of injuries gave him the higheſt diſpleaſure, and inſpired him with a deſire of expreſſing his diſdain towards thoſe who had taken advantage of his youth and inexperience, and had abuſed his too great facility.

The duke of Longueville, who had been made priſoner at the battle of Guinegate, and who was ſtill detained in England, was ready to take advantage of all theſe diſpoſitions of Henry, in order to procure a peace and even an alliance, which he knew to be ſo paſſionately deſired by his maſter. He repreſented to the King, that Anne, queen of France, being lately dead, a door was thereby opened for an affinity, which might tend to the advantage of both kingdoms, and which would ſerve to terminate honourably all the differences between them: That ſhe had left Lewis no male children; and as he had ever entertained a ſtrong deſire of having heirs to the crown, no marriage ſeemed more ſuitable to him than that with the

* Petrus de Angleria, Epiſ. 545, 546.

princeſs

princeſs of England, whoſe youth and beauty afforded the moſt flattering hopes in that particular: That tho' the marriage of a princeſs of ſixteen, with a King of fifty-three, might ſeem unſuitable; yet the other advantages, attending the alliance, were more than a ſufficient compenſation for this inequality: And that Henry, in looſening his connexions with Spain, whence he had never experienced any advantage, would contract a cloſe affinity with Lewis, a prince, who, thro' his whole life, had invariably maintained the character of probity and honour. Chap. I. 1514.

As Henry ſeemed to hearken to this diſcourſe with very willing ears, Longueville informed his maſter of the probability, which he diſcovered of bringing this matter to a happy concluſion; and he received full powers for negotiating the treaty. The articles were eaſily adjuſted between the monarchs. Lewis agreed that Tournay ſhould remain in the hands of the Engliſh; that Richard de la Pole ſhould be baniſhed to Metz, there to live on a penſion aſſigned him by Lewis; that Henry ſhould receive payment of a million of crowns, being the arrears due by treaty to his father and himſelf; and that the princeſs Mary ſhould bring four hundred thouſand crowns as her portion, and enjoy as large a jointure as any queen of France, even the former, who was heireſs of Britanny. The two princes alſo ſtipulated the ſuccours, with which they ſhould mutually ſupply each other, in caſe either of them was attacked by any enemy *. Peace with France. 7th of Auguſt.

In conſequence of this treaty, Mary was ſent over to France with a ſplendid retinue, and Lewis met her at Abbeville, where the eſpouſals were celebrated. He was enchanted with the beauty, grace, and numerous accompliſhments of the young princeſs; and being naturally of an amorous diſpoſition, which his advanced age had not entirely cooled, he was ſeduced into ſuch a courſe of gaiety and pleaſure, as proved very unſuitable to his declining ſtate of health †. He died in leſs than three months after his marriage, to the infinite regret of his ſubjects, who, ſenſible of his tender concern for their welfare, gave him with one voice the honourable appellation of *Father of his people.* 9th of October. 1515. 1ſt of January.

Francis, duke of Angouleme, a youth of one and twenty, who had married Lewis's eldeſt daughter, ſucceeded him on the throne; and by his activity, valour, generoſity, and other virtues, gave prognoſtics of a happy and glorious reign. This young monarch had been extremely ſtruck with the charms of the Engliſh princeſs; and even during his predeceſſor's life-time, had payed her ſuch cloſe attendance, as made ſome of his friends apprehend that he had entertained views of gallantry towards her. But being warned, that, by indulging himſelf in this paſſion, he might readily exclude his own title to the throne, he forbore all

* Du Tillet. † Brantome Eloge de Louis XII.

farther

Chap. I. 1515.

farther addreſſes; and even watched the young dowager with a very careful eye during the firſt months of her widowhood. Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, was at that time in the court of France, the moſt comely perſonage of his time, and the moſt accompliſhed in all the exerciſes, which were then thought to befit a courtier and a ſoldier. He was Henry's chief favourite; and that monarch had even once entertained thoughts of marrying him to his ſiſter, and had given indulgence to that mutual paſſion, which took place between them. The queen aſked Suffolk, whether he had now the courage, without farther reflection, to eſpouſe her; and ſhe told him, that her brother would more eaſily forgive him for not aſking his conſent, than for acting contrary to his orders. Suffolk declined not ſo inviting an offer; and the marriage was ſecretly compleated at Paris. Francis, who was pleaſed with this marriage, as it prevented Henry from forming any powerful alliance by means of his ſiſter *, interpoſed his good offices in appeaſing him: And even Wolſey, having entertained no jealouſy of Suffolk, who was content to participate in the King's pleaſures, and had no ambition to interpoſe in ſtate affairs, was active in reconciling the King to his ſiſter and brother-in-law; and he obtained them permiſſion to return to England.

CHAP. II.

Wolſey's adminiſtration.——Scots affairs.——Progreſs of Francis the firſt.——Jealouſy of Henry.—— Tournay delivered to France.—— Wolſey appointed legate.——His manner of exerciſing that office.—— Death of the emperor Maximilian.——Charles, King of Spain, choſen emperor.——Interview between Henry and Francis at Calais.——The emperor Charles arrives in England——Mediation of Henry.——— Trial and condemnation of the duke of Buckingham.

1515. Wolſey's adminiſtration.

THE numerous enemies, whom Wolſey's ſudden elevation, his aſpiring character, and his haughty deportment had raiſed him, ſerved only to rivet him faſter in Henry's confidence; who placed a pride in ſupporting the choice, which he had made, and who was incapable of yielding either to the murmurs of the people, or to the diſcontents of the great. That artful prelate likewiſe, well

* Petrus de Angleria, Epiſt. 544.

acquainted with the King's imperious temper, concealed from him the abſolute aſcendant, which he acquired; and while he ſecretly directed all public councils, he ever pretended a blind ſubmiſſion to the will and authority of his maſter. By entering into the King's pleaſures, he ſtill preſerved his affections; by conducting his buſineſs, he gratified his indolence; and by his unlimited complaiſance in both capacities, he prevented all that jealouſy, to which his exorbitant acquiſitions, and his ſplendid, oſtentatious train of life ſhould naturally have given birth. The archbiſhoprick of York falling vacant by the death of Bambrige, Wolſey was promoted to that ſee, and reſigned the biſhoprick of Lincoln. Beſides enjoying the adminiſtration of Tournay, he got poſſeſſion, at very low leaſes, of the revenues of Bath, Worceſter, and Hereford, biſhopricks filled by Italians, who were allowed to reſide abroad, and who were glad to compound for this indulgence, by parting with a conſiderable ſhare of their profits. He held in commendam the abbey of St. Albans, and many other church preferments. He was even allowed to unite with the ſee of York, firſt that of Durham, next that of Wincheſter; and there ſeemed to be no end of his acquiſitions. His advancement in eccleſiaſtical dignity ſerved him as a pretence for engroſſing ſtill more revenues: The pope, obſerving his great influence over the King, was deſirous of engaging him in his intereſt, and had created him a cardinal. Never churchman, under colour of exacting regard to religion, carried to a more exorbitant height, the ſtate and dignity of that character. His train conſiſted of eight hundred ſervants, of whom many were knights and gentlemen: Some even of the nobility put their children into his family as a place of education; and in order to ingratiate them with their patron, allowed them to bear offices as his ſervants. Whoever was diſtinguiſhed by any art or ſcience payed court to the cardinal; and none payed court in vain. Literature, which was then in its infancy, found in him a generous patron; and both by his public inſtitutions and private bounty, he gave encouragement to every branch of erudition *. Not content with this munificence, which gained him the approbation of the wiſe, he ſtrove to dazzle the eyes of the populace, by the ſplendor of his equipage and furniture, the coſtly embroidery of his liveries, the luſtre of his apparel. He was the firſt clergyman in England who wore ſilk and gold, not only on his habit, but alſo on his ſaddles and the trappings of his horſes †. He cauſed his cardinal's hat to be borne aloft by a perſon of rank; and when he came to the King's chapel, would permit it to be laid on no place but the altar. A prieſt, the talleſt and moſt comely

Chap. II. 1515.

* Eraſm. Epiſt. lib. 2. epiſt. 1. lib. 16. epiſt. 3.

† Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Stowe, p. 501. Hollingſhed, p. 847.

Chap. II. 1515.

he could find, carried before him a pillar of ſilver, on whoſe top was placed a croſs: But not content with this parade, to which he thought himſelf intitled as cardinal, he provided another prieſt of equal ſtature and beauty, who marched along, bearing the croſs of York, even in the dioceſe of Canterbury; contrary to the antient rule and agreement between the prelates of theſe rival ſees *. The people made merry with the cardinal's oſtentation; and ſaid they were now ſenſible, that one croſs alone was not ſufficient for the expiation of his ſins and offences.

WARHAM, chancellor and archbiſhop of Canterbury, a man of a very moderate temper, averſe to all diſpute, choſe rather to retire from public employment, than maintain an unequal conteſt with the haughty cardinal. He reſigned his office of chancellor; and the ſeals were immediately intruſted to Wolſey. If this new accumulation of dignity encreaſed his enemies, it alſo ſerved to exalt his perſonal character, and prove the extent of his capacity. A ſtrict adminiſtration of juſtice took place during his enjoyment of this high office; and no chancellor ever diſcovered greater impartiality in his deciſions, deeper penetration of judgment, or more enlarged knowledge of law and equity †.

THE duke of Norfolk, finding the King's money almoſt entirely exhauſted by projects and pleaſures, while his inclination for expence ſtill continued, was glad to reſign his office of treaſurer, and retire from court. His rival, Fox, biſhop of Wincheſter, reaped no advantage from his abſence; but partly overcome by years and infirmities, partly diſguſted at the aſcendant acquired by Wolſey, withdrew himſelf entirely to the care of his dioceſe. The duke of Suffolk had alſo taken offence, that the King, by the cardinal's perſuaſion, had refuſed to pay a debt, which he had contracted during his abode in France; and he thenceforth affected to live in privacy. Theſe incidents left Wolſey to enjoy without a rival the whole power and favour of the King; and put into his hands every kind of authority. In vain, did Fox, before his retirement, warn the King "not to "ſuffer the ſervant to be greater than his maſter:" Henry replied, "that he "knew well how to retain all his ſubjects in obedience;" but he continued ſtill an unlimited deference in every thing to the directions and counſels of the cardinal.

THE public tranquillity was ſo well eſtabliſhed in England, the obedience of the people ſo entire, the general adminiſtration of juſtice, by the cardinal's means ‡, ſo exact, that no domeſtic occurrence happened ſo remarkable as to diſturb the repoſe of the King and his miniſter: They might even have diſpenſed

* Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. † Sir Thomas More. Stowe, p. 504.
‡ Eraſm. lib. 2. epiſt. 1. Cavendiſh, Hall.

with

with themſelves from giving any ſtrict attention to foreign affairs, were it poſſible for men to enjoy any ſituation in abſolute tranquillity, or abſtain from projects and enterprizes, however fruitleſs and unneceſſary. Chap. II. 1515.

THE will of the late King of Scotland, who left his widow regent of the Kingdom, and the vote of the convention of Eſtates, which confirmed that deſtination, had expreſly limited her authority to the condition of her remaining unmarried *: But notwithſtanding this limitation, a few months after her huſband's death, ſhe eſpouſed the earl of Angus, of the name of Douglas, a nobleman of great family and very promiſing hopes. Some of the nobility now propoſed the election of Angus as regent, and recommended this choice as the moſt likely means of preſerving peace with England: But the jealouſy of the great families, and the fear of exalting the Douglaſſes, begot oppoſition to this meaſure. Lord Hume in particular, the moſt powerful chieftain in the kingdom, inſiſted on recalling the duke of Albany, ſon to a brother of James the third, who had been baniſhed into France, and who, having there married, had left poſterity, that were the next heirs to the crown, and the neareſt relations to their young ſovereign. Albany, though firſt prince of the blood, had never been in Scotland, was totally unacquainted with the manners of the people, ignorant of their ſituation, unpracticed in their language; yet ſuch was the favour attending the French alliance, and ſo great the authority of Hume, that this prince was invited to accept the reins of government. Francis, careful not to give offence to the King of England, detained Albany ſometime in France; but at laſt, ſenſible how important it was to keep Scotland in his intereſts, he permitted him to go over, and take poſſeſſion of the regency: He even renewed the antient league with that kingdom, tho' it implied ſuch a cloſe connexion, as might be thought ſomewhat to intrench on his alliance with England. Scots affairs.

WHEN the regent arrived in Scotland, he made enquiries concerning the ſtate of the country, and character of the people; and diſcovered a ſcene, with which he was hitherto but little acquainted. That turbulent kingdom, he found, was rather to be conſidered as a confederacy, and that not a cloſe one, of petty princes, than a regular ſyſtem of civil polity; and even the King, much more a regent, poſſeſt an authority very uncertain and precarious. Arms, more than laws, prevailed; and courage, preferably to equity or juſtice, was the virtue moſt valued and reſpected. The nobility, in whom the whole power reſided, were ſo connected by hereditary alliances, or ſo divided by inveterate enmities, that it was impoſſible, without employing force, either to puniſh the moſt flagrant guilt, or give ſecurity to the moſt entire innocence. Rapine and violence, when

* Buchanan, lib. 14. Drummond. Herbert.

Chap. II. 1515. exerciſed on a hoſtile tribe, inſtead of making a perſon odious among his own clan, rather recommended him to eſteem and approbation, by rendering him uſeful to the chieftain, entitled him to a preference above his fellows. And tho' the neceſſity of mutual ſupport ſerved as a cloſe cement of friendſhip among thoſe of the ſame kindred, the ſpirit of revenge againſt enemies, and the deſire of proſecuting the deadly feuds, (ſo they were called) ſtill appeared to be paſſions the moſt predominant among that uncultivated people.

THE perſons, to whom Albany firſt applied for information with regard to the ſtate of the country, happened to be inveterate enemies of Hume *; and they repreſented that powerful nobleman as the chief ſource of public diſorders, and the great obſtacle to the execution of the laws, and adminiſtration of juſtice. Before the authority of the magiſtrate could be eſtabliſhed, it was neceſſary, they ſaid, to make an example of this great offender; and by the terror of his puniſhment, teach all leſſer criminals to pay reſpect to the power of their ſovereign. Albany, moved by theſe reaſons, was induced to forget Hume's paſt ſervices, to which he had been, in a great meaſure, beholden for the regency; and he no longer bore towards him that favourable countenance, with which he was wont to receive him. Hume perceived the change, and was incited, both by views of his own ſecurity and his revenge, to take meaſures in oppoſition to the regent. He applied himſelf to Angus and the queen dowager, and repreſented to them the danger to which the infant prince was expoſed, from the ambition of Albany, the next heir to the crown, to whom the ſtates had imprudently entruſted the whole authority of government. By his perſuaſion, Margaret formed the deſign of carrying off the young King, and putting him under the protection of her brother; and when that conſpiracy was diſcovered, ſhe herſelf, accompanied with Hume and Angus, withdrew into England, where ſhe was ſoon after delivered of a daughter.

HENRY, in order to check the authority of Albany and the French party, gave encouragement to theſe malecontents, and aſſured them of his protection. Matters being afterwards in appearance accommodated between Hume and the regent, that nobleman returned into his own country; but mutual ſuſpicions and jealouſies ſtill prevailed. He was committed to cuſtody, under the care of the earl of Arran, his brother-in-law; and was, for ſome time, detained priſoner in his caſtle. But having perſuaded Arran to enter into the conſpiracy with him, he was allowed to make his eſcape; and he openly made war upon the regent. A new accommodation enſued, not more ſincere than the foregoing; and Hume was ſo imprudent as to put himſelf, together with his brother, into the hands of

* Buchannan, lib. 14. Drummond.

the

the regent. They were immediately ſeized, committed to cuſtody, brought to their trial, condemned, and executed. No legal crime was proved againſt theſe brothers: It was only alledged, that, at the battle of Flouden, they had not done their duty in ſupporting the King; and as this backwardneſs could not, from the whole courſe of their paſt life, be aſcribed to cowardice, it was commonly imputed to a more criminal motive. The evidences, however, of guilt, produced againſt them, were far from being valid or convincing; and the people, who hated them while alive, were very much diſſatisfied with their execution. Chap. II. 1515.

Such violent remedies often produce, for ſome time, a deceitful tranquillity; but as they deſtroy mutual confidence, and beget the moſt inveterate animoſities, their conſequences are commonly very fatal both to the public, and to thoſe who make trial of them. The regent, however, took advantage of the preſent calm which prevailed; and being invited by the French king, who was, at that time, willing to gratify Henry, he went over into France; and was detained there during five years. A great part of his authority he entruſted into the hands of Darcy, a Frenchman, whom he created warden of the marches, and who was extremely vigilant in the diſtribution of juſtice, and the puniſhment of crimes and oppreſſion. But Sir David Hume, a kinſman of the nobleman lately executed, deſirous of revenging his friend's death on the friend of the regent, way-laid Darcy near Dunſe; and after reproaching him with that execution, made an attack upon him. Darcy finding himſelf too weak to reſiſt, and truſting to the ſwiftneſs of his horſe, fled towards Dunbar; but being ignorant of the roads, he ran into a bog, was overtaken by the purſuers, and put to death. As he wore long flowing hair, Hume, exulting in this aſſaſſination as a gallant exploit, cut out theſe locks, and pleating them into a wreath, wore them ever after at the pummel of his ſaddle *. During the abſence of the regent, ſuch confuſions prevailed in Scotland, and ſuch mutual enmity, rapine, and violence, among the great families, that that kingdom was, for a long time, utterly diſabled both from offending its enemies, and aſſiſting its friends. We have carried on the Scots hiſtory ſome years beyond the preſent period; that as that country had little connexion with the general ſyſtem of Europe, we might be the leſs interrupted in the narration of thoſe memorable events, which were tranſacted in the other kingdoms.

It was foreſeen, that a young, active prince, like Francis, and of ſo martial a diſpoſition, would ſoon employ the great preparations, which his predeceſſor, before his death, had made for the conqueſt of Milan. He had been obſerved even to weep at the recital of the military exploits of Gaſton de Foix; and

* Buchannan, lib. 14. Pitſcottie.

theſe

Chap. II. 1515.

these tears of emulation were held to be sure prognostics of his future valour. He renewed the treaty which Lewis had made with Henry; and having left every thing, as he thought, secure behind him, he marched his armies towards the south of France; pretending, that his sole purpose was to secure his kingdom against the incursions of the Swiss. That formidable people still retained their animosity against France; and having taken Maximilian, duke of Milan, under their protection, and indeed reduced him to absolute dependance, they were determined, from views both of honour and of interest, to defend him against this invader ‡. They fortified themselves with numerous forces in all those vallies of the Alps, thro' which, they thought, the French must necessarily pass; and when Francis, with great secrecy, industry, and perseverance, made his entrance into Piemont by another passage, they were not dismayed, but descended into the plain, tho' unprovided of cavalry, and opposed themselves to the progress of the French arms. At Marignan near Milan, they fought with Francis one of the most furious and best contested battles, which is to be met with in the history of these latter ages; and it required all the heroic valour of that prince to inspire his troops with courage sufficient to resist the desperate assault of those mountaniers. After a bloody action in the evening, night and darkness parted the combatants; but next morning, the Swiss renewed the attack with equal alacrity; and it was not till they had lost all their bravest troops that they could be prevailed with to retire. The field was strowed with twenty thousand slain of both sides; and the mareschal Trivulzio, who had been present at eighteen pitched battles, declared, that every engagement, which he had yet seen, was only the play of children, but that the action of Marignan was a combat of heroes *.

Progress of Francis the first.

13th September.

AFTER this great victory, the conquest of the Milaneze was easy and open. Francis, sensible how important the alliance of the cantons was, even in their lowest fortune, gave them all the conditions, which they could have demanded, had they been ever so successful; and he courted their friendship by every possible condescension. The Venetians were in alliance with France; and as they trusted entirely to the successes of that crown for the final recovery of their dominions on the continent, they seconded Francis in every enterprize. Pope Leo, whose sole fault was too great finesse and artifice, a fault, which, both as a priest and an Italian, it was difficult for him to avoid, had hitherto temporized between the parties; and Francis's victory at Marignan determined him absolutely to embrace the friendship of that monarch †. But what both facilitated most,

‡ Memoires du Bellai, lib. 1. Guicciardini, lib. 12.
† Guicciardini, lib. 12. Paullus Jovius.
* Histoire de la Ligue de Cambray.

and

and ſecured the conqueſt of the Milaneze, was the reſolution of Maximilian Sforza himſelf, who, tired of the viciſſitudes of his fortune, diſguſted with the tyranny of the Swiſs, and deſirous of privacy and repoſe, put himſelf into Francis's hands; and having ſtipulated a yearly penſion of thirty thouſand ducats, reſigned all pretenſions to that dutchy, and retired into France. Chap. II. 1515.

THE ſucceſs and glory of the French monarch began to excite jealouſy in Henry; and his rapid progreſs, tho' in ſo diſtant a country, was not regarded without apprehenſions by the Engliſh miniſtry. Italy was during that age the ſeat of religion, of literature, and of commerce; and as it poſſeſſed alone that luſtre, which has ſince been ſhared among other nations, it fixed the attention of all Europe, and every acquiſition which was made there, appeared more important than its weight in the ballance of power ſhould, ſtrictly ſpeaking, have made it be eſteemed. Henry alſo thought that he had reaſon to complain of Francis for ſending the duke of Albany into Scotland, and undermining the power and credit of his ſiſter, the queen dowager ‡. The repairing the fortifications of Teroüenne was alſo regarded as a breach of treaty. But above all, what tended to alienate the court of England, was the diſguſt which Wolſey had taken againſt the French monarch. Jealouſy of Henry.

HENRY, on the conqueſt of Tournay, had refuſed to admit Lewis Gaillart, the biſhop elect, to the poſſeſſion of the temporalities, becauſe that prelate declined taking the oath of allegiance to his new ſovereign; and Wolſey was appointed in his room adminiſtrator of the biſhoprick. As the cardinal wiſhed to obtain free and undiſturbed poſſeſſion, he applied to Francis, and deſired him to beſtow on Gaillart ſome ſee of equal value in France, and to obtain his reſignation of Tournay. Francis, who ſtill hoped to recover poſſeſſion of that city, and who feared that the full ſettlement of Wolſey, in the biſhoprick would prove an obſtacle to his purpoſe, had hitherto neglected to gratify the haughty prelate; and the biſhop of Tournay, by applying to the court of Rome, had obtained a bull for his ſettlement in that ſee. Wolſey, who expected to be complied with in every requeſt, and who exacted reſpect even from the greateſt monarchs, reſented the ſlight put upon him by Francis; and he puſhed his maſter to ſeek an occaſion for wreaking his vengeance againſt that monarch *.

MAXIMILIAN the emperor was ready to embrace every propoſal of a new enterprize, eſpecially if attended with an offer of money, of which he was extremely greedy, extremely prodigal, and extremely neceſſitous. Richard Pace, formerly ſecretary to cardinal Bambrige, now ſecretary of ſtate, was diſpatched

‡ Pere Daniel, vol. iii. p. 31.

* Polydore Virgil, lib. 27

to

Chap. II. 1515. to the court of Vienna, and had a commiſſion to propoſe ſome conſiderable payments to Maximilian †: He thence made a journey into Switzerland; and by like motives engaged ſome of the cantons to furniſh troops to the emperor. That prince invaded Italy with a conſiderable army; but being repulſed from before Milan, he retreated with his army into Germany, made peace with France and Venice, delivered Verona to that republic for a ſum of money, and thus excluded himſelf, in ſome meaſure, from all future acceſs into Italy. And Henry found, that, after expending five or ſix hundred thouſand ducats, in order to gratify the cardinal's reſentment, he had only looſened his alliance with Francis, without diminiſhing the power of that prince.

THERE were many reaſons, which engaged the King not to proceed farther at preſent in his enmity againſt France. He could hope for aſſiſtance from no power in Europe. Ferdinand his Father-in-law, who had often deceived him, was now declining faſt thro' age and infirmities; and a ſpeedy end was looked for to the long and proſperous reign of that great monarch. Charles, prince of Spain, ſovereign of the Low Countries, deſired nothing but peace with Francis, who had it ſo much in his power, if provoked, to obſtruct his peaceable acceſſion to that rich inheritance, which was waiting him. The pope was overawed by the power of France, and Venice was engaged in a cloſe alliance with that monarchy ‡. Henry therefore remained in tranquillity during ſome time; and ſeemed to give himſelf no concern with regard to the affairs of the continent. In vain did Maximilian endeavour to allure him into ſome expence, by offering to make a reſignation of the imperial crown in his favour. That artifice was too groſs to ſucceed even with a prince ſo little politic as Henry; and Pace, his envoy, who was perfectly well acquainted with the emperor's motives and character, gave him warning, that the ſole view of that prince, in making him ſo liberal an offer, was to draw money from him.

1516. 15th January. WHILE an univerſal peace prevailed in Europe, that event happened, which had been ſo long looked for, and from which ſuch important conſequences were expected, the death of Ferdinand the Catholic, and the ſucceſſion of his grandſon, Charles, to his extenſive dominions. No commotion, however, or alteration followed immediately upon that great incident. This young prince, who had not yet reached his ſixteenth year, was already a great ſtateſman, from the excellent education which he had received, and from the mature and ſolid judgment, with which nature had endowed him. He was ſenſible how important it was to preſerve peace with foreigners, till he ſhould have eſtabliſhed

† Petrus de Angleria, epiſt. 568. ‡ Guicciardini, lib. 12.

his authority in his new dominions; and finding Francis desirous to take advantage of his present situation, he made him an offer of such terms as gained the friendship and alliance of that monarch. He engaged to marry Francis's daughter, though only an infant of a year old; to receive as her dowry all her father's pretensions on the kingdom of Naples; to pay him a hundred thousand crowns a year till the consummation of the marriage; and to give the King of Navarre satisfaction with regard to his dominions*. Charles, having finished this treaty at Noyon by his ministers, and having thus left every thing in security in the Low Countries, departed for Spain, and was willingly received to the government of these united kingdoms. The right of succession lay in his mother, Joan, who was still alive; but as she was usually disordered in her judgment, Ferdinand had left the administration to his grandson, Charles; and the states, both of Castile and Arragon, gave their consent to this destination. Chap. II. 1516. 1517.

THE more Charles advanced in power and authority, the more was Francis sensible of the necessity he lay under of gaining the confidence and friendship of Henry; and he took at last the only method by which he could obtain success, the paying court, by presents and flattery, to the haughty cardinal.

BONNIVET, admiral of France, was dispatched to London, and he was directed to employ all his insinuation and address, qualities for which he was remarkable, to procure himself a place in Wolsey's good graces. After the ambassador had succeeded in his purpose, he took an opportunity of expressing his master's regret, that, by mistakes and misapprehensions, he had been so unfortunate as to lose a friendship, which he so much valued as that of his eminence. Wolsey was not deaf to these honourable advances from so great a monarch; and he was thenceforth observed to express himself, on all occasions, in favour of the French alliance. The more to engage him in his interests, Francis entered into such confidence with him, that he asked his advice even in his most secret affairs, and in all difficult emergencies had recourse to him as to an oracle of wisdom and profound policy. The cardinal made no secret to the King of this private correspondence; and Henry was so prepossessed in favour of the great capacity of his minister, that, he said, he verily believed he would govern Francis as well as himself †. 1518.

WHEN matters seemed sufficiently prepared, Bonnivet opened to the cardinal his master's desire of recovering Tournay; and Wolsey immediately, without hesitation, engaged to effectuate his purpose. He took an opportunity of re-

* Recueil de Traités par Leonard, tom. 2.

† Polydore Virgil, lib. 27.

Chap. II. 1518.

preſenting to the King and council, that Tournay lay ſo remote from Calais, that it would be very difficult, if not impoſſible, in caſe of a war, to keep the communication open betweeen theſe two places: That as it was ſituate on the frontiers both of France and the Netherlands, it was expoſed to the attacks of both theſe powers, and muſt neceſſarily, either by force or famine, fall into the hands of the firſt aſſailant: That even in time of peace, it could not be preſerved without a large garriſon, to reſtrain the numerous and mutinous inhabitants, ever diſcontented with the Engliſh government: And that the poſſeſſion of Tournay, as it was thus precarious and expenſive, ſo was it entirely uſeleſs, and gave little or no means to annoy, on occaſion, the dominions either of Charles or of Francis.

THESE reaſons were of themſelves very convincing, and were ſure of meeting with no oppoſition, when they came from the mouth of the cardinal. A treaty therefore was entered into for the delivering up of Tournay; and in order to give to that meaſure a more graceful appearance, it was agreed, that the Dauphin and the princeſs Mary, both of them infants, ſhould be betrothed, and that this city ſhould be conſidered as the dowry of the princeſs. Such kinds of agreement were then common among ſovereigns, tho' it was very rare, that the intereſts and views of the parties continued ſo ſteady as to render the intended marriages effectual. But as Henry had been at conſiderable expence in building a citadel at Tournay, Francis agreed to pay him 600,000 crowns at twelve yearly payments, and to put into his hands eight hoſtages, all of them men of quality, for the performance of the article *. And leſt the cardinal ſhould think himſelf neglected in theſe ſtipulations, he promiſed him a yearly penſion of twelve thouſand livres, as an equivalent for his adminiſtration of the biſhopric of Tournay. He alſo engaged to recall Albany from Scotland.

Tournay delivered to France.

FRANCIS having ſucceeded ſo well in this negotiation, began to enlarge his views, and to hope for more conſiderable advantages, by practiſing on the vanity and ſelf-conceit of this haughty favourite. He redoubled his flatteries to the cardinal, conſulted him more frequently in every doubt or difficulty, called him in each letter, *father*, *tutor*, *governor*, and profeſſed the moſt unbounded deference to his advice and opinion. All thoſe careſſes were preparatives to a negotiation for the delivery of Calais, in conſideration of a ſum of money to be paid for it; and if we may credit Polydore Virgil, who bears a particular ſpite to Wolſey, on account of his being diſpoſſeſſed of his employment and thrown into priſon by that miniſter, ſo extravagant a propoſal met with a very favourable reception from the cardinal. He ventured not, however, to lay the matter before the council:

* Memoires du Bellay, liv. 1.

He

He was contented to ſound privately the opinions of men, by dropping hints in converſation, as if he thought Calais a uſeleſs burthen to the kingdom †: But when he found, that all men were ſtrongly riveted in a contrary perſuaſion, he thought it dangerous to proceed any farther in his purpoſe; and falling, ſoon after, into new attachments with the King of Spain, the great friendſhip between Francis and him began gradually to decline. Chap II. 1518.

THE enormous pride of Wolſey was now farther encreaſed by a great acceſſion of dignity and power which he had received. Cardinal Campeggio had been ſent as legate into England, in order to procure a tythe from the clergy, for enabling the pope to oppoſe the progreſs of the Turks; a danger which was real, and was formidable to all chriſtendom, but which had been ſo often made uſe of to ſerve the intereſted purpoſes of the court of Rome, that it had loſt all influence on the minds of the people. The Clergy refuſed to comply with Leo's demands: Campeggio was recalled; and the King deſired of the pope, that Wolſey, who had been joined in this commiſſion, might alone be inveſted with the legantine power, together with the right of viſiting all the clergy and monaſteries, and even with ſuſpending all the laws of the church during a twelvemonth. Wolſey, having obtained this new dignity, made a new diſplay of that ſtate and parade, to which he was ſo much addicted. On ſolemn feaſt-days, he was not contented without ſaying maſs after the manner of the pope himſelf: Not only he had biſhops and abbots to ſerve him; he even engaged the firſt nobility to give him water and the towel. He affected a rank ſuperior to what had ever been claimed by any churchman in England. Warham, the primate, having wrote him a letter, where he ſubſcribed himſelf, *your loving brother*, Wolſey complained of his preſumption, in thus challenging an equality with him. When Warham was told what offence he had given, he made light of the matter, "Know ye not," he ſaid, "that this man is drunk with too much "proſperity." Wolſey appointed legate.

BUT Wolſey carried the matter much farther than vain pomp and oſtentation. He erected an office, which he called the legantine court; and as he was now, by means of the pope's commiſſion and the King's favour, inveſted with all power, both eccleſiaſtical and civil, no man knew what bounds were to be ſet to the authority of this new tribunal. He conferred on it a kind of inquiſitorial and cenſorial powers even over the laiety, and directed it to examine into all matters of conſcience; into all conduct which had given ſcandal; into all actions, which, though they eſcaped the law, might appear contrary to good morals. Offence was juſtly taken at this commiſſion, which was really unbounded; and His manner of exerciſing that office.

† Polydore Virgil, lib. 27.

Chap. II. 1518. the people were the more diſguſted, when they ſaw a man, who indulged himſelf in the licences of pleaſure, ſo ſevere in repreſſing the leaſt appearance of immorality in others. But to render his court more obnoxious, Wolſey made one John Allen the judge in it, a perſon of ſcandalous life *, whom he himſelf, as chancellor had condemned for perjury: And as this man either exacted fines from every one whom he was pleaſed to find guilty, or took bribes to drop proſecutions, men concluded, and with ſome appearance of reaſon, that he ſhared with the cardinal theſe wages of iniquity. The clergy, and in particular the monks, were expoſed to this tyranny; and as the libertiniſm of their lives often gave a juſt handle againſt them, they were obliged to buy an indemnity, by paying large ſums of money to the legate or his judge. Not contented with this authority, Wolſey pretended, by virtue of his commiſſion, to aſſume the power of all the biſhops courts; particularly that of judging of Wills and Teſtaments; and his deciſions in theſe important points were deemed not a little arbitrary. As if he himſelf were pope, and as if the pope could diſpoſe abſolutely of every eccleſiaſtical eſtabliſhment, he preſented to whatever priories or benefices he pleaſed, without regard to the right of election in the monks, or of patronage in the nobility and gentry †.

No one durſt carry to the King any complaint againſt theſe uſurpations of Wolſey, till Warham ventured to inform him of the diſcontents of his people. Henry profeſſed his ignorance of the whole matter. "A man," ſaid he, "is "not ſo blind any where as in his own houſe: But do you, father," added he to the primate, "go to Wolſey, and tell him, if any thing be amiſs, that he "amend it." A reproof of this kind was not likely to be effectual: It only ſerved to augment Wolſey's enmity to Warham: But one London having proſecuted Allen, the legate's judge, in a court of law, and convicted him of malverſation and iniquity, the clamour at laſt reached the King's ears, and he expreſſed ſuch diſpleaſure to the cardinal as made him ever after more cautious in exerting his authority ‡.

* Strype's Memorials, vol. 1. p. 125.

† Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. This whole narration has been copied by all the hiſtorians from the author here cited: There are many circumſtances, however, very ſuſpicious, both becauſe of the obvious partiality of the hiſtorian, and becauſe the parliament, when they afterwards examined Wolſey's conduct, could find no proof for any material crime he had committed.

‡ This year and the foregoing the ſweating ſickneſs raged anew in England. It was called *Sudor Anglicus*, becauſe few, except the Engliſh nation, were attacked by it. Its malignity was ſuch, that it commonly killed within three hours of its commencement. Some towns loſt by it an half, others two thirds of their inhabitants.

Chap. II. 1519.

WHILE Henry, indulging himſelf in pleaſure and amuſement, entruſted the government of his kingdom to this imperious miniſter, an incident happened abroad, which excited his attention. Maximilian the emperor died, a man, who, of himſelf, was indeed of little conſequence; but as his death left vacant the firſt ſtation among chriſtian princes, it put all men's ſpirits into agitation, and proved a kind of æra in the general ſyſtem of Europe. The Kings of France and Spain immediately declared themſelves candidates for the imperial throne; and employed every expedient of money or intrigue, which promiſed them ſucceſs in ſo great a point of ambition. Henry alſo was encouraged to put in his pretenſions; but his miniſter, Pace, who was diſpatched to the electors, found that he began to ſolicit too late, and that the votes of all theſe princes were already pre-engaged either on the one ſide or the other.

12th of January. Death of the emperor Maximilian.

FRANCIS and Charles made profeſſion from the beginning of carrying on this rivalſhip with emulation, but without enmity; and Francis in particular declared, that his brother Charles and he were, fairly and openly, ſuitors to the ſame miſtreſs: The more fortunate, added he, will carry her; and the other muſt reſt contented*. But all men apprehended, that this extreme moderation, however reaſonable, would not be of long duration; and that incidents would certainly occur to ſharpen the minds of the candidates againſt each other. It was Charles who at laſt prevailed, to the great diſappointment of the French monarch, who ſtill continued to the laſt in the belief, that the majority of the electoral college was engaged in his favour. And as he was ſome years ſuperior in age to his rival, and, after his victory at Marignan, and conqueſt of the Milaneſe, much ſuperior in renown, he could not ſuppreſs his indignation, at being thus, in the face of all mankind, after long and anxious expectation, poſtponed in ſo important a pretenſion. From this competition, as much as from oppoſition of intereſt, aroſe that emulation between thoſe two great monarchs, which, while it kept their whole age in agitation, ſets them in ſo remarkable a contraſt to each other: Both of them princes endowed with talents and abilities; brave, aſpiring, active, induſtrious; beloved by their ſervants and ſubjects, dreaded by their enemies, and reſpected by all the world: Francis, open, frank, liberal, munificent, carrying theſe virtues to an exceſs which prejudiced his affairs: Charles, political, cloſe, artificial, frugal; better calculated to obtain ſucceſs in wars and in negotiations, eſpecially the latter. The one, the more amiable man; the other, the greater monarch. The King, from his overſights and indiſcretions, naturally expoſed to misfortunes; but qualified, by his ſpirit and magnanimity, to extricate himſelf from them with honour: The emperor, by his deſigning, intereſted

Charles, King of Spain, choſen emperor.

* Belcario, lib. 16. Guicciardini, lib. 13.

character,

Chap. II. 1519. character, fitted, in his greateſt ſucceſſes, to excite jealouſy and oppoſition even among his allies, and to rouze up a multitude of enemies, in the place of one whom he had ſubdued. And as the perſonal qualities of theſe princes thus counterpoiſed each other, ſo did the advantages and diſadvantages of their dominions. Fortune alone, without the concurrence of prudence or valour, never reared up of a ſudden ſo great a power as that which centered in the emperor Charles. He reaped the ſucceſſion of Caſtile, of Arragon, of Auſtria, of Burgundy: He inherited the conqueſt of Naples, of Granada: Election entitled him to the empire: Even the bounds of the globe ſeemed to be enlarged a little before his time, that he might poſſeſs the whole treaſure, as yet entire and unrifled, of the new world. But tho' the concurrence of all theſe advantages formed an empire greater and more extenſive than any known in Europe ſince that of the Romans, the kingdom of France alone, being cloſe, compact, united, rich, populous, and being interpoſed between all the provinces of Charles's dominions, was able to make a vigorous oppoſition to his progreſs, and maintain the conteſt againſt him.

HENRY poſſeſſed that felicity, of being able, both by the native force of his kingdom and its ſituation, to hold the balance between thoſe two powers; and had he known to improve, by policy and prudence, this ſingular and ineſtimable advantage, he was really, by means of it, a greater prince than either of thoſe mighty monarchs, who ſeemed to ſtrive for the dominion of Europe. But the character of this King was heedleſs, inconſiderate, capricious, impolitic; guided by his paſſion or his favourite; vain, imperious, haughty; ſometimes actuated by friendſhip for foreign powers, oftener by reſentment, ſeldom by his true intereſt. And thus, tho' he triumphed in that ſuperiority which his ſituation in Europe gave him, he never employed it to his own eſſential and durable advantage or to that of his kingdom.

1520. Interview between Henry and Francis at Calais.

FRANCIS was well acquainted with Henry's character, and endeavoured to accommodate his conduct to it. He ſolicited an interview near Calais; in expectation of being able, by familiar converſation, to gain upon his friendſhip and confidence. Wolſey earneſtly ſeconded this propoſal; and hoped, in the preſence of both courts, to make parade of his riches, his ſplendor, and his influence over both monarchs *. And as Henry himſelf loved pomp and magnificence, and had entertained a curioſity of being perſonally acquainted with the French King, he very chearfully adjuſted all the preliminaries of this interview. The nobility of both nations ſtrove to ſurpaſs each other in pomp and expence: Many of them

* Polydore Virgil, lib. 27.

8 involved

involved themſelves in large debts, and were not able, by the penury of their whole lives, to repair the vain ſplendor of a few days. The duke of Buckingham, who, tho' immenſely rich, was ſomewhat addicted to frugality, finding the preparations for this feſtival amount to immenſe ſums, threw out ſome expreſſions of diſpleaſure againſt the cardinal, whom he believed the author of that meaſure *. An imprudence which proved afterwards the ſource of great misfortunes to that nobleman. Chap. II. 1520.

WHILE Henry was preparing to depart for Calais, he was ſurprized to hear that the emperor was arrived at Dover; and he immediately haſtened thither with the queen, in order to give a ſuitable reception to his royal gueſt. That great prince, politic tho' young, having heard of the intended interview between Francis and Henry, was apprehenſive of the conſequences, and was reſolved to take the opportunity, in his paſſage from Spain to the Low Countries, to make the King ſtill a higher compliment, by paying him a viſit in his own dominions. Beſides the marks of regard and attachment which he gave to Henry, he ſtrove, by every teſtimony of friendſhip, by flatteries, proteſtations, promiſes and preſents, to gain on the vanity, the avarice, and the ambition of the cardinal. He here inſtilled into this aſpiring prelate the hope of attaining the papacy; and as that was the ſole point of elevation, beyond his preſent greatneſs, it was ſure to attract his wiſhes with the ſame ardour, as if fortune had never, as yet, favoured him with any of her preſents. In hopes of reaching this dignity by the emperor's aſſiſtance, he ſecretly devoted himſelf to that monarch's intereſt; and Charles was perhaps the more liberal of his promiſes, becauſe Leo was a very young man; and it was not likely, that, for many years, he would be called upon to fulfil his engagements. Henry eaſily obſerved this courtſhip payed to his miniſter; but inſtead of taking umbrage at it, he only made it a ſubject of vanity; and believed, that, as Wolſey's ſole ſupport was his favour, the obeiſance of ſuch mighty monarchs to his ſervant, was in reality a more conſpicuous homage to his own grandeur. The emperor Charles arrives in England. 25th of May.

THE day of Charles's departure, Henry went over to Calais with the queen and his whole court; and from thence proceeded to Guiſnes, a ſmall town near the frontiers. Francis, attended in like manner, came to Ardres, a few miles diſtant: and the two monarchs met, for the firſt time, in the fields, at a place ſituate between theſe two towns, but ſtill within the Engliſh pale: For Francis agreed to pay that compliment to Henry, in conſideration of that prince's paſſing the ſea, that he might be preſent at the interview. Wolſey, to whom both Kings had entruſted the regulation of the ceremonial, contrived this circumſtance in order to do honour to his maſter. 30th of May.

* Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Herbert. Hollingſhed, p. 855.

THE

Chap. II. 1520.

THE two monarchs, after ſaluting each other in the moſt cordial manner, retired into a tent which had been erected on purpoſe, and they held a ſecret conference together. Henry here propoſed to make ſome amendments on the articles of their former alliance; and he began to read the treaty, *I Henry King*: Theſe were the firſt words; and he ſtopt a moment. He ſubjoined only the words, *of England*, without adding, *France*, the uſual ſtyle of the Engliſh monarchs *. Francis remarked this delicacy, and expreſſed by a ſmile his approbation of it.

HE took an opportunity ſoon after of paying a compliment to Henry of a more eſſential nature. That generous prince, full of honour himſelf, and incapable of diſtruſting others, was ſhocked at all the precautions which were obſerved, whenever he had an interview with the Engliſh monarch: The number of their guards and attendants was carefully counted on both ſides: Every ſtep was ſcrupulouſly meaſured and adjuſted: And if the two Kings propoſed to pay a viſit to the queens, they departed from their ſeveral quarters at the ſame inſtant, which was marked by the firing of a culverin; they paſſed each other in the middle point between the places; and at the ſame inſtant that Henry entered Ardres, Francis put himſelf into the hands of the Engliſh at Guiſnes. In order to break off this tedious ceremony, which contained ſo many diſhonourable implications, Francis, one day, took with him two gentlemen and a page, and rode directly into Guiſnes. The guards were ſurprized at the preſence of the monarch, who called aloud to them, *You are all my priſoners: Carry me to your maſter*. Henry was equally aſtoniſhed at the appearance of Francis; and taking him in his arms, "My brother," ſaid he, "you have here played me the moſt "agreeable trick in the world, and have ſhowed me the full confidence I may "place in you: I ſurrender myſelf your priſoner from this moment." He took from his neck a collar of pearls, worth 15000 angels †; and putting it about Francis's, begged him to wear it, for the ſake of his priſoner. Francis agreed, but on condition that Henry ſhould wear a bracelet, of which he made him a preſent, and which was double in value to the collar ‡. The King went next day to Ardres, without guards or attendants; and confidence being now fully eſtabliſhed between the monarchs, they employed the reſt of the time entirely in tournaments and feſtivals.

A DEFIANCE had been ſent by the two Kings to each others court, and thro' all the chief cities of Europe, importing, that Henry and Francis, with fourteen aids, would be ready, in the plains of Picardy, to anſwer all comers, that were

* Memoires de Fleuranges. † An angel was then eſtimated at ſeven ſhillings, or near twelve of our preſent money. ‡ Memoires de Fleuranges.

gentlemen,

gentlemen, at tilt, tourney, and barriers. The monarchs, in order to fulfil this challenge, advanced into the field on horſeback, Francis, ſurrounded with Henry's guards, and Henry with thoſe of Francis. They were gorgiouſly apparelled; and were both of them the moſt comely perſonages of their age, as well as the moſt expert in every military exerciſe. They carried away the prize at all trials in thoſe rough and dangerous paſtimes; and ſeveral horſes and riders were overthrown by their vigour and dexterity. The ladies were the judges in theſe feats of chivalry, and put an end to the rencounter whenever they judged it expedient. Henry erected a ſpacious houſe of wood and canvas, which had been framed in London; and he here feaſted the French monarch. He had placed a motto on this fabric, under the figure of an Engliſh archer embroidered on it, *Cui adhæreo præeſt. He prevails whom I favour* *: Expreſſing his own ſituation, as holding in his hands the balance of power among the potentates of Europe. In theſe entertainments, more than in any ſerious buſineſs, did the two Kings paſs the time, till their departure. Chap. II. 1520. 24th of June.

HENRY, after his return to Calais, paid a viſit to the emperor and Margaret of Savoy at Gravelines, and engaged them to go along with him to Calais, and paſs ſome days in that fortreſs. The artful and politic Charles here compleated the impreſſion, which he had begun to make on Henry and his favourite, and effaced all the friendſhip, to which the frank and liberal nature of Francis had given birth. As the houſe of Auſtria began ſenſibly to take the aſcendant over the French monarchy, the intereſts of England required that ſome ſupport ſhould be given to the latter, and above all, that any important wars ſhould be prevented, which might beſtow on either of them a deciſive ſuperiority over the other. But the jealouſy of the Engliſh againſt France has ever prevented a cordial union between theſe nations: And Charles, ſenſible of this hereditary animoſity, and deſirous farther to flatter Henry's vanity, had made him an offer, (an offer in which Francis was afterwards obliged to concur) that he ſhould be entire arbiter in any diſpute or difference that ſhould ariſe between the monarchs. But the great maſterpiece of Charles's politics was the ſecuring Wolſey in his intereſts, by very important ſervices, and ſtill higher promiſes. He renewed aſſurances of aſſiſting him in obtaining the papacy; and he put him in preſent poſſeſſion of the revenues, belonging to the ſees of Badajox and Palencia in Caſtile. The acquiſitions of Wolſey were now become ſo exorbitant, that, joined to the penſions from foreign powers, which Henry allowed him to poſſeſs, his revenues were computed nearly to equal thoſe which belonged to the crown itſelf; and he ſpent

* Mezeray.

Chap. II. 1520. them with a magnificence, or rather an oſtentation, which gave general offence to the people; and much leſſened his maſter in the eyes of all foreign nations *.

1521. THE violent perſonal emulation and political jealouſy which had taken place between the emperor and the French King, ſoon broke out in action. War between Charles and Francis. Francis ſent an army into Navarre under the command of De Foix, in order to replace the family of Albert in the poſſeſſion of that kingdom; and this enterprize could not have been complained of as a breach of treaty, if De Foix had confined himſelf to that equitable deſign. But after he had ſubdued Navarre, finding Spain in great diſorder from the inſurrections of the people, he thought the opportunity favourable, and he ventured, with Francis's approbation, to lay ſiege to Logrogno in Caſtile. This invaſion, contrary to what was expected, put an end to the domeſtic diſſenſions of the Caſtilians; who attacked the French, obliged them to raiſe the ſiege, purſued the advantage, and entirely expelled them Navarre, which has ever ſince remained united with the Spaniſh monarchy †. Robert de la Marck, duke of Boüillon and prince of Sedan, having received ſome diſguſt from the governeſs of the Low countries, had taken arms and invaded thoſe provinces; and had even ſent a challenge or defiance to the emperor himſelf ‡: A boldneſs which ſeemed entirely unaccountable, except on the ſupoſition that this petty prince had received ſecret encouragement from Francis. On the other hand, Charles, in order to chaſtiſe the inſolence of Robert, had levied a powerful army, and advanced to the frontiers of France, which he threatened with an invaſion. Hoſtilities were ſoon carried farther; his generals beſieged Mauſon, which they took; they inveſted Mezieres, where they met with a repulſe. In Italy likewiſe the two monarchs were not inactive. Francis negotiated with the Pope, in order to engage him to concur in expelling the imperialiſts from Naples: But Charles had the addreſs to finiſh his league with the ſame power for expelling the French from Milan; and the united arms of the allies had invaded that dutchy, and had almoſt entirely finiſhed their enterprize.

WHILE theſe ambitious and warlike princes were committing hoſtilities on each other in every part of Europe, they ſtill made profeſſions of the ſtrongeſt deſire of peace; and both of them carried inceſſantly their complaints to Henry, as to the umpire between them. Mediation of Henry. The King, who appeared neutral, engaged them to ſend their ambaſſadors to Calais, there to negotiate a peace under the mediation of Wolſey and the pope's nuntio. The emperor was well acquainted with the partiality of theſe mediators; and his demands in the conference were ſo unreaſonable, as plainly proved him conſcious of this advantage. He required the reſtitution

* Polydore Virgil. Hall. † Vera, hiſt. de Char. V. ‡ Memoires de Bellay, lib. 1.

of

Chap. II. 1521.

of Burgundy, a province, which many years before had been ceded to France by treaty, and which would have given him acceſs into the midſt of that kingdom: And he demanded to be freed from the homage, which his anceſtors had ever paid for Flanders and Artois, and which he himſelf had, by the treaty of Noyon, promiſed to renew. On Francis's rejecting theſe terms, the congreſs at Calais broke up, and Wolſey, ſoon after, took a journey to Bruges, where he met with the emperor. He was received with the ſame ſtate, magnificence, and reſpect, as if he had been the King of England himſelf; and he concluded in his maſter's name an offenſive alliance with the pope and the emperor againſt France. He engaged that England ſhould next ſummer invade that kingdom with forty thouſand men; and he betrothed to Charles the princeſs Mary, the King's only child, who had now ſome proſpect of inheriting the crown. This extravagant alliance, which was prejudicial to the intereſts, and might have proved fatal to the liberty and independance of the kingdom, was the reſult of the humours and prejudices of the King, and the private views and expectations of the cardinal.

24th of November.

THE people ſaw every day new inſtances of the uncontrouled authority of this miniſter. The duke of Buckingham, conſtable of England, the firſt nobleman both for family and fortune in the kingdom, had been ſo unfortunate as to give diſguſt to the cardinal, and it was not long before he found reaſon to repent his indiſcretion. He ſeems to have been a man full of levity and raſh projects; and being infatuated with judicial aſtrology, he entertained commerce with one Hopkins, a Carthuſian monk, who encouraged him in the notion of his mounting one day the throne of England. He was deſcended by a female from the duke of Gloceſter, youngeſt ſon of Edward the third; and tho' his claim to the crown was thereby very remote, he had been ſo imprudent as to let fall ſome expreſſions, as if he thought himſelf beſt intitled, in caſe the King ſhould die without iſſue, to poſſeſs the royal dignity. He had not even abſtained from threats againſt the King's life, and had provided himſelf of arms, which he intended to employ, in caſe a favourable opportunity ſhould offer. He was brought to a trial; and the duke of Norfolk, whoſe ſon, the earl of Surrey, had married Buckingham's daughter, was created lord ſteward, in order to preſide at this ſolemn procedure. The jury conſiſted of a duke, a marquis, ſeven earls, and twelve barons; and they gave their verdict againſt Buckingham, which was ſoon after put in execution. There is no reaſon to think the ſentence unjuſt *; but as Buckingham's crime ſeemed to proceed more from indiſcretion than deliberate malice, the people, who loved that nobleman, expected that the King would grant him a pardon, and aſcribed their diſappointment to the malice and revenge of the cardinal. The

Trial and condemnation of the duke of Buckingham.

17th of May.

* Herbert. Hall. Stowe, 513. Hollingſhed, p. 862.

Chap. II. 1521. King's own jealouſy, however, againſt all pretenders to the crown, was, notwithſtanding his undoubted title, very remarkable during the whole courſe of his reign; and was alone ſufficient to render him implacable againſt Buckingham. The office of conſtable, which Buckingham inherited from the Bohuns, earls of Hereford, was forfeited, and was never after revived by Henry.

CHAP. III.

Digreſſion concerning the eccleſiaſtical ſtate.——Origin of the reformation.——Martin Luther.——Henry receives the title of defender of the faith.——Cauſes of the progreſs of the reformation.——War with France.——Invaſion of France.——War with Scotland.——A Parliament.——Invaſion of France.——Italian wars.——The King of France invades Italy.——Battle of Pavia and captivity of Francis.——Francis recovers his liberty.——Sack of Rome.——League with France.

1521. DURING ſome years, many parts of Europe had been agitated with thoſe religious controverſies, which produced the reformation, one of the greateſt events in hiſtory: But as it was not till this time, that the King of England publicly took part in the quarrel, we had no occaſion to give any account of its riſe and progreſs. It will now be neceſſary to explain theſe theological diſputes; or what is more material, to trace from their origin thoſe abuſes, which ſo generally diffuſed the opinion, that a reformation of the church or eccleſiaſtical order was become highly expedient, if not abſolutely neceſſary. We ſhall be better enabled to comprehend the ſubject, if we take the matter a little higher, and reflect a moment on the reaſons, why there muſt be an eccleſiaſtical order, and a public eſtabliſhment of religion in every civilized community. The importance of the preſent occaſion will, I hope, excuſe this ſhort digreſſion.

Digreſſion concerning the eccleſiaſtical ſtate.

MOST of the arts and profeſſions in a ſtate are of ſuch a nature, that, while they promote the intereſts of the ſociety, they are alſo uſeful or agreeable to ſome individuals; and in that caſe, the conſtant rule of the magiſtrate, except, perhaps, on the firſt introduction of any art, is, to leave the profeſſion to itſelf, and truſt its encouragement to the individuals, who reap the benefit of it. The artizans, finding their profits to riſe by the favour of their cuſtomers, encreaſe, as

much as poſſible, their ſkill and induſtry; and as matters are not diſturbed by any injudicious tampering, the commodity is always ſure to be at all times exactly proportioned to the demand. Chap. III. 1521.

But there are alſo ſome callings, which, tho' uſeful and even neceſſary in a ſtate, bring no advantage nor pleaſure to any individuals; and the ſupreme power is obliged to alter its conduct with regard to the retainers of thoſe profeſſions. It muſt give them public encouragement in order to their ſubſiſtance; and it muſt provide againſt that negligence, to which they will naturally be ſubject, either by annexing particular honours to the profeſſion, by eſtabliſhing a long ſubordination of ranks and a ſtrict dependance, or by ſome other expedient. The perſons employed in the finances, armies, fleets, and magiſtracy are inſtances of this order of men.

It may naturally be thought, at firſt view, that the eccleſiaſtics belong to the firſt claſs, and that their encouragement, as well as that of lawyers and phyſicians, may ſafely be truſted to the liberality of individuals, who are attached to their doctrines, and who find benefit or conſolation from their ſpiritual miniſtry and aſſiſtance. Their induſtry and vigilance will, no doubt, be whetted by ſuch an additional motive; and their ſkill in the profeſſion, as well as their addreſs in governing the minds of the people, muſt receive daily encreaſe, from their encreaſing practice, ſtudy, and attention.

But if we conſider the matter more cloſely, we ſhall find, that this intereſted diligence of the clergy is what every wiſe legiſlator will ſtudy to prevent; becauſe in every religion, except the true, it is highly pernicious, and has even a natural tendency to pervert the true, by infuſing into it a ſtrong mixture of ſuperſtition, folly, and deluſion. Each ghoſtly practitioner, in order to render himſelf more precious and ſacred in the eyes of his retainers, muſt inſpire them with the moſt violent abhorrence againſt all other ſects, and continually endeavour, by ſome novelty, to excite the languid devotion of his audience. No regard will be paid to truth, morals, or decency in the doctrines inculcated. Every tenet will be adopted, that beſt ſuits the diſorderly affections of the human frame. Cuſtomers will be drawn to each conventicle by new induſtry and addreſs in practiſing on the paſſions and credulity of the populace. And in the end, the civil magiſtrate will find, that he has paid dearly for his pretended frugality, in ſaving a ſettled foundation for the prieſts; and that in reality the moſt decent and advantageous compoſition, which he can make with the ſpiritual guides, is to bribe their indolence, by affixing ſtated ſalaries to their profeſſion, and rendering it ſuperfluous for them to be farther active, than merely to preſerve their flock from ſtraying in queſt of new paſtures. And in this manner eccleſiaſtical eſtabliſh-

ments,

Chap. III. 1521. ments, tho' commonly they aroſe at firſt from religious views, prove in the end advantageous to the political intereſts of ſociety.

But we may obſerve, that few eccleſiaſtical eſtabliſhments have been fixed upon a worſe foundation than that of the church of Rome, or have been attended with circumſtances more hurtful to the peace and happineſs of mankind.

The large revenues, privileges, immunities, and powers of the clergy rendered them formidable to the civil magiſtrate, and armed with too extenſive authority an order of men, who always adhere cloſely together, and who never want a plauſible pretence for their encroachments and uſurpations. The higher dignities of the church ſerved indeed, to the ſupport of gentry and nobility; but by the eſtabliſhment of monaſteries, many of the loweſt vulgar were taken from the uſeful arts, and maintained in thoſe receptacles of ſloth and ignorance. The ſupreme head of the church was a foreign potentate, who was guided by intereſts, always different, ſometimes contrary to thoſe of the community. And as the hierarchy was neceſſarily ſolicitous to preſerve an unity of faith, rites and ceremonies, all liberty of thought ran a manifeſt riſque of being extinguiſhed; and violent perſecutions, or what was worſe, a ſtupid and abject credulity, took place every where.

To encreaſe theſe evils, the church, tho' ſhe poſſeſſed large revenues, was not contented with her acquiſitions, but retained a power of practiſing farther on the ignorance of mankind. She even beſtowed on each individual prieſt a power of enriching himſelf by the voluntary oblations of the faithful, and left him ſtill a powerful motive for diligence and induſtry in his calling. And thus, that church, tho' an expenſive and burthenſome eſtabliſhment, was liable to many of the inconveniencies, which belong to an order of prieſts, truſted entirely to their own art and invention for attaining a ſubſiſtance.

The advantages, attending the Romiſh hierarchy, were but a ſmall compenſation for its inconveniencies. The eccleſiaſtical privileges, during barbarous times, had ſerved as a check to the deſpotiſm of Kings. The union of all the weſtern churches under the ſupreme pontiff facilitated the intercourſe of nations, and tended to bind all the parts of Europe into a cloſe connection with each other. And the pomp and ſplendour of worſhip, which belonged to ſo opulent an eſtabliſhment, contributed, in ſome reſpects, to the encouragement of the fine arts, and began to diffuſe a general elegance of taſte, by uniting it with religion.

It will eaſily be conceived, that, tho' the balance of evil prevailed in the Romiſh church, this was not the chief reaſon, which produced the reformation. A concurrence of incidents muſt have contributed to forward that great work.

Pope

Chap. III. 1521.

Origin of the reformation.

Pope Leo the tenth, by his generous and enterprizing temper, had very much exhauſted his treaſury, and was obliged to make uſe of every invention, which might yield money, in order to ſupport his projects, pleaſures, and liberalities. The ſcheme of ſelling indulgences was ſuggeſted to him, as an expedient which had often ſerved in former times to draw money from the chriſtian world, and make devout people willing contributors to the grandeur and riches of the court of Rome. The church, it was ſuppoſed, was poſſeſſed of a great ſtock of merit, as being entitled to all the good works of the ſaints, beyond what were employed in their own juſtification; and even to the merits of Chriſt himſelf, which were infinite and unbounded: And from this unexhauſted treaſury, the pope might retail particular portions, and by that traffic acquire money, to be employed in pious purpoſes, the reſiſting the Turk, or ſubduing ſchiſmatics. When the money came into his treaſury, the greateſt part of it was uſually diverted to other purpoſes *.

It is commonly believed, that Leo, from the penetration of his genius, and his familiarity with literature, was fully acquainted with the ridicule and fallacy of the doctrines, which, as ſupreme pontiff, he was obliged by his intereſt to promote: And it is the leſs wonder, therefore, that he employed for his profit thoſe pious frauds, which his predeceſſors, the moſt ignorant and credulous, had always, under plauſible pretences, made uſe of for their ſelfiſh purpoſes. He publiſhed the ſale of a general indulgence †; and as his expences had not only exhauſted his uſual revenue, but even anticipated the income of this extraordinary expedient, the ſeveral branches of it were openly given away to particular perſons, who were entitled to levy the impoſition. The produce particularly of Saxony and the countries bordering on the Baltic was aſſigned to his ſiſter, Magdalene, married to Cibo, natural ſon of Innocent the eighth; and ſhe, in order to enhance her profit, had farmed out the revenue to one Arcemboldi, a Genoeſe, now a biſhop, formerly a merchant, who ſtill retained all the lucrative arts of his former profeſſion ‡. The Auſtin friars had uſually been employed in Saxony to preach the indulgences, and from this truſt had derived both profit and conſideration: But Arcemboldi, fearing, leſt practice might have taught them means to ſecrete the money §, and expecting no extraordinary ſucceſs from the ordinary methods of collection, gave this occupation to the Dominicans. Theſe monks, in order to prove themſelves worthy of the diſtinction conferred on them, exaggerated the benefit of indulgences by the moſt unbounded panegyrics; and advanced doctrines on that head, which, tho' not more ridiculous than thoſe already received, were ſuch as the ears of the people were not yet fully accuſtomed

* Father Paul and Sleidan. † In 1517. ‡ Father Paul, Sleidan. § Father Paul, lib. 1.

Chap. III. 1521.

to To add to the ſcandal, the collectors of this revenue are ſaid to have lived very licentious lives, and to have ſpent in taverns, gaming-houſes, and places ſtill more infamous, the money, which devout perſons had ſaved from their uſual expences, in order to purchaſe a remiſſion of their ſins *.

Martin Luther.

All theſe circumſtances might have given offence, but would have been attended with no event of any importance, had there not ariſen a man, qualified to take advantage of the incident. Martin Luther, an Auſtin friar, profeſſor in the univerſity of Wirtemberg, reſenting the affront put upon his order, began to preach againſt theſe abuſes in the ſale of indulgences; and being naturally of a fiery temper, and being provoked by oppoſition, he proceeded even to decry indulgences themſelves; and was thence carried, by the heat of diſpute, to queſtion the authority of the pope, from which his adverſaries derived their chief arguments againſt him †. Still as he enlarged his reading, in order to ſupport theſe tenets, he diſcovered ſome new abuſe or error in the church of Rome; and finding his opinions greedily hearkened to, he promulgated them by writing, diſcourſes, ſermons, conferences; and daily encreaſed the number of his diſciples. All Saxony, all Germany, all Europe were in a very little time filled with the voice of this daring innovator; and men, rouzed from that lethargy, in which they had ſo long ſlept, began to call in queſtion the moſt antient and moſt received opinions. The elector of Saxony, favourable to Luther's doctrine, protected him from the violence of the papal juriſdiction: The republic of Zuric even reformed their church according to the new model: Many ſovereigns of the empire, and the imperial diet itſelf, ſhowed a favourable diſpoſition towards it: And Luther, a man naturally inflexible, vehement, opinionative, was become incapable either from promiſes of advancement, or terrors of ſeverity, to relinquiſh a ſect, of which he was himſelf the founder, and which brought him a glory, ſuperior to all others, the glory of dictating the religious faith and principles of multitudes.

The rumour of theſe innovations ſoon reached England; and as there ſtill ſubſiſted in that kingdom great remains of the Lollards, whoſe principles reſembled thoſe of Luther, the new doctrines gained ſecretly many partizans among the laiety of all ranks and denominations. Henry had been educated in a ſtrict attachment to the church of Rome, and he bore a particular prejudice againſt Luther, who, in his writings, ſpoke with contempt of Thomas Aquinas, the King's favourite author: He oppoſed himſelf therefore to the progreſs of the Lutheran tenets, by all the influence which his extenſive and almoſt abſolute au-

* Father Paul, lib. 1. † Father Paul, Sleidan.

thority

thority conferred upon him: He even undertook to combat them with weapons not uſually employed by monarchs, eſpecially thoſe in the flower of their age and force of their paſſions. He wrote a book in Latin againſt the principles of Luther; a performance, which, if allowance be made for the ſubject and the age, does no diſcredit to his capacity. He ſent a copy of it to Leo, who received ſo magnificent a preſent with great teſtimony of regard; and conferred on him, the title of *Defender of the Faith*; an appellation ſtill retained by the Kings of England. Luther, who was in the heat of controverſy, ſoon wrote an anſwer to Henry; and without regard to the dignity of his antagoniſt, treated him with all the acrimony of ſtyle, to which, in the courſe of his polemics, he had ſo long been accuſtomed. The King, by this ill uſage, was ſtill more prejudiced againſt the new doctrines; but the public, who naturally favour the weaker party, were inclined to attribute to Luther the victory in the diſpute ‡. And as the controverſy became more illuſtrious, by Henry's entering the liſts, it drew ſtill more the attention of mankind; and the Lutheran doctrine acquired daily new converts in every part of Europe.

Chap. III. 1521.

Henry receives the title of Defender of the Faith.

THE quick and ſurprizing progreſs of this bold ſect may juſtly in part be aſcribed to the late invention of printing, and revival of learning: Not that reaſon bore any conſiderable part, in opening mens eyes with regard to the impoſtures of the Romiſh church: For of all branches of literature, philoſophy had, as yet, and till long afterwards, made the moſt inconſiderable progreſs; neither is there any inſtance where argument has been able to free the people from that enormous load of abſurdity, with which ſuperſtition has every where overwhelmed them: Not to mention, that the rapid advance of the Lutheran doctrine, and the violence, with which it was embraced, prove ſufficiently, that it owed not its ſucceſs to reaſon and reflection. The art of printing and the revival of learning forwarded its progreſs in another manner. By means of that art, the books of Luther and his ſectaries, full of vehemence, declamation and a rude eloquence, were propagated more quickly, and in greater numbers. The minds of men, ſomewhat awakened from a profound ſleep of ſo many centuries, were prepared for every novelty, and ſcrupled leſs to tread in any unuſual path, which was opened to them. And as copies of the ſcriptures and other antient monuments of the chriſtian faith became more common, men perceived the innovations, which were introduced after the firſt centuries; and though argument and reaſoning could not give conviction, an hiſtorical fact, well ſupported, was able to make impreſſion on their underſtandings. Many of the powers, indeed, aſſumed by the church of Rome, were very antient, and were prior to almoſt every

Cauſes of the progreſs of the reformation.

* Father Paul, lib. 1.

Chap. III. 1521. political government eſtabliſhed in Europe: But as the eccleſiaſtics would not agree to poſſeſs their privileges as matters of civil right, which time could render valid, but appealed ſtill to a divine origin, men were tempted to look into their primitive charter; and they could, without much difficulty, perceive its defect in truth and authenticity.

In order to beſtow on this topic the greater influence, Luther and his followers, not ſatisfied with oppoſing the pretended divinity of the Romiſh church, and diſplaying the temporal inconveniencies of that eſtabliſhment, carried matters much farther, and treated the religion of their anceſtors, as abominable, deteſtable, damnable; foretold by ſacred writ itſelf as the ſource of all wickedneſs and pollution. They denominated the pope antichriſt, called his communion the ſcarlet whore, and gave to Rome the appellation of Babylon; expreſſions, which, however applied, were to be found in ſcripture, and which were better calculated to operate on the multitude than the moſt ſolid arguments. Excited by conteſt and perſecution on the one hand, by ſucceſs and applauſe on the other, many of the reformers carried to the greateſt extremity their oppoſition againſt the church of Rome; and in contradiction to the multiplied ſuperſtitions, with which that communion was loaded, they adopted an enthuſiaſtic ſtrain of devotion, which admitted of no obſervances, rites or ceremonies, but placed all merit in a myſterious ſpecies of faith, in inward viſion, rapture, and extacy. The new ſectaries, ſeized with this ſpirit, were indefatigable in the propagation of their doctrine, and ſet at defiance all the anathemas and puniſhments, with which the Roman pontiff endeavoured to overwhelm them.

That the civil power, however, might afford them protection againſt the eccleſiaſtical juriſdiction, the Lutherans advanced doctrines favourable, in ſome reſpects, to the temporal authority of ſovereigns. They inveigled againſt the abuſes of the court of Rome, with which men were at that time generally diſcontented; and exhorted princes to reinſtate themſelves in thoſe powers, of which the incroaching ſpirit of the eccleſiaſtics, and eſpecially of the ſovereign pontiff, had ſo long bereaved them. They condemned celibacy and monaſtic vows, and thereby opened the doors of the convents to thoſe who were either tired of the obedience and chaſtity, or diſguſted with the licence, in which they had hitherto lived. They blamed the exceſſive riches, the idleneſs, the libertiniſm of the clergy; and pointed out their treaſures and revenues as lawful ſpoil to the firſt invader. And as the eccleſiaſtics had hitherto conducted a willing and a ſtupid audience, and were totally unacquainted with controverſy, much more with every ſpecies of true literature; they were unable to defend themſelves againſt men, armed with authorities, citations, and popular topics, and qualified to triumph

triumph in every altercation or debate. Such were the advantages, with which the reformers began their attack of the Roman hierarchy; and such were the causes of their rapid and astonishing success. Chap. III. 1521.

Leo the tenth, whose oversight and too supine trust in the profound ignorance of the people, had given rise to this sect, but whose sound judgment, moderation and temper, were well qualified to retard it progress, died in the flower of his age, a little after he received the King's book against Luther; and he was succeeded in the papal chair, by Adrian, a Fleming, who had been tutor to the emperor Charles. This man was fitted to gain on the reformers by the integrity, candour, and simplicity of manners, by which he was distinguished; but, so violent were their prejudices against the church, he rather hurt the cause by his imprudent exercise of those virtues. He frankly confessed, that many abominable and detestable practices prevailed in the court of Rome; and by this sincere avowal, he gave occasion of much triumph to the Lutherans. This pontiff also, whose penetration was not equal to his good intentions, was seduced to concur in that league, which Charles and Henry had formed against France *; and he thereby augmented the scandal, occasioned by the practice of so many preceding popes, who still made their spiritual arms subservient to political purposes. 1st December.

The emperor, Charles, who knew, that Wolsey had received a disappointment in his ambitious hopes by the election of Adrian, and who dreaded the resentment of that haughty minister, was solicitous to repair the breach made in their friendship by this incident. He paid a new visit to England; and besides, flattering the vanity of the King and the cardinal, he repeated to Wolsey all the promises, which he had made him, of seconding his pretensions to the papal throne. Wolsey, sensible that Adrian's great age and infirmities promised a sudden vacancy, dissembled his resentment, and was willing to hope for a more prosperous issue of the next election. The emperor renewed the treaty made at Bruges, to which some articles were added; and he agreed to indemnify both the King and Wolsey for the revenues which they should lose by a breach with France. The more to ingratiate himself with Henry and the English nation; he gave to Surrey, admiral of England, a commission for being admiral of his dominions; and he himself was installed knight of the garter at London. After a stay of six weeks in England, he embarked at Southampton, and in ten days arrived in Spain, where he soon pacified the tumults which had arisen in his absence †. 1522. 26th May.

* Guicciardini, lib. 14.

† Petrus de Angleria, epist. 765.

Chap. III. 1522.

War with France.

THE King declared war againſt France; and this meaſure was founded on ſo little reaſon, that he could allege nothing as a ground of quarrel, but Francis's refuſal to ſubmit to his arbitration, and his ſending Albany into Scotland. This laſt ſtep had not been taken by the French King, till he was quite aſſured of Henry's reſolution to attack him. Surrey landed ſome troops at Cherbourg in Normandy; and after laying waſte the country, he ſailed to Morlaix, a rich town in Britanny, which he took and plundered. The Engliſh merchants had great property in that place, which was no more ſpared by the ſoldiers, than the goods of the French. Surrey then left the charge of the fleet to the vice-admiral; and ſailed to Calais, where he took the command of the Engliſh army, deſtined for the invaſion of France. This army, when joined by forces from the Low Countries under the command of the count de Buren, conſiſted in the whole of 18,000 men.

Invaſion of France.

THE French had made it a maxim in all their wars with the Engliſh, ſince the reign of Charles the fifth, never, without great neceſſity, to hazard a general engagement; and the duke of Vendôme, who commanded the French army, now embraced this wiſe policy. He ſupplied the towns moſt expoſed, eſpecially Boulogne, Montreuil, Teroüenne, Hedin, with ſtrong garriſons and plenty of proviſions: He himſelf took poſt at Abbeville, with ſome Swiſs and French infantry, and a body of cavalry: The count of Guiſe encamped under Montreuil with ſix thouſand men. Theſe two bodies were in a ſituation to join upon occaſion; to throw ſuccour into any town, that was threatened; and to harraſs the Engliſh in every movement. Surrey, who was not ſupplied with magazines, firſt divided his army for the convenience of ſubſiſting them; but finding that his quarters were every moment beaten up by the activity of the French generals, he drew together the forces, and laid ſiege to Hedin. But neither did he ſucceed in this enterprize. The garriſon made vigorous ſallies upon his army: The French forces aſſaulted them from without: Great rains fell: Fatigue and bad weather threw the ſoldiers into dyſenteries: And Surrey was obliged to raiſe the ſiege, and put his troops into winter quarters about the end of October. His rear-guard was attacked at Pas in Artois; and five or ſix hundred men were cut off; nor could all his efforts make him maſter of one place within the French frontier.

THE allies were more ſucceſsful in Italy. Lautrec, who commanded the French, loſt a bloody battle at Bicocco near Milan; and was obliged to retire with the remains of his army. This misfortune, which proceeded from Francis's negligence in not ſupplying Lautrec with money *, was followed by the loſs of

* Guicciardini, lib. 14.

Genoa.

Genoa. The caſtle of Cremona was the ſole fortreſs in Italy, which remained in the hands of the French. Chap. III. 1522.

EUROPE was now in ſuch a ſituation, and ſo connected by alliances and intereſt, that it was almoſt impoſſible for war to be kindled in one part, and not diffuſe itſelf thro' the whole: But of all the leagues among kingdoms, the cloſeſt was that which had ſo long ſubſiſted between France and Scotland; and the Engliſh, while at war with the former nation, could not expect to remain long unmoleſted on the northern frontier. No ſooner had Albany arrived in Scotland, than he took meaſures for kindling a war with England; and he ſummoned the whole force of the kingdom to meet in the fields of Roſline †. He thence conducted the army ſouthwards into Annandale; and prepared to paſs the borders at Solway-Frith. But many of the nobility were diſguſted with the regent's adminiſtration; and obſerving, that his connexions with his native country were very feeble in compariſon of thoſe with France, they murmured, that for the ſake of foreign intereſts, their peace ſhould be ſo often diſturbed, and war, during their King's minority, be wantonly entered into with a neighbouring nation, ſo much ſuperior in force and riches. The Gordons, in particular, refuſed to advance any farther; and Albany, obſerving a general diſcontent to prevail, was obliged to conclude a truce with lord Dacres, warden of the Engliſh weſt marches. Soon after, he departed for France; and leſt the oppoſite faction ſhould gather force in his abſence, he ſent thither before him the earl of Angus, huſband to the queen dowager. War with Scotland.

NEXT year, Henry, that he might take advantage of the regent's abſence, marched an army into Scotland under the command of Surrey, who ravaged the Merſe and Teviotdale without oppoſition, and burned the town of Jedburgh. The Scots had neither King nor Regent to conduct them: The two Humes had been put to death: Angus was in a manner baniſhed: No nobleman of vigour or authority remained, who was qualified to aſſume the government: And the Engliſh monarch, who knew the diſtreſſed ſituation of the country, determined to puſh them to extremity, in hopes of engaging them, by the ſenſe of their preſent miſeries, to make a ſolemn renounciation of the French alliance, and embrace that of England *. He even gave them hopes of contracting a marriage between the lady Mary, heireſs of England, and their young monarch; an expedient, which would for ever unite the two kingdoms ‡: And the queen dowager, with her 1523.

† Buchannan, lib. 14. Drummond. Piſcottie.
‡ Le Grand, vol. III. p. 39.
* Buchannan, lib. 14. Herbert.

Chap. III. 1523. whole arty, recommended every where the advantages of this alliance, and of a confederacy with England. They ſaid, that the intereſts of Scotland had too long ben ſacrificed to thoſe of the French nation, who, whenever they found themſelves reduced to difficulties, called for the aſſiſtance of their allies, but were ready to abandon them, ſo ſoon as they found their advantage in making peace with England: That where a ſmall ſtate entered into ſo cloſe a confederacy with a greater it muſt always expect this treatment, as a conſequence of the unequal alliance; but that there were peculiar circumſtances in the ſituation of the kingdoms, which, in the preſent caſe, rendered it inevitable: That France was ſo diſtant and ſo divided from them by ſeas, that ſhe ſcarce could by any means, and never could in time, ſend ſuccours to the Scots, ſufficient to protect them againſt ravages from the neighbouring kingdom: That nature had, in a manner, framed an alliance between the two Britiſh nations; having incloſed them in the ſame iſland; given them the ſame manners, language, laws, and form of government; and prepared every thing for an intimate union between them: And that, if national antipathies were aboliſhed, which would ſoon be the effect of peace, theſe two kingdoms, ſecured by the ocean and by their domeſtic force, could ſet at defiance all foreign enemies, and remain for ever ſecure and unmoleſted.

THE partizans of the French alliance ſaid, on the other hand, that the very reaſons which were urged in favour of a league with England, the cloſe neighbourhood of the kingdom and its ſuperior force, were the real cauſes, why a ſincere and durable confederacy could never be framed with that hoſtile nation: That among neighbouring ſtates, occaſions of quarrel were frequent; and the more powerful people would be ſure to ſeize every frivolous pretence for oppreſſing the weaker and reducing them to ſubjection: That as the near neighbourhood of France and England had kindled a war almoſt perpetual between them, it was the intereſt of the Scots, if they wiſhed to maintain their independancy, to preſerve their league with the former kingdom, which balanced the force of the latter: That if they deſerted that old and ſalutary alliance, on which their importance in Europe chiefly depended, their antient enemies, ſtimulated both by intereſt and by paſſion, would ſoon invade them with ſuperior force, and reduce them to ſubjection. Or if they delayed the attack, the inſidious peace, by making the Scots loſe the uſe of arms, would only prepare the way for a ſlavery more certain and more irretrievable *.

THE arguments employed by the French party, being ſeconded by the natural prejudices of the people, ſeemed rather to prevail: And when the regent himſelf, who had been long detained beyond his appointed time by the terror of the Engliſh

* Buchannan, lib. 14.

fleet,

fleet, at last appeared among them, he was able to throw the balance entely on that side. By the authority of the convention of states, he assembled an army, with a view of avenging the ravages committed by the English in the beginnin of the campaign; and he led them southwards towards the borders. But whn they were passing the Tweed at the bridge of Melrose, the English party wer again able to raise such opposition, that Albany thought proper to make a retrea He marched downwards, along the banks of the Tweed, keeping that riveron his right; and fixed his camp opposite to Werk-Castle, which Surrey hac lately repaired. He sent over some troops to besiege that fortress, who made abreach in it, and stormed some of the outworks: But the regent, hearing of he approach of an English army, and discouraged by the advanced season, thougt proper to disband his forces and retire to Edinburgh. Soon after he went ver to France, and never again returned to Scotland. The Scots nation, agitated b their domestic factions, were not, during several years, in a condition to gie any more disturbance to England; and Henry had full leisure to prosecute his esigns on the continent. Chap. III. 1523.

THE reason, why the war against France proceeded so slowly on the art of England was the want of money. All Henry the seventh's treasures we long since dissipated; the King's habits of expence still remained; and his revenues were unequal even to the ordinary support of his government, much morto his military enterprizes. He had last year caused a general survey to be madof the kingdom; the numbers of men, their years, profession, stock, revenue *, and expressed great satisfaction on finding the nation so opulent. He then issud out privy seals to the most wealthy, demanding loans of particular sums; ad this act of power, tho' somewhat irregular and tyrannical, had been formerly pctised by the Kings of England; and the people were now familiarized to it. BuHenry carried his authority much farther on this occasion. He published an ect for a general tax upon his subjects, which he still called a loan; and he levid five shillings in the pound from the clergy, two shillings from the laity. Th pretended loan, as being more regular, was really more dangerous to the liberes of the people; and was a precedent for the King's imposing taxes without cnsent of Parliament.

HENRY summoned a Parliament this year, together with a convocation and found neither of them in a disposition to complain of the infringement oftheir privileges. It was only doubted, how far they would carry their liberality o the King. Wolsey, who had undertaken the management of this affair, begawith 15th of April. A Parliament.

* Herbert. Stowe, p. 514.

Chap. III. 1523. the convocation; in hopes, that their example would influence the Parliament to grant a large ſupply. He demanded a moiety of their eccleſiaſtical revenues to be levied in five years, or two ſhillings in the pound during that time, and tho' he met with oppoſition, he reprimanded ſo ſeverely the refractory members, that his requeſt was at laſt complied with. The cardinal afterwards, attended by ſeveral of the nobility and prelates, came to the houſe of commons; and in a long and elaborate ſpeech laid before them the public neceſſities, the dangers of an invaſion from Scotland, the affronts received from France, the league in which the King was engaged with the pope and the emperor; and he demanded a grant of 800,000 pounds, divided into four yearly payments; a ſum, computed from the late ſurvey or valuation to be equivalent to four ſhillings in the pound of one year's revenue, or one ſhilling in the pound yearly, according to the diviſion propoſed. So large a grant was unuſual from the commons; and tho' the cardinal's demand was ſeconded by Sir Thomas More the ſpeaker, and ſeveral other members attached to the court, the houſe could not be prevailed with to comply †. They only voted two ſhillings in the pound on all poſſeſſed of twenty pounds a year and upwards; one ſhilling on all between twenty pounds and forty ſhillings a year; and on all the reſt of the ſubjects above ſixteen years of age a groat a-head. This laſt ſum was divided into two yearly payments; the former into four yearly payments, and was not therefore at the outmoſt above ſix-pence in the pound. The grant of the commons was but the moiety of the ſum demanded; and the cardinal, therefore, much mortified with the diſappointment, came again to the houſe, and deſired to reaſon with ſuch as refuſed to comply with the King's requeſt. He was told, that it was a rule of the houſe never to reaſon but among themſelves; and his deſire was rejected. The commons, however, enlarged a little their former grant, and voted an impoſition of three ſhillings in the pound on all poſſeſſed of fifty pounds a year, and upwards *. The proceedings of this

† Herbert. Stowe, 518. Parliamentary Hiſtory. Strype, vol. i. p. 49, 50.

* It is ſaid, that when Henry heard that the commons made a great difficulty of granting the required ſupply, he was ſo provoked, that he ſent for Edward Montague, one of the members, who had a conſiderable influence on the houſe; and he being introduced to his majeſty, had the mortification to hear him ſpeak in theſe words: *Ho! man! will they not ſuffer my bill to paſs?* And laying his hand on Montague's head, who was then on his knees before him: *Get my bill paſſ'd by to-morrow, or elſe to-morrow this head of yours ſhall be off.* This cavalier manner of Henry ſucceeded: For next day the bill was paſſed. *Collins's Britiſh peerage. Grove's life of Wolſey.* We are told by *Hall*, fol. 38, That cardinal Wolſey endeavoured to terrify the citizens of London into the general loan, exacted in 1525, and told them plainly, that *it were better, that ſome ſhould ſuffer indigence, than that the King at this time ſhould lack; and therefore beware and reſiſt not, nor ruffle not in this caſe, for it may fortune to coſt ſome people their heads.* Such was the ſtyle, employed by this King and his miniſters.

houſe

houſe of commons diſcover evidently the humour of the times: They were extremely tenacious of their money, and refuſed a demand of the crown, which was far from being unreaſonable; but they allowed an encroachment on national privileges to paſs uncenſured, tho' its direct tendency was to ſubvert entirely the liberties of the people. The King was ſo diſſatisfied with this ſaving diſpoſition of the commons, that, as he had not called a Parliament during ſeven years before, he allowed ſeven more to elapſe, before he ſummoned another. And on pretence of neceſſity, he levied, in one year, from all who were worth forty pounds, what the Parliament had granted him payable in four years †; a new invaſion of national privileges. Theſe irregularities were commonly aſcribed to the cardinal's counſels, who, truſting to the protection, afforded him by his eccleſiaſtical character, was leſs ſcrupulous in his encroachments on the civil rights of the nation. Chap. III. 1523.

That ambitious prelate received this year a new diſappointment in his aſpiring views. The pope, Adrian the ſixth, died; and Clement the ſeventh, of the family of Medicis, was elected in his place, by the concurrence of the imperial party. Wolſey began now to perceive the inſincerity of the emperor, and concluded that that prince would never ſecond his pretenſions to the papal chair. This injury was highly reſented by the cardinal; and he began thenceforth to eſtrange himſelf from the imperial court, and to pave the way for an union between his maſter and the French King. Meanwhile, he diſſembled his reſentment; and after congratulating the new pope on his promotion, applied for a continuation of the legantine powers, which the two former popes had conferred upon him. Clement, knowing the importance of gaining his friendſhip, granted him a commiſſion for life; and by this unuſual conceſſion, he in a manner transferred to him the whole papal authority in England. In ſome particulars, Wolſey made a good uſe of this extenſive power. He erected two colleges, one at Oxford, another at Ipſwich, the place of his nativity: He ſought, all over Europe, for learned men to ſupply the chairs of theſe colleges: And in order to beſtow endowments on them, he ſuppreſſed ſome ſmaller monaſteries, and diſtributed the monks into other convents. The execution of this project became the leſs difficult for him, becauſe the Romiſh church began to perceive, that ſhe over-abounded in monks, and that ſhe wanted ſome ſupply of learning, in order to oppoſe the inquiſitive, or rather diſputative, humour of the new reformers.

The confederacy againſt France ſeemed more formidable than ever, on the opening of this compaign *. Adrian, before his death, had renewed the league with Charles and Henry. The Venetians had been induced to deſert the French alliance, and to form engagements for the ſecuring Sforza in poſſeſſion of the

† Speed. Hall. Herbert.

* Guicciardini, lib 14.

Chap. III. 1523.

Milaneſe. The Florentines, the dukes of Ferrara and Mantua, and all the powers of Italy combined in the ſame meaſure. The emperor in perſon menaced France with a powerful invaſion on the ſide of Guienne: The forces of England and the Netherlands ſeemed ready to break into Picardy: A numerous body of Germans were preparing to ravage Burgundy: But all theſe perils from foreign enemies were leſs threatening than a domeſtic conſpiracy, which had been forming, and which was now come to full maturity againſt the French monarch.

CHARLES duke of Bourbon, conſtable of France, was a prince of the moſt ſhining merit; and, beſide diſtinguiſhing himſelf in many military enterprizes, he was adorned with every accompliſhment, which became a perſon of his high ſtation. His virtues, embelliſhed with the graces of youth, had made ſuch impreſſion on Louiſe of Savoy, Francis's mother, that, without regard to the inequality of their years, ſhe made him propoſals of marriage; and meeting with a refuſal, ſhe formed ſchemes of unrelenting vengeance againſt him. She was a woman, falſe, deceitful, vindictive, malicious; but, unhappily for France, had by her capacity, which was conſiderable, acquired an abſolute aſcendant over her ſon. By her inſtigation, Francis put many affronts on the conſtable, which it was difficult for a gallant ſpirit to endure; and at laſt he permitted Louiſe to proſecute a lawſuit againſt him, by which, on the moſt frivolous pretences, he was deprived of his ample poſſeſſions; and inevitable ruin was brought upon him.

BOURBON, provoked at all theſe indignities, and thinking, that, if any injuries could juſtify a man in rebelling againſt his prince and country, he muſt ſtand acquitted, had entered into a ſecret correſpondence with the emperor and the King of England *. Francis, pertinacious in his deſign of recovering the Milaneſe, had propoſed to lead his army in perſon into Italy; and Bourbon, who feigned ſickneſs, in order to have a pretence for ſtaying behind, intended, ſo ſoon as the King had paſſed the Alps, to raiſe an inſurrection among his numerous vaſſals, by whom he was extremely beloved, and to introduce foreign enemies into the heart of the kingdom. Francis got intimation of his deſign; but not being prompt enough in ſecuring ſo dangerous a foe, the conſtable made his eſcape ‡; and putting himſelf in the emperor's ſervice, did all the injuries to his native country, which his enterprizing ſpirit and his great talents for war enabled him to perform. Charles profeſſed ſuch regard for him, that he promiſed him his ſiſter in marriage, Eleonora, widow to Emanuel, King of Portugal; and when the conſtable came to Madrid, ſome time after, the emperor received him with all the demonſtrations of friendſhip. He ſaid to a Spaniſh grandee, that

* Memoires du Bellay, lib. 2. ‡ Belcarius, lib. 17.

he

he must desire him, while Bourbon resided in that city, to allow him to take up his residence in his house, as most suitable to his rank and quality. The nobleman replied, with a Castilian dignity, that his majesty's desire was to him a sufficient reason; but he must tell him beforehand, that so soon as Bourbon departed he would raze to the ground the house which had been polluted by the presence of such a traitor *. Chap. III. 1523.

The King of England, desirous that Francis should undertake his Italian expedition, did not openly threaten Picardy this year with an invasion; and it was late before the duke of Suffolk, who commanded the English forces, passed over to Calais. He was attended with the lords Montacute, Herbert, Ferrars, Morney, Sandys, Berkeley, Powis, and many other noblemen and gentlemen †. The English army, reinforced by some troops, drawn from the garrison of Calais, amounted to about 12,000 men; and having joined an equal number of Flemings under the count de Buren, they prepared for an invasion of France. The siege of Boulogne was first proposed; but that enterprize appearing difficult, it was thought more adviseable to leave this town behind them. The frontier of Picardy was very ill provided of troops; and the only defence of that province was the activity of the French officers, who infested the allied army in their march, and threw garrisons, with great expedition, into every town, which was threatened by them. After coasting the Somme, and passing Hedin, Montreuil, Dourlens, the English and Flemings presented themselves before Bray, a place of small force, which commanded a bridge over the Somme. Here they were resolved to pass, and, if possible, to take up winter quarters in France; but Grequi threw himself into the town, and seemed determined to defend it. The allies attacked him with vigour and success; and when he retreated over the bridge, they pursued him so hotly, that they allowed him not time to break it down, but passed it along with him, and put him to route. They next advanced to Montdidier, which they besieged and took by capitulation. Meeting with no opposition, they proceeded to the river Oise, within eleven leagues of Paris, and threw that city into great consternation; till the duke of Vendôme hastened with some forces to its relief. The confederates, then, afraid of being surrounded, and reduced to extremities during so advanced a season, thought proper to retire. Montdidier was abandoned: And the English and Flemings went each into their own country. 24th August. Invasion of France.

France defended herself from the other invasions with equal facility and equal good fortune. Twelve thousand Lansquenets broke into Burgundy under the command of the count of Furstenberg. The count of Guise, who defended

* Guicciardini. † Herbert.

Chap. III. 1523. that frontier, had nothing to oppoſe to them but ſome militia, and about nine hundred heavy-armed cavalry. He threw the militia into the garriſon-towns; and with his cavalry, he kept the field, and ſo haraſſed the Germans, that they were glad to make their retreat into Lorraine. Guiſe attacked them as they paſſed the Meuſe, put them into diſorder, and cut off the greateſt part of their rear.

THE emperor made great preparations on the ſide of Navarre; and, though that frontier was well guarded by nature, it ſeemed now expoſed to great danger from this powerful invaſion which threatened it. Charles beſieged Fontarabia, which had fallen a few years before into Francis's hands; and when he had drawn thither Lautrec, the French general, he raiſed the ſiege of a ſudden, and ſat down before Bayonne. Lautrec, aware of that ſtratagem, made a ſudden march and threw himſelf into Bayonne, which he defended with ſuch vigour and courage, that the Spaniards were conſtrained to raiſe the ſiege. The emperor would have been totally unfortunate on this ſide, had he not turned back upon Fontarabia, and, contrary to the advice of all his generals, ſat down, in the winter ſeaſon, before that city, well fortified and ſtrongly garriſoned. The cowardice or miſconduct of the governor ſaved him the ſhame of a new diſappointment. The place was ſurrendered in a few days; and the emperor, having finiſhed this enterprize, put his troops into winter quarters.

Italian wars. So obſtinate was Francis in proſecuting his Italian expedition, that, notwithſtanding theſe dangerous invaſions, with which his kingdom was menaced on every ſide, he had determined to lead in perſon a powerful army to the conqueſt of Milan. The intelligence of Bourbon's revolt and eſcape ſtopped him at Lyons; and fearing ſome inſurrection in the kingdom from the intrigues of a man ſo powerful and ſo beloved, he thought it prudent to remain in France; and to ſend forward his army, under the command of admiral Bonnivet. The dutchy of Milan had been purpoſely left in a condition ſomewhat defenceleſs, with a view of alluring Francis to attack it; and no ſooner had Bonnivet paſſed the Teſin, than the army of the league, and even Proſper Colonna, who commanded it, a very prudent general, were in the utmoſt confuſion. It is agreed, that if Bonnivet had immediately advanced to Milan, that great city, on which the whole dutchy depends, would have opened its gates without reſiſtance: But as he waſted his time in frivolous enterprizes, Colonna had opportunity to reinforce the garriſon, and to put the place in a poſture of defence. Bonnivet was now obliged to attempt reducing the city by blockade and famine; and he took poſſeſſion of all the poſts, which commanded the paſſages to it. But the army of the league, meanwhile, was not inactive; and they ſo ſtraitened and haraſſed the quarters of the French, that it ſeemed more likely the latter would themſelves periſh by famine,

famine, than reduce the city to that extremity. Sickneſs and fatigue and want had waſted them to ſuch a degree, that they were ready to raiſe the blockade; and their only hopes conſiſted in a great body of Swiſs, which was levied for the ſervice of the French king, and whoſe arrival was every day expected. Chap. III. 1524.

THE Swiſs had in that age ſo great a ſuperiority in the field above almoſt every other nation, and had been ſo much courted by all the great potentates of Europe, that they were become extremely capricious and haughty, and thought that the fate of kingdoms depended entirely on their aſſiſtance or oppoſition. Francis had promiſed to this body of mercenaries, whom he had hired to join Bonnivet, that ſo ſoon as they arrived in the plains of Piedmont, the duke of Longueville ſhould join them with four hundred lances, and conduct them to the French camp: But by ſome accident Longueville's march had been retarded, and the Swiſs had been obliged to march, without the honour of being eſcorted by him. Offended at this neglect, as they interpreted it, they no ſooner came within ſight of the French camp, than they ſtopped, and inſtead of joining Bonnivet, they ſent orders to a great body of their countrymen, who then ſerved under him, immediately to begin their march, and to return home in their company *.

AFTER this deſertion of the Swiſs, Bonnivet had no other choice, but that of making his retreat, as faſt as poſſible, into France. He accordingly put himſelf in motion for that purpoſe; but the allies, who foreſaw this meaſure, were ready to fall upon his rear. The French army, however, after a ſharp action, made good their retreat, tho' not without conſiderable loſs both in officers and private men. Among the reſt, fell in this action the brave chevalier Bayard, eſteemed in that age the model of ſoldiers and men of honour, and denominated the *knight without fear and without reproach*. When this gallant gentleman felt his wounds to be mortal, and could no longer ſupport himſelf on horſeback, he ordered his attendants to ſet him under a tree, and turn his face towards the enemy, that he might die in that poſture. The generals of the allies, and among the reſt the duke of Bourbon, came about him, and expreſſed their concern for his preſent condition. "Pity not me," cried he to Bourbon; "I die in the "diſcharge of my duty: They alone are the objects of pity, who fight againſt "their prince and country †."

THE French being thus expelled Italy, the pope, the Venetians, the Florentines were ſatisfied with the advantage obtained over them, and were reſolved to proſecute their victory no farther. All theſe powers, eſpecially Clement, had entertained a violent jealouſy of the emperor's ambition; and

* Guicciardini, lib. 15. Memoires du Bellay, liv. 2. † Pere Daniel, vol. 3. p. 152.

their

Chap. III. 1524. their jealouſy was extremely agmented, when they ſaw him refuſe the inveſtiture of Milan, a fief of theempire, to Francis Sforza, whoſe title he had acknowledged, and whoſe defece he had embraced *. They all concluded, that he intended to put himſelf n poſſeſſion of that important dutchy, and reduce Italy to ſubjection: Clemat in particular, actuated by this jealouſy, proceeded ſo far in oppoſition to th emperor, that he ſent orders to his nuncio at London to mediate a reconciliaon between France and England. But affairs were not yet fully ripe for thischange. Wolſey, diſguſted with the emperor, but ſtill more actuated by vainglory, was determined, that he himſelf ſhould have the renown of bringing abut that great alteration; and he engaged the King to reject the pope's mediaon. A new treaty was even concluded between Henry and Charles for the invaon of France. Charles ſtipulated to ſupply the duke of Bourbon with a poweful army, in order to conquer Provence and Dauphiny: Henry agreed to py him a hundred thouſand crowns for the firſt month; after which, he mightither chuſe to continue the ſame monthly payments, or invade Picardy with powerful army. Bourbon was to poſſeſs theſe provinces with the title of King but to hold them in fief of Henry as King of France. The dutchy of Burgudy was to be given to Charles: The reſt of the Kingdom to Henry.

THIS chimerical partition imediately failed of execution in the article, which was moſt eaſily performed: Borbon refuſed to acknowledge Henry as King of France. His enterprize, howeer, againſt Provence ſtill took place. A numerous army of imperialiſts invded that country under his command and that of the marquis of Peſcara. Tey laid ſiege to Marſeilles, which, being weakly garriſoned, they expected to cry in a little time: But the burgeſſes defended themſelves with ſuch valour ad obſtinacy, that Bourbon and Peſcara, who heard of the French King's appoach with a numerous army, found themſelves under a neceſſity of raiſing the ege; and they led their forces, much weakened, baffled, and diſheartened, into aly.

FRANCIS might now have ojoyed in ſafety the glory of repulſing all his enemies, in every attempt whic they had hitherto made of breaking into his kingdom: But as he received itelligence, that the King of England, diſcouraged by his former fruitleſs eterprizes, and diſguſted with the emperor, was making no preparations for th invaſion of Picardy, his antient ardour ſeized him for the conqueſt of Milan and, notwithſtanding the advanced ſeaſon, he was immediately determined, ontrary to the advice of his wiſeſt counſellors, to lead his army into Italy.

* Guicciardini, lib. 15.

Chap. III. 1524. The King of France invades Italy.

He paſſed the Alps at Mount Cenis, and no ſooner appeared in Piedmont, than he threw the whole Milaneſe into conſternation. There was no army in the field able to oppoſe him; and Milan itſelf, tho' affectionate to its duke, was not in the ſame poſture of defence as laſt year, whenblockaded by admiral Bonnivet. It was almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants: Great numbers had died of the plague; and the reſt had fled into the country for ſafety Francis immediately marched to that city, which opened its gates to receive him. The forces of the emperor and Sforza fled to Lodi; and had Francis been ſo fortunate as to purſue them, they had abandoned that place, and had been totallydiſſipated*. But his ill fate led him to beſiege Pavia, a town of conſiderable ſtength, well garriſoned, and defended by Leyva, one of the braveſt officers in the Spaniſh ſervice. Every attempt, which the French king made to gain thisimportant place proved fruitleſs. He battered the walls, and made breaches; but by the vigilance of Leyva, new retrenchments were inſtantly thrown up behind the breaches: He attempted to divert the courſe of the Teſin, which ran by one ſide of the city, and defended it; but an inundation of the river deſtroyed in one night all the mounds which the ſoldiers, during a long time, and with infinit pains, had been erecting. Fatigue and the bad ſeaſon (for it was now the depth of winter) had waſted the French army. And the more to diminiſh its force, Francis, at the pope's ſolicitation, who now declared, almoſt openly, for him, had detached a conſiderable 1525. body, under the duke of Albany, to invade thekingdom of Naples. The imperial generals meanwhile were not idle. Peſcra and Lannoy, viceroy of Naples, gathered forces from all quarters. Bourbon, having pawned his jewels for money, went into Germany, and by his perſonalintereſt, levied twelve thouſand Lanſquenets, with which he joined the imperialiſts. This army was advancing to raiſe the ſiege of Pavia; and the danger to the French became every day more imminent.

The ſtate of Europe was ſuch, during that age, that, partly from the want of commerce and induſtry every where, except in Italy and the Low Countries, partly from the extenſive privileges ſtill poſſeſſed by the people in all the great monarchies, and their frugal maxims in granting money, the revenues of the princes were extremely narrow, and even the ſmall armies, which they kept on foot, could not be regularly paid by them. The imperial forces, commanded by Bourbon, Peſcara, and Lannoy, exceeded not twenty thouſand men; they were the only body of troops maintained by theemperor (for he had not been able to levy any army for the invaſion of France either on the ſide of Spain or Flanders),

* Guicciardini, lib. 15. Du Bellay, lb. 2.

Chap. III. 1525.

Flanders). Yet ſo poor was that mighty monarch, that he could tranſmit no money for the payment of this army; and it was chiefly the hopes of ſharing the plunder of the French camp, which had made them advance, and kept them to their ſtandards. Had Francis raiſed the ſiege before their approach, and retired to Milan, they muſt immediately have diſperſed themſelves; and he had obtained a complete victory, without danger or bloodſhed. But it was the character of this monarch, to become obſtinate in proportion to the difficulties which he encountered; and having once ſaid, that he would take Pavia or periſh before it, he was reſolved rather to endure the utmoſt extremities than depart from this reſolution.

25 February.

THE imperial generals, after cannonading the French camp for ſeveral days, at laſt gave a general aſſault, and broke into the entrenchments. Leyva ſallied from the town, and threw the beſiegers into ſtill greater confuſion. The Swiſs infantry, contrary to their uſual practice, behaved in a daſtardly manner, and deſerted their poſt. Francis's whole army was put to rout; and he himſelf, ſurrounded by his enemies, after fighting with the moſt heroic valour, and killing ſeven men with his own hand, was at laſt obliged to ſurrender himſelf priſoner. Almoſt the whole army, full of nobility and brave officers, either periſhed by the ſword, or were drowned in the river. The few, who eſcaped with their lives, fell into the hands of the enemy. The imperial generals had ſo little authority over their own troops, even after this ſignal victory, that Lannoy, apprehenſive leſt the Lanſquenets ſhould ſeize Francis as ſecurity for the pay due to them, immediately removed him from the camp, and ſent him to Pizzighitone. And taking advantage of the terrors, which had ſeized the pope, the Florentines, the Duke of Ferrara, and other Italian ſtates, he obliged them, tho' ſecretly enemies, to advance money for the ſubſiſtence of his army.

Battle of Pavia, and captivity of Francis.

THE emperor received this news by Pennaloſa, who paſſed thro' France, by means of a ſafe conduct, which he received from the captive king. The moderation, which he diſplayed on this occaſion, had it been ſincere, would have done him great honour. Inſtead of rejoicing, he expreſſed ſympathy with Francis's ill fortune, and diſcovered his ſenſe of thoſe calamities, to which the greateſt monarchs are expoſed*. He refuſed the city of Madrid permiſſion to make any public expreſſions of triumph; and ſaid that he reſerved all his exultation till he ſhould be able to obtain ſome victory over the infidels. He ſent orders to his frontier garriſons to commit no hoſtilities upon France. He ſpoke of concluding immediately a peace on reaſonable terms. But all this ſeeming equity was only hypocriſy, ſo much the more dangerous, as it was profound. And his ſole occupation was

* Vera. Hiſt. de Charles V.

the

the forming ſchemes, how, from this great incident, he might draw the utmoſt advantage, and gratify that exorbitant ambition, by which, in all his actions, he was wholly governed. Chap. III. 1525.

THE ſame Pennaloſa, in paſſing thro' France, carried alſo a letter from Francis to his mother, whom he had left regent, and who then reſided at Lyons. It contained only theſe few words, *Madam, all is loſt, except our honour.* The princeſs was ſtruck with the greatneſs of the calamity. She ſaw the kingdom without a ſovereign, without an army, without generals, without money; ſurrounded on every hand by implacable and victorious enemies: And her ſole reſource, in her preſent diſtreſſes, were the hopes, which ſhe entertained, of peace and even of aſſiſtance from the King of England.

HAD the King entered into the war againſt France from any concerted political views, it is evident, that the victory of Pavia, and the captivity of Francis, were the moſt fortunate incidents which could have befallen him, and the only ones which could render his ſchemes effectual. While the war was carried on in the former feeble manner, without any deciſive advantage, he might have been able to poſſeſs himſelf of ſome frontier towns, or perhaps of a ſmall territory, which he could not keep poſſeſſion of, without expending much more than its value. By ſome great calamity alone, which annihilated the power of France, could he hope to acquire the dominion of conſiderable provinces, or diſmember that mighty monarchy, ſo affectionate to its own government and its own ſovereigns. But as it is probable, that Henry had never before carried his reflections ſo far; he was ſtartled at this important event, and became ſenſible of his own danger, as well as that of all Europe, from the loſs of a proper counterpoiſe to the great power of Charles. Inſtead of taking advantage, therefore, of the diſtreſſed condition of France, he was determined to lend her his aſſiſtance in her preſent calamities; and as the glory of generoſity, in raiſing a fallen enemy, concurred with his political intereſts, he heſitated the leſs in embracing theſe new meaſures. Henry embraces the alliance of France.

SOME diſguſts alſo had previouſly taken place between Charles and Henry, and ſtill more between Charles and Wolſey; and that powerful miniſter waited only for a favourable opportunity of revenging the diſappointments, which he had met with. The behaviour of Charles, immediately after the victory of Pavia, gave him occaſion to revive the King's jealouſy and ſuſpicions of his ally. The emperor ſupported ſo ill the appearance of moderation, which he at firſt aſſumed, that he had already changed his uſual ſtile to Henry; and inſtead of writing to him with his own hand, and ſubſcribing himſelf *your affectionate ſon and couſin*; he dictated his letters to his ſecretary, and ſimply ſubſcribed himſelf *Charles* †. Wolſey alſo

† Guicciardini, lib. 16.

Chap. III. 1525.

perceived a diminution in the careſſes and profeſſions, with which the emperor's letters to him were uſually loaded; and this laſt imprudence, proceeding from the intoxication of ſucceſs, was probably more dangerous to Charles's intereſts than the other.

HENRY, tho' determined to embrace new meaſures, was careful to ſave appearances in the change; and he cauſed rejoicings to be every where made on account of the victory of Pavia, and the captivity of Francis. He publicly diſmiſſed a French envoy, whom he had formerly allowed, notwithſtanding the war, to reſide at London ‡: But upon the regent of France's ſubmiſſive applications to him, he again opened a correſpondence with her; and beſides aſſuring her of his friendſhip and protection, he exacted a promiſe, that ſhe never would conſent to the diſmembering any province of the monarchy for her ſon's ranſom. With the emperor, however, he put on the appearance of vigour and enterprize; and in order to have a pretence for breaking with him, he diſpatched Tonſtal, biſhop of London, to Madrid, with propoſals for a powerful invaſion of France. He required, that Charles ſhould immediately enter Guienne at the head of a great army, in order to put him in poſſeſſion of that province; and he demanded the payment of large ſums of money, which that prince had borrowed from him in his laſt viſit at London. He knew, that the emperor was in no ſituation of executing either of theſe conditions; and that he had as little inclination to make him maſter of ſuch conſiderable territories upon the frontiers of Spain.

TONSTAL likewiſe, after his arrival at Madrid, informed his maſter, that Charles, on his part, wanted not complaints againſt England; and in particular was diſpleaſed with Henry, becauſe laſt year he had neither continued his monthly payments to Bourbon, nor invaded Picardy, according to his ſtipulations; that, inſtead of expreſſing his intentions to eſpouſe Mary, when ſhe ſhould be marriageable, he had hearkened to propoſals, for marrying his niece Iſabella, princeſs of Portugal; and that he had entered into a ſeparate treaty with Francis, and ſeemed determined to reap alone all the advantages of the ſucceſs, with which fortune had crowned his arms.

30 Auguſt.

THE King, influenced by all theſe motives, concluded at Moore his alliance with the regent, and engaged to procure Francis his liberty on reaſonable conditions *: The regent alſo, in another treaty, acknowledged the kingdom to be Henry's debtor for one million eight hundred thouſand crowns, to be diſcharged in half yearly payments of fifty thouſand crowns: After which, Henry was to re-

‡ Du Bellay, Liv. 3. Stowe, p. 221. Baker, p. 273. * Du Tillet, Recueil des Traites de Leonard, tom. ii. Herbert.

ceive, during his own life, a yearly penſion of a hundred thouſand crowns. Notwithſtanding his generoſity, he could not forbear taking advantage of the calamitous ſituation of France, in order to exact this lucrative condition from her. A large preſent of a hundred thouſand crowns was alſo made to Wolſey, for his good offices, but covered under the pretence of arrears due on the penſion granted him for relinquiſhing the adminiſtration of Tournay. Chap. III. 1525.

MEANWHILE, as Henry foreſaw, that this treaty of France might involve him in a war with the emperor, he was alſo determined to fill his treaſury by impoſitions upon his own ſubjects; and as the parliament had diſcovered ſome reluctance in complying with his demands, he followed the advice of Wolſey, and reſolved to make uſe of his prerogative alone for that purpoſe. He iſſued out commiſſions to all the counties of England, for levying four ſhillings in the pound from the clergy, three ſhillings and four pence from the laity; and ſo uncontroulable did he deem his authority, that he took no care to cover, as formerly, this arbitrary exaction, even under the ſlender pretence of a loan. But he ſoon found, that he had preſumed too far on the paſſive ſubmiſſion of his ſubjects. The people, diſpleaſed with an exaction beyond what was uſually levied in thoſe days, but ſtill more diſguſted with the illegal method of impoſing it, broke out in murmurs, complaints, oppoſition to the commiſſioners; and their refractory diſpoſition even threatened a general inſurrection. Henry had the prudence to ſtop ſhort, in that dangerous path, into which he had entered. He ſent letters to all the counties; declaring, that he meant no force by this laſt impoſition, and that he would take nothing of his ſubjects but by way of *benevolence*. He flattered himſelf, that his condeſcenſion in employing that diſguiſe would ſatisfy the people, and that no one would dare to render himſelf obnoxious to royal authority, by refuſing any payment required of him in this manner. But the ſpirit of oppoſition was once roufed, and could not ſo eaſily be quieted at pleaſure. A lawyer in the city objecting the ſtatute of Richard the third, by which benevolences were for ever aboliſhed, it was replied by the court, that Richard being an uſurper, and his Parliaments factious aſſemblies, his ſtatutes could not bind a lawful and *abſolute* monarch, who held his crown by hereditary right, and needed not to court the favour of a licentious populace †. The judges even went ſo far as to affirm poſitively, that the King might exact by commiſſion any ſum which he pleaſed; and the privy council gave a ready aſſent to this decree, which annihilated the moſt valuable privilege of the people, and rendered all their other privileges precarious. Armed with ſuch formidable authority, of royal prerogative and a pretence of law, Wolſey ſent for the mayor of London, and deſired to Diſcontents of the Engliſh.

† Herbert. Hall.

Chap. III. 1525. know what he was willing to give for the ſupply of his majeſty's neceſſities. The mayor ſeemed deſirous, before he ſhould declare himſelf, to conſult the common council; but the cardinal required, that he and all the aldermen ſhould ſeparately confer with himſelf about the benevolence; and he eluded by that means the danger of a formed oppoſition. Matters, however, went not ſo ſmoothly in the country. An inſurrection was begun in ſome places; but as the people were not headed by any conſiderable perſon, it was eaſy for the duke of Suffolk, and the earl of Surrey, now duke of Norfolk, by employing perſuaſion and authority, to induce the ringleaders to lay down their arms, and ſurrender themſelves priſoners. The king, finding it dangerous to puniſh criminals, engaged in ſo popular a cauſe, was determined, notwithſtanding his violent, imperious temper, to grant them a general pardon; and he very prudently imputed their guilt, not to their want of loyalty or affection, but to their poverty. The offenders were brought before the ſtar-chamber; where, after a ſevere charge laid againſt them by the King's council, the cardinal ſaid, "That, notwithſtanding "their grievous offences, the King, in conſideration of their neceſſities, had "granted them his gracious pardon, upon condition, that they would give in "ſureties for their future good behaviour." But they replying, that they had no ſureties, the cardinal firſt, and after him the duke of Norfolk, ſaid, that they would ſtand bound for them. Upon which they were diſcharged ‡.

THESE arbitrary impoſitions, being generally imputed to the cardinal's counſels, increaſed the general odium, under which he laboured; and the clemency of the pardon, being aſcribed to the King, was conſidered as an atonement on his part for the illegality of the meaſure. But Wolſey, ſupported both by royal and papal authority, proceeded, without ſcruple, to violate all eccleſiaſtical privileges, which, during that age, were much more ſacred than civil; and having once prevailed in that unuſual attempt of ſuppreſſing ſome monaſteries, he kept all the reſt in awe, and exerciſed over them the moſt arbitrary juriſdiction. By his commiſſion as legate, he was impowered to viſit them, and reform them, and chaſtiſe their irregularities; and he employed his uſual agent, Allen, in the exerciſe of this authority. The religious houſes were obliged to compound for their guilt, real or pretended, by giving large ſums to the cardinal or his deputy; and this oppreſſion was carried ſo far, that it reached at laſt the King's ears, which were not commonly open to complaints againſt his favourite. He reproved Wolſey in ſevere terms, which rendered him, if not more innocent, at leaſt more cautious for the future. That haughty miniſter had built a ſplendid palace at Hampton-court, which he probably intended, as well as that of York-place in Weſt-

‡ Herbert, Hall, Stowe, 525. Hollinſhed, p. 891.

minſter,

minſter, for his own uſe; but fearing the increaſe of envy on account of this magnificence, and deſirous to appeaſe the King, he made him a preſent of that building, and told him, that, from the firſt, he had erected it for his ſervice. Chap. III. 1525.

THE abſolute authority, poſſeſſed by the King, rendered his domeſtic government, both over his people and his miniſters, eaſy and expeditious: The conduct of foreign affairs alone required effort and application; and they were now brought to ſuch a ſituation, that it was no longer ſafe for England to be entirely neutral. The feigned moderation of the emperor was of very ſhort date; and it was ſoon obvious to all the world, that his great dominions, far from gratifying his ambition, were only regarded as the means of acquiring an empire more extenſive. The terms, propoſed by him to his priſoner, were ſuch as muſt have for ever annihilated the power of France, and deſtroyed the balance of Europe. He required, that that monarch ſhould reſtore to him the dutchy of Burgundy, uſurped, as he pretended, by Lewis the eleventh upon his anceſtors; that he ſhould yield Provence and Dauphiny to the duke of Bourbon, to be poſſeſſed by him in full ſovereignty, without fief or homage to the crown of France; that he ſhould ſatisfy the King of England with regard to the provinces, which that prince claimed as his inheritance; and that he ſhould renounce all title to Naples, Milan, Genoa, or any territory in Italy *.

THESE demands were propoſed to Francis, ſoon after the battle of Pavia, while he was detained in Pizzighitoné; and as he had hitherto truſted ſomewhat to the emperor's generoſity, the diſappointment excited in his breaſt the moſt lively indignation. He ſaid, that he would rather live and die a priſoner than agree to diſmember his kingdom; and that, even were he ſo baſe as to ſubmit to ſuch terms, his ſubjects would never permit him to carry them into execution. The offers which he made for obtaining his liberty, were, that he would renounce all claims in Italy, that he would aſſiſt the emperor in recovering the territories uſurped upon the empire by the Venetians, that he would relinquiſh the homage due by the emperor for Artois and Flanders, that he would marry Eleonora, the emperor's ſiſter, (for he was now a widower) and acknowledge the dutchy of Burgundy to be poſſeſſed as her dowry; and to be inherited by her children †.

FRANCIS was encouraged to perſiſt in theſe offers, by the favourable accounts, which he heard of Henry's diſpoſitions towards him, and of the alarms which had ſeized all the chief powers in Italy, upon his defeat and captivity. He was uneaſy, however, to be ſo far diſtant from the emperor with whom he muſt treat; and he deſired to be removed to Madrid, in hopes that a perſonal interview would operate much in his favour, and that Charles, if not influenced by his miniſters, Francis removed to Madrid.

* Guicciardini, lib. 16. † De Vera Hiſt. de Charles V.

might

Chap. III. 1525. might be found poſſeſſed of the ſame frankneſs of diſpoſition, by which he himſelf was diſtinguiſhed. He was ſoon convinced of his miſtake. The emperor, under pretence of an aſſembly of the ſtates at Toledo, kept, during ſome time, at a diſtance from him; and even after they broke up, delayed his viſit to the captive King; feigning a delicacy in that particular, as if his company, in the preſent ſituation of affairs, before any terms were agreed on, would be regarded as an inſult upon the royal priſoner. Francis, partly from want of exerciſe, partly from reflections on his preſent melancholy ſituation, fell into a languiſhing illneſs; which begot apprehenſions in Charles, leſt the death of his captive ſhould bereave him of all thoſe advantages, which he propoſed to extort from him. He then paid him a viſit in the caſtle of Madrid; and as he approached the bed in which Francis was laid, the ſick monarch called to him, "You come, "Sir, to viſit your priſoner." "No," replied the emperor, "I come to viſit "my brother, and my friend, who ſhall ſoon obtain his liberty." He ſoothed his affliction with many ſpeeches of a like nature, which had ſo good an effect, that the King daily recovered ‡; and thenceforth employed himſelf in concerting with the miniſters of the emperor, the terms of his treaty.

WHILE this negociation advanced ſlowly, fortune threw into the emperor's hands a new opportunity of aggrandizing his dominions in Italy. Francis Sforza, impatient that his inveſtiture of Milan ſhould ſo long be delayed, and that even after it was granted, it ſhould be encumbered with many exorbitant conditions, had endeavoured to ſeduce Peſcara, the imperial general, from his fidelity, and to engage him in a conſpiracy againſt his maſter. Peſcara feigned to enter into the deſign; but having revealed the whole contrivance, he received orders to take poſſeſſion of the Milaneſe; and Charles made no ſecret of his intention to try Sforza and forfeit his fief, on account of the treaſon, which he had committed againſt his liege-lord and ſovereign *. This incident retained the Italian powers in cloſer union with France; and the emperor, by graſping too much, found himſelf in danger of loſing all his advantages. His apprehenſions were increaſed, when he heard, that Francis had ſent a reſignation of his crown to the regent, and had deſired that the dauphin might be crowned king; orders, which, tho' they were not obeyed, ſhewed his determined reſolution never to ſubmit to the unreaſonable terms required of him. The chief difficulty of the treaty was now reduced to the dutchy of Burgundy; and even that territory, Francis had agreed to yield, but he ſtill inſiſted on firſt recovering his liberty. All mutual confidence was loſt between the two princes; and each feared, leſt

‡ Herbert, De Vera, Sandoval. * Guicciardini, lib. 16.

advantage

advantage ſhould be taken of his ſimplicity, ſhould he firſt execute his part of the treaty. Chap. III.

1526. 14 January. At laſt the emperor was willing to relax of his rigour in this particular; and the treaty of Madrid was ſigned, by which, it was hoped, an end would be finally put to the differences between theſe great monarchs. The principal condition was the reſtoring of Francis's liberty, and the delivery of his two eldeſt ſons as hoſtages to the emperor for the reſtitution of Burgundy: If any difficulty ſhould afterwards occur in the execution of this article, with regard to Burgundy, from the oppoſition of the ſtates, either of France or of that province, Francis ſtipulated, that in ſix weeks time, he ſhould return to his priſon, and remain there till the full performance of the treaty. There were many other articles in this famous convention, all of them rigorous and ſevere to the laſt degree againſt the captive monarch; and Charles diſcovered evidently his intention of reducing Italy, as well as France, to ſubjection and dependance.

Many of Charles's miniſters foreſaw, that Francis, however ſolemn the oaths, promiſes, and proteſtations exacted of him, never would execute a treaty, which was ſo diſadvantageous, or rather ruinous and deſtructive, to himſelf, his poſterity, and his country. By putting Burgundy into the emperor's hands, he gave his powerful enemy an entrance into the heart of the kingdom: By ſacrificing his allies in Italy, he deprived himſelf of all foreign aſſiſtance; and arming his oppreſſor with the whole force and wealth of that opulent country, rendered him abſolutely irreſiſtable. To theſe great views of intereſt, were added the motives, no leſs cogent, of paſſion and reſentment; while Francis, a prince, who piqued himſelf on generoſity, reflected on the rigour with which he had been treated during his captivity, and the cruel terms which had been exacted of him for the recovery of his freedom. It was alſo foreſeen, that the emulation and rivalſhip, which had ſo long ſubſiſted between theſe two monarchs, would make him feel the ſtrongeſt reluctance on yielding the ſuperiority to an antagoniſt, who, by the whole tenor of his conduct, he would be apt to think, had ſhown himſelf ſo little worthy of that advantage, which fortune, and fortune alone, had put into his hands. His miniſters, his friends, his ſubjects, his allies, with one voice, would be ſure to ſuggeſt to him, that the firſt object of a prince, was the preſervation of his people; and that the laws of honour, which with a private man ought to be abſolutely ſupreme, and ſuperior to all intereſts, were with a ſovereign ſubordinate to the great duty of enſuring the ſafety of his country. Nor could it be imagined, that Francis would be ſo romantic in his principles, as not to hearken to a caſuiſtry, which was ſo plauſible in itſelf, and which ſo much flattered

Chap. III. 1526.

tered all the paſſions, by which, both as a prince and a man, he was ſtrongly actuated.

SUCH was the reaſoning of ſeveral of Charles's miniſters, particularly of Gattinara, his chancellor *, who counſelled him to treat Francis with more generoſity, and to give him his liberty on ſuch terms, as would engage him, not by the feeble band of treaties, but by the more forcible tye of honour, to a ſtrict and faithful performance. But the emperor's avidity prevented him from following this wiſer and more honourable council; at the ſame time, that the proſpect of a general combination of Europe hindered him from detaining Francis in captivity, and taking advantage of the confuſions, which his abſence muſt neceſſarily occaſion in his kingdom. Still ſuſpicious, however, of the ſincerity of his priſoner, he took an opportunity, before they parted, of aſking him, privately and as a friend, whether he ſeriouſly intended to execute the treaty of Madrid; proteſting, that, in all caſes, he was firmly determined to reſtore him to his liberty, and that the proſpect of obtaining this advantage needed no longer engage him to diſſemble. Francis was too well acquainted with Charles's character to truſt to the ſincerity of this proteſtation; and therefore renewed his aſſurances of fidelity, and a ſtrict obſervance of his word. The emperor replied, that Francis was now his beſt friend and ally; but if he ſhould afterwards break his engagements, which he could not ſuſpect, he ſhould think himſelf entitled to reproach him with a conduct ſo baſe and unworthy: And on theſe terms the two monarchs parted.

18th March.

Francis recovers his liberty.

FRANCIS, on entering into his own dominions, delivered his two eldeſt ſons as hoſtages into the hands of the Spainards. He mounted a Turkiſh horſe, and immediately putting him to the gallop, he waved his hand over his head, and cried aloud ſeveral times, *I am yet a King*. He ſoon reached Bayonne, where he was joyfully received by the regent and his whole court. He immediately wrote to Henry; acknowledging that to his good offices alone he owed his liberty, and proteſting, that he ſhould be entirely governed by his councils in all tranſactions with the emperor. When the Spaniſh envoy demanded his ratification of the treaty of Madrid, now that he had fully recovered his liberty, he waved the propoſal; under colour, that it was neceſſary to aſſemble previouſly the ſtates both of France and of Burgundy, and obtain their conſent. The ſtates of Burgundy ſoon met; and declaring againſt the clauſe, which contained an engagement of alienating their province, they expreſſed their reſolution of oppoſing, even by force of arms, the execution of ſo ruinous and unjuſt an article. The imperial miniſter then required, that Francis, in conformity to the treaty of Madrid,

* Guicciardini, lib. 16.

ſhould

ſhould now return to his priſon; but the French monarch, inſtead of compliance, made public the treaty, which, a little before, he had ſecretly concluded at Cognac, againſt the ambitious ſchemes and uſurpations of the emperor *. Chap. III. 1526. 22d May.

THE pope, the Venetians, and other Italian ſtates, who were deeply intereſted in theſe events, had been held in the moſt anxious ſuſpence with regard to the reſolutions, which Francis ſhould take, after the recovery of his liberty; and Clement, who ſuſpected, that that prince would never execute a treaty ſo hurtful to his intereſts, and even deſtructive of his independancy, had very frankly offered him a diſpenſation from all his oaths and engagements. Francis remained not in ſuſpence; but entered immediately into the confederacy propoſed to him. It was ſtipulated, by that King, the pope, the Venetians, the Swiſs, the Florentines, the duke of Milan, among other articles, that they would oblige the emperor to deliver up the two young princes of France on receiving a reaſonable ſum of money; and to reſtore Milan to Sforza, without farther conditions or incumbrances. The King of England was invited to accede, not only as a contracting party, but alſo as protector of the holy league, ſo it was called: And if Naples ſhould be conquered from the emperor, in proſecution of this confederacy, it was agreed, that Henry ſhould enjoy a principality in that kingdom of the yearly revenue of 30,000 ducats: And that cardinal Wolſey, in conſideration of the ſervices, which he had rendered to Chriſtendom, ſhould alſo, in ſuch an event, be put in poſſeſſion of a yearly revenue of 10,000 ducats.

FRANCIS was extremely deſirous, that the appearance of this great confederacy ſhould engage the emperor to relax ſomewhat of the extreme rigour of the treaty of Madrid; and while he entertained theſe hopes, he was the more remiſs in his warlike preparations, nor did he ſend in due time reinforcements to his allies in Italy. The Duke of Bourbon had got poſſeſſion of the whole Milaneſe, of which the emperor intended to grant him the inveſtiture; and having levied a conſiderable army in Germany, he became formidable to all the Italian potentates; and not the leſs ſo, becauſe Charles, deſtitute of money, had not been able to remit any pay to the forces. The general was extremely beloved by his troops; and in order to prevent thoſe mutinies which were ready to break out every moment, and which their affection alone for him had hitherto reſtrained, he led them to Rome, and promiſed to enrich them by the plunder of that opulent city. He was himſelf killed, as he was planting a ladder to ſcale the walls; but his ſoldiers, rather enraged than diſcouraged by his death, mounted to the aſſault with the utmoſt valour, and entering the city, ſword in hand, exerciſed all thoſe brutalities, 1527. 6th May. Sack of Rome.

* Guicciardini, lib. 17.

Chap. III. 1527.

which may be expected from ferocity excited by reſiſtance, and from inſolence which takes place when that reſiſtance is no more. This renowned city, expoſed by her renown alone to ſo many calamities, never endured in any age, even from the barbarians, by whom ſhe was often ſubdued, ſuch indignities as ſhe was now conſtrained to ſuffer. The unreſtrained maſſacre and pillage, which continued for ſeveral days, were the leaſt ills, to which the unhappy Romans were expoſed *. Whatever was reſpectable in modeſty or ſacred in religion ſeemed but the more to provoke the inſults of the ſoldiery. Virgins ſuffered violation in the arms of their parents, and upon thoſe very altars, to which they had fled for protection. Aged prelates, after enduring every indignity, and even every torture, were thrown into dungeons, and menaced each moment with the moſt cruel death, in order to engage them to reveal their ſecret treaſures, or purchaſe liberty by exorbitant ranſoms. Clement himſelf, who had truſted for protection to the ſacredneſs of his character, and neglected to make his eſcape in time, was taken captive, and found that his dignity, which procured him no regard from the Spaniſh ſoldiers, did but draw on him the inſolent mockery of the German, who, being generally attached to the Lutheran principles, were pleaſed to gratify their animoſity by the abaſement of the ſovereign pontiff.

When intelligence of this great event was conveyed to the emperor, that young prince, habituated to hypocriſy, expreſſed the moſt profound ſorrow for the ſucceſs of his arms: He put himſelf and all his court into mourning: He ſtopped the rejoicings for the birth of his ſon Philip: And knowing that every artifice, however groſs, is able, when ſeconded by authority, to impoſe upon the people, he ordered prayers, during ſeveral months, to be put up in all the churches for the Pope's liberty; an event, which, all men knew, a letter under his hand could in a moment have procured.

The concern, expreſſed by Henry and Francis for the calamity of their ally, was much more ſincere. Theſe two monarchs, a few days before the ſack of Rome, had concluded a treaty † at Weſtminſter, in which, beſides renewing former alliances, they agreed to ſend ambaſſadors to Charles, requiring him to accept of two millions of crowns as the ranſom of the French princes, and to repay the money, borrowed of Henry; and in caſe of refuſal, the ambaſſadors, attended with heralds, were ordered to denounce war againſt him. This war, it was agreed to proſecute in the Low Countries, with an army of thirty thouſand infantry and fifteen hundred men at arms, two thirds to be ſupplied by Francis, the reſt by Henry. And in order to ſtrengthen the alliance between the princes, it was ſtipulated, that either Francis or his ſon, the duke of Orleans, as ſhould

* Guicciardini, lib. 18. Bellay. Stowe, p. 527. † 30th April.

afterward

afterwards be agreed on, ſhould eſpouſe the princeſs Mary, Henry's daughter. No ſooner did the monarchs receive intelligence of Bourbon's enterprize, than they changed, by a new treaty, the ſcene of the projected war from the Netherlands to Italy; and hearing of the pope's captivity, they were farther ſtimulated to undertake the war with vigour for the reſtoring his liberty. Wolſey himſelf croſſed the ſeas, in order to have an interview with Francis, and to concert meaſures for that purpoſe; and he diſplayed all that grandeur and magnificence, with which he was ſo much intoxicated. He was attended with a train of a thouſand horſe. The cardinal of Lorraine, and the chancellor Alançon, met him at Boulogne: Francis himſelf, beſides granting to that haughty prelate the power of giving in every place, where he came, liberty to all priſoners, made a journey as far as Amiens to meet him, and even advanced ſome miles from the town, the more to honour his reception. It was here ſtipulated, that the duke of Orleans ſhould eſpouſe the princeſs Mary; and as the emperor ſeemed to be taking ſome ſteps towards aſſembling a general council, the two monarchs agreed not to acknowledge it, but, during the interval of the pope's captivity, to govern the churches in their dominions, each by his own authority. Wolſey made ſome attempts to get his legantine power extended into France, and even into Germany; but finding his efforts fruitleſs, he was obliged, tho' with great reluctance, to deſiſt from theſe ambitious enterprizes ‡.

Chap. III. 1527. 29th May. 11th July.

THE more to cement the union between theſe princes, a new treaty was, ſome time after, concluded at London; in which Henry agreed to renounce for ever all claims to the crown of France; claims, which might now indeed be deemed chimerical, but which often ſerved as a pretence for exciting the unwary Engliſh to wage war upon the French monarchy. As a return for this conceſſion, Francis bound himſelf and his ſucceſſors to pay for ever fifty thouſand crowns a year to Henry and his ſucceſſors; and that a greater ſolemnity might be given to this treaty, it was agreed, that the Parliaments and great nobility of both kingdoms ſhould give their conſent to it. The mariſchal Montmorency, accompanied with many perſons of diſtinction, and attended by a pompous equipage, was ſent over to ratify the treaty; and was received at London with all the parade, which ſuited the ſolemnity of the occaſion. The terror of the emperor's greatneſs had entirely extinguiſhed the antient animoſity between the nations; and Spain, during more than a century, became, tho' a more diſtant power, the chief object of jealouſy to the Engliſh.

18th September. League with France.

THIS appearance of a cordial union between France and England, tho' it added influence to the joint embaſſy which they ſent to the emperor, was not

‡ Burnet, book iii. coll. 12, 13.

Chap. III. 1527.

able to bend that ambitious monarch to ſubmit entirely to the conditions inſiſted on by the allies. He departed indeed from his demand of Burgundy as the ranſom of the French princes; but he required, previouſly to their recovery of liberty, that Francis ſhould evacuate Genoa, and all the fortreſſes held by him in Italy: And he declared his intention of bringing Sforza to a trial, and confiſcating the dutchy of Milan, on account of his pretended treaſon. The Engliſh and French heralds, therefore, according to agreement, declared war againſt him, and ſet him at defiance. Charles anſwered the Engliſh herald with moderation; but to the French, he reproached his maſter with breach of faith, reminded him of the private converſation which had paſſed between them at Madrid before their ſeparation, and offered to prove by ſingle combat, that that monarch had acted diſhonourably. Francis retaliated this challenge by giving Charles the lie; and, after demanding ſecurity of the field, he offered to maintain his cauſe by ſingle combat. Many meſſages paſſed to and fro between them; but tho' both the princes were undoubtedly brave, the intended duel never took place. The French and Spaniards, during that age, diſputed zealouſly which of the monarchs incurred the blame of this failure; but all men of moderation every where lamented the power of fortune, that the prince the more candid, generous, and ſincere, ſhould, by unhappy incidents, have been reduced to that cruel ſituation, that nothing but the breach of his word could preſerve his people, and that he muſt ever after, without being able to make a proper reply, bear to be reproached with this infidelity by a rival, inferior to him both in honour and in virtue.

But tho' this famous challenge between Charles and Francis had no immediate conſequence with regard to theſe monarchs themſelves, it produced a conſiderable alteration on the manners of the age. The practice of challenges and duels, which had been part of the antient barbarous juriſprudence, which was ſtill preſerved on very ſolemn occaſions, and which was even countenanced by the civil magiſtrate, began thenceforth to prevail on the moſt trivial occaſions; and men, on any affront or injury, thought themſelves entitled, or even required in honour, to take private revenges on their enemies, by vindicating their right in ſingle combat. Theſe abſurd, tho' generous maxims, ſhed much of the beſt blood in Chriſtendom during more than two centuries; and notwithſtanding the ſeverity of law, ſuch is the prevailing force of cuſtom, they are far from being as yet entirely exploded.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Scruples concerning the King's marriage.——The King enters into theſe ſcruples.——Anne Boleyn.——Henry applies to the pope for a divorce.——The pope favourable.——The emperor threatens him.——The pope's ambiguous conduct.——The cauſe evoked to Rome.——Wolſey's fall.——Commencement of the reformation in England.——Foreign affairs.——Wolſey's death.——A Parliament.——Progreſs of the reformation.——A Parliament.——King's final breach with Rome.——A Parliament.

Chap. IV. 1527.

NOtwithſtanding the ſubmiſſive deference, paid to the papal authority before the reformation, the marriage of Henry the eighth with Catherine of Arragon, his brother's widow, had not paſſed without much ſcruple and difficulty. The prejudices of the people were in general bent againſt a conjugal union between ſuch near relations; and the late King, tho' he had ſolemnized the eſpouſals, when his ſon was but twelve years of age, gave evidents proofs of his intention to take afterwards a proper opportunity of annulling them *. He ordered the young prince, ſo ſoon as he came of age, to enter a proteſtation againſt the marriage †; and on his death-bed he charged him, as his laſt injunction, not to finiſh an alliance, ſo unuſual and expoſed to ſuch inſuperable objections. After the King's acceſſion, ſome members of the Privy Council particularly Warham, the primate, openly declared againſt the reſolution, of compleating the marriage; and tho' Henry's youth and diſſipation kept him, during ſome time, from entertaining any ſcruples with regard to the meaſure which he had embraced, there happened incidents, ſufficient to rouze his attention, and to inform him of the ſentiments, generally entertained on that ſubject. The ſtates of Caſtile had oppoſed the emperor Charles's eſpouſals with Mary, Henry's daughter; and among other objections, had inſiſted on the illegitimate birth of the young princeſs ‡. And when the negotiations were afterwards opened with France, and mention was made of betrothing her to Francis or the duke of Orleans, the biſhop of Tarbe, the French ambaſſador, revived the ſame objec-

Scruples concerning the King's marriage.

* Moriſon's Apomaxis, p. 13. † Moriſon, p. 13. Heylin's Queen Mary, p. 2.
‡ Lord Herbert, Fiddes's life of Wolſey.

tion.

Chap. IV. 1527.

tion *. But tho' theſe events naturally raiſed ſome doubts in Henry's mind, there concurred other cauſes, which tended much to fortify his remorſe, and render his conſcience more ſcrupulous.

The King enters into theſe ſcruples.

THE Queen was older that the King by no leſs than ſix years; and the decay of her beauty, together with particular infirmities and diſeaſes, had contributed, notwithſtanding her blameleſs character and deportment, to render her perſon unacceptable to him. Tho' ſhe had born him ſeveral children, they all died in early infancy, except one daughter; and he was the more ſtruck with this misfortune, becauſe the curſe of being childleſs is the very threatening contained in the Moſaical law againſt thoſe who eſpouſe their brother's widow. The King was actuated by a ſtrong deſire of having male iſſue: With a view to that end, it is believed, more than from deſire towards other gratification, he had, a few years before this period, made addreſſes to a young lady, Catherine, daughter of Sir John Blount; and when ſhe bore him a ſon, he expreſſed the higheſt ſatisfaction, and immediately created him duke of Richmond. The ſucceſſion of the crown too was a conſideration, that occurred to every one, whenever the lawfulneſs of Henry's marriage was queſtioned; and it was apprehended, that, if doubts of Mary's legitimacy concurred with the weakneſs of her ſex, the King of Scots, the next heir, would certainly advance his own pretenſions, and might throw the kingdom into confuſion. The evils, as yet recent, of civil wars and convulſions, ariſing from a diſputed title, made great impreſſion on the minds of men, and rendered the people univerſally deſirous of any event, which might obviate ſo irreparable a calamity. And the King was thus impelled, both by his private paſſions, and by motives of public intereſt, to ſeek the diſſolution of his inauſpicious, and, as it was eſteemed, unlawful marriage with Catherine.

HENRY afterwards affirmed, that his ſcruples of conſcience aroſe entirely from private reflection; and that on conſulting his confeſſor, the biſhop of Lincoln, he found that prelate poſſeſſed with the ſame doubts and difficulties. The King himſelf, being ſo great a caſuiſt and divine, proceeded then to examine the queſtion more carefully by his own learning and ſtudy; and having had recourſe to Thomas of Aquine, he obſerved that this celebrated doctor, whoſe authority was great in the church, and abſolute with him, had treated of that very caſe, and had expreſsly declared againſt the lawfulneſs of ſuch marriages †. The prohibitions, ſaid Thomas, contained in Leviticus, and among the reſt, that of marrying a brother's widow, are moral, eternal, and founded on a divine ſanction; and tho' the pope may diſpenſe with the rules of the church, the laws of God cannot be ſet aſide by any authority leſs than that which enacted them. The

* Rymer, vol. xiv. 192, 203. Heylin, p. 3. † Burnet, Fiddes.

archbiſhop of Canterbury was next applied to; and he was required to conſult his brethren: All the prelates of England, except Fiſher, biſhop of Rocheſter, declared unanimouſly, under their hand and ſeal, that they deemed the King's marriage unlawful *. Wolſey alſo fortified the King's ſcruples †, partly with a view of promoting a total breach with the emperor, Catherine's nephew, partly deſirous of connecting the King more cloſely with Francis, by marrying him to the dutcheſs of Alençon, ſiſter to that monarch; and perhaps too ſomewhat diſguſted with the queen herſelf, who had reproved him for certain freedoms, unbefitting his character and ſtation ‡. But Henry was carried forward, tho' perhaps not at firſt excited, by a motive more forcible than even the ſuggeſtions of that powerful favourite. Chap. IV. 1527.

Anne Boleyn. ANNE BOLEYN, who lately appeared at court, had been created maid of honour to the queen; and having had frequent opportunities of being ſeen by the King, and of converſing with him, ſhe had acquired an entire aſcendant over his affections. This young lady, whoſe grandeur and misfortunes have rendered her ſo celebrated, was daughter to Sir Thomas Boleyn, who had been employed by the King in ſeveral embaſſies, and who was allied to all the principal nobility of the kingdom. His wife, mother to Anne, was daughter of the duke of Norfolk; his own mother was daughter of the earl of Ormond; his grandfather Sir Geoffry Boleyn, who had been mayor of London, had eſpouſed one of the daughters and co-heirs of the lord Haſtings §. Anne herſelf, tho' then in very early youth, had been carried over to Paris by the King's ſiſter, when ſhe eſpouſed Lewis the twelfth of France; and upon the deceaſe of that monarch, and the return of his dowager into England, Anne, whoſe accompliſhments even in her tender years were always much admired, was retained in the ſervice of Claude, queen of France, ſpouſe to Francis; and after her death, ſhe paſſed into the family of the dutcheſs of Alençon, a princeſs of ſingular merit. The exact time, when ſhe returned to England, is not certainly known; but it was after the King had entertained doubts with regard to the lawfulneſs of his marriage with Catherine; if the account is to be credited, which he himſelf afterwards gave of that tranſaction. Henry's ſcruples had made him break off all conjugal commerce wirh the queen; but as he ſtill ſupported an intercourſe of civility and friendſhip with her, he had occaſion, in the viſits, which he paid her, to obſerve the beauty, the youth, the charms of Anne Boleyn. Finding the accompliſhments of her mind nowiſe inferior to her exterior graces, he

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 38. Stowe, p. 548. † Le Grand, vol. iii. p. 46. 166. 168. Saunders. Heylin, p. 4. ‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 38. Strype, vol. i. p. 88. § Cambden's preface to the life of Elizabeth. Burnet, vol. i. p. 44.

even

Chap. IV. 1527. even entertained the design of raising her to the throne; and was the more confirmed in this resolution, when he found that her virtue and modesty prevented all hopes of gratifying his passion after any other manner. And as every motive of inclination and policy, seemed thus to concur in making the King desirous of a divorce from Catherine, and as his prospect of success was inviting, he resolved to make applications to Clement, and he sent Knight, his secretary, to Rome for that purpose.

Henry applies to the pope for a divorce.

THAT he might not shock the haughty claims of the pontiff, it was resolved not to found the application on any general doubts of the papal power to permit marriage in the nearer degrees of consanguinity; but only to insist on particular grounds of invalidity in the bull, which Julius had granted for the marriage of Henry and Catherine. It was a maxim in the court of Rome, that, if the pope be surprized into any concession, or grant any indulgence upon false suggestions, the bull may afterwards be annulled; and this pretence had usually been employed, wherever one pope had recalled any deed, executed by any of his predecessors. But Julius's bull, when examined, afforded plentiful matter of this kind; and any tribunal, favourable to Henry, needed not want a specious colour for gratifying him in his applications for a divorce. It was said in the preamble, that the bull had been granted upon his solicitation; tho' it was known, that, at that time, he was below twelve years of age: It was also affirmed, as another motive for the bull, that the marriage was requisite, in order to preserve peace between the two crowns; tho' it is certain, that there was not then any ground or appearance of quarrel between them. These false premises in Julius's bull, seemed to afford Clement a sufficient reason or pretence for annulling it, and granting Henry a dispensation for a second marriage ‡.

The pope favourable.

BUT tho' the pretext for this indulgence had been less plausible, the pope was in such a situation, that he had the strongest motive to embrace every opportunity of gratifying the English monarch. He was then a prisoner in the hands of the emperor, and had no hopes of recovering his liberty on any reasonable terms, unless by the efforts of the league, which Henry had formed with Francis and the Italian powers, in order to oppose the exorbitant ambition of Charles. When the English Secretary, therefore, made private applications to him, he received a very favourable answer; and a dispensation was forthwith promised to be expedited to his master *. Soon after, the march of a French army into Italy, under the command of Lautrec, obliged the imperialists to give Clement his liberty; and he retired to Orvietto, where the Secretary, with Sir Gregory Cassali, the King's resident at Rome, renewed their applications to him. They

‡ Collier, Eccles. Hist. vol. ii. p. 25. from the Cott. Lib. Vitell. B. 9. * Burnet, vol. i. p. 47.

found him ſtill full of high profeſſions of friendſhip, gratitude, and attachment to the King; but not ſo expeditious in granting his requeſt as they expected. The emperor, who had got intelligence of Henry's application to Rome, had exacted a promiſe of the pope, to take no ſteps in that affair before he communicated them to the imperial miniſters; and Clement, confined by this promiſe, and ſtill more overawed by the emperor's forces in Italy, ſeemed willing to poſtpone thoſe conceſſions deſired of him by Henry. Importuned, however, by the Engliſh miniſters, he at laſt put into their hands a *commiſſion* to Wolſey, as legate, in conjunction with the archbiſhop of Canterbury, or any other Engliſh prelate, to examine the validity of the King's marriage, and of Julius's diſpenſation †: He alſo granted them a proviſional *diſpenſation* for the King's marriage with any other perſon; and promiſed to expedite a *decretal bull*, annulling the marriage with Catherine. But he repreſented to them the dangerous conſequences, which muſt enſue to him, if theſe conceſſions ſhould come to the emperor's knowledge; and he conjured them not to publiſh thoſe papers, or make any further uſe of them, till his affairs were in ſuch a ſituation as to ſecure his liberty and independance. And his ſecret advice was, whenever they ſhould find the proper time of opening the ſcene, that they ſhould prevent all oppoſition, by proceeding immediately to a concluſion, by declaring the marriage with Catherine invalid, and by Henry's inſtantly eſpouſing ſome other perſon. Nor would it be ſo difficult, he ſaid, for himſelf to confirm theſe proceedings, after they were paſſed, as previouſly to render them valid, by his conſent and authority ‡. Chap. IV. 1527.

When Henry received the commiſſion and diſpenſation from his ambaſſadors, and was informed of the pope's advice, he laid the whole matter before his miniſters, and aſked their opinion in ſo delicate a ſituation. The Engliſh counſellors conſidered the danger of proceeding in the manner pointed out to them. Should the pope refuſe to confirm a deed, which he might juſtly call precipitate and irregular, and ſhould he diſavow the advice which he gave in ſo clandeſtine a manner, the King would find his ſecond marrige totally invalidated; any children, which it might bring him, declared illegitimate; and his marriage with Catherine more firmly rivetted than ever *. And Henry's apprehenſions of the poſſibility, or even probability, of ſuch an event, were much confirmed, when he reflected on the character and ſituation of the ſovereign pontiff. 1528.

Clement the ſeventh was a prince of excellent judgment, whenever his timidity, to which he was extremely ſubject, allowed him to make full uſe of thoſe

† Rymer, vol. xiv. p. 237. ‡ Collier, from Cott. Lib. Vitell. b. 10.

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 51.

Chap. IV. 1528.

talents, and that penetration, with which he was endowed *. The captivity, and other misfortunes, which he had undergone, by entering into a league againſt Charles, had ſo affected his imagination, that he never afterwards exerted himſelf with vigour in any public meaſures, eſpecially if the intereſts or inclinations of that potentate ſtood in oppoſition to him. The imperial forces were, at preſent, powerful in Italy, and might return to the attack of Rome, which was ſtill defenceleſs, and expoſed to the ſame calamities with which it had already been overwhelmed. And beſides theſe dangers, Clement found or fancied himſelf expoſed to perils, which threatened, ſtill more immediately, his perſon and dignity.

The emperor threatens him.

CHARLES, apprized of the timid diſpoſition of the holy father, threw out perpetual menaces of ſummoning a general council; which, he repreſented, as neceſſary to reform the church, and correct thoſe enormous abuſes, which the ambition and avarice of the court of Rome had introduced into every branch of eccleſiaſtical adminiſtration. The power of Clement himſelf, he ſaid, the ſovereign pontiff, required limitation; his conduct called aloud for amendment; and even his title to the throne, which he filled, might juſtly be brought in queſtion. That pope had always paſſed for the natural ſon of Julian of Medicis, who was of the ſovereign family of Florence; and tho' Leo the tenth, his couſin, had declared him legitimate, upon a pretended promiſe of marriage between his father and mother, few perſons believed that declaration to be founded on any juſt reaſon or authority †. The canon law, indeed, had been entirely ſilent with regard to the promotion of baſtards to the papal throne; but, what was ſtill dangerous, the people had entertained a violent prepoſſeſſion, that that ſtain in the birth of any perſon was ſufficient to incapacitate him for ſo holy an office. And in another point, the canon law was expreſs and poſitive, that no man, guilty of ſimony, could attain that dignity. A ſevere bull of Julius the ſecond had added new ſanctions to this law, by declaring, that a ſimoniacal election ſhould not be rendered valid, even by a poſterior conſent of the cardinals. But unfortunately Clement had given to cardinal Colonna a billet, containing promiſes of advancing that cardinal, in caſe he himſelf ſhould attain the papal dignity by his concurrence: And this billet, Colonna, who was in entire dependance on the emperor, threatened every moment to expoſe to public view ‡.

WHILE Charles terrified the pope with theſe menaces, he alſo allured him by hopes, which were no leſs prevalent over his affections. At the time when the emperor's forces ſacked Rome, and reduced Clement to captivity, the Florentines, paſſionate for their ancient liberty, had taken advantage of his diſtreſſes, and re-

* Father Paul, lib. 1. Guicciardini. † Father Paul, lib. 1. ‡ Ibid.

volting

volting againſt the family of Medicis, had entirely aboliſhed their authority in Florence, and re-eſtabliſhed the former democracy. The better to protect themſelves in their freedom, they had entered into the alliance with France, England, and Venice, againſt the emperor; and Clement found, that, by this intereſt, the hands of his confederates were tied from aſſiſting him in the reſtoration of his family; the event, which, of all others, he moſt paſſionately deſired. The emperor alone, he knew, was able to effectuate this purpoſe; and therefore, whatever profeſſions he made of fidelity to his allies, he was always, on the leaſt glimpſe of hope, ready to embrace every propoſal of a cordial reconcilement with that monarch ‡. Chap. IV. 1528.

THESE views and intereſts of the pope were well known in England; and as the oppoſition of the emperor was foreſeen to Henry's divorce, both on account of the honour and intereſts of Catherine, his aunt, and the obvious motive of diſtreſſing an enemy, it was eſteemed dangerous to take any meaſure of conſequence, in expectation of the ſubſequent concurrence of a man of Clement's character, whoſe behaviour contained always ſo much duplicity, and who was at preſent ſo little at his own diſpoſal. The ſafeſt meaſure ſeemed to conſiſt in previouſly engaging him ſo far, that he could not afterwards recede, and in making uſe of his preſent ambiguity and uncertainty, to extort the moſt important conceſſions from him. For this purpoſe, Stephen Gardiner, the cardinal's ſecretary, and Edward Fox, the King's almoner, were diſpatched to Rome, and were ordered to ſolicite a commiſſion from the pope, of ſuch a nature as would oblige him to confirm the ſentence of the commiſſioners, whatever it was, and diſable him, on any account, to recall the commiſſion, or evoke the cauſe to Rome *. 10 February.

BUT the ſame reaſon which made the King ſo deſirous of obtaining this conceſſion, confirmed the pope in the reſolution of refuſing it: He was ſtill determined to keep the door open to an agreement with the emperor, and made no ſcruple of ſacrificing all other conſiderations to a point which he deemed, of all others, the moſt important to his own ſecurity, and to that of his family. He granted, therefore, a new commiſſion, in which cardinal Campeggio was joined to Wolſey, for the trial of the King's marriage; but he could not be prevailed on to inſert the clauſes deſired of him. And though he put into Gardiner's hands a letter, promiſing not to recall the preſent commiſſion; this promiſe was found, on examination, to be couched in ſuch ambiguous terms, as left him ſtill the power, whenever he pleaſed, of departing from it †. The pope's ambiguous conduct.

‡ Father Paul. * Lord Herbert. Burnet, vol. i. p. 29. in the collect. Le Grand, vol. iii. p. 28. Strype, vol. i. p. 93. with App. N°. 23, 24, &c. † Lord Herbert, p. 221. Burnet, p. 59.

Chap. IV. 1528. CAMPEGGIO lay under ſome obligations to the King; but his dependance on the pope was ſo much greater, that he conformed himſelf entirely to the views of his holineſs; and tho' he received his commiſſion in April, he protracted his departure by ſo many artificial delays, that it was October before he arrived in England. The firſt ſtep which he took, was to exhort the King to deſiſt from the proſecution of his divorce; and finding that this counſel gave great offence, he ſaid, that his intention was alſo to exhort the queen to enter into a convent, and that he thought it his duty, previouſly to attempt an amicable compoſure of all differences ‡. The more to pacify the King, he ſhewed to him, as alſo to the cardinal, the decretal bull, annulling the former marriage with Catherine; but no entreaties could prevail with him to make any other of the King's council privy to the ſecret ‖. In order to atone, in ſome degree, for this obſtinacy, he expreſſed to the King and the cardinal, the pope's great deſire of ſatisfying them in every reaſonable demand; and in particular, he ſhowed, that their requeſt for ſuppreſſing ſome more monaſtries, and converting them into cathedrals and biſhops ſees, had obtained the conſent of his holineſs *.

THESE ambiguous circumſtances in the behaviour of the pope and the legate, kept the court of England in ſuſpence, and determined the King to wait with pa-
1529. tience the iſſue of ſuch uncertain councils. Fortune meanwhile ſeemed to promiſe him a more ſure and expeditious way of extricating himſelf from his preſent difficulties. Clement was ſeized with a dangerous illneſs; and the intrigues for electing his ſucceſſor, began already to take place among the cardinals. Wolſey, in particular, ſupported by the intereſt of England and France, entertained hopes of mounting the throne of St. Peter †; and it appears, that if a vacancy had then happened, there was a probability of his reaching that ſummit of his ambition. But the pope recovered his health, tho' after ſeveral relapſes; and he returned to the ſame train of falſe and deceitful politics, by which he had hitherto amuſed the Engliſh court. He ſtill flattered Henry with profeſſions of the moſt cordial attachment, and promiſed him a ſudden and favourable iſſue of his proceſs: He ſtill continued his ſecret negotiations with Charles, and perſevered in the reſolution of ſacrificing all his promiſes, and all the intereſts of the Romiſh religion, to the elevation of his family. Campeggio, who was perfectly acquainted with his views and intentions, protracted the deciſion by the moſt artificial delays; and gave Clement full leiſure to adjuſt all the terms of his treaty with the emperor.

‡ Herbert, p. 225. ‖ Burnet, p. 58. * Rymer, vol. xiv. p. 270. Strype, vol. i. p. 110, 111. Appen. N°. 28. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 63.

THE

Chap. IV. 1529.

THE emperor, acquainted with the King's extreme earneſtneſs in this affair, was determined, that he ſhould obtain ſucceſs by no other means but by an application to him, and by deſerting his alliance with Francis, which had hitherto ſupported, againſt the ſuperior force of Spain, the tottering ſtate of the French monarchy. He willingly hearkened, therefore, to the applications of Catherine, his aunt; and promiſing her his utmoſt protection, exhorted her never to yield to the malice and perſecutions of her enemies. The Queen herſelf was naturally of a firm and reſolute temper; and was engaged by every motive to perſevere in proteſting againſt the injuſtice to which ſhe thought herſelf expoſed. The imputation of inceſt, which was thrown upon her marriage with Henry, ſtruck her with the higheſt indignation: The illegitimacy of her daughter, which ſeemed a neceſſary conſequence, gave her the moſt juſt concern: The reluctance of yielding to a rival, who, ſhe believed, had ſupplanted her in the King's affections, was a very natural motive. Actuated by all theſe conſiderations, ſhe never ceaſed ſoliciting her nephew's aſſiſtance, and earneſtly entreating an avocation of the cauſe to Rome, where alone, ſhe thought, ſhe could expect juſtice. And the emperor, in all his negotiations with the pope, made the recall of the commiſſion, which Campeggio and Wolſey exerciſed in England, a fundamental article *.

31ſt May. Trial of the King's marriage.

THE two legates, meanwhile, opened their court at London, and cited the King and Queen to appear before it. They both preſented themſelves; and the King anſwered to his name, when called: But the Queen, inſtead of anſwering to her's, roſe from her ſeat, and throwing herſelf at the King's feet, made a very pathetic harangue, which her virtue, her dignity, and her misfortunes, rendered the more affecting. She told him, that ſhe was a ſtranger in his dominions, without protection, without council, without aſſiſtance; expoſed to all the injuſtice, which her enemies were pleaſed to impoſe upon her: That ſhe had quitted her native country without other reſource, than her connexions with him and his family, and had expected, that, inſtead of ſuffering thence any violence or iniquity, ſhe was aſſured in them of a ſafeguard againſt every misfortune: That ſhe had been his wife during twenty years, and would here appeal to himſelf, whether her affectionate ſubmiſſion to his will had not merited other treatment, than to be thus, after ſo long a time, thrown from him with ſo much indignity: That ſhe was conſcious—he himſelf was aſſured—that her virgin honour was yet unſtained, when he received her into his bed, and that her connections with his brother had been carried no farther than the ceremony of marriage: That their parents, the Kings of England and Spain, were eſteemed the wiſeſt princes

* Herbert, p. 225. Burnet, vol. i. p. 63.

of

Chap. IV. 1529.

of their time, and had undoubtedly acted by the best advice, when they formed the agreement for that marriage, which was now represented as so criminal and unnatural: And that she acquiesced in their judgment, and would not submit her cause to be tried by a court, whose dependance on her enemies was too visible, ever to allow her any hopes of obtaining from them an equitable or impartial decision *. Having spoken these words, she rose, and making the King a low reverence, she departed from the court, and never would again appear in it.

After her departure, the King did her the justice to acknowledge, that she had ever been a dutiful and affectionate wife, and that the whole tenor of her behaviour had been conformable to the strictest rules of probity and honour. He only insisted on his own scruples, with regard to the lawfulness of their marriage; and he explained the origin, the progress, and the foundation of those doubts, by which he had been so long and so violently agitated. He acquitted cardinal Wolsey of having any hand in encouraging his scruples; and he begged a sentence of the court, conformable to the justice of his cause.

The legates, after citing the Queen anew to appear before them, declared her *contumacious*, notwithstanding her appeal to Rome; and then proceeded to the examination of the cause. The first point which came before them, was, the proof of prince Arthur's consummation of his marriage with Catherine; and it must be confessed, that no stronger arguments could reasonably be expected of such a fact after so long an interval. The age of the prince, who had passed his fifteenth year, the good state of his health, the long time that he had cohabited with his spouse, many of his expressions to that very purpose; all these circumstances form a violent presumption, in favour of the King's assertion †. Henry himself, after his brother's death, was not allowed for some time to bear the title of prince of Wales, in expectation of her pregnancy: The Spanish ambassador, in order the better to ensure possession of her jointure, had sent over to Spain, proofs of the consummation of her marriage ‡: Julius's bull itself was founded on the supposition, that Arthur had *perhaps* had knowledge of the princess: In the very treaty, fixing Henry's marriage, the consummation of the former marriage with prince Arthur, is acknowledged on both sides ‖. These particulars were all laid before the court; accompanied with many reasonings concerning the extent of the pope's authority, and his power of granting a dispensation to marry within the prohibited degrees. Campeggio heard these doctrines with great impatience; and notwithstanding his resolution to protract the cause, he was often tempted

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 73. Hall. Stowe, p. 543. † Herbert. ‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 35.
‖ Rymer, xiii. p. 81.

to

to interrupt and silence the King's council, when they insisted on such disagreeable topics. The trial was spun out till the 23d of July; and Campeggio chiefly took on him the part of conducting it. Wolsey, tho' the elder cardinal, permitted him to act as president of the court; because it was thought, that a trial, managed by an Italian cardinal, would carry the appearance of greater candour and impartiality, than if the King's own minister and favourite had presided in it. The business now seemed to be drawing near to a period; and the King was every day in expectation of a sentence in his favour; when, to his great surprize, Campeggio, on a sudden, without any warning, and upon very frivolous pretences ‡, prorogued the court, till the first of October. The avocation, which came a few days after from Rome, put an end to all the hopes of success, which the King had so long and so anxiously cherished §. Chap. IV. 1529. The cause evoked to Rome.

During the time, that the trial was carried on before the legates at London, the emperor had by his ministers earnestly solicited Clement to evoke the cause to Rome; and had employed every topic of hope or terror, which could operate either on the passion or timidity of the pontiff. The English ambassadors, on the other hand, in conjunction with the French, had been no less earnest in their applications, that the legates should be allowed to finish the trial; but, tho' they employed the same engines of promises and menaces, the objects which they could set before the pope, were not so instant nor immediate as those which were held up to him by the emperor *. The dread of losing England, and of fortifying the Lutherans by so considerable an accession, made small impression on Clement's mind, in comparison of the anxiety for his own personal safety, and the fond desire of restoring the Medici to their dominion in Florence. So soon, therefore, as he had adjusted all terms with the emperor, he laid hold of the pretence of justice, which required him, he said, to pay regard to the Queen's appeal; and suspending the commission of the legates, he evoked the cause to Rome. The legate, Campeggio, had beforehand received private orders, delivered by Campana, to burn the decretal bull, with which he was entrusted.

Wolsey had long foreseen this measure as the sure forerunner of his own ruin. Tho' he had at first desired, that the King should rather marry a French princess than Anne Boleyn, he had employed himself with the utmost assiduity and earnestness to bring the affair to an happy issue †: He was not therefore to be blamed for the unprosperous event, which the pope's partiality had produced. But he had sufficient experience of the extreme ardour and impatience of Henry's temper, who could bear no contradiction, and who was wont, without examination

‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 76, 77. § Herbert, p. 254. * Burnet, vol. i. p. 75.
† Collier, vol. ii. p. 45. Burnet, vol. i. p. 53.

Chap. IV. 1529.

or diſtinction, to make his miniſters anſwerable for the iſſue of thoſe tranſactions, with which they were entruſted. Anne Boleyn alſo, who was prepoſſeſſed againſt him, had imputed to him the failure of her hopes; and as ſhe was newly returned to court, whence ſhe had been removed, from a regard to decency, during the trial before the legates, ſhe had naturally acquired an additional influence on Henry's mind, and ſhe ſerved much to fortify his prejudices againſt the cardinal ‡. Even the Queen and her partizans, judging of Wolſey by the part which he had openly acted, had expreſſed the higheſt animoſity againſt him; and the moſt oppoſite factions ſeemed now to combine in the ruin of this haughty miniſter. The high opinion itſelf, which Henry had entertained of the cardinal's capacity, tended to haſten his downfal; while he imputed the bad ſucceſs of that miniſter's undertakings, not to ill fortune or to miſtake, but to the malignity or infidelity of his intentions. The blow, however, fell not inſtantly on his head. The King, who probably could not juſtify by any good reaſon his alienation from his antient favourite, ſeems to have remained ſome time in ſuſpence; and he received him, if not with all his former kindneſs, at leaſt with appearance of truſt and regard.

Wolſey's fall. 18th October.

But it is found almoſt impoſſible for a high confidence and affection to receive the leaſt diminution, without ſinking into abſolute indifference, or even running into the oppoſite extreme of hatred and averſion. The King now determined to bring on the ruin of the cardinal with a motion almoſt as precipitate as he had formerly employed in his elevation. The dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk were ſent to require the great ſeal from him; and on his ſcrupling to deliver it *, without a more expreſs warrant, Henry wrote him a letter, upon which it was ſurrendered, and was delivered by the King to Sir Thomas More, a man, who, beſides the ornaments of an elegant literature, poſſeſſed the higheſt virtue, integrity and capacity.

Wolsey was ordered to depart from York-place, a palace which he had built in London, and which, tho' it really belonged to the ſee of York, was ſeized by Henry, and became afterwards the reſidence of the Kings of England, under the title of Whitehall. All his furniture and plate were converted to the King's uſe. Their riches and ſplendour befitted rather a royal than a private fortune. The walls of his palace were covered with cloth of gold or cloth of ſilver: He had a cupboard of plate of maſſy gold: There were found a thouſand pieces of fine holland belonging to him. All the reſt of his riches and furniture was in proportion; and his opulence was probably no ſmall inducement to this violent perſecution againſt him.

‡ Cavendiſh, p. 40. * Cavendiſh, p. 41.

The

Chap. IV. 1529.

THE cardinal was ordered to retire to Aſher, a country ſeat which he poſſeſſed near Hampton-Court. The world, who had paid him ſuch abject court during his proſperity, now entirely deſerted him, on this fatal reverſe of all his fortunes. He himſelf was much dejected with the change; and from the ſame turn of mind, which had made him be ſo vainly elated with his grandeur, he felt the blow of adverſity with double rigour †. The ſmalleſt appearance of his return to favour threw him into tranſports of joy, unbecoming a man. The King had ſeemed willing, during ſome time, to intermit the blows, which overwhelmed him. He granted him his protection, and left him in poſſeſſion of the ſees of York and Wincheſter. He even ſent him a gracious meſſage, accompanied with a ring, as a teſtimony of his affection. Wolſey, who was on horſeback when the meſſenger met him, immediately alighted; and throwing himſelf on his knees in the mire, received in that humble poſture theſe marks of his majeſty's gracious diſpoſition towards him ‡.

BUT his enemies, who dreaded his return to court, never ceaſed plying the King with accounts of his ſeveral offences; and Anne Boleyn in particular, who bore him no kindneſs, contributed her endeavours, in conjunction with her uncle the duke of Norfolk, to exclude him from all hopes of ever being reinſtated in his former authority. He diſmiſſed therefore his numerous retinue; and as he was a kind and beneficent maſter, the ſeparation paſſed not without a plentiful effuſion of tears on both ſides §. The King's heart, notwithſtanding ſome gleams of kindneſs, ſeemed now totally hardened againſt his old favourite. He ordered him to be indicted in the Star-Chamber, where a ſentence was paſſed upon him. And not contented with this ſeverity, he abandoned him to all the rigour of the Parliament, which now, after a long interval, was again aſſembled. The houſe of lords voted a long charge againſt Wolſey, conſiſting of forty-four articles; and accompanied it with an application to the King for his puniſhment, and his removal from all authority. Little oppoſition was made to this charge in the upper houſe: No evidence of any part of it was ſo much as called for; and as it conſiſts chiefly of general accuſations, it was ſcarce ſuſceptible of any *.

3d November.

† Strype, vol. i. p. 114, 115. App. N°. 31, &c.

‡ Stowe, p. 547.

§ Cavendiſh. Stowe, 549.

* The firſt article of the charge againſt the cardinal is his procuring the legantine power, which, however, as it was certainly done with the King's conſent and permiſſion, could be nowiſe criminal. Many of the other articles alſo regard the mere exerciſe of that power. Some articles impute to him as crimes, particular actions, which were natural or unavoidable to any man, that was prime-miniſter with ſo unlimited an authority; ſuch as receiving firſt all letters from the King's miniſters abroad, receiving firſt all viſits from foreign miniſters, deſiring that all applications ſhould be made thro' him.

He

Chap. IV. 1529.

The articles were ſent down to the houſe of commons; where Thomas Cromwel, formerly a ſervant of the cardinal, and who had been raiſed by him from a very low ſtation, defended his unfortunate patron with ſuch ſpirit, generoſity, and courage, as acquired him great honour, and laid the foundation of that favour, which he afterwards enjoyed with the King.

Wolsey's enemies, finding that either his innocence or his caution prevented them from having any juſt ground of accuſing him, had recourſe to a very extraordinary expedient. An indictment was lodged againſt him; that, contrary to a ſtatute of Richard the ſecond, commonly called the ſtatute of proviſors, he had procured bulls from Rome, particularly that inveſting him with the legantine power, which he had exerciſed with very extenſive authority. He confeſſed the indictment, pleaded ignorance of the ſtatute, and threw himſelf on the King's mercy. He was perhaps within reach of the law; but beſides that this ſtatute was fallen altogether into diſuſe, nothing could be more rigorous and ſevere than to impute to him as a crime, what he had openly, during a courſe of ſo many years, practiſed with the conſent and approbation of the King, and the acquieſcence of the Parliament and kingdom. Not to mention, what he always aſſerted *, and what we can ſcarce doubt of, that he had obtained the royal licence in the moſt formal manner, which, had he not been apprehenſive of the dangers attending any oppoſition to Henry's lawleſs will, he might have pleaded in his own defence before the judges. Sentence, however, was pronounced againſt him, "That he was out of the King's pro-"tection; his lands and goods forfeited, and that his perſon might be commit-"ted to cuſtody." But this proſecution of Wolſey, tho' it was not diſagreeable to Henry, was carried no farther. He even granted him his pardon for all offences; reſtored him part of his plate and furniture; and ſtill continued, from time to time, to drop expreſſions of favour and compaſſion towards him.

He was alſo accuſed of naming himſelf with the King, as if he had been his fellow, *the King and I:* It is reported that ſometimes he even put his own name before the King's, *ego et rex meus.* But this mode of expreſſion is juſtified by the Latin idiom. It is remarkable, that his whiſpering in the King's ear, knowing himſelf to be affected with venereal diſtempers, is an article againſt him. Many of the charges are general and incapable of proof. Lord Herbert goes ſo far as to affirm, that no man ever fell from ſo high a ſtation, who had ſo few real crimes objected to him. This opinion is perhaps too favourable to the cardinal. Yet the refutation of the articles by Cromwel, and their being rejected by a houſe of commons even in this arbitrary reign, is almoſt a demonſtration of Wolſey's innocence. Henry was, no doubt, entirely bent on his deſtruction, when, on his failure by a parliamentary impeachment, he attacked him upon the ſtatute of proviſors, which afforded him ſo little juſt hold on that miniſter. For that this indictment was ſubſequent to the attack in parliament, appears by Cavendiſh's life of Wolſey, Stowe, p. 551, and more certainly by the very articles of impeachment themſelves. Parliamentary Hiſtory, vol. iii. p. 42. article 7. Coke's Inſt. pt. 4. fol. 89.

* Cavendiſh, p. 72.

Chap. IV. 1529.

Commencement of the reformation in England.

THE complaints againſt the uſurpations of the eccleſiaſtics had been very antient in England, as well as in moſt other European kingdoms; and as this topic was now become popular every where, it had paved the way for the Lutheran tenets, and reconciled the people, in ſome meaſure, to the frightful idea of hereſy and innovation. The commons, finding the occaſion favourable, paſſed ſeveral bills, reſtraining the impoſitions of the clergy; one for regulating of mortuaries; another againſt the exactions for the probates of wills *; a third againſt non-reſidence and pluralities, and againſt churchmen's being farmers of land. But what appeared chiefly dangerous to the eccleſiaſtical order, were the ſevere invectives, thrown out, almoſt without oppoſition, in the houſe, againſt the diſſoluteneſs of the prieſts, their ambition, their avarice, and their endleſs encroachments on the laity. Lord Herbert † has even preſerved the ſpeech of a gentleman of Grey's-Inn, which is of a very ſingular nature, and contains ſuch topics as we ſhould little expect to meet with during that period. The member inſiſts upon the vaſt variety of theological opinions, which prevailed in different nations and ages; the endleſs inextricable controverſies maintained by the ſeveral ſects; the impoſſibility, that any man, much leſs the people, could ever know, much leſs examine, the tenets and principles of each ſect; the neceſſity of ignorance and a ſuſpence of judgment with regard to all theſe objects of diſpute: And upon the whole, he infers, that the only religion obligatory on mankind is the belief of one ſupreme Being, the author of nature; and the neceſſity of good morals, in order to obtain his favour and protection. Such ſentiments would be deemed latitudinarian, even in our time; and would not be advanced, without ſome precaution, in a public aſſembly. But tho' the firſt broaching of religious controverſy might encourage the ſceptical turn in a few perſons of a ſtudious diſpoſition; the zeal, with which men ſoon after attached themſelves to their ſeveral parties, ſerved effectually to baniſh for a long time all ſuch obnoxious liberties.

THE bills for regulating the clergy met with ſome oppoſition in the houſe of lords. Biſhop Fiſher in particular imputed theſe meaſures of the commons to their want of faith; and to a formed deſign, derived from heretical and Lutheran principles, of robbing the church of her patrimony, and overturning the national religion. The duke of Norfolk reproved the prelate, in very ſevere, and even ſomewhat indecent terms. He told him, that the greateſt clerks were not always the wiſeſt men. But Fiſher replied, he did not remember any fools in his

* Theſe exactions were quite arbitrary, and had riſen to a great height. A member ſaid in the houſe, that a thouſand merks had been exacted from him on that account. Hall, fol. 188. Strype, vol. i. p. 73. † P. 293.

Chap. IV. 1529.

time, that had proved great clerks. The exceptions taken at the biſhop of Rocheſter's ſpeech ſtopped not there. The commons, by the mouth of Sir Thomas Audley, their ſpeaker, made complaints to the King of the reflections thrown upon them; and the biſhop was obliged to put a more favourable conſtruction on his words *.

HENRY was not diſpleaſed, that the court of Rome and the clergy ſhould be ſenſible, that they were entirely dependant on him, and that his Parliament, if he were willing to ſecond their inclinations, were ſufficiently diſpoſed to reduce the power and privileges of the eccleſiaſtics. The commons gratified the King in another particular of moment: They granted him a diſcharge of all thoſe debts, which he had contracted ſince the beginning of his reign: And they grounded this bill, which occaſioned many complaints, on a pretence of the King's great care of the nation, and of his employing regularly all the money, which he had borrowed, in the public ſervice. Moſt of the King's creditors conſiſted of friends to the cardinal, who had been engaged by their patron to contribute to the ſupply of Henry's demands; and the preſent courtiers were well pleaſed to take the opportunity of mulcting them †. Several alſo approved of an expedient, which, they hoped, would ever after diſcredit a method of ſupply, ſo irregular and ſo unparliamentary.

Foreign affairs.

THE domeſtic tranſactions of England were at preſent ſo intereſting to the King, that they chiefly engaged his attention; and he regarded foreign affairs only in ſubordination to them. He had declared war againſt the emperor; but the mutual advantages reaped by the commerce between England and the Netherlands had engaged him to ſtipulate a neutrality with thoſe provinces; and except by money contributed to the Italian wars, he had in effect exerciſed no hoſtilities againſt any of the imperial dominions. A general peace was this ſummer eſtabliſhed in Europe. Margaret of Auſtria and Louiſe of Savoy met at Cambray, and ſettled the terms of pacification between the French King and the emperor. Charles accepted of two millions of crowns in lieu of Burgundy; and he delivered up the two princes of France, whom he had retained as hoſtages. Henry was ſo generous to his friend and ally Francis, that he ſent him an acquital of near 600,000 crowns, which that prince owed him. Francis's Italian confederates were not ſo well ſatisfied as the King with the peace of Cambray: They were there almoſt wholly abandoned to the will of the emperor; and ſeemed to have no other means of ſecurity left, but his equity and moderation. Florence, after a brave reſiſtance, was ſubdued by the imperial arms, and finally delivered over to the dominion of the family of Medici. The Venetians were better

* Parliamentary Hiſtory, vol. iii. p. 59. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 82.

† Burnet, vol. i. p. 83.

treated:

treated: They were only obliged to relinquish some acquisitions, which they had made on the coast of Naples. Even Francis Sforza obtained the investiture of Milan, and was pardoned all his past offences. The emperor in person passed into Italy with a magnificent train, and received the imperial crown from the hands of the pope at Bologna. He was but twenty-nine years of age; and having already, by his vigour and capacity, succeeded in every enterprize, and reduced to captivity the two greatest potentates in Europe, the one spiritual, the other temporal, he attracted the eyes of all men; and many prognostications were formed of his growing empire. Chap. IV. 1529.

But tho' Charles seemed to be prosperous on every side, and the conquest of Mexico and Peru now began to prevent that scarcity of money, under which he had hitherto laboured, he found himself threatened with difficulties in Germany; and his desire of remedying them was the chief cause of his granting such moderate conditions to the powers in Italy. Sultan Solyman, the greatest and most accomplished prince, that ever sat on the Ottoman throne, had almost entirely subdued Hungary, had besieged Vienna, and, tho' repulsed, still menaced the hereditary dominions of the house of Austria with conquest and subjection. The Lutheran princes in the empire, finding, that liberty of conscience was denied them, had combined in a league for their own defence at Smalcalde; and because they protested against the votes of the imperial diet, they thenceforth received the appellation of *protestants*. Charles had undertaken to reduce them to obedience; and on pretence of securing the purity of religion, he had laid a scheme of aggrandizing his own family, by extending its dominions over all Germany.

The friendship of Henry was one material circumstance yet wanting to Charles, in order to render his ambitious projects feasible; and the King was sufficiently acquainted, that the concurrence of that prince would at once remove all the difficulties, which lay in the way of his divorce; that point, which had long been the object of his most earnest wishes. But besides that the interests of his kingdom seemed to require a confederacy with France, his haughty spirit could not brook a friendship imposed on him by constraint; and as he had ever been accustomed to receive courtship, submission, and solicitation from the greatest potentates, he could ill bear that dependance, to which this unhappy affair seemed to have reduced him. Amidst the anxieties with which he was agitated, he was often tempted to break off all connexion with the court of Rome; and tho' he had been educated in a superstitious reverence to the papal authority, it is likely, that his personal experience of the duplicity and selfish politics of Clement, had served much to open his eyes in that particular. He found his royal

prerogative

Chap. IV. 1529.

prerogative firmly eſtabliſhed at home: He obſerved that his people were in general much diſguſted with clerical uſurpations, and diſpoſed to reduce the powers and privileges of the eccleſiaſtical order: He knew, that they had cordially taken part with him in his proſecution of the divorce, and highly reſented that unworthy treatment, which, after ſo many ſervices and ſuch devoted attachment, he had received from the court of Rome. Anne Boleyn alſo could not fail, by her inſinuations, to engage him into extremities with the pope, both as it was the readieſt way to her attaining royal dignity, and as her education in the court of the dutcheſs of Alençon, a princeſs inclined to the reformers, had already diſpoſed her to a belief of the new doctrines. But notwithſtanding all theſe inducements, Henry had ſtrong motives ſtill to deſire a good agreement with the ſovereign pontiff. He apprehended the danger of ſuch great innovations: He dreaded the reproach of hereſy: He abhorred all connexions with the Lutherans, the chief opponents of the papal power: And having once exerted himſelf with ſuch applauſe, as he imagined, in defence of the Romiſh communion, he was aſhamed to retract his former opinions, and betray from paſſion ſuch a palpable inconſiſtency. While he was agitated by theſe contrary motives, an expedient was propoſed, which, as it promiſed a ſolution of all difficulties, was embraced by him with the greateſt joy and ſatisfaction.

The univerſities conſulted about the King's marriage.

Dr. Thomas Cranmer, a fellow of Jeſus-college in Cambridge, was a man remarkable in that univerſity for his learning, and ſtill more, for the candour and diſintereſtedneſs of his temper. He fell one evening by accident into company with Gardiner, now ſecretary of ſtate, and Fox the King's almoner; and as the buſineſs of the divorce became the ſubject of converſation, he obſerved, that the readieſt way either to quiet Henry's conſcience or extort the pope's conſent, would be to conſult all the univerſities of Europe with regard to this controverted point: If they agreed to approve the King's marriage with Catherine, his remorſes would naturally ceaſe; if they condemned it, the pope would find it difficult to reſiſt the ſolicitations of ſo great a monarch, ſeconded by the opinion of all the learned men in Chriſtendom *. When the King was informed of this propoſal, he was delighted with it; and ſwore, with more alacrity than delicacy, that Cranmer had got the right ſow by the ear: He ſent for that divine: Entered into converſation with him: Conceived a high opinion of his virtue and underſtanding: Engaged him to write in defence of the divorce: And immediately, in proſecution of the ſcheme propoſed, employed his agents to collect the judgment of all the univerſities in Europe.

* Fox, p. 1860. 2d. edit. Burnet, vol. i. p. 79. Speed, p. 769. Heylin, p. 5.

Had

HAD the queſtion of Henry's marriage with Catherine been examined by the principles of ſound philoſophy, exempt from ſuperſtition, it ſeemed not liable to much difficulty. The natural reaſon, why marriage in certain degrees is prohibited by the civil laws and condemned by the moral ſentiments of all nations, is derived from men's care to preſerve purity of manners; while they reflect, that if a commerce of love were authorized between the neareſt relations, the frequent opportunities of intimate converſation, eſpecially during early youth, would introduce an univerſal diſſoluteneſs and corruption. But as the cuſtoms of countries vary conſiderably, and open an intercourſe, more or leſs reſtrained, between different families, or between the ſeveral members of the ſame family, ſo we find, that the moral precept, varying with its cauſe, is ſuſceptible, without any inconvenience, of very different latitude in the ſeveral ages and nations of the world. The extreme delicacy of the Greeks, permitted no converſe between perſons of the two ſexes, except where they lived under the ſame roof; and even the apartments of a ſtep-mother, and her daughters, were almoſt as much ſhut up againſt viſits from the huſband's ſons, as againſt thoſe from any ſtrangers or more remote relations: Hence in that nation it was lawful for a man to marry, not only his niece, but his half ſiſter by the father: A liberty unknown to the Romans, and other nations, where a more open intercourſe was authorized between the ſexes. Reaſoning from this principle, it would appear, that the ordinary commerce of life among great princes, is ſo obſtructed by ceremony, and numerous attendants, that no ill conſequence would reſult among them, from the marriage of a brother's widow; eſpecially if the diſpenſation of the ſovereign prieſt is previouſly required, in order to juſtify what may in common caſes be condemned, and to hinder the precedent from becoming too common and familiar. And as ſtrong motives of public intereſt and tranquillity may frequently require ſuch alliances between the ſovereign families, there is leſs reaſon for extending towards them the full rigour of that rule which has place among individuals *.

BUT

* Even judging of this queſtion by the Scripture, to which the appeal was every moment made, the arguments for the King's cauſe appear but lame and imperfect. Marriage in the degree of affinity which had place between Henry and Catherine, is, indeed, prohibited in Leviticus; but it is natural to interpret that prohibition as a part of the Jewiſh ceremonial or municipal law: And tho' it is there ſaid, in the concluſion, that the gentile nations, by violating theſe degrees of conſanguinity, had incurred the divine diſpleaſure, the extenſion of this maxim to every preciſe caſe before ſpecified, is ſuppoſing the Scriptures to be compoſed with a minute accuracy and preciſion, to which, we know with certainty, the ſacred penmen did not think proper to confine themſelves. The deſcent of mankind from one common father, obliged them in the firſt generation to marry in the neareſt degrees of conſanguinity:

Chap. IV. 1529. BUT in oppoſition to theſe reaſons, and many more which might be collected, Henry had cuſtom and practice on his ſide, the principle by which men are almoſt wholly governed in their actions and opinions. Marriages with a brother's widow were ſo unuſual, that no other inſtance of it could be found in any hiſtory or record of any Chriſtian nation; and tho' the popes were accuſtomed to diſpenſe with more eſſential precepts of morality, and even permitted marriages within other prohibited degrees, ſuch as thoſe of uncle and niece, the imaginations of men were not as yet reconciled to this particular exerciſe of his authority. Several univerſities of Europe, therefore, without heſitation, as well as without 1530. intereſt or reward †, gave verdict in the King's favour; not only thoſe of France, Paris, Orleans, Bourges, Tholouſe, Angiers, which might be ſuppoſed to lie under the influence of their prince, ally to Henry; but alſo thoſe of Italy, Venice, Ferrara, Padua; even Bologna itſelf, tho' under the immediate juriſdiction of Clement. Oxford alone ‡ and Cambridge ‖ made ſome difficulty; becauſe theſe univerſities, alarmed with the progreſs of Lutheraniſm, and fearing a defection from the holy ſee, ſcrupled to give their ſanction to meaſures, whoſe conſequences, they feared, would prove ſo fatal to the antient religion. Their opinion however, conformable to that of the other univerſities of Europe, was at laſt procured; and the King, in order to give weight to all theſe authorities, engaged his nobility to write a letter to the pope, recommending his cauſe to the holy father, and threatning him with the moſt dangerous conſequences in caſe of a denial of juſtice §. The convocations too both of Canterbury and York, pronounced the King's marriage invalid, irregular, and contrary to the law of God, with which no human power had authority to diſpenſe *. But Clement, lying ſtill under the influence of the emperor, continued to ſummon the King to appear, either by himſelf or proxy, before his tribunal at Rome; and the King, who knew that he could expect no fair trial there, refuſed to ſubmit to ſuch a condition, and would not even admit of any citation, which he regarded as a high inſult, and a violation of his royal prerogative. The father of Anne Boleyn, created earl of Wiltſhire, carried to the pope the King's reaſons for not

ſanguinity: Inſtances of a like nature occur among the patriarchs: And the marriage of a brother's widow was, in certain caſes, not only permitted, but even enjoined as a poſitive precept by the Moſaical law. It is in vain to ſay, that this precept was an exception to the rule; and an exception confined merely to the Jewiſh nation. The inference is ſtill juſt, that ſuch a marriage can contain no natural or moral turpitude; otherwiſe God, who is the author of all purity, would never, in any caſe, have enjoined it.

† Herbert. Burnet. ‡ Wood. Hiſt. and Ant. Ox. lib. i. p. 225. ‖ Burnet, vol. i. p. 6.
§ Rymer, xiv. 405. Burnet, vol. i. p. 95. * Rymer, xiv. 454, 472.

appearing

appearing by proxy; and as the first instance of disrepect from England, refused to kiss his holiness's foot, which he very graciously held out to him for that purpose *. Chap. IV. 1530.

The extremities to which Henry was pushed, both against the pope and the ecclesiastical order, were naturally very disagreeable to cardinal Wolsey; and as Henry foresaw his opposition, it is the most probable reason which can be assigned for his continuing to persecute with so much rigour his ancient favourite. After Wolsey had remained some time at Asher, he was allowed to remove to Richmond, a palace which he had received as a present from Henry, in return for Hampton-Court: But the courtiers, dreading still his near neighbourhood to the King, procured an order for him to remove to his see of York. The cardinal knew it was in vain to resist: He took up his residence at Cawood in Yorkshire, where he rendered himself extremely popular to the neighbourhood, by his affability and hospitality †: but he was not allowed to remain long unmolested in this retreat. The earl of Northumberland received orders, without regard to Wolsey's ecclesiastical character, to arrest him for high treason, and to conduct him to London, in order to his trial. The cardinal, partly from the fatigues of the journey, partly from the agitation of his anxious mind, was seized with a disorder which turned into a dysentery; and he was able, with some difficulty, to reach Leicester abbey. When the abbot and monks advanced to receive him with much respect and ceremony, he told them, that he was come to lay his bones among them; and he immediately took his bed, whence he never rose more. A little before he expired, he addressed himself in the following words to Sir William Kingston, constable of the Tower, who had him in custody. 28 Novemb.

"I pray you, have me heartily recommended unto his royal majesty, "and beseech him on my behalf to call to his remembrance all matters that "have passed between us from the beginning, especially with regard to his busi- "ness with the queen; and then will he know in his conscience whether I have "offended him.

"He is a prince of a most royal carriage, and hath a princely heart; and "rather than he will miss or want any part of his will, he will endanger the one "half of his kingdom.

"I do assure you, that I have often kneeled before him, sometimes three "hours together, to persuade him from his will and appetite; but could not "prevail: Had I but served God as diligently as I have served the King, he "would not have given me over in my grey hairs. But this is the just reward "that I must receive for my indulgent pains and study, not regarding my ser-

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 94. † Cavendish. Stowe, p. 554.

Chap. IV. 1530.

" vice to God, but only to my prince. Therefore, let me adviſe you, if you be " one of the privy-council, as by your wiſdom you are fit, take care what you " put into the King's head: For you can never put it out again *."

Wolſey's death.

THUS died this famous cardinal, whoſe character ſeems to have contained as ſingular a variety as the fortune to which he was expoſed. The obſtinacy and violence of the King's temper may alleviate much of the blame which ſome of his favourite's meaſures have undergone; and when we conſider, that the ſubſequent part of Henry's reign was much more unfortunate and criminal than that which was directed by Wolſey's councils, we ſhall be inclined to ſuſpect of partiality thoſe hiſtorians, who have endeavoured to load the memory of this favourite with ſuch violent reproaches. If in foreign politics, he ſometimes employed his influence over the King for his private purpoſes, rather than his maſter's intereſt, which, he boaſted, he had ſolely at heart; we muſt remember, that he had in view the papal throne; a dignity, which, had he attained it, would have enabled him to make Henry a ſuitable return for all his favours. The cardinal d'Amboiſe, whoſe memory is precious in France, always made this apology for his own conduct, which was, in ſome reſpects, ſimilar to Wolſey's; and we have reaſon to think, that Henry was well acquainted with the motives by which his miniſter was influenced. He regreted very much his death, when informed of it; and always ſpoke favourably of his memory: A proof, that humour more than reaſon, or any diſcovery of treachery, had occaſioned his laſt perſecutions againſt him.

1531. 16 January. A Parliament.

A NEW ſeſſion of Parliament was held, together with a convocation; and the King gave ſtrong proofs of his extenſive authority, as well as of his intention to employ it to the depreſſion of the Clergy. As an ancient ſtatute, now almoſt obſolete, had been made uſe of to ruin Wolſey, and render his exerciſe of the legantine power criminal, notwithſtanding the King's permiſſion; the ſame law was now turned againſt the eccleſiaſtics. It was pretended, that every one who had ſubmitted to the legantine authority, that is, the whole church, had violated the ſtatute of proviſors; and the attorney-general brought accordingly an indictment againſt them †. The convocation knew that it would be in vain to oppoſe reaſon or equity to the King's arbitrary will, or plead that their ruin would have been the certain conſequence of not ſubmitting to Wolſey's commiſſion, which was procured by Henry's conſent, and ſupported by his authority. They choſe therefore to throw themſelves on the mercy of their ſovereign; and they agreed to pay 118,840 l. for their pardon ‡. A confeſſion was likewiſe extorted from them, that *the King was the protector and the ſupreme head of the church and clergy of England*; tho' ſome of them had the dexterity to get a clauſe inſerted, which invalidated the whole ſubmiſſion, and which ran in theſe terms, *in ſo far as is permitted by the law of Chriſt.*

* Cavendiſh. † Antiq. Brit. Eccleſ. p. 325, Burnet, vol. i. p. 106. ‡ Hollingſhed, p. 923.

THE

THE commons, finding that a pardon was granted the clergy, began to be apprehenſive for themſelves, leſt either they ſhould afterwards be brought into trouble, on account of their ſubmiſſion to the legantine court, or a ſupply be extorted from them, in return for their pardon. They therefore petitioned the King, to grant a remiſſion to his lay ſubjects; but met with a repulſe. He told them, that, if he ever pleaſed to forgive their offence, it would be from his own goodneſs, not from their application, leſt he ſhould ſeem to be compelled to it. Some time after, when they deſpaired of obtaining this conceſſion, he was pleaſed to iſſue a pardon to the laity; and the commons expreſſed great gratitude for this act of clemency *. Chap. IV. 1531.

BY the ſtrict execution of the ſtatute of proviſors, a great part of the profit, and ſtill more of the power, of the court of Rome was cut off; and the connections between the pope and the Engliſh clergy were, in ſome meaſure, diſſolved. The next ſeſſion found both King and Parliament in the ſame diſpoſitions. An act was paſſed againſt levying the annates or firſt fruits †; being a year's rent of all the biſhoprics that fell vacant: A tax which was impoſed by the court of Rome for granting bulls to the new prelates, and which was found to amount to conſiderable ſums. Since the ſecond of Henry the ſeventh, no leſs than one hundred and ſixty thouſand pounds had been tranſmitted to Rome, on account of this claim; which the Parliament, therefore, reduced to five per cent. of all the epiſcopal benefices. The better to keep the pope in awe, the King was entruſted with a power of regulating theſe payments, and of confirming or infringing this act at his pleaſure: And it was voted, that any cenſures which ſhould be paſſed by the court of Rome, on account of that law, ſhould be entirely diſregarded, and that maſs ſhould be ſaid, and the ſacraments adminiſtered, as if no ſuch cenſures had been iſſued. 1532. 15 January. Progreſs of the reformation.

THIS ſeſſion the commons preferred to the King a long complaint againſt the abuſes and oppreſſions of the eccleſiaſtical courts; and they were proceeding to enact laws for remedying them, when a difference aroſe, which put an end to the ſeſſion, before the Parliament had finiſhed all their buſineſs. It was become a cuſtom for men to make ſuch ſettlements, or truſt deeds, of their land by will, that they defrauded, not only the King, but all other lords, of their wards, marriages, and reliefs; and by the ſame artifice the King was deprived of his primier ſeiſin, and the profits of the livery, which were no inconſiderable branches of the revenue. Henry made a bill be drawn to moderate, not remedy altogether, this abuſe: He was contented, that every man

* Hall's Chronicle. Hollingſhed, p. 923. Baker, p 208. † Burnet, vol. i. Collect. N°. 41. Strype, vol. i. p. 144.

Chap. IV. 1532. should have the liberty of disposing in this manner of the half of his land; and he told the Parliament in plain terms, "If they would not take a reasonable "thing, when it was offered, he would search out the extremity of the law; "and then would not offer them so much again." The lords came willingly into his terms; but the commons rejected the bill: A singular instance, where Henry might see, that his power and authority, though extensive, had yet some boundaries. The commons, however, found reason to repent of their victory. The King made good his threats: He called together the judges and ablest lawyers, who argued the question in chancery; and it was decided, that a man could not by law bequeath any part of his lands, in prejudice of his heir *.

10 April. The Parliament being again assembled after a short prorogation, the King caused the two oaths to be read to them, that which the bishops took to the pope, and that to the King, on their installation; and as a contradiction might be suspected between them, while the prelates seemed to swear allegiance to two sovereigns †, the Parliament showed their intention of abolishing the oath to the pope, when their proceedings were suddenly stopped by the breaking out of the plague at Westminster, which occasioned a prorogation. It is remarkable, that one Temse ventured this session to move, that the House should address the King, to take back the queen, and stop the prosecution of his divorce. This motion occasioned the King to send for Audley, the Speaker; and to explain to him the scruples with which his conscience had so long been agitated; scruples, he said, which had proceeded from no wanton appetite, which had arisen after the fervours of youth were past, and which were confirmed by the concurring sentiments of all the learned societies in Europe. Except in Spain and Portugal, he added, it was never heard of, that any man had espoused two sisters; but he himself had the misfortune, he believed, to be the first christian man who had ever married his brother's widow ‡.

After the prorogation, Sir Thomas More, the chancellor, foreseeing that all the measures of the King and Parliament tended to a breach with the church of Rome, and to an alteration of religion, which his principles would not permit him to concur with, desired leave to resign the seals; and he descended from this high station with more joy and alacrity than he had mounted up to it. The austerity of this man's virtue, and the sanctity of his manners, had nowise encroached on the gentleness of his temper, nor even diminished that frolic and gaity to which he was naturally inclined. He sported with all the varieties of fortune into which he was thrown; and neither the pride naturally attending a

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 116. Hall. Parliamentary History. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 123, 124.
‡ Herbert. Hall, fol. 205.

high

high ſtation, nor the melancholy incident to poverty and retreat, could ever lay hold of his ſerene and equal ſpirit. While his family diſcovered ſymptoms of ſorrow on laying down the grandeur and magnificence to which they had been accuſtomed, he drew a ſubject of mirth from their diſtreſſes; and made them aſhamed of loſing even a moment's chearfulneſs, on account of ſuch trivial misfortunes. The King, who had entertained a high opinion of his virtue, admitted his reſignation with ſome difficulty; and he beſtowed the ſeals ſoon after on Sir Thomas Audley. Chap. IV. 1532.

DURING theſe tranſactions in England, and theſe invaſions of the papal and eccleſiaſtical authority, the court of Rome were not without ſolicitude; and they entertained very juſt apprehenſions of loſing entirely their authority in England; the kingdom, which, of all others, had long been moſt devoted to the holy ſee, and which had yielded it the moſt ample revenue. While the imperial cardinals puſhed Clement to proceed to extremities againſt the King, his more moderate and impartial counſellors repreſented to him the indignity of his proceedings; that a great monarch, who had ſignalized himſelf, both by his pen and his ſword, in the pope's cauſe, ſhould be deny'd a favour, which he demanded on ſuch juſt grounds, and which had ſcarce ever before been refuſed to any perſon of his rank and ſtation. Notwithſtanding theſe remonſtrances, the Queen's appeal was received at Rome; the King was cited to appear; and ſeveral conſiſtories were held, to examine the validity of their marriage. Henry was determined not to ſend any proxy to plead his cauſe before this court: He only diſpatched Sir Edward Karne and Dr. Bonner, in quality of excuſators, ſo they were called, to carry his apology, for not paying that deference to the papal authority. The prerogatives of his crown, he ſaid, muſt be ſacrificed, if he allowed of appeals from his own kingdom; and as the queſtion regarded conſcience, not power or intereſt, no proxy could ſupply his place, or convey that ſatisfaction which the dictates of his own mind could alone confer. In order to ſupport himſelf in this meaſure, and add greater ſecurity to his defection from Rome, he procured an interview with Francis at Boulogne and Calais, where he renewed his perſonal friendſhip, as well as public alliance, with that monarch, and concerted all meaſures for their mutual defence. He even employed arguments, by which, he believed, he had perſuaded Francis to imitate his example in withdrawing his obedience from the biſhop of Rome, and adminiſtering eccleſiaſtical affairs without having farther recourſe to that ſee. And being now fully determined in his own mind, as well as reſolute to ſtand all conſequences, he privately celebrated his marriage with Anne Boleyn, whom he had created marchioneſs of Pembroke. Rouland Lee, ſoon after raiſed to the biſhopric of Coventry, officiated 11 October. 14 November.

Chap. IV. 1532. ciated at the marriage. The duke of Norfolk, uncle to the new Queen, her father, mother, and brother, together with Dr. Cranmer, were preſent at the ceremony *. Anne became pregnant ſoon after her marriage; and this event, both gave great joy to the King, and was regarded by the people as a ſtrong proof of the Queen's former modeſty and virtue.

1533. 4 February. A Parliament. THE Parliament was again aſſembled; and Henry, in conjunction with the great council of the nation, proceeded ſtill in thoſe gradual and ſecure ſteps, by which they looſened their connections with the ſee of Rome, and repreſſed the uſurpations of the Roman pontiff. An act was made againſt all appeals to Rome in cauſes of matrimony, divorces, wills, and other ſuits cognizable in eccleſiaſtical courts; appeals eſteemed diſhonourable to the kingdom, by ſubjecting it to a foreign juriſdiction; and found to be infinitely vexatious, by the expence and the delay of juſtice, which neceſſarily attended them †. The more to ſhew

12 April. his diſregard to the pope, Henry, finding the new Queen's pregnancy to advance, publicly owned his marriage; and in order to remove all doubts with regard to its lawfulneſs he prepared meaſures for declaring, by a formal ſentence, the invalidity of his former marriage with Catherine: A ſentence which ought naturally to have preceded his eſpouſals of Anne ‡.

THE King, notwithſtanding his ſcruples and remorſes on acccount of his firſt marriage, had always treated Catherine with reſpect and diſtinction; and he endeavoured, by very ſoft and perſuaſive art, to engage her to depart from her appeal to Rome, and her oppoſition to his divorce. Finding her obſtinate in maintaining the juſtice of her cauſe, he had totally forborne all viſits and intercourſe with her; and had deſired her to make choice of any one of his palaces in which ſhe ſhould pleaſe to reſide. She had fixed her court for ſome time at Amphill

10 May. near Dunſtable; and it was in this latter town that Cranmer, now created archbiſhop of Canterbury, on the death of Warham ||, was appointed to open his court

* Herbert, 340, 341. † 24 Hen. VIII. c. 12. ‡ Collier, vol. ii. p. 31. and Records, N°. 8.

|| Biſhop Burnet has given us an account of the number of bulls requiſite for Cranmer's inſtallation. By one bull, directed to the King, he is, upon the royal nomination, made archbiſhop of Canterbury. By a ſecond, directed to himſelf, he is made archbiſhop. By a third, he is abſolved from all cenſures. A fourth, is to the ſuffragans, requiring them to receive and acknowledge him as archbiſhop. A fifth to the dean and chapter, to the ſame purpoſe. A ſixth to the clergy of Canterbury. A ſeventh to all the laity in his ſee. An eighth to all that held lands of it. By a ninth he was ordained to be conſecrated, taking the oath that was in the pontifical. By a tenth bull the pall was ſent him. By an eleventh, the archbiſhop of York, and the biſhop of London, were required to put it on him. Theſe were ſo many artifices to draw fees to offices, which the popes had erected, and diſpoſed of for money. It may be worth obſerving, that Cranmer, before he took the oath to the pope, made a proteſtation, that

court for examining the validity of her marriage. The near neighbourhood of the place was chosen in order to deprive her of all plea of ignorance; and as she made no answer to the citation, neither by herself nor proxy, she was declared *contumacious*; and the primate proceeded to the examination of the cause. The evidences of Arthur's consummation of the marriage were produced; the opinions of the universities were read; together with the judgment pronounced two years before by the convocations both of Canterbury and York; and after these preparatory steps, Cranmer proceeded to a sentence, and annulled the King's marriage with Catherine as unlawful and invalid. By a subsequent sentence, he ratified the marriage with Anne Boleyn, who soon after was publicly crowned Queen, with all the pomp and dignity suited to that ceremony *. To compleat the King's satisfaction, on the conclusion of this intricate and vexatious affair, she was safely delivered of a daughter, who received the name of Elizabeth, and who afterwards swayed the sceptre with such renown and felicity. Henry was so much delighted with the birth of this child, that soon after he conferred on her the title of princess of Wales †; a step somewhat irregular, as she was only presumptive, not apparent heir of the crown. But he had, during his former marriage, thought proper to honour his daughter Mary with that title; and he was determined to bestow on the offspring of his present marriage, the same marks of distinction, as well as exclude Mary from all hopes of the succession. His regard for the new Queen seemed rather to increase than diminish by his marriage; and all men expected to see the entire ascendant of one who had mounted a throne, from which her birth had set her at so great a distance, and who, by a proper mixture of severity and indulgence, had long managed so intractable a spirit as that of Henry. In order to efface, as much as possible, all marks of his first marriage, Lord Mountjoy was sent to the unfortunate and divorced Queen, to inform her, that she was henceforth to be treated only as princess dowager of Wales; and all means were employed to make her acquiesce in that determination. But she continued obstinate in maintaining the validity of her marriage; and she would admit of no service from any person, who did not approach her with the accustomed ceremonial. Henry, forgetting his wonted generosity towards her, employed menaces against such of her servants as com-

Chap. IV. 1533.

7 September.

that he did not intend thereby to restrain himself from any thing that he was bound to, either by his duty to God, the King, or the country; and that he renounced every thing in it that was contrary to any of these. This device was the invention of some casuist, and not very compatible with that strict sincerity, and that scrupulous conscience, of which Cranmer made profession. Collier, vol. ii. in Coll. N°. 22. Burnet, vol. i. p. 128, 129.

* Heylin, p. 6. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 134.

plied

Chap. IV. 1533. plied with her commands in this particular; but was never able to make her relinquish her title and pretensions †.

When intelligence was conveyed to Rome of these transactions, so injurious to the authority and reputation of the holy see, the conclave were in a rage, and all the cardinals of the imperial faction urged the pope to proceed to a definitive sentence, and to emit his spiritual thunders against Henry. But Clement proceeded no farther than to declare the nullity of Cranmer's sentence, as well as that of Henry's second marriage; threatning him with excommunication, if, before the first of November ensuing, he did not replace every thing in the condition, in which they formerly stood ‡. An event had happened, from which the pontiff expected a more amicable conclusion of the difference, and which hindered him from carrying matters to extremity against the King.

The pope had claims upon the dutchy of Ferrara for the sovereignty of Reggio and Modena *; and having submitted his pretensions to the arbitration of the emperor, he was surprized to find a sentence pronounced against him. Enraged at this disappointment, he hearkened to proposals of amity from Francis; and when that monarch made overtures of marrying the duke of Orleans, his second son, with Catherine of Medici, niece to the pope, Clement gladly embraced an alliance, by which his family was so much honoured. An interview was even appointed of the pope and French King at Marseilles; and Francis, as a common friend, employed his good offices in mediating an agreement between his new ally and the King of England.

Had this connexion of France with the see of Rome taken place a few years sooner, there had been little difficulty in composing the quarrel with Henry. The King's request was an ordinary one; and the same plenary power of the pope, which had granted a dispensation for his espousing Catherine, could easily have annulled the marriage. But in the progress of the quarrel, the state of affairs was much changed on both sides. Henry had shaken off much of that reverence with which he had been early imbued for the apostolical see; and finding, that his subjects of all ranks had taken part with him, and willingly complied with his movements for breaking foreign dependance, he had taken a relish for his spiritual authority, and would scarce, it was apprehended, be induced to renew his submissions to the Roman pontiff. The pope, on the other hand, ran now a manifest risque of infringing his authority by a compliance with the King; and

† Herbert, p. 326. Burnet, vol. i. p. 132. ‡ Le Grand, vol. iii. p. 566. * Burnet, vol. ii. p. 133. Guicciardini.

as

as a ſentence of divorce could no longer be reſted on nullities in Julius's bull, but would be conſtrued as an acknowledgment of papal uſurpations, it was foreſeen, that the Lutherans would thence take occaſion of triumph, and would perſevere more obſtinately in their preſent principles. But notwithſtanding theſe obſtacles, Francis did not deſpair of mediating an agreement. He ſtill obſerved that the King had ſome remains of prejudice in favour of the apoſtolic ſee, and was apprehenſive of the conſequences, which might enſue from too violent innovations. He ſaw plainly the intereſt, that Clement had in preſerving the obedience of England, which was one of the richeſt jewels in the papal crown. And he hoped, that theſe motives on both ſides would facilitate a mutual agreement, and would forward the effects of his good offices. Chap. IV. 1533.

Francis firſt prevailed on the pope to promiſe, that, if the King would ſend a proxy to Rome, and thereby ſubmit his cauſe to the holy ſee, he would appoint commiſſioners to meet at Cambray, and form the proceſs; and he would immediately afterwards pronounce the ſentence of divorce, required of him. Bellay, biſhop of Paris, was next diſpatched to London, and obtained a promiſe of the King, that he would ſubmit his cauſe to the Roman conſiſtory, provided the cardinals of the imperial faction were excluded from it. The prelate carried this verbal promiſe to Rome; and the pope agreed, that, if the King would ſign a written agreement to the ſame purpoſe, his demands ſhould be fully complied with. A day was appointed for the return of the meſſengers; and all the world regarded this affair, which had threatened a violent rupture between England and the Romiſh church, as drawing towards an amicable concluſion *. But the greateſt affairs often depend on the moſt frivolous incidents. The courier, who carried the King's written promiſe, was detained beyond the day appointed: News were brought to Rome that a libel had been publiſhed in England againſt the court of Rome, and a farce acted before the King in deriſion of the pope and cardinals †. The pope and cardinals entered into the conſiſtory enflamed with anger; and by a precipitate ſentence, the marriage of Henry and Catherine was pronounced valid, and Henry declared to be excommunicated if he refuſed to adhere to it. Two days after, the courier arrived; and Clement, who had been hurried from his uſual prudence, found, that though he repented heartily of this haſty meaſure, it would be difficult for him to retract it, or replace affairs on the ſame footing as before. 1534. King's final breach with Rome. 23d Marc

It is not probable, that the pope, had he conducted himſelf with ever ſo great moderation and temper, could hope, during the life-time of Henry, to have regained much authority or influence in England. That monarch was both im-

* Father Paul, lib. 1. † Father Paul, lib. 1.

Chap. IV. 1534.

15 January.

A Parliament.

petuous and obſtinate in his character; and having proceeded ſo far in throwing off the papal yoke, he never could again have been induced tamely to bend his neck to it. Even at the time, when he was negotiating a reconcilement with Rome, he either entertained ſo little hopes of ſucceſs, or was ſo indifferent about the event, that he had aſſembled a Parliament; and continued to enact laws totally deſtructive of the papal authority. The people had been prepared by degrees for this great innovation. Each preceding ſeſſion had retrenched ſomething from the power and profit of the pontiff. Care had been taken, during ſome years, to teach the nation, that a general council was much ſuperior to the pope. But now a biſhop preached every Sunday at Paul's croſs, in order to inculcate the doctrine, that the pope was intitled to no authority at all beyond the bounds of his own dioceſe ‡. The proceedings of the Parliament ſhowed that they had entirely adopted this opinion; and there is reaſon to believe, that the King, after having procured a favourable ſentence from Rome, which would have removed all the doubts with regard to his ſecond marriage and the ſucceſſion, might indeed have lived on terms of civility with the apoſtolic ſee, but never would have ſurrendered to it any conſiderable ſhare of his aſſumed prerogative. The importance of the laws, paſſed this ſeſſion, even before news arrived of the violent reſolutions taken at Rome, is ſufficient to juſtify this opinion.

ALL payments made to the apoſtolic chamber; all proviſions, bulls, diſpenſations, were aboliſhed: Monaſteries were ſubjected to the viſitation and government of the King alone: The law for puniſhing heretics was moderated; the ordinary was prohibited to impriſon or try any perſon upon ſuſpicion alone, without preſentment by two lawful witneſſes; and it was declared, that to ſpeak againſt the pope's authority was no hereſy: Biſhops were to be appointed, by a *congé d'elire* from the crown, or in caſe of the dean and chapter's refuſal, by letters patent; and no recourſe was to be had to Rome for palls, bulls, or proviſions: Campeggio and Ghinucci, two Italians, were deprived of the biſhoprics of Saliſbury and Worceſter, which they had hitherto enjoyed *: The law which had been formerly made againſt paying annates or firſt fruits, but which had been left in the King's power to ſuſpend or inforce, was finally eſtabliſhed: And a ſubmiſſion, which was exacted two years before from the clergy, and which had been obtained with great difficulty, received this ſeſſion the ſanction of Parliament †. In this ſubmiſſion, the clergy acknowledge, that convocations ought only to be aſſembled by the King's authority; they promiſe to enact no new canons without his conſent; and they agree, that he ſhould appoint thirty-two commiſſioners, in order to examine the old canons, and abrogate ſuch as ſhould

‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 144. * Le Neve's Faſti Eccleſ. Ang. † 25 H. 8. c. 19.

be

be found prejudicial to his royal prerogative ‡. An appeal was alſo allowed from the biſhop's court to the King in Chancery. Chap. IV. 1534.

But the moſt important law paſſed this ſeſſion, was that which regulated the ſucceſſion to the crown: The marriage of the King with Catherine was declared unlawful, void, and of no effect: The primate's ſentence, annulling it, was ratified: And the marriage with Queen Anne was eſtabliſhed and confirmed. The crown was appointed to deſcend to the iſſue of that marriage, and failing them to the King's heirs for ever. An oath likewiſe was ordered to be taken in favour of this ſucceſſion, under the penalty of impriſonment during the King's pleaſure, and forfeiture of goods and chattels. And all ſlander againſt the King, Queen, or their iſſue, was ſubjected to the penalty of miſpriſion of treaſon. After theſe compliances, the Parliament was prorogued; and thoſe acts, ſo contemptuous towards the pope, and ſo deſtructive of his authority, were paſſed at the very time that Clement pronounced his haſty ſentence againſt the King. Henry's reſentment againſt Queen Catherine, on account of her obſtinacy, was the reaſon why he excluded her daughter from all hopes of ſucceeding to the crown; contrary to his firſt intention, when he began the ſuit of divorce, and of diſpenſation for a ſecond marriage. 30th March.

The King found his eccleſiaſtical ſubjects as compliant as the laity. The convocation ordered, that the act againſt appeals to Rome, together with the King's appeal from the pope to a general council, ſhould be affixed to the doors of all the churches in the kingdom: And they voted, that the biſhop of Rome had, by the law of God, no more juriſdiction in England than any other foreign biſhop; and that the authority, which he and his predeceſſors had exerciſed there, was only by uſurpation and the ſufferance of Engliſh princes. Four perſons only oppoſed this vote in the lower houſe, and one doubted. It paſſed unanimouſly in the upper. The biſhops went ſo far in their complaiſance, that they took out new commiſſions from the crown, where all their ſpiritual and epiſcopal authority was expreſsly affirmed to be derived ultimately from the civil magiſtrate, and to be entirely dependent on his good pleaſure †.

The oath regarding the ſucceſſion was generally ſworn throughout the kingdom. Fiſher, biſhop of Rocheſter, and Sir Thomas More, were the only perſons of note, who entertained ſcruples with regard to its legality. Fiſher was obnoxious on account of ſome practices, into which his credulity, rather than any bad intentions, ſeems to have betrayed him. But More was the perſon of greateſt reputation in the kingdom for virtue and integrity; and as it was be-

‡ Collier, vol. ii. p. 69, 70. † Collier's Eccl. Hiſt. vol. ii.

Chap. IV. 1534.

lieved, that his authority would have influence on the ſentiments of others, great pains were taken to convince him of the lawfulneſs of the oath. He declared, that he had no ſcruple with regard to the ſucceſſion, and thought that the Parliament had full power to ſettle it: He offered to draw an oath himſelf, which would aſſure his allegiance to the heir appointed; but he refuſed the oath preſcribed by law; becauſe the preamble of that oath aſſerted the legality of the King's marriage with Anne, and thereby implied, that his former marriage with Catherine was unlawful and invalid. Cranmer, the primate, and Cromwel, now ſecretary of ſtate, who highly loved and eſteemed More, earneſtly ſolicited him to lay aſide his ſcruples; and their friendly entreaties ſeemed to weigh more with him, than all the penalties attending his refuſal *. He perſiſted however, in a mild, though firm manner, to maintain his reſolution; and the King, irritated againſt him as well as Fiſher, ordered them both to be indicted upon the ſtatute, and committed priſoners to the Tower.

3d November.

THE Parliament, being again aſſembled, conferred on the King the title of the only ſupreme *head* on earth of the church of England; as they had already inveſted him with all the real power belonging to it. In this memorable act, the Parliament granted him power, or rather acknowledged his inherent power, "to "viſit, and repreſs, redreſs, reform, order, correct, reſtrain, or amend all errors, "hereſies, abuſes, offences, contempts and enormities, which fell under any "ſpiritual authority or juriſdiction †." They alſo declared it treaſon to attempt, imagine, or ſpeak evil againſt the King, Queen, or his heirs, or to endeavour the depriving them of their dignities or titles. They gave him a right to all the annates and tythes of benefices, which had formerly been paid to the court of Rome. They granted him a ſubſidy and a fifteenth. They attainted More and Fiſher for miſpriſion of treaſon. And they compleated the union of England and Wales, by giving to that principality all the benefit of the Engliſh laws.

THUS the authority of the popes, like all exorbitant power, was ruined by the exceſs of its acquiſitions, and by ſtretching its pretenſions beyond what it was poſſible for any human principles or prepoſſeſſions to ſuſtain. The right of granting indulgences had in former ages contributed extremely to enrich the holy ſee; but being openly abuſed, they ſerved to excite the firſt commotions and oppoſitions in Germany. The prerogative of granting diſpenſations had alſo contributed much to attach all the ſovereign princes and great families in Europe to the papal authority; but meeting with an unlucky concurrence of circumſtances, was now the cauſe, why England ſeparated herſelf from the Romiſh communion. The acknowledgment of the King's ſupremacy introduced there a greater ſimplicity into

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 156. † 26 H. 8. c. 1.

the government, by uniting the ſpiritual with the civil power, and preventing diſputes about limits, which never could be exactly determined between the contending parties. A way was alſo prepared for checking the exorbitancy of ſuperſtition, and breaking thoſe ſhackles, by which all human reaſon, policy, and induſtry had ſo long been incumbred. The prince, it may be ſuppoſed, being head of the religion, as well as of the temporal juriſdiction of the kingdom, tho' he might ſometimes employ the former as an engine of government, had no intereſt, like the Roman pontiff, in nouriſhing its exceſſive growth; and, except when blinded by ignorance or bigotry, would be ſure to retain it within tolerable limits, and prevent its abuſes. And on the whole, there followed from theſe revolutions very beneficial conſequences; tho' perhaps neither foreſeen nor intended by the perſons who had the chief hand in conducting them. Chap. IV. 1534.

WHILE Henry proceeded with ſo much order and tranquillity in changing the antient religion, and while his authority ſeemed entirely ſecure in England, he was held in ſome inquietude by the ſtate of affairs in Ireland and in Scotland.

THE earl of Kildare was deputy of Ireland, under the duke of Richmond, the King's natural ſon, who bore the title of lieutenant; and as Kildare was accuſed of ſome violences againſt the family of Oſſory, his hereditary enemy, he was called over to anſwer for his conduct. He left his authority in the hands of his ſon, who hearing that his father was thrown into priſon, and was in danger of his life, immediately took up arms, and joining himſelf to Oneale, Ocarrol, and other Iriſh nobility, committed many ravages, murdered Allen, archbiſhop of Dublin, and laid ſiege to that city. Old Kildare meanwhile died in priſon, and his ſon, perſevering in his revolt, made applications to the emperor, who promiſed him aſſiſtance. The King was obliged to ſend over ſome forces to Ireland, which ſo harraſſed the rebels, that Kildare, finding the emperor backward in fulfilling his promiſes, was reduced to the neceſſity of ſurrendering himſelf priſoner to lord Leonard Gray, the new deputy, brother to the marquiſs of Dorſet. He was ſent over to England, together with his five uncles; and after trial and conviction, they were all brought to public juſtice; tho' two of the uncles, in order to ſave the family, had pretended to join the King's party.

THE earl of Angus had acquired the entire aſcendant in Scotland, and having got poſſeſſion of the King's perſon, then in early youth, he was able, by means of that advantage, and by employing the power of his own family, to retain the reins of government. The queen dowager, however, his ſpouſe, bred him great diſturbance: For having ſeparated herſelf from him, on account of ſome jealouſies and diſguſts, and having procured a divorce, ſhe had married another

Chap. IV. 1534. another man of quality of the name of Stuart; and ſhe joined all the diſcontented nobility, who oppoſed Angus's authority. James himſelf was diſſatisfied with the ſlavery, to which he was reduced; and by ſecret correſpondence, he excited firſt Walter Scot, then the earl of Lenox, to attempt, by force of arms, to free him from the hands of Angus. Both enterprizes failed of ſucceſs; but James, impatient of reſtraint, found means at laſt of flying to Stirling, where his mother then reſided; and having ſummoned all the nobility to attend him, he overturned the authority of the Douglaſſes, and obliged Angus and his brother to fly into England, where they were protected by Henry. The King of Scotland, being now arrived at years of majority, took the government into his own hands; and employed himſelf with great ſpirit and valour, in repreſſing thoſe feuds, ravages, and diſorders, which, tho' they diſturbed the courſe of public juſtice, ſerved to ſupport the martail ſpirit of the Scots, and contributed, by that means, to maintain national independancy. He was deſirous of renewing the antient league with the French nation; but finding Francis in cloſe union with England, and on that account ſomewhat cold in hearkening to his propoſals, he received the more favourably the advances of the emperor, who hoped, by means of ſuch an ally, to breed diſturbance to England. He offered the Scots King the choice of three princeſſes, his near relations, and all of the name of Mary; his ſiſter the dowager of Hungary, his niece a daughter of Portugal, or his couſin, the daughter of Henry; whom he pretended to diſpoſe of unknown to her father. James was more inclined to the latter propoſal, had it not, upon reflection, been found impracticable; and his natural propenſity to France at laſt prevailed over all other conſiderations. The alliance with Francis neceſſarily engaged James to agree to terms of peace with England. But tho' invited by his uncle, Henry, to confer with him at Newcaſtle, and concert common meaſures for repreſſing the eccleſiaſtics in both kingdoms, and ſhaking off the yoke of Rome, he could not be prevailed with to put himſelf in the King's power. In order to have a pretext for refuſing the conference, he applied to the pope, and obtained a brief, forbidding him to engage in any perſonal negotiations with an enemy of the holy ſee. By theſe meaſures, Henry eaſily concluded, that he could very little depend on the friendſhip of his nephew. But thoſe events took not place till ſome time after our preſent period.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Religious principles of the people —— of the King —— of the miniſters. —— Farther progreſs of the reformation. —— Sir Thomas More. —— —— The maid of Kent. —— Trial and execution of Fiſher biſhop of Rocheſter —— of Sir Thomas More. —— King excommunicated. —— Death of Queen Catherine. —— Suppreſſion of the leſſer monaſteries. —— A Parliament. —— A convocation. —— Tranſlation of the Bible. —— Diſgrace of Queen Anne. —— Her trial —— and execution. —— A Parliament. —— A Convocation. —— Diſcontents among the people. —— Inſurrection. —— Birth of prince Edward, and death of Queen Jane. —— Suppreſſion of the greater monaſteries. —— Cardinal Pole.

Chap. V. 1534.

Religious principles of the people.

THE antient and almoſt uninterrupted oppoſition of intereſt between the laity and clergy in England, and between the Engliſh clergy and the court of Rome, had ſufficiently prepared the nation for a breach with the Roman pontiff; and men had penetration enough to diſcover abuſes, which were plainly calculated for the temporal advantages of the hierarchy, and which they found deſtructive of their own. Theſe ſubjects ſeem proportioned to human underſtanding; and even the people, who felt the power of intereſt in their own breaſts, could perceive the purpoſe of thoſe numerous inventions, which the intereſted ſpirit of the ſovereign pontiff had introduced into religion. But when the reformers proceeded thence to diſpute concerning the nature of the ſacraments, the operations of grace, the terms of acceptance with the Deity, men were thrown into amazement, and were, during ſome time, at a loſs how to chuſe their party. The profound ignorance, in which both the clergy and laity formerly lived, and their freedom from theological altercations, had produced a ſincere, but indolent acquieſcence in received opinions; and the multitude were neither attached to them by topics of reaſoning, nor by thoſe prejudices and antipathies againſt opponents, which have ever a more natural and powerful influence over them. As ſoon as a new opinion therefore was advanced, ſupported by ſuch an authority as to call up their attention, they felt their capacity totally unfitted for ſuch diſquiſitions; and they perpetually fluctuated between the contending parties. Hence the ſudden and violent movements by which the

Chap. V. 1534. people were agitated, even in the moſt oppoſite directions: Hence their ſeeming proſtitution in ſacrificing to preſent power the moſt ſacred principles: And hence the rapid progreſs during ſome time, and the ſudden as well as entire check given afterwards to the new doctrines. When men were once ſettled in their particular ſects, and had fortified themſelves in an habitual deteſtation againſt thoſe eſteemed heretics, they adhered with more obſtinacy to the principles of their education; and the limits of the two religions remained thenceforth fixed and unchangeable.

NOTHING forwarded more the firſt progreſs of the reformers, than the offer, which they made, of ſubmitting all religious doctrines to private judgment, and the ſummons given every one to examine the principles formerly impoſed upon him. Tho' the multitude were totally unqualified for this undertaking, they yet were highly pleaſed with it. They fancied that they were exerciſing their judgment; while they oppoſed to the prejudices of ancient authority more powerful prejudices of another kind. The novelty itſelf of the doctrines; the pleaſure of an imaginary triumph in diſpute; the fervent zeal of the reformed preachers; their patience, and even alacrity, in ſuffering perſecution, death, and torments; a diſguſt againſt the reſtraints of the old religion; an indignation againſt the tyranny and intereſted ſpirit of the eccleſiaſtics; theſe motives were prevalent with the people, and by ſuch conſiderations were men ſo generally induced during that age, to throw off the religion of their anceſtors.

BUT in proportion as the practice of ſubmitting religion to private judgment was acceptable to the people, it appeared, in ſome reſpects, dangerous to the rights of ſovereigns, and ſeemed to deſtroy that implicit obedience on which the authority of the civil magiſtrate is chiefly founded. The very precedent of ſhaking ſuch an ancient and deep founded eſtabliſhment as that of the Roman hierarchy might, it was apprehended, prepare the way for other innovations. The republican ſpirit, which naturally took place among the reformers, increaſed this jealouſy. The furious inſurrections of the populace, excited by Muncer and other anabaptiſts in Germany *, furniſhed a new pretence for decrying the reformation. Nor ought we to conclude, becauſe proteſtants in our time prove as dutiful ſubjects as thoſe of any other religion, that therefore ſuch apprehenſions were altogether without any appearance or plauſibility. Tho' the liberty of private judgment be tendered to the diſciples of the reformation, it is not in reality accepted of; and men are generally contented to acquieſce in thoſe eſtabliſhments, however new, into which their early education has thrown them.

No prince in Europe was poſſeſſed of ſuch abſolute authority as Henry, not even the pope himſelf, in his own capital, where he united both the civil and

* Sleidan, lib. 4. & 5.

eccleſiaſtical

ecclesiastical powers †; and there was small likelihood, that any doctrine, which lay under the imputation of encouraging sedition, could ever pretend to his favour and countenance. But besides this political jealousy, there was another reason which inspired this imperious monarch with an aversion to the reformers. He had early declared his sentiments against Luther; and having entered the lists in those scholastic quarrels, he had received, from his courtiers and theologians, infinite applause for his performance. Elated by this imaginary success, and blinded by a natural arrogance and obstinacy of temper, he had entertained the most lofty opinion of his own erudition, and he received with impatience, mixed with contempt, any contradiction to his sentiments. Luther also had been so imprudent, as to treat in a very indecent manner his royal antagonist; and tho' he afterwards made the humblest submissions to Henry, and apologized for the vehemence of his former expressions, he never could efface the hatred which the King had conceived against him and his doctrines. The idea of heresy still appeared detestable as well as formidable to that prince; and whilst his resentment against the see of Rome had removed one considerable part of his early prejudices, he had made it a point of honour never to relinquish the rest. Separate as he stood from the Catholic church, and from the Roman pontiff, the head of it, he still valued himself on maintaining the Catholic doctrine, and on guarding, by fire and sword, the imagined purity of his speculative principles.

Chap. V. 1534.

Of the King.

HENRY's ministers and courtiers were of as motley a character as his conduct; and seemed to waver, during this whole reign, between the ancient and the new religion. The Queen, engaged by interest as well as inclination, favoured the cause of the reformers: Cromwel, who was created secretary of state, and who was every day advancing in the King's confidence, had embraced the same views; and as he was a man of prudence and ability, he was able, very effectually, tho' in a covert manner, to promote the late innovations: Cranmer, archbishop of Canterbury, had secretly adopted the protestant tenets; and he had gained Henry's friendship by his candour and sincerity; virtues which he possessed in as eminent a degree as those times, equally distracted with faction and oppressed with tyranny, could easily permit. On the other hand, the duke of Norfolk adhered to

Of the ministers.

† Here are the terms in which the King's minister expressed himself to the pope. An non, inquam, sanctitas vestra plerosque habet quibuscum arcanum aliquid crediderit, putet id non minus celatum esse quam si uno tantum pectore contineretur; quod multo magis serenissimo Angliæ Regi evenire debet, cui singuli in suo regno sunt subjecti, neque etiam velint, possunt Regi non esse fidelissimi. Væ namque illis, si vel parvo momento ab illius voluntate recederent. Le Grand, tom. iii. p. 113. The King once said publicly before the council, that if any one spoke of him or his actions, in terms which became them not, he would let them know, that he was master. Et qu'il n'y auroit si belle tete qu'il ne fit voler. Id. p. 218.

Chap. V. 1534.

the ancient faith; and by the greatneſs of his rank, as well as by his talents, both for peace and war, he had great weight in the King's council: Gardiner, lately created biſhop of Wincheſter, had inliſted himſelf in the ſame party; and the ſuppleneſs of his character, and the dexterity of his conduct had rendered him extremely uſeful to it.

All theſe miniſters, while they ſtood in the moſt irreconcilable oppoſition of principles, were obliged to diſguiſe their particular opinions, and to pretend an entire agreement with the ſentiments of their maſter. Cromwel and Cranmer ſtill carried the appearance of a conformity to the ancient ſpeculative tenets; but they artfully made uſe of Henry's reſentment to widen the breach with the ſee of Rome. Norfolk and Gardiner feigned an aſſent to the King's ſupremacy, and to his renunciation of the ſovereign pontiff; but they encouraged his paſſion for the Catholic faith, and inſtigated him to puniſh thoſe daring heretics, who had preſumed to reject his theological principles. Both ſides hoped, by their unlimited compliance, to bring him over to their party: The King meanwhile, who held the balance between the factions, was enabled, by the courtſhip payed him both by proteſtants and catholics, to aſſume an immeaſurable authority: And tho' in all theſe meaſures he was really driven by his ungoverned humour, he caſually held a courſe, which led more certainly to arbitrary power, than any which the moſt profound politics could have traced out to him. Artifice, refinement, and hypocriſy, in his ſituation, would have put both parties on their guard againſt him, and would have taught them reſerve in complying with a monarch, whom they could never hope thoroughly to have gained: But while the frankneſs, ſincerity, and openneſs of Henry's temper were generally known, as well as the dominion of his furious paſſions; each ſide dreaded to loſe him by the ſmalleſt oppoſition, and flattered themſelves that a blind compliance with his will, would throw him, cordially and fully, into their intereſts.

The ambiguity of the King's conduct, tho' it kept the courtiers in awe, ſerved to encourage the proteſtant doctrine among his ſubjects, and promoted that ſpirit of innovation with which the age was generally ſeized, and which nothing but an intire uniformity, as well as a ſteady ſeverity in the adminiſtration, could be able to repreſs. There were ſome Engliſhmen, Tindal, Joye, Conſtantine, and others, who, dreading the exertion of the King's authority, had fled to Antwerp‡; where the great privileges poſſeſſed by the Low Country provinces, ſerved, during ſome time, to give them protection. Theſe men employed themFarther progreſs of the reformation.
ſelves in writing books, in Engliſh, againſt the corruptions of the church of Rome; againſt images, reliques, pilgrimages; and they excited the curioſity of

‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 159.

men with regard to that queſtion, the moſt important in theology, the terms of acceptance with the Supreme Being. In conformity to the Lutherans and other proteſtants, they aſſerted, that ſalvation was obtained by faith alone; and that the moſt infallible road to perdition * was a reliance on *good works*; by which terms they underſtood, as well the moral duties, as the ceremonial and monaſtic obſervances. The defenders of the ancient religion, on the other hand, maintained the efficacy of *good works*; but tho' they did not exclude from this appellation the ſocial virtues, it was ſtill the ſuperſtitions, gainful to the church, which they chiefly extolled and recommended. The books, compoſed by theſe fugitives, having ſtole over to England, began to make converts every where; but it was a tranſlation of the ſcriptures by Tindal, that was eſteemed moſt dangerous to the eſtabliſhed faith. The firſt edition of this work, compoſed with little accuracy, was found liable to conſiderable objections; and Tindal, who was poor, and could not afford to loſe a great part of the impreſſion, was longing for an opportunity of correcting his errors, of which he had been made ſenſible. Tonſtal, then biſhop of London, ſoon after of Durham, a man of great moderation, being deſirous to diſcourage, in the gentleſt manner, theſe innovations, gave private orders for buying up all the copies, which could be found at Antwerp; and he burnt them publicly in Cheapſide. By this contrivance, he ſupplied Tindal with money, enabled him to print a new and correct edition of his work, and gave occaſion to great ſcandal and reproach, in thus committing to the flames the word of God †. Chap. V. 1534.

THE diſciples of the reformation met with little ſeverity during the miniſtry of Wolſey, who, tho' himſelf a clergyman, bore too ſmall regard to the eccleſiaſtical order, to ſerve as an inſtrument of their tyranny: It was even an article of impeachment againſt him ‡, that by his connivance he had encouraged the growth of hereſy, and that he had protected and acquitted ſome notorious offenders. Sir Thomas More, who ſucceeded Wolſey as chancellor, is at once an object deſerving our compaſſion, and an inſtance of the uſual progreſs of mens ſentiments during that age. This man, whoſe elegant genius and familiar acquaintance with the noble ſpirit of antiquity, had given him very enlarged ſentiments, and who had in his early years advanced principles, which even at preſent would Sir Thomas More.

* Sacrilegium eſt & impietas velle placere Deo per opera & non per ſolam fidem. *Luther adverſus regem.* Ita vides quam dives ſit homo chriſtianus ſive baptizatus, qui etiam volens non poteſt perdere ſalutem ſuam quantiſcunque peccatis. Nulla enim peccata poſſunt eum damnare niſi incredulitas. *Id. de captivitate Babylonica.*

† Hall, fol. 186. Fox, vol. i. p. 138. Burnet, vol. i. p. 159.

‡ Articles of impeachment in Herbert. Burnet.

Chap. V. 1534. be deemed ſomewhat libertine, had, in the courſe of events, been ſo irritated by polemics, and thrown into ſuch a ſuperſtitious attachment to the ancient faith, that few inquiſitors have been guilty of greater violence in their proſecutions of hereſy. Tho' adorned with the gentleſt manners, as well as the pureſt integrity, he carried to the utmoſt height his averſion to heterodoxy; and James Bainham, in particular, a gentleman of the temple, experienced from him the higheſt ſeverity. Bainham, accuſed of favouring the new opinions, was carried to More's houſe, and having refuſed to diſcover his accomplices, the chancellor ordered him to be whipt in his preſence, and afterwards ſent him to the Tower, where he himſelf ſaw him put to the torture. The unhappy gentleman, overcome by all theſe ſeverities, abjured his opinions; but feeling afterwards the deepeſt compunction for this apoſtacy, he openly returned to his former tenets, and even courted the crown of martyrdom. He was condemned as an obſtinate and relapſed heretic, and was burned in Smithfield *.

MANY were brought into the biſhops courts for offences, which appear very trivial, but which were regarded as ſymbols of the party: Some for teaching their children the Lord's prayer in Engliſh; others for reading the new teſtament in that language, or for ſpeaking againſt pilgrimages. To harbour the perſecuted preachers, to neglect the faſts of the church, to declaim againſt the vices of the clergy, were capital offences. One Thomas Bilney, a prieſt, who had embraced the new doctrine, had been terrified into an abjuration; but was ſo haunted by remorſe, that his friends dreaded ſome fatal effects of his deſpair. At laſt, his mind ſeemed to be more compoſed; but this appearing calm proceeded only from the reſolution which he had taken, of expiating his paſt offence, by an open confeſſion of the truth, and by dying a martyr to it. He went thro' Norfolk, teaching every where the people to beware of idolatry, and of truſting either to pilgrimages, or to the cowle of St. Francis, to the prayers of the ſaints, or to images. He was ſoon ſeized, tried in the biſhop's court, and condemned as a relapſed heretic; and the writ was ſent down to burn him. When brought to the ſtake, he diſcovered ſuch patience, fortitude, and devotion, that the ſpectators were much affected with the horrors of his puniſhment; and ſome Mendicant friars, who were preſent, fearing that his death would be imputed to them, and make them loſe thoſe alms, which they received from the charity of the people, deſired him publicly to acquit them † of having any hand in his death. He very willingly complied; and by this meekneſs gained the more on the ſympathy of the people. Another perſon, ſtill more heroic, being brought to the ſtake for denying the real preſence, ſeemed almoſt in a tranſport of joy; and he

* Fox. Burnet, vol. i. p. 165. † Ibid. p. 164.

tenderly

tenderly embraced the faggots, which were to be the inſtruments of his puniſhment, as the means of procuring him eternal reſt. In ſhort, the tide turning towards the new doctrine, thoſe ſevere executions, which, in another diſpoſition of mens minds, would have ſufficed to ſuppreſs it, now ſerved only the more to diffuſe it among the people, and to inſpire them with horror againſt the unrelenting perſecutors. Chap. V. 1534.

But tho' Henry neglected not to puniſh the proteſtant doctrine, which he eſteemed hereſy, his moſt formidable enemies, he knew, were the zealous adherents to the ancient religion, chiefly the monks, who, having their immediate dependance on the Roman pontiff, apprehended their own ruin to be the certain conſequence of aboliſhing his authority in England. Peyto, a friar, preaching before the King, had the aſſurance to tell him, "That many lying prophets "had deceived him, but he, as a true Micajah, warned him, that the dogs "would lick his blood, as they had done Ahab's ‡." The King took no notice of this inſult; but allowed the preacher to depart in peace. Next Sunday, he employed Dr. Corren to preach before him; who juſtified the King's proceedings, and gave Peyto the appellations of a rebel, a ſlanderer, a dog, and a traytor. Elſton, another friar of the ſame houſe, interrupted the preacher; and told him, that he was one of the lying prophets, who ſought to eſtabliſh by adultery the ſucceſſion to the crown; but that he himſelf would juſtify all that Peyto had ſaid. Henry ſilenced this petulant friar; but ſhowed no other mark of reſentment than ordering Peyto and him to be ſummoned before the council, and to be rebuked for their offence †. He even here bore patiently ſome new inſtances of their obſtinacy and arrogance. For when the earl of Eſſex, a privy counſellor, told them, that they deſerved for their offence to be thrown into the Thames; Elſton replied, that the road to heaven lay as near by water as by land ‖.

But ſeveral monks were detected in a conſpiracy, which, as it might have proved more dangerous to the King, was, on its diſcovery, attended with more fatal conſequences to themſelves. Elizabeth Barton, of Aldington, in Kent, commonly called the *holy Maid of Kent*, had been ſubject to hyſterical fits, which threw her body into unuſual convulſions; and having produced an equal diſorder in her mind, made her utter ſtrange ſayings, which, as ſhe was ſcarce conſcious of them during the time, had ſoon after entirely eſcaped her memory. The ſilly people in the neighbourhood were ſtruck with theſe appearances, which they imagined to be ſupernatural; and Richard Maſters, vicar of the pariſh, a deſigning fellow, The Maid of Kent.

‡ Strype, vol. i. p. 167. † Collier, vol. ii. p. 86. Burnet, vol. i. p. 151.
‖ Stowe, p. 562.

founded

Chap. V. 1534. founded on them a project, by which he hoped to draw both profit and consideration to himself. He went to Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, who was at that time alive; and having given him an account of Elizabeth's revelations, he so far wrought on that prudent, but superstitious prelate, as to receive orders from him to watch her in her trances, and to note down carefully all her future speeches. The regard paid her by a person of so high a rank, soon rendered her still more the object of attention to the neighbourhood; and it was easy for Masters to persuade them, as well as the maid herself, that her ravings were inspirations of the Holy Ghost. Knavery, as is usual, soon after succeeding to illusion, she learned to counterfeit trances; and she then utterred, in an extraordinary tone of voice, such speeches as were dictated to her by her spiritual director. Masters associated with him Dr. Bocking, a canon of Canterbury; and their design was to raise the credit of an image of the virgin, which stood in a chapel belonging to Masters, and to draw such pilgrimages to it as usually frequented the more famous images and reliques. In prosecution of this design, Elizabeth pretended revelations, which directed her to have recourse to that image for a cure; and being brought before it, in the presence of a great multitude, she fell anew into convulsions; and after distorting her limbs and countenance during a competent time, she affected to have obtained a perfect recovery by the interceffion of the virgin *. This miracle was soon bruited abroad; and the two priests, finding the imposture to succeed beyond their own expectations, began to extend their views, and to lay the foundation of more important enterprizes. They taught their penitent to declaim against the new doctrines, which she denominated heresy; against innovations in ecclesiastical government; and against the King's divorce from Catherine. She went so far as to assert, that, if he prosecuted that design, and married another, he should not be a King a month longer, and should not an hour longer possess the favour of the Almighty, but should die the death of a villain. Many monks throughout England, either from folly, or roguery, or from faction, which is often a complication of both, entered into this delusion; and one Deering, a friar, wrote a book of the revelations and prophecies of Elizabeth †. Miracles were daily added, to encrease the wonder; and the pulpit every where resounded with accounts of the sanctity and inspirations of this new propheteſs. Messages were carried from her to Queen Catherine, by which that princess was exhorted to persist in her opposition to the divorce; the pope's ambassadors gave encouragement to the popular credulity; and even Fisher, bishop of Rochester, tho' a man of sense and learning, was carried away with an opinion

* Stowe, p. 570. Blanquet's Epitome of Chronicles. † Strype, vol. i. p. 181.

so

ſo favourable to the party, which he had embraced ‡. The King at laſt began to think the matter worthy of his attention; and having ordered Elizabeth and her accomplices to be arreſted, he brought them before the ſtar-chamber, where they freely, without being put to the torture, made confeſſion of their guilt. The Parliament, in the ſeſſion held the beginning of this year, paſſed an act of attainder againſt ſome who were engaged in this treaſonable impoſture *; and Elizabeth herſelf, Maſters, Bocking, Deering, Rich, Riſby, Gold, ſuffered for their crime. The biſhop of Rocheſter, Abel, Addiſon, Laurence, and ſome others, were condemned for miſpriſion of treaſon; becauſe they had not diſcovered ſome criminal ſpeeches which they heard from Elizabeth †: And they were thrown into priſon. The better to undeceive the multitude, the forgery of many of the propheteſs's miracles was detected; and even the ſcandalous proſtitution of her manners was laid open to the public. Thoſe paſſions, which ſo naturally inſinuate themſelves amidſt the warm intimacies maintained by the devotees of different ſexes, had taken place between Elizabeth and her confederates; and it was found, that a door to her dormitory, which was ſaid to have been miraculouſly opened, in order to give her acceſs to the chapel, for the ſake of frequent converſe with heaven, had been contrived by Bocking and Maſters for leſs refined purpoſes. Chap. V. 1534.

THE detection of an impoſture, attended with ſo many odious circumſtances, hurt much the credit of the eccleſiaſtics, particularly of the monks, and inſtigated the King to take vengeance on them. He ſuppreſſed three monaſteries of the Obſervantine friars; and finding that little clamor was excited by this act of power, he was the more encouraged to lay his rapacious hands on the reſt. Meanwhile, he exerciſed puniſhment on individuals, who were obnoxious to him. The Parliament had made it treaſon to endeavour the depriving the King of his dignity or titles: They had lately added to his other titles, that of ſupreme head of the church: It was inferred, that to deny his ſupremacy was treaſon; and many priors and eccleſiaſtics loſt their lives for this new ſpecies of crime. It was certainly a high inſtance of tyranny to make the mere delivery of a political opinion, eſpecially one that nowiſe affected the King's temporal right, to be a capital offence, tho' attended with no overt act; and the Parliament, in paſſing this law had overlooked all the principles by which a civilized, much more a free people, ſhould be governed: But the violence of changing ſo ſuddenly the whole ſyſtem of government, and the making it treaſon to deny what, during many ages, it had been hereſy to aſſert, is an event which may appear ſomewhat extraordinary. Even the ſtern, unrelenting mind of Henry was, at firſt, ſhocked 1535.

‡ Collier, vol. ii. p. 87.
† Godwin's Annals, p. 53.
* 25 Hen. 8. c. 12. Burnet, vol. i. p. 149. Hall, fol. 220.

with

Chap. V. 1534. with theſe ſanguinary meaſures; and he went ſo far as to change his garb and dreſs, pretending ſorrow for the neceſſity, by which he was puſhed to ſuch extremities. Still impelled, however, by his violent temper, and deſirous of ſtriking a terror into the whole nation, he proceeded, by making examples of Fiſher and More, to conſummate his lawleſs tyranny.

Trial and execution of Fiſher, biſhop of Rocheſter.

JOHN FISHER, biſhop of Rocheſter, was a prelate, eminent for his learning and morals, no leſs than for his eccleſiaſtical dignities, and for the high favour which he had long poſſeſſed with the King. When he was thrown into priſon, on account of his refuſing the oath of ſucceſſion, and his concealment of Elizabeth Barton's treaſonable ſpeeches, he had not only been deprived of all his revenues, but ſtripped of his very cloaths, and, without conſideration of his extreme age, was allowed nothing but rags, which ſcarce ſufficed to cover his nakedneſs *. In this condition, he lay in priſon above a twelvemonth; when the pope, willing to recompenſe the ſufferings of ſo faithful an adherent, created him a cardinal; tho' Fiſher was ſo careleſs of that dignity, that even if the purple were lying on the ground, he declared that he would not ſtoop to take it. This promotion of a man, merely for his oppoſition to royal authority, rouzed the indignation of the King; and he reſolved to make the innocent perſon feel the effects of his reſentment. Fiſher was indicted for denying the King's ſupremacy, was tried, condemned, and beheaded.

22d of June.

Of Sir Thomas More.

THE execution of this prelate was intended as a warning to More, whoſe compliance, on account of his great authority both abroad and at home, and his high reputation for learning and virtue, was anxiouſly deſired by the King. That prince alſo bore as great perſonal affection and regard to More, as his imperious mind, the ſport of paſſions, was ſuſceptible of towards a man, who in any particular oppoſed his violent inclinations. But More could never be prevailed on to acknowledge any opinion ſo contrary to his principles as that of the King's ſupremacy; and tho' Henry exacted that compliance from the whole nation, there was, as yet, no law obliging any one to take an oath to that purpoſe. Rich, the ſolicitor general, was ſent to confer with More, then a priſoner, who kept a cautious ſilence with regard to the ſupremacy. He was only inveigled to ſay, that any queſtion with regard to the law, which eſtabliſhed that prerogative, was like a two-edged ſword: If a perſon anſwer one way, it will confound his ſoul; if another, it will deſtroy his body. No more was wanted to found an indictment of high treaſon againſt the priſoner. His ſilence was called malicious, and made a part of his crime; and theſe words, which had caſually dropped from him,

* Fuller's Church Hiſt. book v. p. 203.

were

were interpreted as a denial of the ſupremacy *. Trials were mere formalities during this reign: The jury gave ſentence againſt More, who had long expected this fate, and who needed no preparation to fortify him againſt the terrors of death. Not only his conſtancy, but even his cheerfulneſs, nay, his uſual facetiouſneſs, never forſook him; and he made a ſacrifice of his life to his integrity with the ſame indifference that he maintained in any ordinary occurrence. When he was mounting the ſcaffold, he ſaid to one, "Friend, help me up, and when "I go down again let me ſhift for myſelf." The executioner aſking him forgiveneſs, he granted the requeſt, but told him, "You will never get credit by "beheading me, my neck is ſo ſhort." Then laying his head on the block, he bid the executioner ſtay till he put aſide his beard: "For," ſaid he, "it never com-"mitted treaſon." Nothing was wanting to the glory of this end, except a better cauſe, more free from weakneſs and ſuperſtition. But as the man followed his principles and ſenſe of duty, however miſguided, his conſtancy and integrity are equally objects of our admiration. He was beheaded in the fifty-third year of his age. Chap. V. 1535. 6th July.

When the execution of Fiſher and More was reported at Rome, eſpecially that of the former, who was inveſted with the dignity of cardinal, every one diſcovered the moſt violent rage againſt the King; and numerous libels were publiſhed, by the wits and orators of Italy, comparing him to Caligula, Nero, Domitian, and all the moſt unrelenting tyrants of antiquity. Clement the ſeventh had died about ſix months after he pronounced ſentence againſt the King; and Paul the third, of the name of Farneſe, had ſucceeded to the papal throne. This pontiff, who had always favoured Henry's cauſe while a cardinal, had hoped, that, perſonal animoſities being buried with his predeceſſor, it might not be impoſſible to form an agreement with England: And Henry himſelf was ſo deſirous of accommodating matters, that in a negotiation, which he entered into with Francis a little before this time, he required, that that monarch ſhould conciliate a friendſhip between him and the court of Rome. But Henry was accuſtomed to preſcribe, not to receive terms; and even while he was negotiating peace, his uſual violence often carried him to commit offences, which rendered the quarrel totally incurable. The execution of Fiſher was regarded by Paul, as ſo capital an injury, that he immediately paſſed cenſures againſt the King, citing him and all his adherents to appear in Rome within ninety days, in order to anſwer for their crimes: If they failed, he excommunicated them; deprived the King of his realm; ſubjected the kingdom to an interdict; declared his iſſue by Anne Boleyn illegitimate; diſſolved all leagues which any catholic princes had made with him; gave his kingdom to any invader; commanded the nobility to take arms againſt him; freed 30th Auguſt. King excommunicated.

* More's Life of Sir Thomas More. Herbert, p. 393.

Chap. V. 1535. his subjects from all oaths of allegiance; cut off their commerce with foreign states; and declared it lawful for any one to seize them, to make slaves of their persons, and to convert their effects to his own use *. But tho' these censures were passed, they were not at that time openly denounced: The pope delayed the publication, till he should find an agreement with England entirely desperate; and till the emperor, who was at present pressed by the Turks and the protestant princes in Germany, should be in a condition to carry the sentence into execution.

THE King knew, that he might expect any injury, which it should be in Charles's power to inflict; and he therefore made it the chief object of his policy to incapacitate that monarch from wreaking his resentment upon him †. He renewed his friendship with Francis, and opened negotiations for marrying his infant-daughter, Elizabeth, with the duke of Angouleme, third son of Francis. These two princes also made advances to the protestant league in Germany, who were ever jealous of the emperor's ambition: And Henry, besides remitting them some money, sent Fox, bishop of Hereford, as Francis did Bellay, lord of Langey, to treat with those princes. But during the first fervours of the reformation, an agreement in theological tenets was held, as well as an union of interest, to be essential to a good correspondence among states; and tho' both Francis and Henry flattered the German princes with hopes of their embracing the confession of Augsbourg, it was looked upon as a bad symptom of their sincerity, that they exercised such extreme rigour against all preachers of the reformation in their respective dominions ‡. Henry carried the feint so far, that, while he thought himself the first theologian in the world, he yet invited over Melancthon, Bucer, Sturmius, Draco, and other German divines, in order to confer with him, and to instruct him in the foundation of their tenets. These theologians were now of great importance in the world; and no poet or philosopher, even in antient Greece, where they were treated with most respect, had ever reached equal applause and admiration with these wretched composers of metaphysical polemics. The German princes told the King, that they could not spare their divines; and as Henry had no hopes of agreement with such zealous disputants, and knew that in Germany the followers of Luther would not associate with the disciples of Zuinghius, because, tho' they agreed in every thing else, they differed in some particulars with regard to the eucharist, he was the more indifferent on account of this refusal. He could also foresee, that even while the league of Smalcalde did not act in concert with him, they would always be carried by their interest to oppose the emperor: And the hatred betwen Francis

* Sanders, p. 148. † Herbert, p. 350, 351. ‡ Sleidan, lib. 10.

and that monarch was ſo inveterate, that he deemed himſelf ſure of a ſincere ally in one or other of theſe potentates. Chap. V.

1536. During theſe negotiations an incident happened in England, which promiſed a more amicable concluſion of theſe diſputes, and ſeemed even to open a way for a reconcilement between Henry and Charles. Queen Catherine was ſeized with a lingering illneſs, which at laſt brought her to her grave: She died at Kimbolton in the county of Huntingdon, in the fiftieth year of her age. A little before ſhe expired, ſhe wrote a very tender letter to the King; where ſhe gave him the appellation of *her moſt dear Lord, King, and Huſband.* She told him, that as the hour of her death was now approaching, ſhe laid hold of this laſt opportunity to inculcate on him the importance of his religious duty, and the comparative emptineſs of all human grandeur and enjoyment: That tho' his fondneſs towards theſe periſhing advantages had thrown her into many calamities, as well as created to himſelf much trouble, ſhe yet forgave him all paſt injuries, and hoped that this pardon would be ratified in heaven: And that ſhe had no other requeſt to make, but to recommend to him his daughter, the ſole pledge of their loves, and to crave his protection for her maids and ſervants. She concluded with theſe words, *I make this vow, that mine eyes deſire you above all things* *. The King was touched, even to the ſhedding of tears, by this laſt tender proof of Catherine's affection; but Queen Anne is ſaid to have expreſſed her joy for the death of a rival beyond what decency or humanity could permit †. 6th January. Death of Queen Catherine.

The emperor thought, that as the deceaſe of his aunt had removed all foundation for perſonal animoſity between him and Henry, it might not now be impoſſible to detach him from the alliance of France, and renew that confederacy with England from which he had formerly reaped ſo much advantage. He ſent Henry propoſals for a return to ancient amity, upon theſe conditions ‡; that he ſhould be reconciled to the pope, that he ſhould aſſiſt him in his war with the Turk, and that he ſhould take party with him againſt Francis, who now threatened the dutchy of Milan. The King replied, that he was willing to be on good terms with the emperor, provided he would acknowledge, that the former breach of friendſhip came entirely from himſelf: As to the conditions propoſed; the proceedings againſt the biſhop of Rome were ſo juſt, and ſo fully ratified by the Parliament of England, that they could not now be revoked; when Chriſtian princes ſhould have ſettled peace among themſelves, he would

* Herbert, p. 403. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 192. ‡ Du Bellay, liv. 5. Herbert. Burnet, vol. iii. in Coll. N°. 50.

Chap. V. 1536. not fail to exert that vigour, which became him, againſt the enemies of the faith; and after amity with the emperor was once fully reſtored, he would then be in a ſituation, as a common friend both to him and Francis, either to mediate an agreement between them, or to aſſiſt the injured party.

WHAT rendered Henry more indifferent to the advances made by the emperor, was his experience of the uſual duplicity and inſincerity of that monarch, and the intelligence which he received of the preſent tranſactions in Europe. Francis Sforza, duke of Milan, was dead without iſſue; and the emperor maintained, that the dutchy, being a fief of the empire was devolved to him, as the head of the Germanic body: Not to give umbrage, however, to the ſtates of Italy, he profeſſed his intention of beſtowing that principality on ſome prince, who ſhould be obnoxious to no party, and he even made offer of it to the duke of Angouleme, third ſon to Francis. The French monarch, who pretended that his own right to Milan was now revived upon Sforza's death, was contented to ſubſtitute his ſecond ſon, the duke of Orleans, in his place; and the emperor pretended to cloſe with this propoſal. But his ſole intention in that liberal conceſſion was to gain time, till he ſhould put himſelf in a warlike poſture, and be able to carry an invaſion into Francis's dominions. The ancient enmity between theſe princes broke out anew in bravadoes, and in perſonal inſults on each other, not becoming perſons of their rank, and ſtill leſs ſuitable to men of ſuch unqueſtioned bravery. Charles ſoon after invaded Provence in perſon, with an army of fifty thouſand men; but met with no ſucceſs. His army periſhed with ſickneſs, fatigue, famine, and other diſaſters; and he was obliged to raiſe the ſiege of Marſeilles, and retire into Italy with the broken remains of his forces. An army of imperialiſts, near 30,000 ſtrong, which invaded France on the ſide of the Netherlands, and laid ſiege to Peronne, made no greater progreſs, but retired upon the approach of a French army. And Henry had thus the ſatisfaction to find, both that his ally, Francis, was likely to ſupport himſelf without foreign aſſiſtance, and that his own tranquillity was fully enſured by theſe violent wars and animoſities on the continent.

IF any inquietude remained with the Engliſh court, it was ſolely occaſioned by the ſtate of affairs in Scotland. James, hearing of the diſtreſſed ſituation of his ally, Francis, very generouſly levied ſome forces; and embarking them on board veſſels, which he had hired for that purpoſe, landed them ſafely in France. He even came over in perſon; and making haſte to join the French King's camp, which then lay in Provence, and to partake of his danger, he met that prince at Lyons, who, having repulſed the emperor's invaſion, was now returning to his capital. Recommended by ſo agreeable and ſeaſonable an inſtance of

friendſhip, the King of Scots made ſuit to Magdalen, daughter of the French monarch, who had no other ſcruple in agreeing to the match, than what was derived from the infirm ſtate of his daughter's health, which ſeemed to threaten her with an approaching end. But James having gained the affections of the princeſs, and obtained her conſent, the father would no longer oppoſe the united deſires of his daughter and friend; and they were accordingly married, and ſoon after ſet ſail for Scotland, where the young Queen, as was foreſeen, died in a little time after her arrival. Francis, however, was afraid, leſt his ally, Henry, whom he likewiſe looked on as his friend, and who lived with him on a more cordial footing than is uſual among great princes, ſhould be diſpleaſed that this cloſe confederacy between France and Scotland was concluded without his participation. He therefore diſpatched Pommeraye to London, in order to apologize for this meaſure; but Henry, with his uſual openneſs and freedom, expreſſed ſuch diſpleaſure, that he refuſed even to confer with the ambaſſador; and Francis was apprehenſive of a rupture with a prince, who regulated his meaſures more by humour and paſſion than by the rules of political prudence. But Henry was ſo fettered by the oppoſition, in which he was engaged againſt the pope and the emperor, that he purſued no farther this diſguſt againſt Francis; and in the end every thing remained in tranquillity both on the ſide of France and Scotland. Chap. V. 1536.

The domeſtic peace of England ſeemed to be expoſed to more hazard, by the violent innovations in religion; and it may be affirmed, that, in this dangerous conjuncture, nothing enſured public tranquillity ſo much as the deciſive authority acquired by the King, and his great aſcendant over all his ſubjects. Not only the devotion paid to the crown, was profound during that age: The perſonal reſpect, inſpired by Henry, was conſiderable; and even the terrors, with which he over-awed every one, were not attended with any conſiderable degree of hatred. His frankneſs, his ſincerity, his magnificence, his generoſity, were virtues which counterbalanced his violence, cruelty, and impetuoſity. And the important rank, which his vigour, more than addreſs, acquired him in all foreign negotiations, flattered the vanity of Engliſhmen, and made them the more willingly endure thoſe domeſtic hardſhips, to which they were expoſed. The King, conſcious of his advantages, was now proceeding to the moſt dangerous trial of his authority; and after paving the way for that meaſure by ſeveral expedients, he was at laſt determined to ſuppreſs the monaſteries, and to put himſelf in poſſeſſion of their ample revenues.

The great encreaſe of monaſteries, if matters be conſidered merely in a political light, will appear the radical inconvenience of the Catholic religion; and every

other

Chap. V. 1536.

other diſadvantage, attending that communion, ſeems to have an inſeparable connection with theſe religious inſtitutions. Papal uſurpations, the tyranny of the inquiſition, the multiplication of holidays; all theſe fetters on liberty and induſtry, were ultimately derived from the authority and inſinuation of monks, whoſe habitations, being eſtabliſhed every where, proved ſo many colonies of ſuperſtition and of folly. This order of men were extremely enraged againſt Henry; and regarded the abolition of the papal authority in England, as the removal of the ſole protection which they enjoyed againſt the rapacity of the crown and of the courtiers. They were now ſubjected to the King's viſitation; and the ſuppoſed ſacredneſs of their bulls from Rome was rejected; the progreſs of the reformation abroad, which had every where been attended with the abolition of the monaſtic ſtate, gave them reaſon to expect like conſequences in England; and tho' the King ſtill maintained the doctrine of purgatory, to which moſt of the convents owed their origin and ſupport, it was foreſeen, that, in the progreſs of the conteſt, he would every day be led to depart wider from antient inſtitutions, and be drawn nearer the tenets of the reformers, with whom his political intereſts naturally induced him to ally himſelf. Moved by theſe conſiderations, the friars made uſe of all their influence to enflame the people againſt the King's government; and Henry, finding their ſafety irreconcilable with his own, was determined to ſeize the preſent opportunity, and utterly deſtroy his declared enemies.

CROMWEL, ſecretary of ſtate, had been appointed vicar-general, or vicegerent, a new office, by which the King's ſupremacy, or the abſolute, uncontroulable power aſſumed over the church, was delegated to him. He employed Layton, London, Price, Gage, Petre, Bellaſis, and others, as commiſſioners, who carried on, every where, a rigorous enquiry with regard to the conduct and deportment of all the friars. During times of faction, eſpecially of the religious kind, no equity is to be expected from adverſaries; and as it was known, that the King's intention in this viſitation was to find a pretence for aboliſhing monaſteries, we may naturally conclude, that the reports of the commiſſioners are very little to be relied on. Friars were encouraged to bring in informations againſt their brethren; the ſlighteſt evidence was credited; and even the calumnies ſpread abroad by the friends to the reformation, were regarded as grounds of proof. Monſtrous diſorders are therefore ſaid to have been found in many of the religious houſes: Whole convents of women abandoned to lewdneſs: Signs of abortions procured, of infants murdered, of unnatural luſts between perſons of the ſame ſex. It is indeed probable, that the blind ſubmiſſion of the people, during thoſe ages, would render the friars and nuns more unguarded, and more diſſolute, than they are in any Roman-catholic country at preſent: But ſtill, the reproaches,

reproaches, which it is safest to credit, are such as point at vices, naturally connected with the very institution of convents, and with the monastic life. The cruel and inveterate factions and quarrels therefore which the commissioners mentioned, are very credible, among men, who, being confined together within the same walls, never can forget their mutual animosities, and who, being cut off from all the most endearing connections of nature, are commonly cursed with hearts more selfish, and tempers more unrelenting, than fall to the share of other men. The pious frauds, practised to increase the devotion and liberality of the people, may be regarded as certain, in an order founded on illusions, lies, and superstition. The supine idleness, also, and its attendant, profound ignorance, with which the convents were reproached, admit of no question; and tho' monks were the true preservers, as well as inventors, of the dreaming and captious philosophy of the schools, no manly or elegant knowledge could be expected among men, whose life, condemned to a tedious uniformity, and deprived of all emulation, afforded nothing to raise the mind, or cultivate the genius. Chap. V. 1536.

SOME few monasteries, terrified with this rigorous inquisition carried on by Cromwel and his commissioners, surrendered their revenues into the King's hands; and the monks received small pensions as the reward of their obsequiousness. Orders were given to dismiss such nuns and friars as were below four and twenty, and whose vows were, on that account, supposed not to be binding. The doors of the convents were opened, even to such as were above that age; and all those recovered their liberty who desired it. But as all these expedients did not fully answer the King's purpose, he had recourse to his usual instrument of power, the Parliament; and in order to prepare men for the innovations projected, the report of the visitors was published, and a general horror was endeavoured to be excited in the nation against institutions which, to their ancestors, had been the objects of the most profound veneration.

THE King, tho' determined to abolish utterly the monastic orders, resolved to proceed gradually in this great work; and he gave directions to the Parliament to go no further at present, than to suppress the lesser monasteries, who possessed revenues below two hundred pounds a year value *. These were found to be the most corrupted, as lying less under the restraint of shame, and being exposed to less scrutiny †; and it was deemed safest to begin with them, and thereby prepare the way for the greater innovations projected. By this act three hundred and seventy-six monasteries were suppressed, and their revenues, amounting to thirty-two thousand pounds a year, were granted to the King; besides their goods, chattels, and plate, computed at a hundred thousand pounds more. 4th February. A Parliament. Suppression of the lesser monasteries.

* 27 Hen. VIII. c. 28. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 193.

Chap. V. 1536.

more ‡. It does not appear that any oppoſition was made to this important law: So abſolute was Henry's authority! A court, called the court of augmentation of the King's revenue, was appointed for the management of theſe funds. The people naturally concluded, from the erection of this court, that Henry intended to proceed in deſpoiling the church of her patrimony ‖.

THE act formerly paſſed, empowering the King to name thirty-two commiſſioners for framing a body of canon law, was renewed; but the project was never carried into execution. Henry thought, that the preſent confuſion of that law encreaſed his authority, and kept the clergy in ſtill greater dependance.

FARTHER progreſs was made in compleating the union of Wales with England: the ſeparate juriſdictions of ſeveral great lords or marchers, as they were called, which obſtructed the courſe of juſtice in Wales, and encouraged robbery and pillaging, were aboliſhed; and the authority of the King's courts was extended every where. Some juriſdictions of a like nature in England were alſo aboliſhed § this ſeſſion.

THE commons, ſenſible that they had gained nothing by oppoſing the King's will, when he formerly endeavoured to ſecure the profits of wardſhips and liveries, were now contented to frame a law*, ſuch as he dictated to them. It was enacted, that the poſſeſſion of land ſhall be adjudged to be in thoſe who have the uſe of it, not in thoſe to whom it is transferred in truſt.

14th April.

AFTER all theſe laws were paſſed, the King diſſolved the Parliament; a Parliament memorable, not only for the great and important innovations which it introduced, but alſo for the long time it had ſat, and the frequent prorogations which it had undergone. Henry had found it ſo obſequious to his will, that he did not chuſe, during theſe religious ferments, to hazard a new election; and he continued the ſame Parliament above ſix years: A practice, at that time, unuſual in England.

A convocation.

THE convocation, which ſat during this ſeſſion, were engaged in a very important work, the deliberating on the new tranſlation which was projected of the ſcriptures. Tindal had formerly given a tranſlation, and it had been greedily read by the people; but as the clergy complained of it, as very inaccurate and unfaithful, it was now propoſed to them that they ſhould themſelves publiſh a tranſlation, which would not be liable to thoſe objections. The friends of the reformation aſſerted, that nothing could be more abſurd than to conceal, in an unknown

‡ It is pretended, ſee Hollingſhed, p. 939, that ten thouſand monks were turned out on the diſſolution of the leſſer monaſteries. If ſo, moſt of them muſt have been Mendicants: For the revenue could not have ſupported near that number. The Mendicants, no doubt, ſtill continued their former profeſſion.

‖ 27 Hen. VIII. c. 27. § 27 Hen. VIII. c. 4. * 27 Hen. VIII. c. 10.

tongue,

tongue, the word itſelf of God, and thus to counteract the will of heaven, which, for the purpoſe of univerſal ſalvation, had publiſhed that ſalutary doctrine to all nations: That if this practice was not very abſurd, the artifice at leaſt was very barefaced, and proved a conſciouſneſs, that the gloſſes and traditions of the clergy ſtood in direct oppoſition to the original text, dictated by Supreme Intelligence: That it was now neceſſary for the people, ſo long abuſed by intereſted pretenſions, to ſee with their own eyes, and to examine whether the claims of the eccleſiaſtics were founded on that charter, which was on all hands acknowledged to be derived from Heaven: And that as a ſpirit of reſearch and curioſity was happily revived, and men were now obliged to make a choice among the pretenſions of different ſects, the proper materials for deciſion, and above all, the holy ſcriptures, ſhould be ſet before them, and the revealed will of God, which the change of language had ſomewhat obſcured, be again, by their means, revealed to mankind. Chap. V. 1536.

THE favourers of the ancient religion maintained, on the other hand, that the pretence of making the people ſee with their own eyes, was a mere cheat, and was itſelf a very barefaced artifice, by which the new preachers hoped to obtain the guidance of them, and ſeduce them from thoſe paſtors, whom the laws, whom antient eſtabliſhments, whom heaven itſelf had appointed for their ſpiritual direction: That the people were, by their ignorance, their ſtupidity, their neceſſary avocations, totally unqualified to chooſe their own principles, and it was a mockery to ſet materials before them, of which they could not poſſibly make any proper uſe: That even in the affairs of common life, and in their temporal concerns, which lay more within the compaſs of human reaſon, the laws had, in a great meaſure, deprived them of the right of private judgment, and had, happily, for their own and the public intereſt, regulated their conduct and behaviour: That theological queſtions were placed much beyond the ſphere of vulgar comprehenſion; and eccleſiaſtics themſelves, tho' aſſiſted by all the advantages of education, erudition, and an aſſiduous ſtudy of the ſcience, could not be fully aſſured of a juſt deciſion; except by the promiſe made them in ſcripture, that God would be ever preſent with his church, and that the gates of hell ſhould not prevail againſt her: That the groſs errors adopted by the wiſeſt heathens, proved how unfit men were to grope their own way, thro' this profound darkneſs; nor would the ſcriptures, if truſted to every man's judgment, be able to remedy; on the contrary, they would much augment, theſe fatal illuſions: That ſacred writ itſelf was involved in ſo much obſcurity, was expoſed to ſo many difficulties, contained ſo many appearing contradictions, that it was the moſt dangerous weapon which could be intruſted into the hands of the ignorant

Chap. V. 1536.

and giddy multitude: That the poetical ſpirit, in which a great part of it was compoſed, at the ſame time that it occaſioned uncertainty in the ſenſe, by its multiplied tropes and figures, was ſufficient to kindle the zeal of fanaticiſm, and thereby throw civil ſociety into the moſt furious combuſtion: That a thouſand ſects muſt ariſe, which would pretend, each of them, to derive its tenets from the ſcripture; and would be able, by ſpecious arguments, or even without ſpecious arguments, to ſeduce ſilly women, and ignorant mechanics, into a belief of the moſt monſtrous principles: And that if ever this diſorder, dangerous to the magiſtrate himſelf, received a remedy, it muſt be from the tacit acquieſence of the people in ſome new authority; and it was evidently better, without farther conteſt or enquiry, to adhere peaceably to antient, and therefore the more ſecure eſtabliſhments.

THESE latter arguments being more agreeable to eccleſiaſtical government, would probably have prevailed in the convocation, had it not been for the authority of Cranmer, Latimer, and ſome other biſhops, who were ſuppoſed to ſpeak the King's ſenſe of the matter. A vote was paſſed for publiſhing a new tranſlation of the ſcriptures; and in three years time this great work was finiſhed, and printed at Paris. This was deemed a great point gained by the reformers; and a conſiderable advancement of their cauſe. Farther progreſs was ſoon expected, after ſuch important ſucceſſes.

Diſgrace of Q. Anne.

BUT while the retainers to the new religion were triumphing in their proſperity, they met with a mortification, which ſeemed to blaſt all their hopes: Their patroneſs, Anne Boleyn, loſt the King's favour, and ſoon after her life, from the rage of that furious monarch. Henry had perſevered conſtantly in his love to this lady, during ſix years that his proſecution of the divorce laſted; and the more obſtacles he met with to the gratification of his paſſion, the more determined zeal did he exert in purſuing his purpoſe. But the affection which had ſubſiſted ſo long under difficulties, had no ſooner attained ſecure poſſeſſion of its object, than it languiſhed from ſatiety; and the King's heart was apparently alienated from his conſort. Anne's enemies ſoon perceived this fatal change; and they were very forward to widen the breach, when they found that they incurred no danger by interpoſing in thoſe delicate concerns. She had brought forth a dead ſon; and Henry's extreme fondneſs for male iſſue being thus, for the preſent, diſappointed, his temper, equally violent and ſuperſtitious, was diſpoſed to make the innocent mother anſwerable for this misfortune *. But the chief means which Anne's enemies employed to enflame the King againſt her, was his jealouſy.

* Burnet, vol i. p. 196.

ANNE,

ANNE, tho' ſhe appears to have been entirely innocent, and even virtuous, in her conduct, had a certain gaiety, if not levity, of character, which threw her off her guard, and made her leſs circumſpect than her ſituation required. Her education in France rendered her the more prone to theſe freedoms; and it was with difficulty ſhe conformed herſelf to that ſtrict ceremonial which was practiſed in the court of England. More vain than haughty, ſhe was pleaſed to ſee the influence of her beauty on all around her, and ſhe indulged herſelf in an eaſy familiarity with perſons, who were formerly her equals, and who might then have pretended to her friendſhip and good graces. Henry's dignity was offended with theſe popular manners; and tho' the lover had been entirely blind, the huſband poſſeſſed but too quick diſcernment and penetration. Wicked inſtruments interpoſed, and put a malignant interpretation on the harmleſs liberties of the queen: The viſcounteſs of Rocheford, in particular, who was married to the Queen's brother, but who lived on bad terms with her ſiſter in law, inſinuated the moſt cruel ſuſpicions into the King's mind; and as ſhe was a woman of a very profligate character, ſhe paid no regard either to truth or humanity in thoſe calumnies which ſhe ſuggeſted. She pretended, that her own huſband was engaged in a criminal correſpondence with his ſiſter; and not contented with this imputation, ſhe poiſoned every action of the Queen, and repreſented each inſtance of favour which ſhe conferred on any one, as a token of affection. Henry Norris, groom of the ſtole, Weſton, and Brereton, gentlemen of the King's chamber, together with Mark Smeton, groom of the chamber, were obſerved to poſſeſs much of the Queen's friendſhip; and they ſerved her with a zeal and attachment which, tho' chiefly derived from gratitude, might not improbably be ſeaſoned with ſome mixture of tenderneſs for ſo amiable a princeſs. The King's jealouſy laid hold of the ſlighteſt circumſtance; and finding no particular object on which it could faſten, it vented itſelf equally on every one who came within the verge of its fury. Chap. V. 1536.

HAD Henry's jealouſy been derived from love, tho' it might on a ſudden have proceeded to the moſt violent extremities, it would have been ſubject to many remorſes and contrarieties; and might at laſt have ſerved only to augment that affection, on which it was founded. But it was a more ſtern jealouſy, foſtered entirely by pride: His love was wholly transferred to another object. Jane Seymour, daughter of Sir John Seymour, and maid of honour to the Queen, a young lady of ſingular beauty and merit, had obtained an entire aſcendant over him; and he was determined to ſacrifice every thing to the gratification of this new appetite. Unlike to moſt monarchs, who judge lightly of the crime of gallantry, and who deem the young damſels of their court rather honoured than diſgraced by their paſſion, he ſeldom thought of any other attachment than that of mar-

Chap. V. 1536.

riage; and in order to attain this end, he underwent more difficulties and committed greater crimes than thoſe which he ſought to avoid by forming that legal connexion. And having thus entertained the deſign of raiſing his new miſtreſs to his bed and throne, he more willingly hearkened to every ſuggeſtion, which threw any imputation of guilt on the unfortunate Anne Boleyn.

1ſt of May.

THE King's jealouſy firſt appeared openly in a tilting at Greenwich, where the Queen happened to drop her handkerchief; an incident probably caſual, but interpreted by him as an inſtance of gallantry to ſome of her paramours *. He immediately retired from the place; ſent orders to confine her to her chamber; arreſted Norris, Brereton, Weſton, and Smeton, together with her brother, Rocheford; and threw them into priſon. The Queen, aſtoniſhed at theſe inſtances of his fury, thought that he meant only to try her; but finding him in earneſt, ſhe reflected on his obſtinate unrelenting ſpirit, and ſhe prepared herſelf for that melancholy doom which was awaiting her. Next day, ſhe was ſent to the Tower; and on her way thither, ſhe was informed of her ſuppoſed offences, of which ſhe had been hitherto ignorant: She made earneſt proteſtations of her innocence; and when ſhe entered the priſon, ſhe fell on her knees, and prayed God ſo to help her, as ſhe was not guilty of the crime imputed to her. Her ſurprize and confuſion threw her into hiſterical diſorders; and in that ſituation, ſhe thought that the beſt proof of innocence was to make an entire confeſſion, and ſhe diſcovered ſome indiſcretions and levities, which her ſimplicity had equally betrayed her to commit and to avow. She owned, that ſhe had once rallied Norris on his delaying his marriage, and had told him, that he probably expected her, when ſhe ſhould be a widow: She had reproved Weſton, ſhe ſaid, for his affection to a kinſwoman of hers, and his indifference towards his wife: But he told her, that ſhe had miſtaken the object of his affection, for it was herſelf: Upon which, ſhe defied him †. She affirmed, that Smeton had never been in her chamber but twice when he played on the harpſicord: But ſhe acknowledged, that he had once had the boldneſs to tell her, that a look ſufficed him. The King, inſtead of being ſatisfied with the candour and ſincerity of her confeſſion, regarded theſe indiſcretions only as preludes to greater and more criminal intimacies.

OF all thoſe multitudes, whom the beneficence of the Queen's temper had obliged, during her proſperous fortune, no one durſt interpoſe between her and the King's fury; and the perſon, whoſe advancement every breath had favoured, and every countenance had ſmiled upon, was now left neglected and abandoned. Even her uncle the duke of Norfolk, preferring the connexions of party to the ties of blood, was become her moſt dangerous enemy; and all the retainers to the

* Burnet, vol. 1. p. 198. † Strype, vol. 1. p. 281.

catholic religion hoped, that her death would terminate the King's quarrel with Rome, and leave him again to his natural and early bent, which had inclined him to ſupport the moſt intimate connexions with the apoſtolic ſee. Cranmer alone, of all the Queen's adherents, ſtill retained his friendſhip for her; and, as far as the King's impetuoſity permitted him, he endeavoured to moderate the violent prejudices, entertained againſt her. Chap. V. 1536.

THE Queen herſelf wrote Henry a letter from the Tower, full of the moſt tender expoſtulations, and of the warmeſt proteſtations of innocence. It contains ſo much nature and even elegance, as to deſerve to be tranſmitted to poſterity, without any alteration of the expreſſion. It is as follows.

" SIR, your grace's diſpleaſure, and my impriſonment are things ſo ſtrange " unto me, as what to write, or what to excuſe, I am altogether ignorant. " Whereas you ſend unto me (willing me to confeſs a truth, and ſo obtain your " favour) by ſuch an one, whom you know to be mine antient profeſſed enemy, " I no ſooner received this meſſage by him, than I rightly conceived your mean- " ing; and if, as you ſay, confeſſing a truth indeed may procure my ſafety, I " ſhall with all willingneſs and duty perform your command.

" But let not your grace ever imagine, that your poor wife will ever be " brought to acknowledge a fault, where not ſo much as a thought thereof pre- " ceded. And to ſpeak a truth, never prince had wife more loyal in all duty, " and in all true affection, than you have ever found in Anne Boleyn: With " which name and place I could willingly have contented myſelf, if God and " your grace's pleaſure had been ſo pleaſed. Neither did I at any time ſo far " forget myſelf in my exaltation or received queenſhip, but that I always looked " for ſuch an alteration as I now find; for the ground of my preferment being " on no ſurer foundation than your grace's fancy, the leaſt alteration I knew was " fit and ſufficient to draw that fancy to ſome other object. You have choſen " me from a low eſtate to be your Queen and companion, far beyond my deſert " or deſire. If then you found me worthy of ſuch honour, good your grace " let not any light fancy, or bad counſel of mine enemies, withdraw your " princely favour from me; neither let that ſtain, that unworthy ſtain, of a " diſloyal heart towards your good grace, ever caſt ſo foul a blot on your moſt " dutiful wife, and the infant-princeſs your daughter. Try me, good King, " but let me have a lawful trial, and let not my ſworn enemies ſit as my accuſers " and judges; yea let me receive an open trial, for my truth ſhall fear no open " ſhame; then ſhall you ſee either mine innocence cleared, your ſuſpicion and

" conſcience

Chap. V. 1536.

" conſcience ſatisfied, the ignominy and ſlander of the world ſtopped, or my " guilt openly declared. So that whatſoever God or you may determine of me, " your grace may be freed from an open cenſure, and mine offence being ſo law- " fully proved, your grace is at liberty, both before God and man, not only to " execute worthy puniſhment on me as an unlawful wife, but to follow your " affection, already ſettled on that party, for whoſe ſake I am now as I am, whoſe " name I could ſome good while ſince have pointed unto, your grace not being " ignorant of my ſuſpicion therein.

" But if you have already determined of me, and that not only my death, " but an infamous ſlander muſt bring you the enjoying of your deſired happineſs; " then I deſire of God, that he will pardon your great ſin therein, and like- " wiſe mine enemies, the inſtruments thereof, and that he will not call you to " a ſtrict account for your unprincely and cruel uſage of me, at his general " judgment-ſeat, where both you and myſelf muſt ſhortly appear, and in whoſe " judgment I doubt not (whatſoever the world may think of me) mine innocence " ſhall be openly known, and ſufficiently cleared.

" My laſt and only requeſt ſhall be, that myſelf may only bear the burden " of your grace's diſpleaſure, and that it may not touch the innocent ſouls of " thoſe poor gentlemen, who (as I underſtand) are likewiſe in ſtrait impriſon- " ment for my ſake. If ever I have found favour in your ſight, if ever the " name of Anne Boleyn hath been pleaſing in your ears, then let me obtain this " requeſt, and I will ſo leave to trouble your grace any further, with mine earn- " eſt prayers to the Trinity to have your grace in his good keeping, and to di- " rect you in all your actions. From my doleful priſon in the Tower, this ſixth " of May;

" Your moſt loyal
" and ever faithful wife,
ANNE BOLEYN.

THIS letter had no influence on the unrelenting mind of Henry, who was determined to pave the way for his new marriage by the death of Anne Boleyn. Norris, Weſton, Brereton, and Smeton, were tried; but no legal evidence was produced againſt them. The chief proof of their guilt conſiſted in a hear-ſay report from one lady Wingfield, who was dead. Smeton was prevailed on, by the vain hope of life, to confeſs a criminal correſpondence with the Queen*; but even her enemies expected little advantage from this confeſſion: For they never dared to confront him with her; and he was immediately executed; as were

Her trial.

* Burnet, vol. I. p. 202.

alſo

alſo Brereton and Weſton. Norris had been much in the King's favour; and an offer was made him of life, if he would confeſs his crime, and accuſe the Queen: But he generouſly rejected that propoſal; and ſaid, that in his conſcience he believed her entirely guiltleſs: But, for his part, he could accuſe her of nothing, and he would die a thouſand deaths rather than calumniate an innocent perſon. Chap. V. 1536.

THE Queen and her brother were tried by a jury of peers, conſiſting of the duke of Suffolk, the Marquis of Exeter, the earl of Arundel, and twenty-three more: Their uncle, the duke of Norfolk, preſided as lord high ſteward. Upon what proof or pretence the crime of inceſt was imputed to them is unknown: The chief evidence, it is ſaid, amounted to no more than that Rocheford had been ſeen to lean on her bed before ſome company. Part of the charge againſt her was, that ſhe had affirmed to her minions, that the King never had her heart; and had ſaid to each of them apart, that ſhe loved him better than any perſon whatſoever: *Which was to the ſlander of the iſſue begot between the King and her:* By this ſtrained interpretation, her guilt was brought under the ſtatute of the 25th of this reign; in which it was declared criminal to throw any ſlander upon the King, Queen, or their iſſue. Such palpable abſurdities were, at that time, admitted, and they were regarded by the peers of England as a ſufficient reaſon for ſacrificing an innocent Queen to the cruelty of their tyrant. Tho' unaſſiſted by counſel, ſhe defended herſelf with great judgment and preſence of mind; and the ſpectators could not forbear pronouncing her entirely innocent. Judgment, however, was given by the court, both againſt the Queen and lord Rocheford; and her verdict contained, that ſhe ſhould be burned or beheaded at the King's pleaſure. When this dreadful ſentence was pronounced, ſhe was not terrified, but lifting up her hands to heaven, ſaid, "O! Father, O! Creator, thou who "art the way, the truth, and the life, thou knoweſt that I have not deſerved "this death." And then turning to the judges, made the moſt pathetic declarations of her innocence.

HENRY, not ſatisfied with this cruel vengeance, was reſolved entirely to annul his marriage with Anne Boleyn, and to declare her iſſue illegitimate: He recalled to his memory, that, a little after her appearance in the Engliſh court, ſome attachment had been acknowledged between her and the earl of Northumberland, then lord Piercy; and he now queſtioned the nobleman with regard to theſe engagements. Northumberland took an oath before the two archbiſhops, that no contract nor promiſe of marriage had ever paſſed between them: He received the ſacrament upon it, before the Duke of Norfolk and others of the privy council; and this ſolemn act he accompanied with the moſt ſolemn proteſtations of his veracity.

Chap. V. 1536.

racity*. The Queen, however, was ſhaken by menaces of executing the ſentence againſt her in its greateſt rigour, and was prevailed on to confeſs in court, ſome lawful impediment to her marriage with the King †. The afflicted primate, who ſat as judge, thought himſelf obliged by this confeſſion, to pronounce the marriage null and invalid. Henry, in the tranſports of his fury, did not perceive that his proceedings were totally inconſiſtent, and that if her marriage was, from the beginning, invalid, ſhe could not poſſibly be guilty of adultery.

And execution.

THE Queen now prepared for ſuffering that death to which ſhe was ſentenced. She ſent her laſt meſſage to the King, and acknowledged the obligations which ſhe owed him, in continuing thus uniformly his endeavours for her advancement: From a private Gentlewoman, ſhe ſaid, he had firſt made her a marchioneſs, then a queen, and now, ſince he could raiſe her no higher in this world, he was ſending her to be a ſaint in heaven: She then renewed the proteſtations of her innocence, and recommended her daughter to his care. Before the lieutenant of the Tower, and all who approached her, ſhe made the like declarations; and continued to behave herſelf with her uſual ſerenity, and even with chearfulneſs. "The executioner," ſhe ſaid to the lieutenant, "is, I hear, "very expert; and my neck is very ſlender:" Upon which ſhe graſped it in her "hand, and laughed heartily. When brought, however, to the ſcaffold, ſhe ſoftened her tone a little with regard to her proteſtations of innocence. She probably reflected, that the obſtinacy of Queen Catherine, and her reſiſtance to the King's will, had much alienated him from the lady Mary; and her maternal concern, therefore, for Elizabeth, prevailed in theſe laſt moments over that indignation, which the unjuſt ſentence, by which ſhe ſuffered, naturally excited in her. She ſaid, that ſhe was come to die, as ſhe was ſentenced, by the law: She would accuſe none, nor ſay any thing of the ground upon which ſhe was judged. She prayed heartily for the King; and called him a moſt merciful and gentle prince, and acknowledged, that he had always been to her a good and gracious ſovereign; and if any one ſhould think proper to canvaſs her cauſe, ſhe deſired him to judge the beſt ‡. She was beheaded by the executioner of Calais, who was brought over as more expert than any in England. Her body was negligently thrown into a common cheſt of elm-tree, made to hold arrows; and was buried in the Tower.

19th May.

THE innocence of this unfortunate Queen cannot reaſonably be called in queſtion. Henry himſelf, in the violence of his rage, knew not whom to accuſe as her lover; and tho' he imputed guilt to her brother, and four perſons more, he

* Herbert, page 384. † Helyn, p. 94. ‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 205.

was

was able to bring proof againſt none of them. The whole tenour of her conduct forbids us to aſcribe to her an abandoned character, ſuch as is implied in the King's accuſation; and had ſhe been ſo loſt to all prudence and ſenſe of ſhame, ſhe muſt have expoſed herſelf to detection, and afforded her enemies the cleareſt evidence againſt her. But the King made the moſt effectual apology for her, by marrying Jane Seymour the very day after her execution ‖. His impatience to gratify this new paſſion, cauſed him to forget all regard to decency; and his cruel heart was not ſoftened a moment by the bloody cataſtrophe of a perſon, who had ſo long been the object of his moſt tender affections. Chap. V. 1536.

THE lady Mary thought the death of her ſtep-mother a proper opportunity for reconciling herſelf with the King, who, beſides other cauſes of diſguſt, had been offended with her, on account of the part which ſhe had taken in her mother's quarrel. Her advances were not at firſt received; and Henry exacted from her ſome further proofs of ſubmiſſion and obedience: He required this young princeſs, then about twenty years of age, to adopt his theological tenets; to acknowledge his ſupremacy; to renounce the pope; and to own her mother's marriage to be inceſtuous and unlawful. Theſe points were of hard digeſtion with the princeſs; but after ſome delays, and even refuſals, ſhe was at laſt prevailed with to write a letter to her father *, containing her aſſent to the articles required of her: Upon which ſhe was received into favour. But notwithſtanding the return of the King's affection to the iſſue of his firſt marriage, he diveſted not himſelf of kindneſs towards the lady Elizabeth; and the new Queen, who was bleſt with a ſingular ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, diſcovered ſtrong proofs of attachment to that young princeſs.

THE trial and conviction of Queen Anne, and the ſubſequent events, made it neceſſary for the King to ſummon a new Parliament; and he here, in his ſpeech, made a merit to his people, that, notwithſtanding his misfortunes in his two former marriages, he had been induced, for their good, to venture on a third. The ſpeaker received this profeſſion with ſuitable gratitude; and he took thence occaſion to praiſe the King for his wonderful gifts of grace and nature: He compared him, for juſtice and prudence to Solomon; for ſtrength and fortitude to Samſon; and for beauty and comelineſs to Abſalom. The King very humbly replied, by the mouth of his chancellor, that he diſavowed theſe praiſes; ſince, if he was really poſſeſſed of ſuch virtues, they were the gifts of Almighty God only. Henry found that the Parliament were equally ſubmiſſive in deeds as complaiſant in their expreſſions; and that they would go the ſame lengths as the former in gratifying even his moſt lawleſs paſſions. His divorce from Anne Bo- 8th June. A Parliament.

‖ Burnet, vol. i. p. 207. * Ibid. Strype, vol. i. p. 285.

Chap. V. 1536. leyn was ratified; that Queen, and all her accomplices, were attainted; the iſſue of both the two former marriages were declared illegitimate, and it was even made treaſon to aſſert the legitimacy of either of them; to throw any ſlander upon the preſent King, Queen, or their iſſue, was ſubjected to the ſame penalty; the crown was ſettled on the King's iſſue by Jane Seymour, or any ſubſequent wife; and in caſe he ſhould die without children, he was empowered by his will, or letters patent, to diſpoſe of the crown: An enormous conceſſion †, eſpecially when entruſted to a prince ſo violent and capricious in his humour. Whoever being required, refuſed to anſwer upon oath to any article of this act of ſettlement, was declared to be guilty of treaſon; and by this clauſe a ſpecies of political inquiſition was eſtabliſhed in the kingdom, as well as the accuſations of treaſon multiplied to an unreaſonable degree. The King was alſo empowered to confer on any one, by his will, or letters patent, any caſtles, honours, liberties, or franchiſes; words which might have been extended to the diſmembring the kingdom, by the erection of principalities and independant juriſdictions. It was alſo, by another act, made treaſon to marry, without the King's conſent, any princeſs related in the firſt degree to the crown. This act was occaſioned by the diſcovery of a deſign, formed by Thomas Howard, brother to the duke of Norfolk, to eſpouſe the lady Margaret Douglas, niece to the King by his ſiſter the Queen of Scots and the earl of Angus. Howard, as well as the young lady, was committed to the Tower. She recovered her liberty ſoon after; but he died in confinement. An act of attainder paſſed againſt him this ſeſſion of parliament.

A NEW acceſſion was likewiſe gained to the authority of the crown: The King or any of his ſucceſſors was empowered to repeal or annul, by letters patent, whatever acts of parliament had been paſſed before he was four and twenty years of age. Whoever maintained the authority of the biſhop of Rome, by word or writ, or endeavoured in any manner to reſtore it in England, was ſubjected to the penalty of a premunire; that is, his goods were forfeited, and he was put out of the protection of the laws. And any perſon who poſſeſſed any office, eccleſiaſtical or civil, or received any grant or charter from the crown; and yet refuſed to renounce the pope by oath, was declared to be guilty of treaſon. The renounciation preſcribed runs in the ſtyle of *So help me God, all ſaints, and the holy evangeliſts* ‡. The pope, hearing of Anne Boleyn's diſgrace and death, hoped that the door was open to a reconciliation, and had been making ſome ad-

† The King is thought to have had a deſign of leaving the crown, in caſe of the failure of his lawful male iſſue, to his favourite ſon, the duke of Richmond. But the death of that promiſing nobleman, which happened ſoon after, diſappointed all projects in his favour. Heylin, p. 6.

‡ 28 Hen. VIII. c. 10.

vances

vances to Henry: But this was the reception he met with. Henry was now become abſolutely indifferent with regard to papal cenſures; and finding a great increaſe of authority, as well as revenue, to accrue from his quarrel with Rome, he was determined to perſevere in his preſent meaſures. This Parliament alſo, even more than any foregoing, convinced him how much he commanded the reſpect of his ſubjects, and what confidence he might repoſe in them. Tho' the elections had been made of a ſudden, without any preparation or intrigue, the members diſcovered an unlimited attachment to his perſon and government ‡. Chap. V. 1536.

THE extreme complaiſance of the convocation, which ſat at the ſame time with the Parliament, encouraged him in his reſolution of breaking entirely with the court of Rome. There was a diviſion of ſentiments in the minds of this aſſembly; and as the zeal of the reformers had been augmented by ſome late ſucceſſes, the reſentment of the catholics was no leſs excited by their fears and loſſes: But the authority of the King kept every one ſubmiſſive and ſilent; and the new aſſumed prerogative, the ſupremacy, whoſe limits no one was fully acquainted with, reſtrained even the moſt furious movements of theological rancour. Cromwel ſat as vicar-general; and tho' the catholic party expected, that, on the fall of Queen Anne, his authority would receive a great check, they were ſurprized to find him ſtill maintain equal credit as before. With the vicar-general concurred Cranmer the primate, Latimer biſhop of Worceſter, Shaxton of Saliſbury, Hilſey of Rocheſter, Fox of Hereford, Barlow of St. David's. The oppoſite party were led by Lee archbiſhop of York, Stokeſley biſhop of London, Tonſtal of Durham, Gardiner of Wincheſter, Longland of Lincoln, Sherborne of Chicheſter, Nix of Norwich, and Kite of Carliſle. The former party, by their oppoſition to the pope, ſeconded the King's ambition and love of power: The latter party, by maintaining the ancient theological tenets, were more conformable to his ſpeculative principles: And both of them had alternately the advantage of gaining on his humour, by which he was more governed than by either of theſe motives. A convocation.

THE church in general was averſe to the reformation; and the lower houſe of convocation framed a liſt of opinions, in the whole ſixty-ſeven, which they pronounced erroneous, and which was a collection of principles, ſome held by the ancient Lollards, others by the modern proteſtants, or Goſpellers, as they were ſometimes called. This catalogue they ſent to the upper-houſe to be cenſured; but in the preamble of their repreſentation, they diſcovered the ſervile ſpirit by which they were governed. They ſaid, "that they intended not to do or ſpeak

‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 212.

Chap. V. 1536.

" any thing which might be unpleaſant to the King, whom they acknowledge " their ſupreme head, and whoſe commands they were reſolved to obey; re- " nouncing the pope's uſurped authority, with all his laws and inventions, now " extinguiſhed and aboliſhed; and addicting themſelves to Almighty God and " his laws, and unto the King and the laws made within this kingdom *."

THE convocation came at laſt, after ſome debate, to decide articles of religion; and their tenets were of as compounded a nature as the aſſembly itſelf, or rather as the King's ſyſtem of theology, by which they were reſolved entirely to ſquare their principles. They determined the ſtandard of faith to conſiſt in the ſcriptures and the three creeds, the Apoſtolic, the Nicene, and the Athanaſian; and this article was a ſignal victory to the reformers: Auricular confeſſion and pennance were admitted, a doctrine agreeable to the catholics: No mention was made of marriage, extreme unction, confirmation, or holy orders, as ſacraments; and in this omiſſion the influence of the proteſtants appeared. The real preſence was aſſerted, conformable to the ancient doctrine: The terms of acceptance were eſtabliſhed to be the merits of Chriſt, and the mercy and good pleaſure of God, ſuitable to the new principles.

So far the two ſects ſeem to have made a fair partition, by ſharing alternately the ſeveral clauſes. In framing the ſubſequent articles, each of them ſeems to have thrown in their ingredient. The catholics prevailed in aſſerting, that the uſe of images was warranted by ſcripture; the proteſtants, in warning the people againſt idolatry, and the abuſe of theſe ſenſible repreſentations. The ancient faith was adopted in maintaining the expediency of praying to ſaints; the late innovations in rejecting the peculiar patronage of ſaints to any trade, profeſſion, or courſe of action. The former rites of worſhip, the uſe of holy water, the ceremonies practiſed on Aſh-wedneſday, Palm-ſunday, and Good-friday, &c. were ſtill maintained; but the new refinements were alſo adopted, which made light of theſe inſtitutions, by the convocation's denying that they had any immediate power of remitting ſin, and by its aſſerting that their ſole merit conſiſted in promoting pious and devout diſpoſitions in the mind.

BUT the article with regard to purgatory, contains the moſt curious jargon, ambiguity, and heſitation, ariſing from the mixture of oppoſite tenets. It was to this purpoſe: " Since according to due order of charity, and the book of " Maccabees, and divers ancient authors, it is a very good and charitable deed " to pray for ſouls departed; and ſince ſuch a practice has been maintained in " the church from the beginning; all biſhops and teachers ſhould inſtruct the " people not to be grieved for the continuance of the ſame. But ſince the place

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 119.

" where

" where departed ſouls are retained, before they reach Paradiſe, as well as the na-
" ture of their pains, is left uncertain by ſcripture; all ſuch queſtions are to be
" ſubmitted to God, to whoſe mercy it is meet and convenient to commend the
" deceaſed, truſting that he accepteth our prayers for them *."

THESE articles, when framed by the convocation, and corrected by the King, were ſubſcribed by every member of that aſſembly; while, perhaps, neither there nor throughout the whole kingdom, could one man be found, except the King himſelf, who had adopted preciſely theſe very doctrines and opinions. For tho' there be not any contradiction in the tenets here advanced, it had happened in England, as in all other ſtates where factious diviſions have place; a certain creed was embraced by each party; few neuters were to be found; and theſe conſiſted only of ſpeculative or whimſical people, of whom two perſons could ſcarce be brought to an agreement in the ſame dogmas. The proteſtants, all of them, carried their oppoſition to Rome farther than theſe articles: None of the catholics went ſo far: And the King, by being able to retain the nation in ſuch a delicate medium, diſplayed the utmoſt power of an imperious deſpotiſm, of which any hiſtory furniſhes an example. To change the religion of a country, even when ſeconded by a party, is one of the moſt perilous enterprizes, which any ſovereign can attempt, and often proves the moſt deſtructive to royal authority. But Henry was able to ſet the political machine in that furious movement, and yet regulate and even ſtop its career: He could ſay to it, thus far ſhalt thou go and no farther: And he made every vote of his parliament and convocation ſubſervient, not only to his intereſts and paſſions, but even to his ſmalleſt caprices; nay, to his moſt refined and moſt ſcholaſtic ſubtilties.

THE concurrence of theſe two national aſſemblies, ſerved no doubt, to encreaſe the King's power among the people, and raiſed him to an authority more abſolute, than any prince, in a ſimple monarchy, even by means of military force, is ever able to attain. But there are certain bounds, beyond which the moſt ſlaviſh ſubmiſſion cannot be extended. All the late innovations, particularly the diſſolution of the ſmaller monaſteries, and the imminent danger, to which all the reſt were expoſed †, had bred diſcontent in the people, and diſpoſed them to a revolt.

The

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 122, & ſeq. Fuller. Burnet, vol. i. p. 215.

† A propoſal had formerly been made in the convocation for the abolition of the leſſer monaſteries; and had been much oppoſed by biſhop Fiſher, who was then alive. He told his brethren, that this was fairly ſhowing the King the way, how he might come at the greater monaſteries. " An ax, which " wanted a handle, came upon a time into the wood, making his moan to the great trees, that he " wanted a handle to work withal, and for that cauſe he was conſtrained to ſit idle; therefore he made " it his requeſt to them, that they would be pleaſed to grant him one of their ſmall ſaplings within

" the

Chap. V. 1536.

The expelled monks, wandering about the country, excited both mens piety and compaſſion; and as the ancient religion laid hold of the populace by powerful motives, ſuited to their capacity, it was able, now that it was brought into apparent hazard, to excite the ſtrogeſt zeal in its favour †. Diſcontents had even reached ſome of the nobility and gentry, whoſe anceſtors had founded the monaſteries, and who placed a vanity in thoſe inſtitutions, as well as reaped ſome benefit from them, by the proviſions, which they afforded them for their younger children. The more ſuperſtitious were intereſted in the fate of their forefathers ſouls, which, they believed, muſt now lye, during many ages, in the torments of purgatory, for want of maſſes to relieve them. It ſeemed unjuſt to aboliſh pious inſtitutions for the faults, real or pretended, of individuals. Even the moſt moderate and reaſonable thought it ſomewhat iniquitous, that men, who had been invited into a courſe of life by all the laws, human and divine, which prevailed in their country, ſhould be turned out of their poſſeſſions, and ſo little care be taken of their future ſubſiſtance. And when it was obſerved, that the rapacity and bribery of the commiſſioners and others employed in viſiting the monaſteries, intercepted much of the profits reſulting from theſe confiſcations, it tended much to encreaſe the general diſcontent ‡.

Diſcontents among the people.

But the people did not break out into open ſedition, till the complaints of the ſecular clergy concurred with thoſe of the regular. As Cromwel's perſon was very little acceptable to the eccleſiaſtics; the authority, which he exerciſed, being ſo new, ſo abſolute, ſo unlimited, inſpired them with great diſguſt and terror. He publiſhed in the King's name, without the conſent either of parliament or convocation, an ordonance, by which he retrenched a great many of the antient holydays; prohibited ſeveral ſuperſtitions, gainful to the clergy, ſuch as pilgrimages, images, reliques; and even ordered the incumbents in the pariſhes to ſet apart a conſiderable portion of their revenues for repairs and for the ſupport of exhibitioners and the poor of their pariſh. The ſecular prieſts, finding themſelves thus reduced to a grievous ſlavery, inſtilled into the people thoſe diſcontents, which they had long harboured in their own boſoms.

" the wood to make him a handle; who, miſtruſting no guile, granted him one of their ſmaller trees " to make him a handle. But now becoming a complete ax, he fell ſo to work, within the ſame wood, " that, in proceſs of time, there was neither great nor ſmall trees to be found in the place, where the " wood ſtood. And ſo, my lords, if you grant the King theſe ſmaller monaſteries, you do but make " him a handle, whereby, at his own pleaſure, he may cut down all the cedars within your Lebanons," Dr. Bailies' Life of Biſhop Fiſher, p. 108.

† Strype, vol. i. p. 249. ‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 223.

The

THE firſt riſing was in Lincolnſhire. It was headed by Dr. Mackrel, prior of Barlings, who was diſguiſed like a mean mechanic, and who bore the name of captain Cobler. This tumultuary army amounted to above 20,000 men ‖; but notwithſtanding their number, they ſhowed little diſpoſition of proceeding to extremities againſt the King, and ſeemed ſtill over-awed by his authority. They acknowleged him to be ſupreme head of the church of England; but they complained of his ſuppreſſing the monaſteries, of evil counſellors, of men of mean birth entruſted by him, of the danger to which the jewels and plate of their parochial churches were expoſed: And they prayed him to conſult the nobility of the realm concerning the redreſs of theſe grievances §. The King was little diſpoſed to entertain apprehenſions of danger, eſpecially from a low multitude, whom he deſpiſed. He ſent forces againſt the rebels under the command of the Duke of Suffolk; and he returned them a very ſharp anſwer to their petition. There were ſome gentry, whom the populace had forced to take party with them, and who kept a ſecret correſpondence with Suffolk. They informed him, that reſentment againſt the King's reply was the chief cauſe, which retained the male-contents in arms, and that a milder anſwer would probably diſſipate the rebellion. Henry had levied a great force at London, with which he was preparing to march againſt the rebels; and being ſo well ſupported by power, he thought that, without loſing his dignity, he might now ſhow them ſome greater condeſcenſion. He ſent a new proclamation, requiring them to return to their obedience, with ſecret aſſurances of pardon. This expedient had its effect: The populace were diſſipated: Mackrel and ſome of their leaders fell into the King's hands, and were executed: The greater part of the multitude retired peaceably to their uſual occupations: A few of the more obſtinate fled into the North, where they joined the inſurrection, that was raiſed in thoſe parts.

Inſurrection. 6th of October.

THE northern rebels, as they were more numerous, were alſo more formidable than thoſe of Lincolnſhire, becauſe the people in thoſe parts were more accuſtomed to arms, and becauſe of the near neighbourhood to Scotland, which might make advantage of theſe diſorders. One Aſke, a gentleman, had taken the command of them, and he poſſeſſed the art of governing the populace. Their enterprize they called the *Pilgrimage of Grace:* Some prieſts marched before in the habits of their order, carrying croſſes in their hands: In their banners was wove a crucifix, with the repreſentation of a chalice, and of the five wounds of Chriſt *: They wore on their ſleeve an emblem of the five wounds, with the name of Jeſus wrought in the midſt: They all took an oath, that they

‖ Burnet, vol. i. p. 227. Herbert. § Herbert, p. 410. * Fox, vol. ii. p. 992.

Chap. V. 1536. had entered into the pilgrimage of grace from no other motive, than their love to God, their care of the King's perſon and iſſue, their deſire of purifying the nobility, of driving baſe-born perſons from about the King, of reſtoring the church, and of ſuppreſſing hereſy. Allured by theſe fair pretences, about 40,000 men from the counties of York, Durham, Lancaſter, and thoſe northern provinces, flocked to their ſtandard; and their zeal, no leſs than their numbers, inſpired the court with apprehenſions.

THE Earl of Shrewſbury, moved by his regard for the King's ſervice, raiſed forces, tho' at firſt without any commiſſion, in order to oppoſe the rebels. The Earl of Cumberland repulſed them from his caſtle of Skipton: Sir Ralph Evers defended Scarborow-caſtle againſt them †: Courtney, marqueſs of Exeter, the King's couſin-german, obeyed orders from court and levied troops. The earls of Huntingdon, Derby, and Rutland, imitated his example. The rebels, however, prevailed in taking both Hull and York: They laid ſiege to Pomfret caſtle, into which the archbiſhop of York and lord Darcy had thrown themſelves. It was ſoon ſurrendered to them; and the prelate and nobleman, who ſecretly favoured the cauſe, ſeemed to yield to the force impoſed on them, and joined the rebels.

THE duke of Norfolk was named general in chief of the King's forces againſt the northern rebels; and as he headed the party, which ſupported the ancient religion, he was alſo ſuſpected of bearing ſome favour to the cauſe, which he was ſent to oppoſe. His prudent conduct, however, ſeems to acquit him of this imputation. He encamped at Doncaſter, together with the earl of Shrewſbury; and as his army was ſmall, ſcarce exceeding five thouſand men, he made choice of a poſt, where he had the river in front, the ford of which he propoſed to defend againſt the rebels. They had intended to attack him in the morning; but during the night, there fell ſuch violent rains as rendered the river utterly impaſſible; and Norfolk very wiſely laid hold of the opportunity to enter into treaty with them. In order to open the door for negotiation, he ſent them a herald; whom Aſke, their leader received with great ceremony; he himſelf ſitting in a chair of ſtate, with the archbiſhop of York on one hand, and lord Darcy on the other. It was agreed that two gentlemen ſhould be diſpatched to the King with propoſals from the rebels; and Henry protracted giving an anſwer, and allured them with hopes of entire ſatisfaction, in expectation that neceſſity would ſoon oblige them to diſperſe themſelves. Being informed, that his artifice had in a great meaſure ſucceeded, he required them inſtantly to lay down their arms and ſubmit to mercy; promiſing a pardon to all except ſix whom he named, and

† Stowe, p. 574. Baker, p. 258.

four

four whom he reſerved to himſelf the power of naming. But tho' the greateſt part of the rebels had gone home for want of ſubſiſtance, they had entered into the moſt ſolemn engagements to return to their ſtandards, in caſe the King's anſwer ſhould not prove ſatisfactory. Norfolk, therefore, ſoon found himſelf in the ſame difficulty as before; and he opened again a negotiation with the leaders of the multitude. He engaged them to ſend three hundred perſons to Doncaſter, with propoſals for an accommodation; and he hoped to be able, by intrigue and ſeparate intereſts, to throw diſſenſion among ſo great a number. Aſke himſelf had propoſed to be one of the deputies, and he required a hoſtage for his ſecurity: But the King, when conſulted, replied, that he knew no gentleman or other, whom he eſteemed ſo little as to put him in pledge for ſuch a villain. The demands of the inſurgents were ſo exorbitant, that Norfolk rejected them; and they prepared again to decide the conteſt by force of arms. They were as formidable as ever both by their numbers and ſpirit; and notwithſtanding a ſmall river, which lay between them and the royal army, Norfolk had great reaſon to dread the effects of their fury. But while they were preparing to paſs the ford, rain fell a ſecond time in ſuch abundance, as made it impracticable for them to execute their deſign; and the populace, partly reduced to neceſſity by the want of proviſions, partly ſtruck with ſuperſtition at being thus again diſappointed by the ſame accident, ſuddenly diſperſed themſelves. The Duke of Norfolk, who had received powers for that end, forwarded the diſperſion, by the promiſe of a general amneſty; and the King ratified this act of clemency. He publiſhed, however, a manifeſto againſt the rebels, and an anſwer to their complaints; where he employed a very lofty ſtyle, ſuited to ſo haughty a monarch. He told them, that they ought no more to pretend giving a judgment with regard to government, than a blind man with regard to colours: "And we," he added, "with "our whole council, think it right ſtrange, that ye, who be but brutes and in- "expert folk, do take upon you to appoint us, who be meet or not for our "council."

Chap. V. 1536.

9th of December.

As this pacification was not likely to be of long continuance, Norfolk was ordered to keep his army together, and to go into the northern parts, in order to exact a general ſubmiſſion. Lord Darcy, as well as Aſke, were ſent for to court; and the former, upon his refuſal or delay to appear, was thrown into priſon. Every place was full of jealouſy and complaints. A new inſurrection broke out, headed by Muſgrave and Tilby; and the rebels beſieged Carliſle with 8000 men. Being repulſed by that town, they were encountered in their retreat by Norfolk, who put them to flight; and having made priſoners of all their officers, except

1537.

Chap. V. 1537. Musgrave, who escaped, he instantly put them to death by martial law, to the number of seventy persons. An attempt made by Sir Francis Bigot and Halam to surprize Hull, met with no better success; and several other risings were suppressed by the vigilance of Norfolk. The King, inraged by these multiplied revolts, was determined not to adhere to the general pardon, which he had granted; and from a movement of his usual violence, he made the innocent suffer for the guilty. Norfolk, by command from his master, spread the royal banner, and wherever he thought proper, executed martial law in the punishment of offenders. Besides Aske, leader of the first insurrection, Sir Robert Constable, Sir John Bulmer, Sir Thomas Piercy, Sir Stephen Hamilton, Nicholas Tempest, William Lumley, and many others, were thrown into prison; and most of them were condemned and executed. Lord Hussey was found guilty as an accomplice in the insurrection of Lincolnshire, and was executed at Lincoln. Lord Darcy, tho' he pleaded compulsion, and appealed for his justification, to a long life, passed in the service of the crown, was beheaded on Tower-hill. Before his execution, he accused Norfolk of having secretly encouraged the rebels; but Henry, either sensible of that nobleman's great services, and convinced of his fidelity, or afraid to offend one of such extensive power and great capacity, rejected the information. Being now satiated with punishing the rebels, he published anew a general pardon, to which he faithfully adhered *; and he erected by patent a court of justice at York, for deciding law suits to the northern counties: A demand which had been made by the insurgents.

12 October. Birth of prince Edward, and death of Q. Jane.

Soon after this prosperous success, an event happened, which crowned Henry's joy, the birth of a son, who was baptised under the name of Edward. Yet was not this happiness compleat: The Queen died twelve days after †. But a son had so long been ardently longed for by Henry, and was now become so necessary, in order to prevent disputes with regard to the succession, after the successive illegitimation of the two Princesses, that the King's affliction was drowned in his joy, and he expressed great satisfaction on this occasion. The Prince, not six days old, was created Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwal, and Earl of Chester. Sir Edward Seymour, the Queen's brother, formerly made Lord Beauchamp, was raised to the dignity of Earl of Hertford. Sir William Fitz Williams, high admiral, was created Earl of Southampton; Sir William Paulet, Lord St. John; Sir John Russel, Lord Russel.

1538. The suppression of the rebellion and the birth of a son, as they confirmed Henry's authority at home, encreased his consideration among foreign princes, and made

* Herbert, p. 428. † Strype, vol. ii. p. 5.

his alliance be courted by all parties. He maintained, however, a neutrality in the wars, which were carried on, with various ſucceſs, and without any deciſive event, between Charles and Francis; and tho' inclined more to favour the latter, he determined not to incur, without neceſſity, either hazard or expence in his behalf. A truce, concluded about this time, between theſe potentates, and which was afterwards prolonged for ten years, freed him from all anxiety on account of his ally, and re-eſtabliſhed the tranquillity of Europe. Chap. V. 1538.

HENRY was very deſirous of cementing an union with the German proteſtants; and for that purpoſe, he ſent Chriſtopher Mount to a congreſs which they held at Brunſwick; but that miniſter made no great progreſs in his negotiations. The princes deſired to know, what were the articles in their confeſſion which Henry diſliked; and they ſent new ambaſſadors to him, who had orders both to negotiate and to diſpute. They endeavoured to convince the King, that he was guilty of a miſtake, in adminiſtering the euchariſt in one kind only, in allowing of private maſſes, and in requiring the celibacy of the clergy *. Henry would by no means acknowlege any error in theſe particulars; and was offended that they ſhould pretend to preſcribe rules to ſo great a monarch and theologian. He found arguments and ſyllogiſms enough to defend his cauſe; and he diſmiſſed the ambaſſadors without coming to any concluſion. Jealous alſo leſt his own ſubjects ſhould become ſuch theologians as to queſtion his tenets, he uſed great precautions in publiſhing that tranſlation of the ſcripture, which was finiſhed this year. He would only allow a copy of it to be depoſited in each pariſh church, where it was fixed by a chain: And he took care to inform the people by proclamation, "That this indulgence was not the effect of his duty, but of "his goodneſs and his liberality to them; who therefore ſhould uſe it mode- "rately, for the encreaſe of virtue, not of ſtrife: And he ordered that no man "ſhould read the Bible aloud, ſo as to diſturb the prieſt, while he ſang maſs, "nor preſume to expound doubtful places, without advice from the learned." In this meaſure, as in the reſt, he ſtill halted half way between the catholics and the proteſtants.

THERE was only one particular, in which Henry was quite deciſive, becauſe he was there impelled by his avarice, or more properly ſpeaking, his rapacity, occaſioned by profuſeneſs: This meaſure was the entire deſtruction of the monaſteries. The preſent opportunity ſeemed favourable for that great enterprize; while the ſuppreſſion of the late rebellion fortified and encreaſed the royal authority; and as ſome of the abbots were ſuſpected of having encouraged the inſurrection, and of correſponding with the rebels, the King's reſentment was farther incited Suppreſſion of the greater monaſteries.

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 145. from the Cott. Lib. Cleopatra, E. 5. fol. 173.

Chap. V. 1538. by that motive. A new viſitation was appointed of all the monaſteries in England; and a pretence only being wanted for their ſuppreſſion, it was eaſy for a prince, poſſeſſed of ſuch exorbitant power, and ſeconding the preſent humour of a great part of the nation, to find or feign one. The abbots and monks knew the danger to which they were expoſed; and having learned, by the example of the leſſer monaſteries, that nothing could withſtand the King's will, they were moſt of them induced, in expectation of better treatment, to make a voluntary reſignation of their houſes. Where promiſes failed of effect, menaces, and even extreme violence were employed; and as ſeveral of the abbots, ſince the breach with Rome, had been named by the court, with a view to this event, the King's intentions were the more eaſily effectuated. Some alſo, having ſecretly embraced the doctrine of the reformation, were glad to be freed from their vows; and on the whole, the deſign was conducted with ſuch ſucceſs, that, in leſs than two years, the King had got poſſeſſion of all the monaſtic revenues.

In ſeveral places, particularly in the county of Oxford, great intereſt was made to preſerve ſome convents of women, who, as they lived in the moſt irreproachable manner, juſtly merited, it was thought, that their houſes ſhould be ſaved from the general deſtruction *. There appeared alſo great difference between the caſe of nuns and friars; and the one inſtitution might be very laudable, while the other was expoſed to much blame. The males of all ranks, if endowed with induſtry, might be of ſervice to the public; and none of them could want employment, ſuited to his ſtation and capacity. But a woman of family, who failed of a ſettlement in the married ſtate, an accident to which ſuch perſons were more liable than women of lower ſtation, had really no rank which ſhe properly filled; and a convent was a retreat both honourable and agreeable, from the inutility and often want, which attended her ſituation. But the King was determined to aboliſh monaſteries of every denomination; and probably thought, that theſe antient eſtabliſhments would be the ſooner forgot, if no remains of them, of any kind, were allowed to ſubſiſt in the kingdom.

The better to reconcile the people to this great innovation, ſtories were publiſhed of the deteſtable lives of the friars in many of the convents; and great care was taken to defame thoſe whom the court was determined to ruin. The relicts alſo, and ſuperſtitions, which had ſo long been the object of the people's veneration, were expoſed to their ridicule; and the religious ſpirit, now leſs bent on exterior obſervances and ſenſible objects, was encouraged in this new direction. It is needleſs to be particular in ſuch an enumeration: Proteſtant hiſtorians mention on this occaſion with great triumph the ſacred repoſitories of convents; the par-

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 328.

ings

Chap. V. 1538.

ings of St. Edmond's toes; ſome of the coals that roaſted St. Laurence; the girdle of the Virgin ſhown in eleven ſeveral places; two or three heads of St. Urſula; the felt of St. Thomas of Lancaſter, an infallible cure for the head-ach; part of St. Thomas of Canterbury's ſhirt, much reverenced by big-bellied women; ſome relicts, an excellent preventive againſt rain; others, a remedy to weeds in corn. But ſuch fooleries, as they are to be found in all ages and nations of the world, and even took place during the moſt refined periods of antiquity, form no peculiar nor violent reproach on the catholic religion.

THERE were alſo diſcovered, or ſaid to be diſcovered, in the monaſteries, ſome impoſtures of a more artificial nature. At Hales, in the county of Glouceſter, had been ſhown, during ſeveral ages, the blood of Chriſt brought from Jeruſalem; and it is eaſy to imagine the veneration, with which ſuch a relique was regarded. A miraculous circumſtance alſo attended this miraculous relique; the ſacred blood was not viſible to any one in mortal ſin, even when ſet before him; and till he had performed good works ſufficient for his abſolution, it would not deign to diſcover itſelf to him. At the diſſolution of the monaſtery, the whole contrivance was diſcovered. Two of the monks, who were let into the ſecret, had taken the blood of a duck, which they renewed every week: They put it into a phial, one ſide of which conſiſted of thin and tranſparent chryſtal, the other of thick and obſcure. When any rich pilgrim arrived, they were ſure to ſhow him the dark ſide of the phial, till maſſes and offerings had expiated his offences; and then finding his money, or patience, or faith, near exhauſted, they made him happy by turning the phial *.

A MIRACULOUS crucifix had been kept at Boxley in Kent, and bore the appellation of the *Rood of Grace*. The lips, and eyes, and head of the image moved on the approach of its votaries. Hilſey, biſhop of Roche ſter, broke the crucifix at St. Paul's croſs, and ſhewed the whole people the ſprings and wheels by which it had been ſecretly moved. A great wooden idol of Wales, called Darvel Gatherin, was alſo brought to London, and cut in pieces; and by a cruel refinement of vengeance, it was employed as fuel to burn fryar Foreſt †, who was puniſhed for denying the ſupremacy, and for ſome pretended hereſies. A finger of St. Andrew's, covered with a thin plate of ſilver, had been pawned by a convent for a debt of forty pounds; but as the King's commiſſioners refuſed to releaſe the pawn, people made themſelves very merry with the poor creditor, on account of his ſecurity.

BUT of all the inſtruments of antient ſuperſtition, no-one was ſo zealouſly deſtroyed as the ſhrine of Thomas a Becket, commonly called St. Thomas of

* Herbert, p. 431, 432. Stowe, p. 575. Baker, p. 286.

† Goodwin's Annals. Stowe, p. 575. Herbert,

Canterbury.

Chap. V. 1538.

Canterbury. This ſaint owed his canonization to the zealous defence, which he had made for the apoſtolic ſee; and on that account alſo, the monks had extremely encouraged the devotion of pilgrimages towards his tomb, and numberleſs were the miracles, which, they pretended, his reliques wrought on his devout votaries. They raiſed his body once a-year; and the day on which this ceremony was performed, which was called the day of his tranſlation, was a general holiday: Every fiftieth year there was celebrated a jubilee to his honour, which laſted fifteen days: Plenary indulgences were then granted to all that viſited his tomb; and a hundred thouſand pilgrims have been regiſtered at a time in Canterbury. The devotion towards him had quite effaced in that town the adoration of the Deity; nay, even that of the Virgin. At God's altar, for inſtance, there was offered in one year three pounds two ſhillings and ſix-pence; at the Virgin's, ſixty-three pounds five ſhillings and ſix-pence; at St. Thomas's, eight hundred and thirty-two pounds twelve ſhillings and three-pence. But next year, the diſproportion was ſtill greater: There was not a penny offered at God's altar; the Virgin's gained only four pounds one ſhilling and eight-pence; but St. Thomas had got for his ſhare nine hundred and fifty-four pounds ſix ſhillings and three-pence *. Lewis the ſeventh of France had made a pilgrimage to this miraculous tomb, and had beſtowed on the ſhrine a jewel, which was eſteemed the richeſt in Chriſtendom. It is obvious, how obnoxious to Henry a ſaint of this character muſt appear, and how much contrary to all his projects for degrading the authority of the court of Rome. He not only pillaged the rich ſhrine, dedicated to St. Thomas: He made the ſaint himſelf be cited to appear in court, and be tried and condemned as a traitor: He ordered his name to be ſtruck out of the kalendar; the office for his feſtival to be expunged from all breviaries, and his bones to be burned, and the aſhes to be diſſipated.

On the whole, the King, at different times, ſuppreſſed ſix hundred and forty-five monaſteries: Of which twenty-eight had abbots, who enjoyed a ſeat in parliament. Ninety colleges were demoliſhed in ſeveral counties; two thouſand three hundred and ſeventy-four chantries and free chappels; a hundred and ten hoſpitals. The whole revenue of theſe eſtabliſhments amounted to one hundred and ſixty-one thouſand one hundred pounds †. It is worthy of obſervation, that all the lands and poſſeſſions of England had, a little before this period, been rated at three millions a year; ſo that the revenues of the monaſteries did not really much exceed the twentieth part of the national income: A ſum vaſtly inferior to what is commonly apprehended. The lands belonging to the con-

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 244. † Lord Herbert, Camden, Speed.

vents,

vents, were uſually let at very low leaſes; and the farmers, who regarded themſelves as a ſpecies of proprietors, took always care to renew their leaſes before they expired *.

GREAT murmurs were every where excited againſt theſe violences; and men much queſtioned, whether priors and monks, who were only truſtees or tenants for life, could, by any deed, however voluntary, transfer to the King the entire property of their eſtates. In order to reconcile the people to ſuch mighty innovations, they were told, that the King would never henceforth have occaſion to levy taxes, but would be able, from the abbey lands alone, to bear, during war, as well as peace, the whole charges of the government †. While ſuch topics

* There is a curious paſſage, with regard to the ſuppreſſion of monaſteries, to be found in Coke's Inſtitutes, 4 Inſt. chap. i. p. 44. It is worth tranſcribing, as it ſhows the ideas of the Engliſh government entertained during the reign of Henry VIII. and even during the time of Sir Edward Coke, when he wrote his Inſtitutes. It clearly appears, that the people had then little notion of being jealous of their liberties, were deſirous of making the crown quite independent, and wiſhed only to remove from themſelves, as much as poſſible, the burthens of government. A large ſtanding army, and a fixed revenue, would, on theſe conditions, have been regarded as great bleſſings; and it was owing intirely to the prodigality of Henry, and to his little ſuſpicion, that the power of the crown could ever fail, that the Engliſh owe all their liberty. The title of the chapter in Coke is, *Advice concerning new and plauſible projects and offers in parliament.* "When any plauſible project," ſays he, "is made in parliament to draw the lords and commons to aſſent to any act, (eſpecially in matters of "weight and importance) if both houſes do give, upon the matter projected, and promiſed, their conſent, it ſhall be moſt neceſſary, they being truſted for the common-wealth, to have the matter projected and promiſed (which moved the houſes to conſent) to be eſtabliſhed in the ſame act, leſt "the benefit of the act be taken, and the matter projected and promiſed never performed, and ſo the "houſes of parliament perform not the truſt repoſed in them, as it fell out (taking one example for "many) in the reign of Henry VIII. On the King's behalf, the members of both houſes were informed in parliament, that no King or kingdom was ſafe, but where the King had three abilities: "1. To live of his own, and able to defend his kingdom upon any ſudden invaſion or inſurrection. "2. To aid his confederates, otherwiſe they would never aſſiſt him. 3. To reward his well deſerving ſervants. Now the project was, that if the parliament would give unto him all the abbeys, prio"ries, friaries, nunneries, and other monaſteries, that for ever in time then to come, he would take "order that the ſame ſhould not be converted to private uſe: But, firſt, That his Exchequer, for the "purpoſes aforeſaid, ſhould be enriched. Secondly, The kingdom ſtrengthened by a continual main"tenance of 40,000 well-trained ſoldiers, with ſkilful captains and commanders. Thirdly, For the "benefit and eaſe of the ſubject, who never afterwards, (as was projected) in any time to come, "ſhould be charged with ſubſidies, fifteenths, loans, or other common aids. Fourthly, Leſt the "honour of the realm ſhould receive any diminution of honour by the diſſolution of the ſaid mona"ſteries, there being 29 lords of parliament of the abbots and priors, (that held of the King, *per* "*baroniam*, whereof more in the next leaf) that the King would create a number of nobles, which "we omit, the ſaid monaſteries were given to the King by authority of divers acts of parliament, "but no proviſion was therein made for the ſaid project, or any part thereof."

† Coke's 4th Inſt. fol. 44.

were

Chap. V. 1538. were employed to pacify the populace, the King took an effectual method of engaging the nobility and gentry to take part with his measures *: He either made a gift of the revenues of convents to his favourites and courtiers, or ſold them at low prices, or exchanged them for other lands on very diſadvantageous terms. He was ſo profuſe in theſe liberalities, that he is ſaid to have given a woman the whole revenue of a convent, as a reward for making a pudding, which happened to gratify his palate †. He alſo ſettled ſalaries on the abbots and priors, proportioned to their former revenues or to their merits; and gave each monk a yearly penſion of eight marks: He erected ſix new biſhopricks, Weſtminſter, Oxford, Peterborow, Briſtol, Cheſter, and Glouceſter; of which the laſt five ſubſiſt at this day: And by all theſe means of expence and diſſipation, the profit which the King reaped by the ſeizure of church-lands, fell much ſhort of vulgar opinion. As the ruin of convents had been foreſeen ſome years ere it happened, the monks had taken care to diſſipate beforehand moſt of their ſtock, furniture, and plate; ſo that the ſpoils of the great monaſteries bore not, in theſe reſpects, any proportion to thoſe of the leſſer.

BESIDE the lands poſſeſſed by the monaſteries, the regular clergy enjoyed a conſiderable part of the benefices of England, and of the tythes annexed to them; and theſe were alſo at this time transferred to the crown, and by that means came into the hands of laymen: An abuſe which many zealous churchmen regard as the moſt criminal ſacrilege. The monks were formerly much at their eaſe in England, and enjoyed revenues, which much exceeded the regular and ſtated expence of the houſe. We read of the abbey of Chertſey in Surrey, which poſſeſſed 744 pounds a-year, tho' it contained only fourteen monks: That of Furneſs, in the county of Lincoln, was valued at 960 pounds a-year, and contained but thirty monks ‡. In order to diſſipate their revenues, and ſupport popularity, the monaſteries lived in a very hoſpitable manner; and beſides the poor, maintained from their offals, there were many decayed gentlemen, who paſſed their lives in traveling from convent to convent, and were entirely ſubſiſted at the tables of the friars. By this hoſpitality, as much as by their own inactivity, did the convents prove nurſeries of idleneſs; but the King, not to give offence by too ſudden an innovation, bound the new proprietors of abbey-lands, to ſupport the ancient hoſpitality. But this engagement was fulfilled in very few places, and for a very ſhort time.

IT is eaſy to imagine the indignation with which the intelligence of all theſe violences was received at Rome; and how much the eccleſiaſtics of that court, who had ſo long kept the world in ſubjection by big ſounding epithets, and by

* Dugdale's Warwickſhire, p. 800. † Fuller. ‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 237.

holy

holy execrations, would now vent their rhetoric againſt the character and conduct of Henry. The pope was provoked at laſt to publiſh the bull, which he had paſſed againſt that monarch; and in a public manner delivered over his ſoul to the devil, and his dominions to the firſt invader. Libels were diſperſed, in which he was compared to the moſt furious perſecutors in antiquity; and the preference was even given on their ſide: He had declared war with the dead, whom the pagans themſelves reſpected; was at open enmity with heaven; and had engaged in profeſſed hoſtility with the whole hoſt of ſaints and angels. Above all, he was often reproached with his reſemblance to the emperor Julian, whom, it was ſaid, he imitated in his apoſtacy and learning, tho' he fell ſhort of him in his morals. Henry could diſtinguiſh in many of theſe libels, the ſtyle and animoſity of his kinſman, Pole; and he was thence anew incited to vent his rage, by every poſſible expedient, on that famous cardinal. Chap. V. 1538.

Reginald de la Pole, or Reginald Pole, was deſcended of the royal family, being fourth ſon of the counteſs of Saliſbury, daughter of the duke of Clarence. He diſcovered in very early youth evident ſymptoms of that fine genius, and generous diſpoſition, by which, during his whole life, he was ſo much diſtinguiſhed; and Henry having conceived great friendſhip for him, propoſed to raiſe him to the higheſt eccleſiaſtical dignities; and, as a pledge of future favours, he conferred on him the deanery of Exeter *, in order to help him to bear the expences of his education. Pole was carrying on his ſtudies in Paris, at the time when the King ſolicited the ſuffrages of that univerſity in favour of his divorce; but tho' applied to by the Engliſh agent, he declined taking any part in that affair. Henry bore this neglect with more temper than was natural to him; and he appeared unwilling, on that account, to renounce friendſhip with a perſon, whoſe virtues and talents, he hoped, would prove uſeful, as well as ornamental, to his court and kingdom. He allowed him ſtill to poſſeſs his deanry, and gave him permiſſion to finiſh his ſtudies at Padua: He even paid him ſome court, in order to bring him into his meaſures; and wrote to him, while in Italy, deſiring him to give his opinion freely, with regard to the late meaſures taken in England, for aboliſhing the papal authority. Pole had now entered into an intimate friendſhip with whatever was eminent for dignity or merit in Italy; Sadolet, Bembo, and other revivers of true taſte and learning; and he was moved by theſe connections, as well as by religious zeal, to forget, in ſome reſpect, the duty which he owed to Henry, his benefactor, and his ſovereign. He replied, by writing a treatiſe of *the unity of the church*, where he inveighed againſt the King's ſupremacy, his divorce,

* Goodwin's Annals.

Chap. V. 1538.

his ſecond marriage; and even exhorted the emperor to revenge on him the injury done to his family, and to the catholic cauſe. Henry, tho' provoked beyond meaſure at this outrage, diſſembled his reſentment; and ſent a meſſage to Pole, deſiring him to return to England, in order to explain certain paſſages of his book, which he found ſomewhat obſcure and difficult: But Pole was on his guard againſt this inſidious invitation; and was determined to remain in Italy, where he was extremely beloved and eſteemed by all the world.

THE pope and emperor thought themſelves obliged to provide for a man of Pole's eminence and dignity, who, in ſupport of their cauſe, had ſacrificed all his pretenſions to fortune in his own country. He was created a cardinal; and tho' he took not higher orders than thoſe of a deacon, he was ſent legate into Flanders about the year 1536 *. Henry was ſenſible, that Pole's chief intention in chuſing that employment, was to foment the mutinous diſpoſition of the Engliſh catholics; and he therefore remonſtrated in ſuch a vigorous manner with the queen of Hungary, regent of the Low Countries, that ſhe diſmiſſed the legate without allowing him to exerciſe his commiſſion. The enmity which he bore Pole, was now open, as well as violent; and the cardinal, on his part, kept no farther meaſures in his intrigues againſt Henry. He is even ſuſpected of having aſpired to the crown, by means of a marriage with the lady Mary; and the King was every day alarmed by informations, which he received, of the correſpondence maintained in England by that fugitive. Courtney, marquis of Exeter, had entered into a conſpiracy with him; Sir Edward Nevil, brother to the lord Abergavenny, Sir Nicholas Carew, maſter of horſe, and knight of the garter; Henry de la Pole, lord Montacute, and Sir Geoffrey de la Pole, brothers to the cardinal. Theſe perſons were indicted, and tried, and convicted, before lord Audley, who preſided in the trial, as lord high ſteward. They were all executed, except Sir Geoffrey de la Pole, who was pardoned; and he owed this grace to his having firſt carried to the King ſecret intelligence of the conſpiracy. We know little of the juſtice or iniquity of the ſentence pronounced againſt theſe men: We only know, that the condemnation of a man, who was, at that time, proſecuted by the court, forms no preſumption of his guilt; tho' as no hiſtorian of credit, mentions, in the preſent caſe, any complaints occaſioned by theſe trials, we may preſume that ſufficient evidence was produced againſt the marquis of Exeter and his aſſociates †.

* Herbert.

† Herbert in Kennet, p. 216.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Diſputation with Lambert.——A Parliament.——Law of the ſix articles.——Proclamations made equal to laws.——Settlement of the ſucceſſion.——King's projects of marriage.——He marries Anne of Cleves.——He diſlikes her.——A Parliament.—— Fall of Cromwel.——His execution.——King's divorce from Anne of Cleves.—— His marriage with Catherine Howard.——State of affairs in Scotland.——Diſcovery of the Queen's crimes.——A Parliament.—— Eccleſiaſtical affairs.

THE rough hand of Henry ſeemed well adapted for rending aſunder thoſe bands, by which the ancient ſuperſtition had faſtened itſelf on the kingdom; and tho', after renouncing the pope's ſupremacy, and ſuppreſſing monaſteries, moſt of the political ends of a reformation were already attained, few people expected, that he would ſtop at thoſe innovations. The ſpirit of oppoſition, it was thought, would carry him to the utmoſt extremity againſt the church of Rome; and lead him to declare war againſt the whole doctrine and worſhip, as well as diſcipline, of that mighty hierarchy. He had formerly appealed from the pope to a general council; but now, that a general council was ſummoned to meet at Mantua, he previouſly renounced all ſubmiſſion to it, as being ſummoned by the pope, and lying intirely under ſubjection to that ſpiritual uſurper. He engaged his clergy to make a declaration to the like purpoſe; and he had preſcribed to them many other alterations on ancient tenets and practices. Cranmer took advantage of every opportunity to carry him on in this courſe; and while Queen Jane lived, who favoured the reformers, he had, by means of her inſinuation and addreſs, been very ſucceſsful in his endeavours. After her death, Gardiner, who was returned from his embaſſy to France, kept the King more in ſuſpence; and by feigning an unlimited ſubmiſſion to his will, he was frequently able to guide him to his own purpoſes. Fox, biſhop Chap. VI. 1538.

Chap. VI. 1538.

of Hereford, had ſupported Cranmer in his ſchemes for a more intire reformation; but his death made way for the promotion of Bonner, who, tho' he had hitherto ſeemed a furious enemy to the ſee of Rome, was determined to ſacrifice every thing to preſent intereſt, and had joined the confederacy of Gardiner and the partizans of the old religion. Gardiner himſelf, it was believed, had ſecretly entered into meaſures with the pope, and even with the emperor; and in concert with theſe powers, he endeavoured to preſerve, as much as poſſible, the ancient faith and worſhip.

HENRY was ſo much governed by paſſion, that nothing could have retarded his animoſity and oppoſition againſt Rome, but ſome other paſſion, which ſtopped his career, and raiſed him new ſubjects of animoſity. Tho' he had gradually, ſince he came to years of maturity, been changing the tenets of that theological ſyſtem in which he had been educated, he was equally poſitive and dogmatical in the few articles which remained to him, as if the whole fabric had continued entire and unſhaken: And tho' he ſtood alone in his opinion, the flattery of courtiers had ſo inflamed his tyrannical arrogance, that he thought himſelf entitled to regulate, by his own particular ſtandard, the religious faith of the whole nation. The point on which he chiefly reſted his orthodoxy, happened to be the real preſence; that very doctrine, in which, among the numberleſs victories of ſuperſtition over common ſenſe, the triumph is the moſt ſignal and egregious. All departure from this principle he held to be heretical and deteſtable; and nothing, he thought, would be more honourable for him, than, while he broke off all connections with the Roman pontiff, to maintain, in this eſſential article, the purity of the catholic faith.

Diſputation with Lambert.

THERE was one Lambert *, a ſchool-maſter in London, who had been queſtioned for unſound opinions by archbiſhop Warham; but, upon the death of that prelate, and the changing of councils at court, he had been releaſed. Not terrified with the danger which he had incurred, he ſtill continued to promulgate his tenets; and having heard Dr. Taylor, afterwards biſhop of Lincoln, defend in a ſermon the corporal preſence, he could not forbear expreſſing to Taylor his diſſent from that doctrine; and he drew up his objections under ten ſeveral heads. Taylor carried the paper to Dr. Barnes, who happened to be a Lutheran, and who maintained, that, tho' the ſubſtance of bread and wine remained in the ſacrament, yet the real body and blood of Chriſt were there alſo, and were, in a certain myſterious manner, incorporated with the material elements. By the preſent laws and practice, Barnes was no leſs expoſed to the ſtake than Lambert; yet ſuch was the perſecuting rage which prevailed, that he was

* Fox, vol. ii. p. 396.

determined

determined to bring this man to condign puniſhment; becauſe, in their common departure from the ancient faith, he had dared to go one ſtep farther than himſelf. He engaged Taylor to accuſe Lambert to Cranmer and Latimer, who, whatever their private opinion might be on theſe points, were obliged to conform themſelves to the ſtandard of orthodoxy, eſtabliſhed by Henry. When Lambert was cited before theſe prelates, they endeavoured to bend him to a recantation; and they were ſurprized, when, inſtead of compliance, he ventured to appeal to the King. Chap. VI. 1538.

THE King, not diſpleaſed with an opportunity, where he could at once exert his ſupremacy, and diſplay his learning, accepted the appeal, and was determined to mix, in a very unfair manner, the magiſtrate with the diſputant. Public notice was given, that he intended to enter the liſts with this ſchool-maſter: Scaffolds were erected in Weſtminſter-hall, for the accommodation of the audience: Henry appeared on his throne, accompanied with all the enſigns of majeſty: The prelates were placed on his right-hand: The temporal peers on his left. The judges and moſt eminent lawyers had a place aſſigned them behind the biſhops: The courtiers of greateſt diſtinction behind the peers: And in the midſt of this ſplendid aſſembly was produced the unhappy Lambert, and he was required to defend his opinions againſt his royal antagoniſt †.

THE biſhop of Chicheſter opened the conference, by ſaying, that Lambert, being charged with heretical pravity, had appealed from his biſhop to the King; as if he expected more favour from this application, and as if the King could ever be induced to protect a heretic: That tho' his majeſty had thrown off the uſurpations of the ſee of Rome; had diſincorporated ſome idle monks, who lived like drones in a bee-hive; had remedied the idolatrous worſhip of images; had publiſhed the Bible in Engliſh, for the inſtruction of all his ſubjects; and had made ſome leſſer alterations, which every one muſt approve of; yet was he determined to maintain the purity of the catholic faith, and to puniſh with the utmoſt ſeverity all departure from it: And that he had taken the preſent opportunity, before ſo learned and grave an auditory, of convincing Lambert of his errors; but if he ſtill perſevered obſtinately in them, he muſt expect the moſt condign puniſhment ‡.

AFTER this preamble, which was not very encouraging, the King aſked Lambert, with a ſtern countenance, what his opinion was of Chriſt's corporal preſence in the ſacrament of the altar; and when Lambert began his diſcourſe with

† Fox, vol. ii. p. 426. ‡ Goodwin's Annals.

ſome

Chap. VI. 1538.

ſome compliment to his Majeſty, he rejected the praiſe with diſdain and indignation. He afterwards preſſed Lambert with ſome arguments, drawn from Scripture and the ſchoolmen: The audience applauded the force of his reaſoning, and the extent of his erudition: Cranmer ſeconded his proofs by ſome new topics: Gardiner entered the liſts as a ſupport to Cranmer: Tonſtal took up the argument after Gardiner: Stokeſley brought freſh aid to Tonſtal: Six biſhops more appeared ſucceſſively in the field after Stokeſley. And the diſputation, if it deſerves the name, was prolonged for five hours; till Lambert, fatigued, confounded, brow-beaten, and abaſhed, was at laſt reduced to ſilence. The King then, returning to the charge, aſked him whether he was convinced; and he propoſed, as a concluding argument, this intereſting queſtion, whether he was reſolved to live or die? Lambert, who poſſeſſed that courage which conſiſts in obſtinacy, replied, that he caſt himſelf wholly on his majeſty's clemency: The King told him, that he would be no protector of heretics; and therefore, if that was his final anſwer, he muſt expect to be committed to the flames. Cromwel, as vicegerent, read the ſentence againſt him *.

LAMBERT, whoſe vanity had probably incited him the more to perſevere on account of the greatneſs of this public appearance, was not daunted by the terrors of that puniſhment, to which he was condemned. His executioners took care to make the ſufferings of a man who had perſonally oppoſed the King, as cruel as poſſible: He was burned at a ſlow fire; his legs and thighs were conſumed to the ſtumps; and when there appeared no end of his tortures, ſome of the guards, more merciful than the reſt, lifted him on their halberts, and threw him into the flames, where he was conſumed. While they were employed in this

* Collier, in his Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, vol. ii. p. 152, has preſerved an account which Cromwel gave of this conference, in a letter to Sir Thomas Wyat, the King's ambaſſador in Germany. "The "King's majeſty," ſays Cromwel, "for the reverence of the holy ſacrament of the altar, did ſit "openly in his hall, and there preſided at the diſputation, proceſs and judgment of a miſerable here-"tic ſacramentary, who was burned the 20th of November. It was a wonder to ſee how princely, "with how excellent gravity, and ineſtimable majeſty his highneſs exerciſed there the very office of "ſupreme head of the church of England. How benignly his grace eſſayed to convert the miſerable "man: How ſtrong and manifeſt reaſons his highneſs alledged againſt him. I wiſh the princes and "potentates of Chriſtendom to have had a meet place to have ſeen it. Undoubtedly they ſhould have "much marvelled at his majeſty's moſt high wiſdom and judgment, and reputed him no otherwiſe "after the ſame, than in a manner the mirror and light of all other Kings and princes in Chriſten-"dom." It was by ſuch flatteries, that Henry was engaged to make his ſentiments the ſtandard to all mankind; and was determined to enforce, by the ſevereſt penalties, his *ſtrong and manifeſt* reaſons for tranſubſtantiation.

friendly office, he cried aloud ſeveral times, *None but Chriſt, none but Chriſt*; and theſe words were in his mouth when he expired †. Chap. VI. 1538.

Some few days before this execution, four Dutch anabaptiſts, three men and a woman, had faggots tied to their backs at Paul's croſs; and were burned in that manner. And a man and a woman of the ſame ſect and country, were burned in Smithfield ‡.

It was the unhappy ſituation of the Engliſh, during that age, that when they laboured under any grievance, they had not the ſatisfaction of expecting redreſs from Parliament: On the contrary, they had reaſon to dread each meeting of that aſſembly, and were then ſure of having tyranny converted into law, and aggravated, perhaps, with ſome circumſtance, which the arbitrary prince and his miniſters had not hitherto deviſed, or did not think proper, of themſelves, to carry into execution. This abject ſervility never more eminently appeared than in a new Parliament, which the King now aſſembled, and which, if he had been ſo pleaſed, might have been the laſt that ever ſat in England. But he found them too uſeful inſtruments of dominion ever to entertain thoughts of giving them a total excluſion. 1539. A Parliament. 28th April.

The chancellor opened the Parliament by informing the houſe of Lords, that it was his majeſty's earneſt deſire, to extirpate from his kingdom all diverſity of opinions with regard to religion; and as this enterprize was difficult and important, he deſired them to chuſe a committee among themſelves, who might frame certain articles, and communicate them afterwards to the Parliament. The lords named the vicar-general, Cromwel, now created a peer, the archbiſhops of Canterbury and York, the biſhops of Durham, Carliſle, Worceſter, Bath and Wells, Bagor, and Ely. The houſe might have ſeen what a hopeful taſk they were undertaking: This ſmall committee itſelf was agitated with ſuch diverſity of opinions, that it could come to no concluſion. The duke of Norfolk then moved in the houſe, that, ſince there were no hopes of having a report from the committee, the articles of faith, propoſed to be eſtabliſhed, ſhould be reduced to ſix; and new committees be appointed to frame an act with regard to them. As this peer was underſtood to ſpeak the King's mind, his motion was immediately aſſented to; and, after a ſhort prorogation, the bill of the *ſix articles*, or the bloody bill, as the proteſtants juſtly termed it, was introduced, and having paſſed the two houſes, had the King's aſſent affixed to it.

In this law, the real preſence was eſtabliſhed, the communion in one kind, the perpetual obligation of vows of chaſtity, the utility of private maſſes, the Law of the ſix articles.

† Fox's Acts and monuments, p. 427. Burnet. ‡ Stowe, p. 556.

celibacy

Chap. VI. 1539.

celibacy of the clergy, the neceſſity of auricular confeſſion. The denial of the firſt article, with regard to the real preſence, ſubjected the perſon to death by fire, and to the ſame forfeiture as in caſes of treaſon; and admitted not the privilege of abjuring: An unheard of ſeverity, and unknown to the inquiſition itſelf. The denial of any of the other five articles, even tho' recanted, was puniſhable by the forfeiture of goods and chattels, and impriſonment during the King's pleaſure: An obſtinate adherence to error, or a relapſe, was adjudged to be felony, and puniſhable with death. The marriage of prieſts was ſubjected to the ſame puniſhment: Their commerce with women, for the firſt offence, was forfeiture and impriſonment; for the ſecond, death. Abſtaining from confeſſion, and from receiving the euchariſt at the accuſtomed times, ſubjected the perſon to fine and impriſonment during the King's pleaſure; and if the criminal perſevered after conviction, he was puniſhable by death and forfeiture, as in caſes of felony *. Commiſſioners were to be appointed by the King, for enquiring into theſe hereſies and irregular practices, and the criminals were to be tried by a jury.

THE King, in framing this law, laid his oppreſſive hand on both parties; and even the catholics had reaſon to complain, that the friars and nuns, tho' diſmiſſed their convent, ſhould be capriciouſly reſtrained to the practice of celibacy †: But as the proteſtants were chiefly expoſed to the ſeverity of the act, the miſery of adverſaries, according to the uſual maxims of party, was regarded by the adherents to the antient religion, as their own proſperity and triumph. Cranmer had the courage to oppoſe this bill in the houſe; and tho' the King deſired him to abſent himſelf, he could not be prevailed on to give this proof of compliance ‡. Henry was accuſtomed to Cranmer's freedom and ſincerity; and being convinced of the general rectitude of his intentions, gave him an unuſual indulgence in that particular, and never allowed even a whiſper againſt him. That prelate, however, was now obliged, in obedience to the ſtatute, to diſmiſs his wife, the niece of Oſiander, a famous divine of Nuremburgh ‖; and Henry, ſatisfied with this proof of ſubmiſſion, ſhowed him his former countenance and favour. Latimer and Shaxton threw up their biſhoprics, on account of this law, and were committed to priſon.

* 31 Hen. VIII. c. 14. Herbert in Kennet, p. 219.

† There is a ſtory, that the duke of Norfolk, meeting, ſoon after this act was paſſed, one of his chaplains, who was ſuſpected of favouring the reformation, ſaid to him. "Now, Sir, what think you "of the law to hinder prieſts from having wives?" "Yes, my lord," replies the chaplain, "you "have done that; but I will anſwer for it, you cannot hinder men's wives from having prieſts."

‡ Burnet, vol. i. p. 249, 270. Fox, vol. ii. p. 1037. ‖ Herbert in Kennet, p. 219.

THE

Chap. VI. 1539.

THE Parliament having thus reſigned all their eccleſiaſtical liberties, proceeded to an entire ſurrender of their civil; and without ſcruple or deliberation they made by one act a total ſubverſion of the Engliſh conſtitution. They gave to the King's proclamations the ſame force as to a ſtatute enacted by Parliament; and to render the matter worſe, if poſſible, they framed this law as if it were only declarative, and were intended to explain the natural extent of the regal authority. The preamble contains, that the King had formerly ſet forth ſeveral proclamations, which froward perſons had wilfully contemned, not conſidering what a King by his royal power may do; that this licence might encourage offenders not only to diſobey the laws of Almighty God, but alſo to diſhonour the King's moſt royal majeſty, *who may full ill bear it*; that ſudden emergencies often occur, which require ſpeedy remedies, and cannot await the ſlow aſſembling and deliberations of Parliament; and that, tho' the King was empowered, by his authority, derived from God, to conſult the public good on theſe occaſions, yet the oppoſition of refractory ſubjects might puſh him to extremity and violence: For theſe reaſons, the Parliament, that they might remove all occaſion of doubt, aſcertained by a ſtatute this prerogative of the crown, and enabled his majeſty, with the advice of his council, to ſet forth proclamations, enjoining obedience under whatever pains and penalties he ſhall think proper: And theſe proclamations were to have the force of perpetual laws *.

Proclamations made equal to laws.

WHAT ſhows either a ſtupid or wilful blindneſs of the Parliament is, that they pretended, even after this ſtatute, to maintain ſome limitations in the government; and they enacted that no proclamation ſhould deprive any perſon of his lawful poſſeſſions, liberties, inheritances, privileges, franchiſes; nor yet infringe any common law or laudable cuſtom of the realm. They conſidered not, that no pains could be inflicted on the diſobedience of proclamations, without invading ſome liberty or property of the ſubject; and that the power of enacting new laws, joined to the diſpenſing power, then exerciſed by the crown, amounted to a full legiſlative authority. It is true, the Kings of England had been always accuſtomed, from their own authority, to iſſue proclamations, and to exact obedience to them; and this prerogative was, no doubt, a ſtrong ſymptom of abſolute government: But ſtill there was a difference between a power, which was exerciſed on a particular emergence, and which muſt be juſtified by the preſent expediency or neceſſity; and an authority conferred by a poſitive ſtatute, which could no longer admit of controul or limitation.

COULD any act be more oppoſite to the ſpirit of liberty than this law, it would have been another of the ſame parliament. They paſſed attainders, not only

Settlement of the ſucceſſion.

* 31 Hen. VIII. c. 8.

Chap. VI. 1539. againſt the Marqueſs of Exeter, the Lords Montacute, Darcy, Huſſey, and others, who had been legally tried and condemned; but alſo againſt ſome perſons, of the higheſt quality, who had never been accuſed, or examined, or convicted. The violent hatred, which Henry bore to cardinal Pole, had extended itſelf to all his friends and relations; and his mother in particular the counteſs of Saliſbury, had, on that account, become extremely obnoxious to him. She was alſo accuſed of having employed her authority with her tenants, to hinder them from peruſing the new tranſlation of the Bible; of having procured bulls from Rome, which, 'tis ſaid, were found at Coudray, her country ſeat; of having kept a correſpondence with her ſon, the cardinal: But Henry found, either that theſe offences could not be proved, or that they would not by law be ſubject to ſuch ſevere puniſhment as he deſired to inflict upon her. He reſolved, therefore, to proceed againſt her in a more ſummary and more tyrannical manner; and for that purpoſe, he ſent Cromwel, who was but too obſequious to his will, to demand of the judges, whether the Parliament could attaint a perſon, who was forthcoming, without giving him any trial, or citing him to appear before them *. The judges replied, that it was a dangerous queſtion, and that the high court of Parliament ought to give examples to inferior courts of proceeding according to juſtice: No inferior court could act in that arbitrary manner, and they thought that the parliament never would. Being preſſed to give a more explicit anſwer, they replied, that, if a perſon were attainted in that manner, the attainder could never after be brought in queſtion, but muſt remain good in law. Henry learned by this deciſion, that ſuch a method of proceeding, tho' directly contrary to all the principles of equity, was yet practicable; and this being all he was anxious to know, he reſolved to employ it againſt the counteſs of Saliſbury. Cromwel ſhowed to the houſe of peers a banner, on which were embroidered the five wounds of Chriſt, the ſymbol, choſen by the northern rebels; and this banner, he affirmed, was found in the Counteſs's houſe †. No other proof ſeems to have been produced, in order to aſcertain her guilt: The Parliament, without farther enquiry, paſſed a bill of attainder againſt her; and they involved in the ſame act, without any better proof, as far as appears, Gertrude Marchioneſs of Exeter, Sir Adrian Forteſcue, and Sir Thomas Dingley. Theſe two gentlemen were executed: The marchioneſs was pardoned, and ſurvived the King; the counteſs received a reprieve.

THE only beneficial act, paſſed this ſeſſion was that by which the parliament confirmed the ſurrender of the monaſteries; and yet even this act contains much falſhood, much tyranny, and were it not that all private rights muſt ſubmit to

* Coke's 4th Inſt. p. 37, 38. † Rymer, xiv. 652.

public intereſt, much injuſtice and iniquity. The ſcheme of engaging the abbots to make a ſurrender of their monaſteries had been conducted, as may eaſily be imagined, with many invidious circumſtances: Arts of all kinds had been employed; every motive, that could work on the frailty of human nature, had been ſet before them; and it was with great difficulty that theſe dignified conventuals were brought to a conceſſion, which moſt of them regarded as deſtructive of their intereſts, as well as ſacrilegious and criminal in itſelf *. Three abbots had ſhown more conſtancy than the reſt, the abbots of Colcheſter, Reading, and Glaſtenbury; and in order to puniſh them for their oppoſition, and make them an example to others, means had been found to convict them of treaſon; they had periſhed by the hands of the executioner, and the revenues of the convents had been forfeited †. Beſides, tho' none of theſe violences had had place, the King knew, that a ſurrender made by men, who were only tenants for life, would not bear examination; and he was therefore reſolved to make all ſure by his uſual expedient, an act of parliament. In the preamble to this act, the parliament aſſerts, that all the ſurrenders, made by the abbots, had been, "without "conſtraint, of their own accord, and according to the due courſe of common "law." And in conſequence, the parliament confirms the ſurrenders, and aſcertains the property of the abbey lands to the King and his ſucceſſors for ever ‡. It is remarkable, that all the mitred abbots ſtill ſat in the houſe of peers; and that none of them made any proteſtation againſt this ſtatute. Chap. VI. 1539.

In this ſeſſion, the rank of all the great officers of ſtate was fixed: Cromwel, as vicegerent, had the precedency aſſigned him above all of them. It was thought ſingular, that a black-ſmith's ſon, for he was no other, ſhould have place next the royal family; and that a man poſſeſſed of no manner of literature, ſhould be ſet at the head of the church.

As ſoon as the act of the ſix articles had paſſed, the catholics were extremely vigilant to inform againſt offenders; and no leſs than five hundred perſons were in a little time thrown into priſon. But Cromwel, who had not had intereſt enough to prevent that act, was able, for the preſent, to elude its execution. Seconded by the Duke of Suffolk, and lord chancellor Audley, as well as Cranmer, he remonſtrated againſt the cruelty of puniſhing ſo many delinquents; and he obtained permiſſion to ſet them at liberty. The uncertainty of the King's humour gave each party an opportunity of triumphing in its turn. No ſooner had Henry paſſed this law, which ſeemed to give ſo deep a wound to the reformers, than he granted a general permiſſion, for every one to have the new tranſlation of the

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 158. & ſeq. † 31 H. 8. c. 10. ‡ 31 H. 8. c. 13.

Chap. VI. 1536.

Bible in his family: A conceſſion regarded by that party, as a moſt important victory.

Henry's projects of marriage.

But as Henry was obſerved to be much governed by his wives, while he retained his fondneſs for them, the final prevalence of either party, ſeemed to depend much on the choice of the future Queen. Immediately after the death of Jane Seymour, the moſt beloved of all his wives, he began to think of a new marriage. He firſt caſt his eye on the dutcheſs dowager of Milan, niece of the Emperor; and he made propoſals for that alliance. But meeting with difficulties in this deſign, he was carried, by his friendſhip for Francis, rather to think of a French princeſs. He demanded the dutcheſs dowager of Longueville, daughter of the Duke of Guiſe, a prince of the houſe of Lorraine; but Francis told him, that that lady was already betrothed to the King of Scotland. The King, however, would not take a repulſe: He had ſet his heart extremely on the match: The information, which he had received, of the dutcheſs's accompliſhments and beauty, had prepoſſeſſed him in her favour; and having privately ſent over Meautys to examine her perſon, and get certain intelligence of her conduct, the accounts, which that agent brought him, ſerved farther to inflame his deſires. He learned, that ſhe was big made; and he thought her, on that account, the more proper match for him, who was now become ſomewhat corpulent. The pleaſure too of mortifying his nephew, whom he did not love, was a farther incitement to his proſecution of this match; and he inſiſted, that Francis ſhould give him the preference to the King of Scots. But Francis, tho' ſenſible that the alliance of England was of much greater importance to his intereſt, would not affront his friend and ally; and to prevent farther ſolicitations, he immediately ſent the Princeſs to Scotland. Not to ſhock, however, Henry's humour, Francis made him an offer of Mary of Bourbon, daughter of the duke of Vendome; but as the King was informed, that James had formerly rejected this Princeſs, he would not hear any farther of ſuch a propoſal. The French monarch then offered him the choice of the two young ſiſters of the new Queen of Scots; and he aſſured him, that they were nowiſe inferior either in merit or ſize to their elder ſiſter, and that one of them was even ſuperior in beauty. The King was as ſcrupulous with regard to the perſon of his wives, as if his heart had been really ſuſceptible of a delicate paſſion; and he was unwilling to truſt any relations, or even pictures, with regard to this important particular. He propoſed to Francis, that they ſhould have a conference at Calais on pretence of buſineſs; and that that monarch ſhould bring along with him the two Princeſſes of Guiſe, together with the fineſt ladies of quality in France, that he might make a choice among them. But the gallant ſpirit of Francis was ſhocked with this propoſal; and he was impreſſed with too

too much regard, he ſaid, for the fair ſex, to carry ladies of the firſt quality, like geldings to a market, there to be choſen or rejected by the humour of the merchant *. Henry would hearken to none of theſe niceties, but ſtill inſiſted on his propoſal; which, however, notwithſtanding Francis's earneſt deſire of continuing a good correſpondence with him, was finally rejected. Chap. VI. 1539.

THE King began then to turn his thoughts towards a German alliance; and as the princes of the Smalcaldic league were extremely diſguſted againſt the Emperor on account of the perſecution of their religion, he hoped, by matching himſelf into one of their families, to renew an amity, which he regarded as ſo uſeful to him. Cromwel joyfully ſeconded this intention; and propoſed to him Anne of Cleves, whoſe father, the duke of that name, had great intereſt among the Lutheran princes, and whoſe ſiſter, Sibylla, was married to the elector of Saxony, the head of the proteſtant alliance. A flattering picture, drawn for the Princeſs by Hans Holben, determined Henry to apply to her father; and after ſome negotiations, the marriage, notwithſtanding the oppoſition of the elector of Saxony, was at laſt concluded; and the Princeſs was ſent over to England. The King, impatient to be ſatisfied with regard to the perſon of his bride, came privately to Rocheſter, and got a ſight of her. He found her big, indeed, and tall, as he could wiſh; but utterly devoid both of beauty and grace; very unlike the pictures and repreſentations, which he had received: He ſwore ſhe was a great Flanders-mare; and declared, that he never could poſſibly bear her any affection. The matter was worſe, when he found, that ſhe could ſpeak no language but Dutch, of which he was entirely ignorant; and that the charms of her converſation were not likely to compenſate for the homelineſs of her perſon. He returned to Greenwich very melancholy; and much lamented his hard fate to Cromwel, as well as to Lord Ruſſel, Sir Anthony Brown, and Sir Anthony Denny. This laſt gentleman, in order to give him comfort, told him, that his misfortune was common to Kings, who could not, like private perſons, chooſe for themſelves; but muſt receive their wives from the judgment and fancy of others. He marries Anne of Cleves. Diſlikes her.

IT was the ſubject of debate among the King's counſellors, whether the marriage could not yet be broke; and the Princeſs be ſent back to her own country. Henry's ſituation ſeemed at that time very critical. After the ten years truce, concluded between the Emperor and the King of France, a good underſtanding ſeemed to have taken place between theſe rival monarchs; and ſuch marks of union appeared, as gave great jealouſy to the court of England. The Emperor, who knew the generous nature of Francis, even put a confidence in him, which is rare, to that degree, among great princes. An inſurrection had been raiſed in the Low

* Le Grand, vol. iii. p. 638.

Countries

Chap. VI. 1539. Countries by the inhabitants of Ghent, and ſeemed to threaten the moſt dangerous conſquences. Charles, who reſided at that time in Spain, reſolved to go in perſon to Flanders, in order to appeaſe theſe diſorders; but he found great difficulties in contriving the manner of his paſſage thither. The road by Italy and Germany was tedious: The voyage thro' the Channel dangerous, by reaſon of the Engliſh naval power: He aſked Francis's permiſſion to paſs thro' his dominions; and he entruſted himſelf into the hands of a rival, whom he had ſo mortally offended. The French monarch received him at Paris, with great magnificence and courteſy; and tho' prompted both by revenge and intereſts, as well as by the advice of his miſtreſs and favourites, to make advantage of the preſent opportunity, he conducted the emperor ſafely out of his dominions; and would not ſo much as ſpeak to him of buſineſs during his abode in France, leſt his demands ſhould bear the air of violence upon his royal gueſt.

HENRY, who was informed of all theſe particulars, believed that an entire and cordial union had taken place between theſe two great monarchs; and that their religious zeal might prompt them to fall with combined arms upon England *. An alliance with the German princes ſeemed now, more than ever, requiſite for his intereſt and ſafety; and he knew, that, if he ſent back the Princeſs of Cleves, ſuch an affront would be highly reſented by her friends and family. He was therefore reſolved, notwithſtanding his averſion to her, to complete the marriage; and he told Cromwel, that, ſince matters had gone ſo far, he muſt put his neck into the yoke. Cromwel, who knew how much his own intereſt was concerned in this affair, was very anxious to learn from the King, next morning after the marriage, whether he now liked his ſpouſe any better. The King told him that he hated her worſe than ever; and that her perſon was more lothſome on a near approach: He was reſolved never to meddle with her; and even ſuſpected her not to be a true maid: A point, about which he had entertained an extreme delicacy. He continued however to be civil to Anne; he even ſeemed to repoſe his uſual confidence in Cromwel; but tho' he exerted this command over his temper, a diſcontent lay lurking in his breaſt, and was ready to burſt out on the firſt opportunity.

1540. 6th January.

12 April. A Parliament. A SESSION of Parliament was held; and none of the abbots were now allowed a place in the houſe of peers. The King, by the mouth of the chancellor, complained to the Parliament of the great diverſity of religions, which ſtill prevailed among his ſubjects: A grievance, he ſaid, which ought the leſs to be endured; becauſe the ſcriptures were now publiſhed in Engliſh, and ought univerſally to be the ſtandard of belief to all mankind. But he had appointed, he

* Stowe, p. 579.

ſaid,

said, some bishops and divines to draw up a list of tenets, to which his people were to assent; and he was determined, that Christ, the doctrine of Christ, and the truth should have the victory. The King seems to have expected more effect in ascertaining truth, from this new book of his doctors, than had ensued from the publication of the scriptures. Cromwel, as vicar-general, made also in the King's name a speech to the upper house; and the peers, in return, bestowed such flattery on him, that they said he was worthy, by his desert, to be vicar-general of the universe. That minister seemed to be no less in his master's good graces: He received, soon after the sitting of the Parliament, the title of Earl of Essex, and was installed knight of the garter. Chap. VI. 1540.

There remained only one religious order in England; the knights of St. John of Jerusalem, or the knights of Malta, as they are commonly called. This order, partly ecclesiastical, partly military, had, by their valour, done great service to Christendom; and had very much retarded, at Jerusalem, Rhodes, and Malta, the rapid progress of the barbarians. During the general surrender of the religious houses in England, they had exerted their spirits, and had obstinately refused to yield up their revenues to the King; and Henry, who would endure no society that professed obedience to the pope, was obliged to have recourse to the Parliament for the dissolution of this order. Their revenues were large; and formed an addition nowise contemptible to the many acquisitions, which the King had already made. But he had very ill husbanded the great revenue obtained by the plunder of the church: His profuse generosity dissipated faster than his rapacity could supply; and the parliament were surprized this session to find a new demand made upon them of four tenths and a subsidy of one shilling in the pound during two years: So ill were the people's expectations answered, that the crown was never more to require any supply from the people. The commons tho' lavish of their liberty, and of the blood of their fellow subjects, were extremely frugal of their money; and it was not without difficulty that that grant could be obtained by this absolute and dreaded monarch. The convocation gave the King four shillings in the pound to be levied in two years. The pretext for these grants was the great expence, which Henry had been put to for the defence of the nation, in building forts along the sea coast, and in equipping a navy. As he had at present no ally on the continent, in whom he reposed much confidence, he relied only on his domestic strength, and was on that account obliged to be more expensive in his preparations against the dangers of an invasion.

The King's favour to Cromwel, and his acquiescence in the marriage of Anne of Cleves, were both of them deceitful appearances: His aversion to the Queen secretly

Chap. VI. 1540. Fall of Cromwell.

ſecretly encreaſed every day; and having at laſt broke all reſtraint, it prompted him at once to ſeek the diſſolution of a marriage ſo odious to him, and to involve his miniſter in ruin, who had been the author of it. The fall of Cromwel was haſtened by other cauſes. All the nobility hated a man, who, being of ſuch a baſe extraction, had not only mounted above them by his ſtation of vicar-general, but had engroſſed many of the other conſiderable offices of the kingdom: Beſides that commiſſion, which gave him a high, and almoſt abſolute authority over the clergy, and even over the laity, he was Lord privy-ſeal, Lord chamberlain, and Maſter of the wards: He had alſo obtained the order of the garter, a dignity which had ever been conferred only on men of the moſt illuſtrious families, and which ſeemed to be profaned by its being communicated to ſo mean a perſon. The people were averſe to him, as the ſuppoſed author of the violences on the monaſteries; eſtabliſhments, which were ſtill revered and beloved by the commonalty. The catholics regarded him as the concealed enemy of their religion: The proteſtants, obſerving his exterior concurrence with all the perſecutions exerciſed againſt them, were inclined to bear him as little favour; and reproached him with the timidity, if not treachery, of his conduct. And the King, who found, that great clamours had on all hands ariſen againſt the adminiſtration, was not diſpleaſed to throw on Cromwel the load of public hatred; and he hoped, by ſo eaſy a ſacrifice, to regain the affections of his ſubjects.

But there was another cauſe, which ſuddenly ſet all theſe motives in action, and brought about an unexpected revolution in the miniſtry. The King had fixed his affection on Catherine Howard, niece to the Duke of Norfolk; and being determined to gratify this new paſſion, he could find no other expedient but by procuring a divorce from his preſent conſort, to raiſe Catherine to his bed and throne. The Duke, who had long been engaged in enmity with Cromwel, made the ſame uſe of her inſinuations, to ruin the miniſter, that he had formerly done of Anne Boleyn's againſt Wolſey: And when all engines were prepared, he obtained a commiſſion from the King, to arreſt Cromwel at the council-board on the accuſation of high-treaſon, and to commit him to the Tower. Immediately after, a bill of attainder was framed againſt him; and the houſe of peers thought proper, without trial, examination, or evidence, to condemn to death a man, whom, a few days before, they had declared worthy to be vicar-general of the univerſe. The houſe of commons paſſed the bill, tho' not without ſome oppoſition. Cromwel was accuſed of hereſy and treaſon; but the inſtances of his treaſonable practices are utterly improbable, or even abſolutely ridiculous *. The only circumſtance of his conduct, by which he ſeems to have merited this fate,

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 278.

was

was his being the inſtrument of the King's tyranny, in conducting like iniquitous bills, in the former ſeſſion, againſt the counteſs of Saliſbury and others. Chap. VI. 1540.

Cromwel endeavoured to ſoften the King by the moſt humble ſupplications; but all to no purpoſe: It was not the practice of that Prince to ruin his miniſters and favourites by halves; and tho' the unhappy priſoner wrote once in ſo moving a ſtrain as even to draw tears from his eyes, he hardened himſelf againſt all movements of pity, and refuſed his pardon. The concluſion of Cromwel's letter ran in theſe words. "I a moſt woful priſoner, am ready to ſubmit to death when "it ſhall pleaſe God and your majeſty; and yet the frail fleſh incites me to call "to your grace for mercy and pardon of mine offences. Written at the Tower "with the heavy heart and trembling hand of your highneſs's moſt miſerable "priſoner and poor ſlave, Thomas Cromwel." And a little below, "Moſt "gracious Prince, I cry for mercy, mercy, mercy."* When brought to execution, he avoided all earneſt proteſtations of his innocence, and all complaints againſt the ſentence pronounced upon him. He knew that Henry would reſent on his ſon theſe ſymptoms of oppoſition to his will, and that his death alone would not terminate that monarch's vengeance. He was a man of prudence, induſtry, and ability; worthy of a better maſter and of a better fate. Tho' raiſed to the ſummit of power from a very low origin, he betrayed no inſolence or contempt of his inferiors; and was careful to remember all the obligations, which, during his lower fortune, he had owed to any one. He had ſerved as a private ſentinel in the Italian wars, where he received ſome good offices from a Lucqueſe merchant, who had entirely forgot his perſon, as well as the ſervice, which he had rendered him. Cromwel, in his grandeur, happened, at London, to caſt his eye on his benefactor, now reduced to poverty, by misfortunes. He immediately ſent for him, put him in mind of their antient friendſhip, and by his grateful aſſiſtance, re-inſtated him in his former proſperous circumſtances †. 28th July. His execution.

The meaſures for divorcing the King from Anne of Cleves, were carried on at the ſame time with the bill of attainder againſt Cromwel. The houſe of peers, in conjunction with the commons, applied to him by petition, deſiring that he would allow his marriage to be examined; and orders were immediately given to lay the matter before the convocation. Anne had been formerly contracted by her father to the Duke of Lorrain; but ſhe, as well as the Duke, were at that time under age, and the contract had been afterwards annulled by the conſent of both parties. The King, however, pleaded this contract as a ground of divorce; and he added two reaſons more, which may ſeem a little extraordinary; that, when he eſpouſed Anne, he had not *inwardly* given his conſent, King's divorce from Anne of Cleves.

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 281, 282. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 172.

Chap. VI. 1540. and that he had not thought proper to conſummate the marriage. The convocation were ſatisfied with theſe reaſons, and ſolemnly annulled the marriage between the King and Queen: The Parliament ratified the deciſion of the clergy *; and the ſentence was ſoon after notified to that princeſs.

ANNE was bleſt with a happy inſenſibility of temper, even in the points which the moſt nearly affect her ſex; and the King's averſion towards her, as well as his proſecution of the divorce, had never given her the leaſt uneaſineſs. She willingly hearkened to terms of compoſition with him; and when he offered to adopt her as his ſiſter, to give her place next the Queen, and his own daughter, and to make a ſettlement of three thouſand pounds a year upon her; ſhe accepted of the conditions, and gave her conſent to the divorce †. She even wrote to her brother, (for her father was dead) that ſhe had been very well uſed in England, and deſired him to live in good terms with the King. The only inſtance of pride which ſhe betrayed was, that ſhe refuſed to return into her own country after the affront which ſhe had received; and ſhe lived and died in England.

NOTWITHSTANDING Anne's moderation, this incident produced a great coldneſs between the King and the German princes; but as the ſituation of Europe was now much altered, Henry was the more indifferent about their reſentment. The cloſe intimacy which had taken place between Francis and Charles, had ſubſiſted during a very ſhort time: The diſſimilarity of their characters ſoon renewed, with greater violence than ever, their former jealouſy and hatred. While Charles remained at Paris, Francis had been imprudently engaged, by his open temper, and by that ſatisfaction which a noble mind naturally feels in performing generous actions, to make ſome very dangerous confidences to that intereſted monarch; and having now loſt all ſuſpicion of his rival, he hoped, that the emperor and he, ſupporting each other, might neglect every other alliance. He not only communicated to his gueſt the ſtate of his negociations with Sultan Solyman and the Venetians: He alſo laid open the ſolicitations which he had received from

* To ſhow how much Henry ſported with law and common ſenſe; how ſervilely the Parliament followed all his caprices; and how much both of them were loſt to all ſentiment of ſhame; an act was paſſed this ſeſſion, declaring, that a precontract ſhould be no ground of annulling a marriage; as if that pretext had not been made uſe of both in the caſe of Anne Boleyn and Anne of Cleves. But the King's intention in this law is ſaid to be a deſign of reſtoring the princeſs Elizabeth to her right of legitimacy; and it was his character never to look farther than the preſent object, without regarding the inconſiſtency of his conduct. The Parliament made it high treaſon to deny the diſſolution of Henry's marriage with Anne of Cleves. Herbert.

† Herbert, p. 458, 459.

the court of England, to enter into a confederacy againſt him *. Charles had no ſooner reached his own dominions, than he ſhewed himſelf unworthy of the friendly reception which he had met with. He flatly refuſed to execute his promiſe, and put the duke of Orleans in poſſeſſion of the Milaneſe: He informed Solyman, and the ſenate of Venice, of the treatment which they had received from their ally: And he took care that Henry ſhould not be ignorant how willingly Francis had abandoned his ancient friend, to whom he owed ſuch important obligations, and had ſacrificed him to a new confederate: He even poiſoned and miſrepreſented many things, which the unſuſpecting heart of the French monarch had diſcloſed to him. Had Henry poſſeſſed true judgment and generoſity, this incident alone had been ſufficient to guide him in the choice of his allies. But his domineering pride carried him immediately to renounce the friendſhip of Francis, who had ſo unexpectedly given the emperor the preference: And as Charles invited him to a renewal of ancient amity, he willingly accepted the offer; and thinking himſelf ſecure in this alliance, he neglected the friendſhip both of France and of the German princes. Chap. VI. 1540.

THE new turn which Henry had taken with regard to foreign affairs, was extremely agreeable to his catholic ſubjects; and as it had perhaps contributed, among other reaſons, to the ruin of Cromwel, it made them entertain hopes of a final prevalence over their antagoniſts. The marriage of the King with Catherine Howard, which followed ſoon after his divorce from Anne of Cleves, was alſo regarded as a very favourable incident to their cauſe; and the ſubſequent events correſponded perfectly to their expectations. The King's councils being now directed by Norfolk and Gardiner, a furious perſecution commenced againſt the proteſtants; and the law of the ſix articles was executed with rigour. Dr. Barnes, who had been the cauſe of Lambert's execution, felt, in his turn, the ſeverity of the perſecuting ſpirit; and, by a bill which paſſed in parliament, without trial, he was condemned to the flames, together with Jerome and Gerrard. He diſcuſſed theological queſtions even at the ſtake; and as the debate between him and the ſheriff, turned upon the invocation of ſaints, he ſaid, that he doubted whether the ſaints could pray for us; but if they could, he hoped in half an hour, to be praying for the ſheriff and all the ſpectators. He next entreated the ſheriff to carry to the King his dying requeſts, which he fondly imagined would have authority with that monarch, who had ſent him to the ſtake. The purport of his requeſts was, that Henry, beſides repreſſing ſuperſtitious ceremonies, ſhould be extremely vigilant in preventing fornication and common ſwearing †. 8th Auguſt. His marriage with Catherine Howard.

* Pere Daniel, Du Tillet. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 298. Fox.

Chap. VI. 1540. WHILE Henry was exerting this violence againſt the proteſtants, he ſpared not the catholics who denied his ſupremacy; and a foreigner, who was at that time in England, had reaſon to ſay, that thoſe who were againſt the pope were burned, and thoſe who were for him were hanged *. The King even diſplayed, in an oſtentatious manner, this tyrannical equity and impartiality, which reduced both parties to ſubjection, and infuſed terror into every breaſt. Barnes, Gerrard, and Jerome had been carried to the place of execution on three hurdles; and along with them there was placed on each hurdle a catholic, who was alſo executed for his religion. Theſe catholics were Abel, Fetherſtone, and Powel, who declared, that the moſt grievous part of their puniſhment was the being coupled to ſuch heretical miſcreants as ſuffered with them †.

THO' the ſpirit of the Engliſh ſeemed to be totally ſunk under the deſpotic power of Henry, there appeared ſome ſymptoms of diſcontent: An inconſiderable inſurrection broke out in Yorkſhire, headed by Sir John Nevil; but it was ſoon ſuppreſſed, and Nevil, with the other ringleaders, was executed. The rebels were ſuppoſed to have been inſtigated by the intrigues of cardinal Pole; and the King was inſtantly determined to make the counteſs of Saliſbury, who lay under ſentence of death, ſuffer for her ſon's offences. He ordered her to be carried to the place of
27 May. execution, and this venerable matron maintained ſtill, in theſe diſtreſsful circumſtances, the ſpirit of that long race of monarchs from whom ſhe was deſcended ‡. She refuſed to lay her head on the block, or ſubmit to a ſentence where ſhe had received no trial. She told the executioner, that, if he would have her head, he muſt win it the beſt way he could: And thus ſhaking her venerable grey locks, ſhe ran about the ſcaffold; and the executioner followed her with his ax, aiming many fruitleſs blows at her neck, before he was able to give her the fatal ſtroke. Thus periſhed the laſt of the line of Plantagenet, which, with great glory, but ſtill greater crimes and misfortunes, had governed England for the ſpace of three hundred years. The lord Leonard Grey, a man who had formerly rendered great ſervice to the crown, was alſo beheaded for treaſon, ſoon after the counteſs of Saliſbury. We know little of the grounds of his proſecution.

THE inſurrection in the North engaged Henry to make a progreſs thither, in order to quiet the minds of his people, to reconcile them to his government, and to aboliſh the ancient ſuperſtitions, to which thoſe parts were much addicted. He
1541. had alſo another motive for this journey: He propoſed to hold a conference at York with his nephew the King of Scotland, and, if poſſible, to cement a cloſe and indiſſoluble union with that kingdom.

* Fox, vol. ii. p. 529. † Saunders de ſchiſm. Angl. ‡ Herbert, p. 468.

THE

Chap. VI. 1541. State of affairs in Scotland.

THE ſame ſpirit of religious innovation, which had ſeized the other parts of Europe, had made its way into Scotland, and had begun, long before this period, to excite the ſame jealouſies, fears, and perſecutions. About the year 1527, Patrick Hamilton, a young man of a noble family, having been created abbot of Ferne, was ſent abroad for his education; but had fallen into company with ſome reformers, and he returned into his own country very ill diſpoſed towards that church, of which his birth and his merit entitled him to attain the higheſt honours. The fervour of youth, and his zeal for novelty, made it impoſſible for him to conceal his ſentiments; and Campbel, prior of the Dominicans, who, under colour of friendſhip, and a ſympathy in opinion, had inſinuated himſelf into his confidence, accuſed him to Beaton, archbiſhop of St. Andrews. Hamilton was invited to St. Andrews, in order to maintain, with ſome of the clergy, a diſpute concerning the controverted points; and after much reaſoning with regard to juſtification, freewill, original ſin, and other topics of that nature, the conference ended with their condemning Hamilton to be burnt for his errors. The young man, who had been deaf to the inſinuations of ambition, was leſs likely to be ſhaken with the fears of death, while he propoſed to himſelf both the glory of bearing teſtimony to the truth, and the immediate reward attending his martyrdom. The people, who compaſſionated his youth, his virtue and his noble birth, were much moved with the conſtancy of his end; and an incident, which ſoon followed, ſtill more confirmed them in their favourable ſentiments towards him. He cited Campbel, who ſtill inſulted him at the ſtake, to anſwer before the judgment ſeat of Chriſt; and as that perſecutor, either aſtoniſhed with theſe events, or overcome with remorſe, or, perhaps, ſeized with a diſtemper, ſoon after loſt his ſenſes, and fell into a fever, of which he died; the people regarded Hamilton as a prophet, as well as a martyr *.

AMONG the diſciples converted by Hamilton, was one friar Forreſt, who became a zealous preacher; and who, tho' he did not openly diſcover his ſentiments, was ſuſpected to lean towards the new opinions. His dioceſan, the biſhop of Dunkel, enjoined him, when he met with a good epiſtle or good goſpel, which favoured the liberties of holy church, to preach on it, and let the reſt alone. Forreſt anſwered, that he had read both old and new teſtament, and had not found an ill epiſtle, or ill goſpel in any part of them. The extreme attachment to the ſcriptures was regarded in thoſe days as a ſure characteriſtic of hereſy; and Forreſt was ſoon after brought to his trial, and condemned to the flames. While the prieſts were deliberating on the place of his execution, a by-ſtander adviſed them to burn

* Spotſwood's Hiſt. church of Scotland, p. 62.

him

Chap. VI. 1541.

him in ſome cellar: For that the ſmoke of Mr. Patrick Hamilton had infected all thoſe on whom it blew *.

THE clergy were at that time reduced to great difficulties, not only in Scotland, but all over Europe. As the reformers aimed at a total ſubverſion of ancient eſtabliſhments, which they repreſented as idolatrous, impious, deteſtable, the prieſts, who found both their honours and properties at ſtake, thought that they had a right to reſiſt, by every extremity, theſe dangerous invaders, and that the ſame ſimple principles of equity, which juſtified a man in killing a pyrate or a robber, would acquit them for the execution of ſuch heretics. A toleration, tho' it is never acceptable to eccleſiaſtics, might, they ſaid, be admitted in other caſes; but ſeemed an abſurdity where fundamentals were ſhaken, and where the poſſeſſions, and even the ſubſiſtence of the eſtabliſhed clergy were brought in danger. But tho' the church was thus carried by policy, as well as inclination, to kindle the fires of perſecution, they found the ſucceſs of this remedy very precarious, and obſerved, that the enthuſiaſtic zeal of the reformers, inflamed by puniſhment, was apt to prove very contagious on the compaſſionate minds of the ſpectators. The new doctrine, amidſt all the dangers to which it was expoſed, ſpread itſelf ſecretly every where; and the minds of men were gradually diſpoſed to a revolution in religion.

BUT the moſt dangerous ſymptom for the clergy in Scotland was, that the nobility, moved by the example of England, had caſt a wiſhful eye on the church revenues, and hoped, if a reformation took place, to enrich themſelves by the plunder of the eccleſiaſtics. James himſelf, who was very poor, and was ſomewhat inclined to magnificence, particularly in building, had been ſwayed by like motives; and began to threaten the clergy with the ſame fate which attended them in the neighbouring country. Henry alſo, never ceaſed exhorting his nephew to imitate his example; and being moved both by the pride of making proſelytes, and the proſpect of ſecurity, if Scotland ſhould embrace a cloſe union with him, he ſolicited the King of Scots to meet him at York; and he obtained a promiſe to that purpoſe.

THE eccleſiaſtics were extremely alarmed with this reſolution of James; and they employed every expedient, in order to prevent it. They repreſented the dangers of innovation; the pernicious conſequences of aggrandizing the nobility, already too powerful; the hazard of putting himſelf into the hands of the Engliſh, his hereditary enemies; the dependance which muſt enſue upon loſing the friendſhip of France and of all foreign potentates. To theſe conſiderations, they added the proſpect of preſent intereſt, by which they found the King to be much governed:

* Spotſwood, p. 65.

verned: They offered him a preſent gratuity of fifty thouſand pounds Scots: They promiſed him, that the church ſhould always be ready to contribute to his ſupply: And they pointed out to him, the confiſcations of heretics, as the means of filling his exchequer, and of adding a hundred thouſand pounds a-year to the crown revenues *. The inſinuations of his new Queen, to whom youth, beauty, and addreſs had given a powerful influence over him, ſeconded all theſe reaſons; and James was at laſt engaged, firſt to delay his journey, then to ſend excuſes to the King of England, who had already come to York, in order to be preſent at the conference. Chap. VI. 1541.

HENRY, vexed with the diſappointment, and enraged at the affront, vowed vengeance againſt his nephew; and he began, by permitting pyracies at ſea, and incurſions at land, to put his threats in execution. But he received ſoon after, in his own family, an affront to which he was much more ſenſible, and which touched him in a point where he had always ſhewn an extreme delicacy. He had thought himſelf very happy in his new marriage: The youth, beauty, and agreeable diſpoſition of Catherine, had entirely captivated his affections; and he made no ſecret of his devoted attachment to her. He had even put up a prayer in his chappel, returning thanks to heaven for the felicity which the conjugal ſtate afforded him; and he deſired the biſhop of Lincoln to compoſe a form of thankſgiving for that purpoſe. But the Queen very little merited this tenderneſs which he bore her: She had abandoned herſelf to lewdneſs. One Laſcelles brought intelligence of her diſſolute life to Cranmer, and told him, that his ſiſter, formerly a ſervant in the old dutcheſs of Norfolk's family, with whom Catherine was educated, had given him a particular account of all her diſorders. Derham and Mannoc, both of them ſervants of the dutcheſs, had been admitted to her bed; and ſhe had even taken little care to conceal her ſhame from the other ſervants of the family. The primate, ſtruck with this intelligence, which it was equally dangerous to conceal or to diſcover, communicated the matter to the earl of Hertford and to the chancellor. They agreed, that the matter ſhould by no means be buried in ſilence; and the archbiſhop himſelf ſeemed the moſt proper perſon to diſcloſe it to the King. Cranmer, unwilling to ſpeak on ſo delicate a ſubject, wrote a narrative of the whole, and conveyed it to Henry, who was infinitely aſtoniſhed at the intelligence. So confident was he of the fidelity of his conſort, that he gave at firſt no credit to the information; and he ſaid to the lord privy-ſeal, to lord Ruſſel, high admiral, Sir Anthony Brown, and Wriotheſely, that he regarded the whole as a forgery. Cranmer was now in a very perilous ſituation; and had not full proofs been found, certain and inevitable deſtruction hung Diſcovery of the Queen's crimes.

* Buchanan, lib. XIV. Drummond in Ja. 5. Pitſcotie, ibid. Knox.

over

Chap. VI. 1541. over him. The King's impatience, however, and jealouſy prompted him to ſearch the matter to the bottom: The privy-ſeal was ordered to examine Laſcelles who perſiſted in the information he had given; and ſtill appealed to his ſiſter's teſtimony. That nobleman made next a pretence of hunting, and went to Suſſex, where the woman at that time reſided: He found her both conſtant in her former intelligence, and particular as to the facts; and the whole bore but too much the face of probability. Mannoc and Derham, who were arreſted at the ſame time, and examined by the chancellor, made the Queen's guilt entirely certain by their confeſſion; and diſcovered other particulars, which redounded ſtill more to her diſhonour. Three maids of the family were admitted into her ſecrets; and ſome of them had even paſt the night in bed with her and her lovers. All the examinations were laid before the King, who was ſo deeply affected, that he remained a long time ſpeechleſs, and at laſt burſt into tears. He found to his ſurprize, that his great ſkill in diſtinguiſhing a true maid, of which he boaſted in the caſe of Anne of Cleves, had failed him in that of his preſent conſort. The Queen being now queſtioned, denied her guilt; but when informed that a full diſcovery was made, ſhe confeſſed, that ſhe had been criminal before her marriage; and only inſiſted, that ſhe had never been falſe to the King's bed. But as there was evidence, that one Colepeper had paſſed the night with her alone ſince her marriage; and as it appeared, that ſhe had taken Derham, her old paramour, into her ſervice; ſhe ſeemed to deſerve very little credit in this aſſeveration; and the King beſides, was not of a humour to make any difference between theſe degrees of guilt.

1542. 16 January. HENRY found, that he could not ſo fully or expeditiouſly ſatiate his vengeance on all theſe criminals as by aſſembling a Parliament, the uſual inſtrument of his tyranny. The two houſes, having received the Queen's confeſſion, began by an addreſs to the King; which conſiſted of ſeveral particulars. They entreated him not to be vexed with this untoward accident, to which all men were ſubject; but to conſider the frailty of human nature, and the mutability of human affairs; and from theſe views to derive a ſubject of conſolation. They deſired leave to frame a bill of attainder againſt the Queen and her accomplices; and they begged him to give his aſſent to this bill, not in perſon, which would renew his vexation, and might endanger his health, but by commiſſioners appointed for that purpoſe. And as there was a law in force, making it treaſon to ſpeak ill of the Queen, as well as King, they craved his royal pardon, if any of them ſhould, on the preſent occaſion, have tranſgreſſed any part of that ſtatute.

HAVING obtained a gracious anſwer to theſe requeſts, the Parliament proceeded to an act of attainder for treaſon againſt the Queen, and the viſcounteſs of Rocheford, who had conducted her ſecret amours; and in this act Colepeper,

and Derham, were alſo comprized. At the ſame time, they paſſed a bill of attainder for miſpriſion of treaſon againſt the old dutcheſs of Norfolk, Catherine's grandmother, her uncle, lord William Howard, and his lady, together with the counteſs of Bridgewater, and nine perſons more; becauſe they knew the Queen's vicious life before her marriage, and yet concealed it. This was an effect of Henry's uſual extravagance, to expect that parents ſhould ſo far forget the ties of natural affection, and the ſentiments of ſhame and decency, as to reveal to him the moſt ſecret diſorders of their family. He himſelf ſeems to have been ſenſible of the cruelty of this ſentence: For he pardoned the dutcheſs of Norfolk, and moſt of the others, condemned for miſpriſion of treaſon. Chap. VI. 1542.

However, to ſecure himſelf for the future, as well as his ſucceſſors, from this fatal accident, he engaged the Parliament to frame a law, equally full of extravagance. It was enacted, that any one, who knew, or vehemently preſumed any guilt in the Queen, and did not, within twenty days, diſcloſe it to the King or council, ſhould be guilty of treaſon; prohibiting every one, at the ſame time, from ſpreading the matter abroad, or even privately whiſpering it to others. It was alſo enacted, that if the King married any woman, who had been incontinent, taking her for a true maid, ſhe ſhould be guilty of treaſon, in caſe ſhe did not previouſly reveal her guilt to him. The people made merry with this extraordinary clauſe, and ſaid, that the King muſt henceforth look out for a widow; for no reputed maid would ever be perſuaded to incur the penalty of the ſtatute *. After all theſe laws were paſſed, the Queen was beheaded on Tower hill, together with the lady Rocheford. They behaved in a manner ſuitable to their diſſolute life; and as the lady Rocheford was known to be the chief inſtrument, who had brought Anne Boleyn to her end, ſhe died unpitied; and men were farther confirmed, by the diſcovery of this woman's guilt, in the favourable ſentiments which they had entertained of that unfortunate Queen.

The King made no demand of any ſubſidies from this Parliament; but he found means of enriching his exchequer from another quarter: He took farther ſteps towards the diſſolution of colleges, hoſpitals, and other foundations of that nature. The courtiers had been practiſing on the preſidents and governors, to make a ſurrender of their revenues to the King; and they had been ſucceſsful with eight of them. But there was an obſtacle to their farther progreſs: It had been provided, by the local ſtatutes of moſt of theſe foundations, that no preſident, nor any fellows, could make ſuch a deed without the unanimous vote of all the fellows; and this conſent was not eaſily obtained. All ſuch ſtatutes were now annulled by Parliament; and the revenues of theſe houſes, ſo uſeful to the

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 214.

Chap. VI. 1542.

public, were now laid open to the rapacity of the King and his favourits *. The church had been ſo long their prey, that nobody was ſurprized at any new inroads made upon it. From the regular, Henry now proceeded to make devaſtations on the ſecular clergy. He extorted from many of the biſhops a ſurrender of chapter-lands; and by this device he pillaged the ſees of Canterbury, York, and London, and enriched his greedy paraſites and flatterers with their ſpoils.

Eccleſiaſtic affairs.

THE clergy have been commonly ſo fortunate as to make a concern for their temporal intereſts go hand in hand with a jealouſy for orthodoxy; and both theſe paſſions be regarded, by the people, ignorant and ſuperſtitious, as a zeal for religion: But the violent and headſtrong character of Henry now disjoined theſe objects. His rapacity was gratified by plundering the church; his bigotry and arrogance by perſecuting heretics. Tho' he engaged the Parliament to mitigate the penalties of the ſix articles, ſo far as regards the marriage of prieſts, which was now only ſubjected to a forfeiture of goods, chattels, and lands, during life; he was ſtill equally bent on maintaining a rigid purity in ſpeculative principles. He had appointed a commiſſion, conſiſting of the two archbiſhops and ſeveral biſhops of both provinces, together with a conſiderable number of doctors of divinity; and by virtue of his eccleſiaſtical ſupremacy he had given them in charge to chooſe a religion for his people. Before the commiſſioners had made any progreſs in this arduous undertaking, the Parliament, in 1541, had paſſed a law, by which they ratified all the tenets, which theſe divines ſhould eſtabliſh with the King's conſent: And they were not aſhamed of expreſsly declaring that they took their religion upon truſt, and had no other rule, in religious as well as temporal concerns, than the arbitrary will of their maſter. There is only one clauſe of the ſtatute, which may ſeem at firſt ſight to favour ſomewhat of the ſpirit of liberty: It was enacted, that the eccleſiaſtical commiſſioners ſhould eſtabliſh nothing repugnant to the laws and ſtatutes of the realm. But in reality this proviſo was inſerted by the King, to ſerve his own purpoſes. By introducing a confuſion and contradiction into the laws, he became more the

* It was enacted by this Parliament, that there ſhould be trial of treaſon in any country where the King ſhould appoint by commiſſion. The ſtatutes of treaſon had been extremely multiplied in this reign; and ſuch an expedient ſaved trouble and charges in trying that crime. The ſame Parliament erected Ireland into a kingdom; and Henry henceforth annexed the title of King of Ireland to his other titles. This ſeſſion, the commons firſt began the practice of freeing any of their members, who were arreſted, by a writ iſſued by the ſpeaker. Formerly it was uſual for them to apply for a writ from chancery to that purpoſe. This precedent encreaſed the authority of the commons, and had afterwards conſiderable conſequences. Hollingſhed, p. 955, 956. Baker, p. 289.

maſter

maſter of every one's life and property. And as the antient independance of the church ſtill gave him jealouſy, he was well pleaſed, under cover of ſuch a clauſe, to introduce appeals from the ſpiritual to the civil courts. It was for a like reaſon, that he would never promulgate a body of canon law; and encouraged the judges on all occaſions to interpoſe in eccleſiaſtical cauſes wherever they thought the law or royal prerogative concerned. A happy innovation; tho' at firſt invented for arbitrary purpoſes! Chap. VI. 1542.

THE King, armed by the authority of Parliament, or rather by their acknowlegement of that ſpiritual ſupremacy, which he believed inherent in him, employed his commiſſioners to ſelect a ſyſtem of tenets for the aſſent and belief of the nation. A ſmall volume was ſoon after publiſhed, called, the *Inſtitution of a Chriſtian Man*, which was received by the convocation, and voted to be the infallible ſtandard of orthodoxy. All the delicate points of juſtification, faith, free-will, good works, and grace, are there defined, with a leaning towards the opinion of the reformers: The ſacraments, which a few years before were only allowed to be three, are now increaſed to the number of ſeven, conformable to the ſentiments of the catholics. The King's caprice is diſcernible thro' the whole; and the book is in reality to be regarded as his compoſition. For Henry, while he made his opinion a rule for the nation, would tye his own hands by no canon or authority, not even by any which he himſelf had formerly eſtabliſhed.

THE people had occaſion ſoon after to ſee a farther inſtance of the King's inconſtancy. He was not long ſatisfied with his Inſtitution of a Chriſtian Man: He ordered a new book to be compoſed, called, the *Erudition of a Chriſtian Man*; and without aſking the aſſent of the convocation, he publiſhed, by his own authority, and that of the Parliament, this new model of orthodoxy. It differs from the Inſtitution *; but the King was no leſs poſitive in his new creed than he had been in the old; and he required the belief of the nation to veer about at his ſignal. In both theſe books, he was particularly careful to inculcate the doctrine of paſſive obedience; and he was no leſs careful to retain the nation in the practice.

WHILE the King was ſpreading his own books among the people, he ſeems to have been extremely perplexed, as well as the clergy, what courſe to take with the ſcriptures. A review had been made by the eccleſiaſtical ſynod of the new tranſlation of the Bible; and Gardiner had propoſed, that, inſtead of employing Engliſh expreſſions throughout, ſeveral Latin words ſhould ſtill be preſerved, becauſe they contained, as he pretended, ſuch peculiar energy and ſignificance, that they had no correſpondent terms in the vulgar tongue †. Among

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 190.

† Burnet, vol. i. p. 315.

Chap. VI. 1542.

these were *ecclesia*, *pœnitentia*, *pontifex*, *contritus*, *holocausta*, *sacramentum*, *elementa*, *ceremonia*, *mysterium*, *presbyter*, *sacrificium*, *humilitas*, *satisfactio*, *peccatum*, *gratia*, *hostia*, *charitas*, &c. But as this mixture would have appeared extremely barbarous, and was plainly calculated for no other purpose than to retain the people in their antient ignorance, the proposal was rejected. The knowlege of the people, however, at least their disputative turn, seemed to be an inconvenience still more dangerous; and the King and Parliament ‡, soon after the publication of the scriptures, retracted the concession, which they had formerly made; and prohibited all but gentlemen and merchants to peruse them ‖. Even that liberty was not granted, without an apparent hesitation, and a dread of the consequences: These persons were allowed to read, *so it be done quietly and with good order*. And the preamble to the act sets forth, "that many seditious and "ignorant persons had abused the liberty granted them for reading the Bible, "and that great diversity of opinions, animosities, tumults, and schisms had been "occasioned by perverting the sense of the scriptures." It seemed very difficult to reconcile the King's model for uniformity, with the permission of free enquiry.

The mass book also passed under the King's cognizance; and little alteration was as yet made in it: Some doubtful or fictitious saints only were struck out; and the name of the pope was erazed. This latter precaution was likewise used with regard to every new book, that was printed, or even old book that was sold. The word, Pope, was carefully omitted or blotted out §; as if that precaution could abolish the term from the language, or as if such a persecution of it did not rather imprint it more strongly in the memory of the people.

The King took care about this time to clear the churches of another abuse, which had crept into them. Plays, interludes, and farces were there often acted in derision of the former superstitions; and the reverence of the multitude for their antient principles and modes of worship, was thereby gradually effaced *. We do not hear, that the catholics attempted to retaliate by employing this powerful engine against their adversaries, or endeavoured by like arts to expose that fanatical spirit, by which, it appears, the reformers were often actuated. Perhaps the people were not disposed to relish a jest on that side: Perhaps the greater simplicity and the more spiritual abstract worship of the protestants, gave less hold to ridicule, which is commonly founded on sensible representations. It was, therefore, a very agreeable concession, which Henry made the catholic party, to suppress entirely these religious comedies.

‡ Which met on the 22d of January, 1543. ‖ 33 Hen. VIII. c. 1. § Parliamentary History, vol. iii. p. 113. * Burnet, vol. i. p. 318.

Thus

THUS Henry laboured inceſſantly, by arguments, creeds, and penal ſtatutes, to bring his ſubjects to an uniformity in their religious ſentiments: But as he entered, himſelf, with the greateſt earneſtneſs, into all theſe ſcholaſtic reaſonings, he encouraged the people, by his example, to apply themſelves to the ſtudy of theology; and it was in vain afterwards to expect, however preſent fear might reſtrain their tongues or pens, that they would cordially agree in any ſet of tenets or opinions preſcribed to them. Chap. VI. 1542.

CHAP. VII.

War with Scotland.——Victory at Solway.——Death of James the Fifth.——Treaty with Scotland.——New rupture.——Rupture with France.——A Parliament.——Affairs of Scotland.——A Parliament.——Campaign in France.——A Parliament.——Peace with France and Scotland.——Perſecutions.——Execution of the Earl of Surrey.——Attainder of the Duke of Norfolk.——Death of the King.——His character.——His laws.

HENRY, being determined to avenge himſelf of the King of Scots for ſlighting the advances, which he made for his friendſhip, would gladly have obtained a ſupply from the Parliament, to enable him to proſecute that enterprize; but as he did not think it prudent to diſcover his intentions, the Parliament, conformable to their frugal maxims, would underſtand no hints; and the King was diſappointed in his expectations. He continued, however, to make preparations for war; and ſo ſoon as he thought himſelf in a condition to invade Scotland, he publiſhed a manifeſto, by which he endeavoured to juſtify his hoſtilities. He complained of James's diſappointing him in the promiſed interview; which was the real ground of the quarrel *: But in order to give a more ſpecious colouring to the enterprize, he mentioned other injuries; that his nephew had given protection to ſome Engliſh rebels and fugitives, and had detained ſome territory, which, Henry pretended, belonged to England. He even revived the old claim of the dependance of the crown of Scotland, and he ſummoned James to do homage to him as his liege lord and ſuperior. He employed the duke of Norfolk, whom he called the ſcourge of the Scots, to command in the war; and tho' James ſent the biſhop of Aberdeen, and Sir James Learmont of Darſay, to appeaſe War with Scotland.

* Buchanan, lib. 14. Drummond in James the fifth.

Chap. VII. 1542. peaſe his uncle, he would hearken to no terms of accommodation. While Norfolk was aſſembling his army at Newcaſtle, Sir Robert Bowes, attended with Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Ralph Evers, Sir Brian Latoun, and others, made an incurſion into Scotland, and advanced towards Jedburgh, with an intention of pillaging and deſtroying that town. The earl of Angus, and George Douglas, his brother, who had been ſo many years baniſhed their country, and had ſubſiſted by Henry's bounty, joined the Engliſh army in this incurſion; and the forces, commanded by Bowes, exceeded four thouſand men. James had not been negligent in his preparations for defence, and had poſted a conſiderable body, under the command of the earl of Huntley, for the protection of the borders. Lord Hume, at the head of his vaſſals, was haſtening to join Huntley, when he met with the Engliſh army; and a battle immediately enſued. While they were engaged, the forces under Huntley began to appear; and the Engliſh, afraid of being overpowered and ſurrounded, took to flight, and were purſued by the enemy. Evers, Latoun, and ſome other perſons of diſtinction, were taken priſoners. A few only of ſmall note fell in this ſkirmiſh *.

24th Auguſt.

The duke of Norfolk, meanwhile, began to move from his camp at Newcaſtle; and being attended by the earls of Shrewſbury, Derby, Cumberland, Surrey, Hertford, Rutland, with many others of the nobility, he advanced to the borders. His army amounted to above twenty thouſand men; and it required the utmoſt efforts of Scotland to reſiſt ſuch formidable preparations. James had aſſembled his whole military force at Fala and Sautrey, and was ready to advance ſo ſoon as he ſhould be informed of Norfolk's invading his kingdom. The Engliſh paſſed the Tweed at Berwic, and advanced along the banks of the river as far as Kelſo; but hearing that James had gathered together near thirty thouſand men, they repaſſed the river at that village, and retreated into their own country †. The King of Scots, inflamed with a deſire of military glory, and of revenge on his invaders, gave the ſignal for purſuing them, and carrying the war into England. He was ſurprized to find, that his nobility, who were generally diſaffected on account of the preference, which he had given the clergy, oppoſed this reſolution, and refuſed to attend him in his projected enterprize. Enraged at this defection, he reproached them with cowardice, and threatened vengeance; but ſtill reſolved, with the forces which adhered to him, to make an impreſſion on the enemy's country. He ſent ten thouſand men to the weſtern borders, who entered England at Solway firth; and he himſelf followed them at a ſmall diſtance, ready to join them upon occaſion. Diſguſted, however, with the refractory diſpoſition of his nobles, he ſent a meſſenger to the army, depriv-

* Buchanan, lib. 14.

† Buchanan, lib. 14.

ing

ing lord Maxwel, their general, of his commiſſion, and conferring the command on Oliver Sinclair, a private gentleman, who was his favourite. The army were extremely diſpleaſed with this alteration, and were ready to diſband; when a ſmall body of Engliſh appeared, not exceeding 500 men, under the command of Dacres and Muſgrave. A panic ſeized the Scots, who immediately took to flight, and were purſued by the enemy. Few were killed in this rout; for it was no action; but a great many were taken priſoners, and ſome of the principal nobility. Among theſe were the earls of Caſſilis and Glencairn; the lords Maxwel, Fleming, Sommerville, Oliphant, Grey, who were all ſent to London, and given in cuſtody to different noblemen. Chap. VII. 1542. 24th Novem. Victory at Solway.

THE King of Scots, hearing of this diſaſter, was confounded; and being naturally of a melancholic diſpoſition, as well as endowed with a high ſpirit, he loſt all command of his temper on this diſmal occaſion. Rage againſt his nobility, who, he believed, had betrayed him; ſhame for a defeat by ſuch unequal numbers; regret of the paſt, fear of the future; all theſe paſſions ſo wrought upon him, that he would admit of no conſolation, but abandoned himſelf wholly to deſpair. His body was waſted by ſympathy with his anxious mind; and even his life began to be thought in danger. He had no child living; and hearing that his Queen was ſafely delivered, he aſked whether ſhe had brought him a male or female? Being told, the latter; he turned about in his bed: "The crown came with a woman," ſaid he, "and it will go with "one: Many miſeries await this poor kingdom: Henry will make it his own "either by force of arms or by marriage." A few days after, he expired, in the flower of his age; a prince of conſiderable virtues and talents, well fitted, by his vigilance and perſonal courage, for repreſſing thoſe diſorders, to which his kingdom, during that age, was ſo much expoſed. He executed juſtice with the greateſt impartiality and rigour; but as he ſupported the commonalty and the church againſt the rapine of the nobility, he eſcaped not the hatred of that order. The proteſtants alſo, whom he repreſſed, have endeavoured to throw many ſtains on his memory; but have not been able to fix any conſiderable imputation on him *. 14th of December. Death of James the fifth.

* The perſecutions, exerciſed during James's reign, are not to be aſcribed to his bigotry, a vice of which he ſeems to have been as free as Francis the firſt or the emperor Charles, both of whom, as well as James, ſhewed, in different periods of their lives, even an inclination to the new doctrines. The extremities to which all theſe princes were carried, proceeded entirely from the ſituation of affairs, during that age, which rendered it impoſſible for them to act with greater temper or moderation, after they had embraced the reſolution of ſupporting the antient eſtabliſhments. So violent was the propenſity of the times towards innovation, that a toleration of the new preachers was equivalent to a formed deſign of changing the national religion.

HENRY

Chap. VII. 1543.

HENRY was no ſooner informed of his victory and of the death of his nephew, than he projected, as James had foreſeen, the ſcheme of uniting Scotland to his own dominions, by marrying his ſon, Edward, to the heireſs of that kingdom *. He called together the Scots nobles, who were his priſoners; and after reproaching them, in ſevere terms, for their breach of treaty, as he pretended, he began to ſoften his tone, and propoſed to them this expedient, by which, he hoped, thoſe diſorders, ſo prejudicial to both ſtates, would for the future be prevented. He offered to beſtow on them their liberty without ranſom; and only required of them engagements to favour the marriage of the Prince of Wales with their young miſtreſs. They were eaſily prevailed on to give their aſſent to a propoſal, which ſeemed ſo natural, and ſo advantageous to both kingdoms; and being conducted to Newcaſtle, they delivered to the duke of Norfolk, hoſtages for their return, in caſe the intended nuptials were not compleated: And they thence proceeded to Scotland, where they found affairs in ſome confuſion.

THE pope, finding his authority in Scotland expoſed to danger from the ſpreading of the new opinions, had beſtowed on Beaton, the primate the dignity of cardinal; and that prelate had been long regarded as prime miniſter to James, and as the head of that party, which defended the ancient privileges and properties of the eccleſiaſtics. Upon the death of his maſter, this man, apprehenſive of the conſequences both to his party and himſelf, endeavoured to keep poſſeſſion of the power; and for that purpoſe, he is accuſed of executing a deed which required a high degree of temerity. He forged, it is ſaid, a will for the King, appointing himſelf, and three noblemen, regents of the kingdom during the minority of the infant Princeſs †: At leaſt, for hiſtorians are not well agreed in the circumſtances of the fact, he had read to James a paper of that import, to which that monarch, during the delirium which preceded his death, had given an imperfect aſſent and approbation ‡. By virtue of this will, Beaton had put himſelf in poſſeſſion of the government; and having joined his intereſts with thoſe of the Queen dowager, he obtained the conſent of the convention of ſtates, and excluded the pretenſions of the earl of Arran.

JAMES earl of Arran, of the name of Hamilton, was next heir to the crown by his grandmother, daughter to James the third; and on that account ſeemed beſt entitled to poſſeſs that high office, into which the cardinal had intruded himſelf. The proſpect alſo of his ſucceſſion after a Princeſs, who was in ſuch tender infancy, procured him many partizans; and tho' his character contained little ſpirit, activity, or ambition, a propenſity, which he had diſcovered for the new

* Stowe, p. 584. Herbert, Burnet, Buchanan. † Sadler's Letters, p. 161. Spotſwood, p. 71. Buchanan, lib. 15. ‡ John Knox, Hiſtory of the Reformation.

opinions,

opinions, had attached to him all the zealous promoters of theſe innovations. By means of theſe adherents, joined to the vaſſals of his family, he had been able to make oppoſition to the cardinal's adminiſtration; and the ſuſpicion of Beaton's forgery, with the acceſſion of the noblemen, who had been priſoners in England, aſſiſted too by ſome money, ſent from London, was able to turn the balance in his favour. The earl of Angus, and his brother, having taken the preſent opportunity of returning into their own country, oppoſed the cardinal with all the force of that powerful family; and the majority of the convention had now embraced oppoſite intereſts to thoſe which formerly prevailed. Arran was declared governor; the cardinal was committed to cuſtody under the care of lord Seton; and a negotiation was commenced with Sir Ralph Sadler, the Engliſh ambaſſador, for the marriage of the infant Queen with the Prince of Wales. The following conditions were quickly agreed on; that the Queen ſhould remain in Scotland till ſhe was ten years of age; that ſhe ſhould then be ſent to England to be educated; that ſix Scots nobles ſhould immediately be delivered as hoſtages to Henry; and that the kingdom, notwithſtanding its union with England, ſhould ſtill preſerve its laws and privileges *. By means of theſe equitable conditions, the war between the nations, which had threatened Scotland with ſuch diſmal calamities, ſeemed to be fully compoſed, and to be changed into perpetual concord and unanimity.

Chap. VII. 1543.

Treaty with Scotland.

But the cardinal-primate, having prevailed on Seton to reſtore him to his liberty, was able, by his intrigues, to confound all theſe meaſures, which appeared to be ſo well concerted. He aſſembled the moſt conſiderable eccleſiaſtics; and having repreſented to them the imminent danger, to which their revenues and privileges were expoſed, he perſuaded them to collect privately from the clergy a large ſum of money, by which, if entruſted to his management, he promiſed to overturn the ſchemes of their enemies †. Beſides the partizans, whom he acquired by pecuniary motives, he rouzed up the zeal of thoſe, who were attached to the catholic worſhip; and he repreſented the union with England as the ſure forerunner of ruin to the church and to the antient religion. The national antipathy of the Scots againſt the Engliſh nation, was alſo an infallible engine, by which the cardinal wrought upon the people; and tho' the terror of Henry's arms, and their inability to make reſiſtance, had procured a temporary aſſent to the alliance and marriage propoſed, the ſettled habits of the nation produced an extreme averſion to thoſe meaſures. The Engliſh ambaſſador and his train received many inſults from perſons whom the cardinal had incited to commit thoſe indignities, in hopes of bringing on a rupture. But Sadler very prudently diſ-

* Sir Ralph Sadler's Letters.

† Buchanan, lib. 15.

Chap. VII. 1543. ſembled the matter; and waited patiently till the day appointed for the delivery of the hoſtages. He then demanded of the regent the performance of that important article; but received for anſwer, that his authority was very precarious, that the nation had now taken a different impreſſion, and that it was not in his power to compel any of the nobility to deliver themſelves as hoſtages to the Engliſh. Sadler, foreſeeing the conſequence of this refuſal, ſent a ſummons to all thoſe who had been priſoners in England, and required them to fulfil the promiſe which they had given of returning into cuſtody. None of them ſhowed ſo much ſentiment of honour, as to perform their engagements, except Gilbert Kennedy, earl of Caſſilis. Henry was ſo well pleaſed with the behaviour of this nobleman, that he not only received him graciouſly, but honoured him with preſents, gave him his liberty, and ſent him back to Scotland, with his two brothers, whom he had left as hoſtages *.

New rupture. THIS behaviour of the Scots nobles, tho' it reflected diſhonour on the nation, was not unacceptable to the cardinal, who foreſaw, that all theſe perſons would now be deeply intereſted to maintain their enmity and oppoſition to the Engliſh. And as a war was ſoon expected with that kingdom, he found it neceſſary immediately to apply to France, and to crave the aſſiſtance of that antient ally, during the preſent diſtreſſes of the Scots nation. Tho' Francis was fully ſenſible of his intereſt in ſupporting Scotland, a demand of aid could not have been made on him at a more unſeaſonable juncture. His pretenſions on the Milaneſe, and his reſentment againſt Charles, had engaged him in a war with that potentate; and having made very great, tho' fruitleſs efforts during the preceding campaign, he was the more diſabled at preſent from defending his own dominions, much more from granting any ſuccour to the Scots. Matthew Stuart, earl of Lenox, a young nobleman of a great family, was at that time in the French court; and Francis, being informed, that he was engaged in ancient and hereditary enmity with the Hamiltons, who had murdered his father, ſent him over to his native country, as a ſupport to the cardinal and the Queen mother: And he promiſed, that a ſupply of money, and, if neceſſary, even military ſuccours, ſhould ſoon be diſpatched after him. Arran, the governor, ſeeing all theſe preparations againſt him, aſſembled his friends, and made an attempt to get the perſon of the infant Queen into his cuſtody; but being repulſed, he was obliged to come to an accommodation with his enemies, and to entruſt that precious charge to four neutral perſons, the heads of potent families, the Grahams, Areſkines, Lindſeys, and Leviſtons. The arrival of Lenox, in the midſt of theſe tranſ-

* Buchanan, lib. xv.

actions, ſerved to render the victory of the French party over the Engliſh ſtill more indiſputable ‡. Chap. VII. 1543.

THE oppoſition which Henry met with in Scotland from the French intrigues, excited his reſentment, and farther confirmed the reſolution which he had before taken, of breaking with France, and of uniting his arms with thoſe of the emperor. He had other grounds of complaint againſt the French King; which, tho' they were not of great importance, yet being recent, were able to overbalance thoſe great injuries which he had formerly received from Charles. He pretended, that Francis had engaged to imitate his example in ſeparating himſelf entirely from the ſee of Rome, and that he had broke his promiſe in that particular. He was diſſatisfied, that James, his nephew, had been allowed to marry, firſt Magdalene of France, then a princeſs of the houſe of Guiſe; and he conſidered theſe alliances as pledges which Francis gave of his intentions to ſupport the Scots againſt the power of England *. He had been informed of ſome railleries, which the French King had thrown out againſt his conduct with regard to his wives. He was diſguſted, that Francis, after ſo many obligations which he owed him, had ſacrificed him to the emperor; and in the confidence of friendſhip, had raſhly revealed his ſecrets to that ſubtle and intereſted monarch. And he complained, that regular payments were never made of the ſums due to him by France, and of the penſion which had been promiſed. Impelled by all theſe motives, he alienated himſelf from his ancient friend and confederate, and formed a league with the emperor, who very earneſtly courted his alliance. This league, beſides ſtipulations for mutual defence, contained a plan for invading France; and the two monarchs agreed to enter Francis's dominions with an army, each of twenty-five thouſand men; and to require that prince to pay Henry all the ſums which he owed him, and to conſign Boulogne, Montreuil, Terouenne, and Ardres, as a ſecurity for the regular payment of his penſion for the future: In caſe theſe conditions were rejected, the confederate princes agreed, to challenge, for Henry, the crown of France, and the dutchies of Normandy, Aquitaine, and Guienne; for Charles, the dutchy of Burgundy, and ſome other territories †. That they might have a pretence for enforcing theſe claims, they ſent a meſſage to Francis, requiring him to renounce his alliance with Sultan Solyman, and to make reparation for all the prejudice which Chriſtendom had ſuffered from that unnatural confederacy. Upon the French King's refuſal, war was declared againſt him by the confederates. It may be proper to obſerve, that the partizans of France objected to Charles his alliance with the heretical King of England, as no leſs odious Rupture with France.

‡ Buchanan, lib. xv. Drummond. * Pere Daniel. † Rymer, xiv. p. 768. xv. 2.

Chap. VII. 1543. than that which Francis had contracted with Solyman: And they obſerved, that this league was a breach of that ſolemn promiſe which he had given to Clement the ſeventh, never to make peace or alliance with England.

22d January. A Parliament. While the treaty with the emperor was negociating, the King ſummoned a new ſeſſion of Parliament, in order to obtain ſupplies for his projected war with France. The Parliament granted him a ſubſidy to be paid in three years: It was levied in a peculiar manner; but exceeded not three ſhillings in the pound, upon any individual ‡. The convocation gave the King ſix ſhillings in the pound, to be levied in three years. Greater ſums were always, even during the eſtabliſhment of the catholic religion, exacted from the clergy than the laity: Which made the emperor Charles ſay, when Henry diſſolved the monaſteries, and ſold their revenues, or beſtowed them on his nobility and courtiers, that he had killed the hen which had brought him the golden eggs *.

The Parliament alſo facilitated the execution of the former law, by which the King's proclamations were made equal to ſtatutes: They appointed, that any nine counſellors ſhould form a legal court for puniſhing all diſobedience to proclamations. The total abolition of juries in criminal cauſes, as well as of all Parliaments, ſeemed, if the King had ſo pleaſed, the neceſſary conſequence of this enormous law. He might iſſue a proclamation, for the execution of any penal ſtatute, and afterwards try the criminals, not for breach of the ſtatute, but for diſobedience to his proclamation. It is remarkable, that the lord Mountjoy entered a proteſt againſt this law; and it is equally remarkable, that that proteſt is the only one which was entered againſt any public bill during this whole reign †.

We have taken notice, in the end of the former chapter, of ſome laws regarding religion, which the Parliament paſſed this ſeſſion, in order to gratify the King's humour. It was farther enacted ‖, that every ſpiritual perſon, who preached or taught contrary to the doctrine contained in the King's book, the *Erudition of a chriſtian man*, or contrary to any doctrine which he ſhall *henceforth* promulgate, was to be admitted on the firſt conviction to renounce his errors; on the ſecond, he was required to carry a faggot; which if he refuſed to do, or fell into a third offence, he was to be burnt. But the laity for the third of-

‡ They who were worth in goods twenty ſhillings and upwards to five pounds, paid four-pence of every pound; from five pounds to ten pounds, eight-pence; from ten pounds to twenty pounds, ſixteen-pence; from twenty and upwards, two ſhillings. Lands, fees, and annuities, paid eight-pence in the pound from twenty ſhillings to five pounds; from five pounds to ten pounds, ſixteen-pence; from ten pounds to twenty pounds, two ſhillings; from twenty pounds and upwards, three ſhillings.

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 176. † Burnet, p. 322. ‖ 34 and 35 Hen. VIII. c. 1.

fence, were only to forfeit their goods and chattels, and to be liable to perpetual imprisonment. Indictments must be laid within a year after the offence, and the prisoner was allowed to bring witnesses for his purgation. These penalties were lighter than those formerly imposed on a denial of transubstantiation: It was, however, subjoined in this statute, that the act of the six articles was still in force. But in order to make the King more entirely master of his people, it was enacted, that he might hereafter, at his pleasure, change this act, or any provision in it. By this clause, both parties were retained in subjection; so far as regarded religion, the King was invested, in the fullest manner, with the sole legislative authority in his kingdom; and all his subjects were, under the severest penalties, expressly bound to receive implicitly, whatever doctrine he should please to recommend to them. Chap. VII. 1543.

THE reformers began to entertain hopes, that this exorbitant power would be employed in their favour. The King married Catherine Par, widow to Nevil lord Latimer; a woman of virtue, and somewhat inclined to the new doctrine. By this marriage, Henry made good what had formerly been foretold in jest, that he would be obliged to espouse a widow. The King's league with the emperor, seemed to be a circumstance no less favourable to the catholic party; and thus matters remained still nearly balanced between the factions. 12th July.

THE advantages gained by this powerful confederacy between Henry and Charles, were very inconsiderable, during the present year. The campaign was opened with a victory, gained by the duke of Cleves, Francis's ally, over the forces of the emperor *: Francis, in person, took the field early; and made himself master, without resistance, of the whole dutchy of Luxembourg: He afterwards took Landrecy, and added some fortifications to it. Charles, having at last assembled a powerful army, appeared in the Low Countries; and after taking almost every fortress in the dutchy of Cleves, he reduced the duke to submit to the terms which he was pleased to prescribe to him. Being then joined by a body of six thousand English, he sat down before Landrecy, and covered the siege with an army of above forty thousand men. Francis advanced at the head of an army not much inferior; as if he intended to give the emperor battle, or oblige him to abandon the siege: But while these two rival monarchs were facing each other, and all the world stood in expectation of some great event; the French found means to throw succours into Landrecy, and having thus effected their purpose, they skilfully made a retreat. Charles, finding the season far advanced, despaired of success in his enterprize, and found it necessary to raise the siege.

* Memoires du Bellay, lib. X.

THEE

Chap. VII. 1543. Affairs of Scotland.

THE vanity of Henry was flattered, by the figure which he made in the great tranſactions on the continent: But the intereſts of his kingdom were much more deeply concerned in the event of affairs in Scotland. Arran, the governor, was of ſo indolent and unambitious a character, that had he not been ſtimulated by his friends and dependants, he never had aſpired to any ſhare in the adminiſtration; and when he found himſelf overpowered by the party of the Queen dowager, the cardinal, and the earl of Lenox, he was glad to accept of any terms of accommodation, however diſhonourable. He even gave them a ſure pledge of his ſincerity, by renouncing the principles of the reformers, and reconciling himſelf to the Romiſh communion in the Franciſcan church at Stirling. By this weakneſs and levity he loſt his credit with the whole nation, and rendered the proteſtants, who were hitherto the chief ſupport of his power, his moſt mortal enemies. The cardinal acquired the entire aſcendant in the kingdom: The Queen dowager put implicit confidence in him: The governor was obliged to yield to him in every pretenſion: Lenox alone was become an obſtacle to his meaſures, and reduced him to ſome difficulty.

THE inveterate enmity which had taken place between the families of Lenox and Arran made the intereſts of theſe two noblemen entirely incompatible; and as the cardinal and the French party, in order to engage Lenox the more in their cauſe, had flattered him with the hopes of ſucceeding to the crown after their infant ſovereign, this rivalſhip had tended ſtill farther to rouze the animoſity of the Hamiltons. Lenox too had been encouraged to aſpire to the marriage of the Queen dowager, which would have given him ſome pretenſions to the regency; and as he was become aſſuming, on account of the ſervices which he had rendered the party, the cardinal found, that, ſince he muſt chooſe between the friendſhip of Lenox and Arran, the latter nobleman, who was more eaſily governed, and who was inveſted with preſent authority, was in every reſpect preferable. In order to remove the former, after the eaſieſt and leaſt obnoxious manner, he wrote to Francis, with whom he had entire credit, by means of the duke of Guiſe, father to the Queen dowager; and after praiſing Lenox for his paſt ſervices, he repreſented the preſent difficulties and obſtructions, which he occaſioned in the adminiſtration, and deſired that he might be recalled to France, where he enjoyed great credit and large poſſeſſions. But the impatience of Lenox to attain his purpoſes, allowed not this political artifice leiſure to operate. Finding that he was not likely to ſucceed in his pretenſions to the Queen dowager, and that Arran prevailed in every conteſt, he retired to Dunbarton, the governor of which was entirely in his intereſts; he entered into a ſecret negociation with the

Engliſh

Engliſh court; and he ſummoned his vaſſals and partizans to attend him. All thoſe who were inclined to the proteſtant religion, or were on any account diſcontented with the cardinal's adminiſtration, now regarded Lenox as the head of their party; and they readily made him a tender of their ſervices. In a little time, he had collected an army of ten thouſand men, and he threatened his enemies with immediate deſtruction. The cardinal had no equal force to oppoſe to him; but as he was a prudent man, he foreſaw that Lenox could not long ſubſiſt ſo great an army, and he endeavoured to protract time, by opening a negociation with him. He ſeduced his followers, by various artifices; he engaged the Douglaſſes in his intereſts; he repreſented to the whole nation the danger of civil wars and commotions. And Lenox, finding himſelf engaged in an unequal conteſt, was at laſt obliged to lay down his arms, and to accept of terms of accommodation with the governor and the cardinal. Preſent peace was reſtored; but no confidence took place between the parties. Lenox, fortifying his caſtles, and putting himſelf in a poſture of defence, waited the ſuccours of the Engliſh, from whoſe aſſiſtance alone he expected to obtain the ſuperiority over his enemies. Chap. VII. 1543.

WHILE the winter ſeaſon reſtrained Henry from military operations, he ſummoned a new Parliament; where a law was paſſed, ſuch as he was pleaſed to dictate, with regard to the ſucceſſion of the crown. After declaring, that the prince of Wales, or any of the King's male iſſue, were firſt and immediate heirs to the kingdom, the parliament reſtored the two princeſſes, Mary and Elizabeth, to their right of ſucceſſion. This ſeemed a reaſonable piece of juſtice, and corrected what the King's former violence had thrown into confuſion; but it was impoſſible for Henry to do any thing, however laudable, without betraying in ſome circumſtances, his uſual caprice and extravagance: Tho' he opened the way for theſe two princeſſes to mount the throne, he would not allow the act to be reverſed which had declared them both illegitimate; he made the Parliament confer on him a power of ſtill excluding them, if they refuſed to ſubmit to any conditions which he ſhould be pleaſed to impoſe; and he required them to enact, that, in default of his own iſſue, he might diſpoſe of the crown, as he pleaſed, by will or letters patent. He did not probably foreſee, that in proportion as he degraded the Parliament, by rendering them the paſſive inſtrument of his variable and violent inclinations, he taught the people to regard all their acts as invalid, and thereby defeated even the purpoſes which he was ſo bent to attain. 1544. 14 January. A Parliament.

AN act was paſſed, that the King's uſual ſtile ſhould be "King of England, "France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, and on earth the ſupreme head

"of

Chap. VII. 1544. "of the church of England and Ireland." It ſeemed a palpable inconſiſtency, to retain the title of defender of the faith, which the ſee of Rome had conferred on him for maintaining its cauſe againſt Luther; and yet ſubjoin his eccleſiaſtical ſupremacy, in oppoſition to the claims of that ſee.

An act was alſo paſſed, for the remiſſion of the debts, which the King had lately contracted by a general loan exacted from the people. It will eaſily be believed, that, after the former act of this kind, the loan was not entirely voluntary *. But there was a peculiar circumſtance attending the preſent ſtatute, which none but Henry would have thought of: That thoſe who had already got payment, either in whole or in part, ſhould refund the ſums to the exchequer.

The oaths which Henry eſtabliſhed for the ſecurity of his eccleſiaſtical model, were not more reaſonable than his other meaſures. All his ſubjects of any diſtinction had already been obliged to renounce the pope's ſupremacy; but as the clauſes which they ſwore to, had not been deemed entirely ſatisfactory, another oath was impoſed, and it was added, that all thoſe who had taken the former oaths, ſhould be underſtood to have taken the new one †. A ſtrange ſuppoſition! to repreſent men as bound by an oath which they had never conſented to take.

The moſt commendable act to which the Parliament gave their ſanction, was that by which they mitigated the law of the ſix articles, and ordained, that no perſon ſhould be put to his trial upon any accuſation concerning any of the offences comprized in that ſanguinary ſtatute, except on the oath of twelve perſons before commiſſioners authorized for that purpoſe; and that no perſon ſhould be arreſted or committed to ward for any ſuch offence before he was indicted. Any preacher, accuſed of ſpeaking in his ſermon contrary to theſe articles, muſt be indicted within forty days.

The King always experienced the limits of his exorbitant authority whenever he demanded ſubſidies, however moderate, from the Parliament; and, therefore, not to hazard a refuſal, he made no mention this ſeſſion of a ſupply: But as his wars both with France and Scotland, as well as his uſual prodigality, had involved him in great expence, he had recourſe to other methods of filling his treaſury: Notwithſtanding the former abolition of his debts, he yet required new loans from his ſubjects: And he enhanced gold from forty-five ſhillings to forty-eight an ounce; and ſilver from three ſhillings and ninepence to four ſhillings. His pretence for this innovation, was to prevent the money from being exported; as if that expedient could any wiſe ſerve the purpoſe. He even coined ſome baſe

* 35 Hen. VIII. c. 12. † 35 Hen. VIII. c. 1.

money, and ordered it to be current by his proclamation. He named commiſ- Chap. VII.
ſioners for levying a benevolence, and he extorted about ſeventy thouſand pounds 1544.
by that expedient. Read, alderman of London *, a man ſomewhat advanced in years, having refuſed to contribute his ſhare, or not coming up to the expectations of the commiſſioners, was inrolled as a foot ſoldier in the Scottiſh wars, and was there taken priſoner. Roach, who had been equally refractory, was thrown into priſon, and obtained not his liberty but by paying a large compoſition †. Theſe powers of the prerogative, (which at that time paſſed for unqueſtioned) the King's compelling any man to ſerve in any office, and impriſoning any man during pleaſure, not to mention the practice of extorting loans, rendered the ſovereign, in a manner, abſolute maſter of the perſon and property of every individual.

EARLY this year the King ſent a fleet and army to invade Scotland. The fleet conſiſted of near two hundred veſſels, and carried on board ten thouſand men. Dudley lord Liſle commanded the ſea forces; the earl of Hertford the land. The troops were diſembarked near Leith; and after diſſipating a ſmall body which oppoſed them, they took that town without reſiſtance, and then marched to Edinburgh. The gates were ſoon beat down (for little or no reſiſtance was made); and the Engliſh firſt pillaged, and then ſet fire to the city. The regent and cardinal were not prepared to oppoſe ſo great a force, and they fled to Stirling. Hertford marched eaſtward; and being joined by a new body under Evers, warden of the eaſt marches, he laid waſte the whole country, burned and deſtroyed Haddington and Dunbar, and then retired into England; having loſt 18th May.
only forty men in the whole expedition. The earl of Arran collected ſome forces; but finding that the Engliſh were already departed, he turned them againſt Lenox, who was juſtly ſuſpected of a correſpondence with the enemy. That nobleman, after making ſome reſiſtance, was obliged to fly into England; where Henry ſettled a penſion on him, and even gave him his niece, the lady Margaret Douglas, in marriage. In return, Lenox ſtipulated conditions, by which, had he been able to execute them, he muſt have reduced his country to a total ſervitude ‡.

HENRY's policy was blamed in this ſudden and violent incurſion; by which he inflamed the paſſion of the Scots, without ſubduing their ſpirit; and it was commonly ſaid, that he did too much, if he intended to ſolicit an alliance, and too little, if he meant a conqueſt §. But the reaſon of his withdrawing the

* Herbert. Stowe, p. 588. Baker, p. 292. † Goodwin's Annals. Stowe, p. 588.
‡ Rymer, XV. 23, 29. § Herbert. Burnet.

Chap. VII. 1544.

troops ſo ſoon, was his eagerneſs to carry on his projected enterprize againſt France, in which he intended to employ the whole force of his kingdom. He had concerted a plan with the emperor, which threatened the total ruin of that monarchy, and muſt, as a neceſſary conſequence, have involved the ſubjection of England. Theſe two princes had agreed to invade France with forces amounting to above a hundred thouſand men: Henry engaged to ſet out from Calais; Charles from the Low Countries: They were to enter on no ſiege, but leaving all the frontier towns behind them, to march directly to Paris, where they were to join their forces, and thence to proceed to the entire conqueſt of the kingdom. Francis could not oppoſe to theſe formidable preparations, much above forty thouſand men.

14th July. Campaign in France.

HENRY, having appointed the Queen regent during his abſence, paſſed over to Calais with thirty thouſand men, accompanied with the dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, Fitzalan earl of Arundel, Vere earl of Oxford, the earl of Surrey, Paulet lord St. John, lord Ferrers of Chartley, lord Mountjoy, lord Grey of Wilton, Sir Anthony Brown, Sir Francis Bryan, and the moſt flouriſhing nobility and gentry of his kingdom. The Engliſh army was ſoon joined by the count de Buren, admiral of Flanders, with ten thouſand foot, and four thouſand horſe; and the whole compoſed an army, which nothing on that frontier was able to reſiſt. The chief force of the French army was drawn to the ſide of Champagne, in order to oppoſe the imperialiſts.

THE emperor, with an army of near ſixty thouſand men, had taken the field much earlier than Henry; and not to loſe time, while he waited for the march of his confederate, he ſat down before Luxembourg, which he took: He thence proceeded to Commercy on the Meuſe, which was ſurrendered to him: Ligny met with the ſame fate: He next laid ſiege to St. Diſier on the Marne, which, tho' a weak place, made a brave reſiſtance, under the count de Sancerre the governor, and the ſiege was protracted beyond expectation.

THE emperor was employed before this town at the time the Engliſh forces were aſſembled in Picardy. Henry, either tempted by the defenceleſs condition of the French frontiers, or thinking that the emperor had firſt broke engagements by forming ſieges, or, perhaps, foreſeeing at laſt the dangerous conſequences of deſtroying entirely the French power, inſtead of marching forward to Paris, ſat down before Montreuil and Boulogne. The duke of Norfolk commanded the army before Montreuil: The King himſelf that before Boulogne. Vervin was governor of Boulogne, and under him Philip Corſe, a brave old ſoldier, who encouraged the garriſon to defend themſelves to the laſt extremity againſt the Engliſh. He was killed during the courſe of the ſiege, and the town was immedi-

14th September.

immediately ſurrendered to Henry, by the cowardice of Vervin; who was afterwards beheaded for this diſhonourable capitulation. Chap. VII. 1544.

During the courſe of this ſiege, Charles had taken St. Diſier; and finding the ſeaſon much advanced, he began to hearken to a treaty of peace with France, ſince all his ſchemes for ſubduing that kingdom were likely to prove abortive. In order to have a pretence for deſerting his ally, he ſent a meſſenger to the Engliſh camp, requiring Henry immediately to fulfil his engagements, and to meet him with his army before Paris. Henry replied, that he was too far engaged in the ſiege of Boulogne to raiſe it with honour, and that the emperor himſelf had firſt broke the concert by forming ſieges. This anſwer ſerved Charles as a ſufficient reaſon for concluding a peace with Francis at Crepy, where no mention was made of the Engliſh. He ſtipulated to give Flanders as a dowry to his daughter, whom he agreed to marry to the duke of Orleans, Francis's ſecond ſon; and Francis, in return, withdrew his troops from Piemont and Savoy, and renounced all claim to Milan, Naples, and other territories in Italy. This peace, ſo advantageous to Francis, was procured partly by the deciſive victory obtained in the beginning of the campaign by the count d'Anguyen over the imperialiſts at Ceriſolles in Piemont, partly by the emperor's great deſire to turn his arms againſt the proteſtant princes in Germany. Charles ordered his troops to ſeparate from the Engliſh in Picardy; and Henry, finding himſelf obliged to raiſe the ſiege of Montreuil, returned into England. This campaign ſerved, to the populace, as matter of great triumph; but all men of ſenſe concluded, that the King had, as in all his former military enterprizes, made, at an infinite charge, an acquiſition which was of no manner of conſequence. 18th September. 30th September.

The war with Scotland, meanwhile, was conducted feebly, and with various ſucceſs. Sir Ralph Evers, now lord Evers, and Sir Bryan Latoun, made an inroad into that kingdom; and having laid waſte the counties of Tiviotdale and the Merſe, they proceeded to the abbey of Coldingham, which they took poſſeſſion of, and fortified. The regent aſſembled an army of eight thouſand men, in order to diſlodge them from this poſt; but he had no ſooner opened his batteries before the place, than a ſudden panic ſeized him, and he fled to Dunbar. He complained of the mutinies of his army, and pretended to be afraid leſt they ſhould deliver him into the hands of the Engliſh: But his own unwarlike ſpirit was generally believed to have been the motive of this diſhonourable retreat. The Scots army, upon the departure of their general, immediately fell into confuſion; and had not Angus, with a few of his retainers, brought off the cannon, and protected their rear, the Engliſh might have gained great advantages over them. Evers, elated with this ſucceſs, boaſted to Henry, that he had con-

Chap. VII. 1544. quered all Scotland to the Forth; and he claimed a reward for this important ſervice. The duke of Norfolk, who knew with what difficulty ſuch acquiſitions would be maintained againſt a warlike people, adviſed the King to grant him, as his reward, the conqueſts of which he ſo highly boaſted. The next inroad made by the Engliſh, ſhewed the vanity of Evers's hopes. This general led about five thouſand men into Tiviotdale, and was employed in ravaging that country; when intelligence was brought him, that ſome Scots forces appeared near the abbey of Melroſs. Angus had excited the regent to more activity; and a proclamation being iſſued for aſſembling the troops of the neigbouring counties, a conſiderable body had repaired to his ſtandard. Norman Leſly, ſon to the earl of Rothes, had alſo joined the army with ſome volunteers from Fife; and he inſpired courage into the whole, as well by this acceſſion of force, as by his perſonal bravery and intrepidity. In order to bring their troops to the neceſſity of a ſteady defence, the Scots leaders ordered all their cavalry to diſmount; and they reſolved to wait, on ſome high grounds at Ancram, the aſſault of the Engliſh. The Engliſh, whoſe paſt ſucceſſes had taught them too much to deſpiſe the enemy, thought, when they ſaw the Scots horſes led off the field, that the whole army was retiring; and they haſtened to attack them. The Scots received them in good order; and being favoured by the advantage of the ground, as well as by the ſurprize of the Engliſh, who expected no reſiſtance, they ſoon put them to flight, and purſued them with a conſiderable ſlaughter. Evers and Latoun were both killed, and above a thouſand men were made priſoners. In order to ſupport the Scots in this war, Francis, ſome time after, ſent over a body of auxiliaries, to the number of three thouſand five hundred men, under the command of Montgomery, lord of Lorges *. Reinforced by theſe ſuccours, the Regent aſſembled an army of fifteen thouſand men at Haddington, and marched thence to ravage the eaſt borders of England. They laid all waſte wherever they came; and having met with no conſiderable reſiſtance, they retired into their own country, and diſperſed themſelves. The earl of Hertford, in revenge, committed ravages on the middle and weſt marches; and the war on both ſides was ſignalized rather by the ills inflicted on the enemy, than by any conſiderable advantage gained by either party.

1545. 17th of February.

The war likewiſe between France and England was not diſtinguiſhed this year by any memorable events. Francis had equipped a fleet of above two hundred ſail, beſides gallies; and having embarked ſome land forces on board, he ſent them to make a deſcent in England †. They ſailed to the iſle of Wight, where

* Buchanan, lib. XV. Drummond. † Beleair, Memoires du Bellay.

they

they found the Engliſh fleet lying at anchor in St. Helens. It conſiſted not of above an hundred ſail; and the admiral thought it moſt adviſeable to remain in that road, in hopes of drawing the French into the narrow paſſages and rocks, which were unknown to them. The two fleets cannonaded one another for two days; and except the ſinking of the Mary Roſe, one of the largeſt ſhips of the Engliſh fleet, the damage on both ſides was inconſiderable. The French landed troops in the iſle of Wight, and committed ravages; but being repulſed by the militia of the country, they retired to their ſhips, which ſoon after ſet ſail for France. They were again driven by the wind on the coaſt of England, where they met with the Engliſh fleet; and a new cannonading enſued, which proved no more deciſive than the foregoing. It was indeed ſcarce poſſible, that a fleet at that time could, without boarding, gain any conſiderable advantage over the enemy. The cannon were commonly ſo ill ſerved, that a French writer of memoirs * obſerves, as a circumſtance ſomewhat ſingular, that each of theſe numerous fleets in a two hours engagement, fired full three hundred ſhot. One ſmall ſhip in our time could, without difficulty, do thrice as much. Chap. VII. 1545.

FRANCIS's chief intention, in equipping ſo great a fleet, was to prevent the Engliſh from throwing ſuccours into Boulogne, which he intended to beſiege; and for that purpoſe, he ordered a fort to be built, by which he propoſed to block up the harbour. After a conſiderable loſs of money and time, the fort was found ſo ill conſtructed, that he was obliged to abandon it; and tho' he had brought together, on that frontier, an army of near forty thouſand men, he was not able to effect any conſiderable enterprize. He broke into the territory of Oye, an extent of country which lies near Calais, and which ſerved commonly to ſupply the garriſon with proviſions; and he laid it entirely waſte by fire and ſword. Several ſkirmiſhes enſued between the French and Engliſh, in one of which the duke of Aumale received a remarkable wound. A lance was run into his head between his eye and noſe; and notwithſtanding that the lance broke and the head of it remained in the wound, he was not diſmounted by ſo violent a ſhock, and the head of the lance being extracted by a ſkilful ſurgeon, he afterwards recovered, and rendered himſelf extremely famous, by the name of the duke of Guiſe. Henry, in order to defend his dominions in France, had levied fourteen thouſand Germans; who, having marched to Fleurines in the biſhopric of Liege, found that they could advance no farther. The Emperor would not allow them a paſſage thro' his dominions: They received intelligence of a ſuperior army on the ſide of France ready to intercept them: Idleneſs and want of pay ſoon bred a mutiny among them: And having ſeized the Engliſh

* De Langey.

com-

Chap. VII. 1545. commiſſaries as a ſecurity for arrears, they retreated into their own country. There ſeems to have been ſome want of foreſight and contrivance in this expenſive armament.

23 November. A Parliament. THE great expence of theſe two wars, maintained by Henry obliged him to ſummon a new Parliament. The commons granted him a ſubſidy, payable in two years, of two ſhillings a pound on land*: The ſpirituality voted him ſix ſhillings a pound. But the parliament, apprehenſive leſt more demands ſhould be made upon them, thought to ſave themſelves by a very extraordinary liberality of other people's property; and by one vote they beſtowed on the King all the revenues of the univerſities, as well as of the chauntries, free chappels †, and hoſpitals. Henry was pleaſed with this conceſſion, as it encreaſed his power; but he had no intention of deſpoiling learning of all her endowments; and he ſoon took care to inform the univerſities, that he meant not to touch their revenues. Thus theſe antient and celebrated eſtabliſhments owed their ſubſiſting to the generoſity of the King, not to the protection of this ſervile and proſtitute Parliament.

THE proſtitute ſpirit of the parliament appeared farther in the preamble of a ſtatute ‡; in which they recognize the King to have always been by the word of God ſupreme head of the church of England, and acknowledge that archbiſhops, biſhops, and other eccleſiaſtical perſons, have no manner of juriſdiction but by his royal mandate: To him alone, ſay they, and ſuch perſons as he ſhall appoint, full authority and power is given from above to hear and determine all manner of cauſes eccleſiaſtical, and to correct all manner of hereſies, errors, vices and ſins whatſoever. No mention is here made of the concurrence of a convocation, nor even of a Parliament. His proclamations are acknowledged to have not only the force of a law, but the authority of a revelation; and by his royal power he may regulate the actions of men, and even direct their inward ſentiments and opinions.

24 December. THE King made in perſon a ſpeech to the Parliament on proroguing them; where, after thanking them for their loving attachment to him, which, he ſaid, equalled what was ever paid by their anceſtors to any King of England, he complained of their diſſenſions, diſputes and animoſities in religion. He told them,

* Thoſe who poſſeſſed goods or money, above five pound and below ten, were to pay eight-pence a pound: Thoſe above ten pound, a ſhilling.

† A chauntry was a little church, chappel, or particular altar in ſome cathedral church, &c. endowed with lands or other revenues for maintenance of one or more prieſts, daily to ſay maſs or perform divine ſervice, for the uſe of the founders, or ſuch others as they appointed: Free chappels were independant on any church, and endowed for much the ſame purpoſe as the former. *Jacob's Law Dict.*

‡ 37 Hen. VIII. c. 17.

that

that the ſevera pulpits were become a kind of batteries againſt each other; and that one preacher called another heretic and anabaptiſt, which was retaliated by the opprobrious terms of papiſt and hypocrite: That he had permitted his people the uſe of the ſcripturs, not in order to furniſh them materials for diſpute and railing, but that he might enable them to inform their conſciences and inſtruct their children and familes: That it grieved his heart to find how that precious jewel was proſtituted, by being introduced into the converſation of every alehouſe and tavern, and employed as a pretence for decrying the ſpiritual and legal paſtors: And that he was ſorry to obſerve, that the word of God, while it was the object of ſo much anxious ſpeculation, had very little influence on their practice; and that tho' an imaginary knowledge ſo much abounded, charity was daily going to decay *. The King gave good advice; but his own example, by encouraging ſpeculation and diſpute, was ill qualified to promote that peaceable ſubmiſſion of opinion, which he recommended. Chap. VII. 1545.

HENRY employed in military preparations the money granted by Parliament; and he ſent over the earl of Hertford, and lord Liſle the admiral, to Calais with a body of ninethouſand men, two thirds of which conſiſted of foreigners. Some ſkirmiſhes enſued of ſmall conſequence; and no hopes of any conſiderable progreſs could be entertained by either ſide. Henry, whoſe animoſity againſt Francis was not violent had given ſufficient vent to his humour by this ſhort war; and finding, that fom his great encreaſe in corpulence and decay in ſtrength, he could not hopefor much longer life, he was deſirous of ending a quarrel, which might prove dangerous to his kingdom during a minority. Francis likewiſe, on his part, was not averſe to peace with England; becauſe, having lately loſt his ſon, the duke of Orleans, he revived his antient claim upon Milan, and foreſaw, that hoſtilities muſt ſoon, on that account, break out between him and the Emperor. Commiſſioners therefore having met at Campe, a place between Ardres and Guiſnes, the articles were ſoon agreed on, and the peace ſigned by them. The chief conditions were, that Henry ſhould retain Boulogne during eight years, or till the forme debt due by Francis ſhould be paid. This debt was ſettled at two millions of livres, beſides a claim of 500,000 livres, which was afterwards to be adjuſted. Francis took care to comprehend Scotland in the treaty. Thus all that Henry obtained by a war, which coſt him above one million three hundred and forty thouſand pounds ſterling †, was a bad ſecurity for a debt, which was not a third of the value. 1546. 7th of June. Peace with France and Scotland.

* Hall, fol. 261. Herbert, p. 534. † Herbert, Stowe.

THE

Chap. VII. 1546. THE King, being now freed from all foreign wars, had leiſure to give his attention to domeſtic affairs; and particularly to the eſtabliſhment of uniformity of opinion, on which he was ſo intent. Tho' he allowed an Engliſh tranſlation of the Bible, he had hitherto been very careful to keep the maſs in Latin; but he was at laſt prevailed with to permit, that the Litany, a conſiderable part of the public ſervice, ſhould be celebrated in the vulgar tongue; and by this innovation, he excited anew the hopes of the reformers, who had been ſomewhat diſcouraged by the ſeverity of the ſtatute of the ſix articles. One petition of the new Litany was a prayer to ſave us *from the tyranny of the biſhop of Rome, and from all his deteſtable enormities.* Cranmer was employing his authority to engage Henry to farther innovations; and he took advantage of Gardiner's abſence, who was ſent in an embaſſy to the emperor; but Gardiner, having wrote to the King, that, if he carried his oppoſition to the catholic religion to greater extremities, Charles threatened to break off all commerce with him, the ſucceſs of Cranmer's projects was for that time retarded. Cranmer loſt this year the moſt ſincere and moſt powerful friend, whom he poſſeſſed at court; Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk: The Queen dowager of France, ſpouſe to Suffolk, had died ſome years before. This nobleman is one inſtance, that Henry was not altogether incapable of a cordial and ſteady friendſhip; and Suffolk ſeems to have been entirely worthy of that favour, which, from his earlieſt youth, he had enjoyed with him. The King was ſitting in council when informed of Suffolk's death; and he took that occaſion both to expreſs his own ſorrow for the loſs, and to celebrate the merits of the deceaſed. He declared, that, during the whole courſe of their correſpondence, his brother-in-law had not made any attempt to injure an adverſary, and had never whiſpered a word to the diſadvantage of any one. "Is there any of you, my lords, who "can ſay as much?" When the King ſubjoined theſe words, he looked round in all their faces, and ſaw that confuſion, which the conſciouſneſs of ſecret guilt naturally threw upon them *.

CRANMER himſelf, when bereaved of this ſupport, was the more expoſed to thoſe cabals of the courtiers, which the oppoſition of party and religion, joined to the uſual motives of intereſt, rendered ſo frequent among Henry's miniſters and counſellors. The catholics took hold of the King by his paſſion for orthodoxy; and they repreſented to him, that, if his laudable zeal for inforcing the truth met with no greater ſucceſs, it was owing altogether to the primate, whoſe example and encouragement were, in reality, the ſecret ſupports of hereſy. Henry, ſeeing the point to which they tended, feigned a compliance, and deſired the council to make enquiry into Cranmer's conduct; promiſing that, if he was found guilty, he would ſend him to the Tower, and bring him to condign puniſhment.

* Coke's Inſt. cap. 99.

All

All the world now gave the primate for loſt; and his old friends, from mercenary views, as well as the oppoſite party, from animoſity, began to ſhow him marks of neglect and diſregard. He was obliged to ſtand ſeveral hours among the lacqueys at the door of the council-chamber, before he could be admitted; and when he was at laſt called in, he was told, that they had determined to ſend him to the Tower. Cranmer ſaid, that he appealed to the King himſelf; and finding his appeal diſregarded, he produced a ring, which Henry had given him as a pledge of favour and protection. The council were confounded; and when they came before the King, he reproved them in the ſevereſt terms, and told them, that he was well acquainted with Cranmer's merit, as well as with their malignity and envy: But he was determined to cruſh all their cabals, and to teach them, by the ſevereſt diſcipline, ſince gentle methods were in vain, a more dutiful concurrence in promoting his ſervice. Norfolk, who was Cranmer's capital enemy, apologized for their conduct, by ſaying, that their only intention was to ſet the primate's innocence in a full light by bringing him to an open trial: And Henry obliged them all to embrace him, as a ſign of their cordial reconciliation. The mild temper of Cranmer rendered this reconciliation more ſincere on his part, than is uſual in ſuch forced compliances *. Chap. VII. 1546.

Perſecutions.

But tho' Henry's favour for Cranmer rendered fruitleſs all accuſations againſt him, his pride and peeviſhneſs, irritated by his declining ſtate of health, carried him to puniſh with freſh ſeverity all others who preſumed to entertain a different opinion from himſelf, particularly in the capital point of the real preſence. Anne Aſcue, a young woman of merit as well as beauty †, who had great connexions with the chief ladies at court, and with the Queen herſelf, was accuſed of dogmatizing on that delicate article; and Henry, inſtead of having indulgence to the weakneſs of her ſex and age, was but the more provoked, that a woman ſhould dare to oppoſe his theological ſentiments. She was prevailed on by Bonner's menaces to make a ſeeming recantation; but ſhe qualified it with ſome reſerves, which did not ſatisfy that zealous prelate. She was thrown into priſon, and there employed herſelf in compoſing prayers and diſcourſes, by which ſhe fortified her reſolution to endure the utmoſt extremity, rather than relinquiſh her religious principles. She even wrote to the King, and told him, that as to the Lord's ſupper, ſhe believed as much as Chriſt himſelf had ſaid of it, and as much of his divine doctrine as the catholic church had required: But while ſhe could not be brought to acknowledge an aſſent to the King's explications, this declaration availed her nothing, and was rather regarded as a freſh inſult. The chancellor, Wriotheſely, who had ſucceeded Audley, and who was much attach-

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 343, 344. Antiq. Brit. in vita Cranm. † Bale, Speed, 780.

Chap. VII. 1546. ed to the catholic party, was ſent to examine her with regard to her patrons at court, and the great ladies who were in correſpondence with her: But ſhe maintained a very laudable fidelity to her friends, and would confeſs nothing. She was put to the torture in the moſt cruel manner, and continued ſtill reſolute in preſerving ſecrecy. Some authors * add a very extraordinary circumſtance: That the chancellor, who ſtood by, ordered the lieutenant of the Tower to ſtretch the rack farther; but the lieutenant refuſed compliance with that cruelty: The chancellor menaced him; but met with a new refuſal: Upon which that magiſtrate, who was otherwiſe a perſon of merit, but intoxicated with religious zeal, put his own hand to the rack, and drew it ſo violently that he almoſt tore her body aſunder. Her conſtancy ſtill ſurpaſſed the barbarity of her perſecutors, and they found all their efforts to be baffled. She was then condemned to be burned alive; and being ſo diſlocated by the rack, that ſhe could not ſtand, ſhe was carried to the ſtake in a chair. Together with her, were brought Nicholas Belenian, a prieſt, John Laſſels of the King's family, and John Adams a taylor, who had been condemned for the ſame crime to the ſame puniſhment. They were all tied to the ſtake; and in that dreadful ſituation, the chancellor ſent to inform them, that their pardon was ready drawn and ſigned, and ſhould inſtantly be given them, if they would merit it by a recantation. They only regarded this offer as a new ornament to their crown of martyrdom; and they ſaw with tranquillity the executioner kindle the flames which conſumed them. Wriotheſely did not conſider, that this public and noted ſituation intereſted their honour the more to maintain a ſteady perſeverance.

But tho' the ſecrecy and fidelity of Anne Aſcue ſaved the Queen from this peril, ſhe ſoon after fell into a new danger, from which ſhe very narrowly eſcaped. There was an ulcer broke out in the King's leg, which, joined to his extreme corpulency and his bad habit of body, began both to threaten his life, and to render him, even more than uſual, peeviſh and paſſionate. The Queen, during this time, attended him with the moſt tender and dutiful care, and endeavoured, by every ſoothing art and compliance, to allay thoſe guſts of humour, to which he was become ſo ſubject. His favourite topic of converſation was theology; and Catherine, whoſe good ſenſe made her capable of diſcourſing on any ſubject, was frequently engaged into the argument; and being ſecretly inclined to the principles of the reformers, ſhe unwarily diſcovered too much of her mind on theſe occaſions. Henry, highly provoked that ſhe ſhould

* Fox, vol. ii. p. 578. Speed, p. 780. Baker, p. 299. But Burnet queſtions the truth of this circumſtance: Fox, however, tranſcribes her own paper, where ſhe relates it. I muſt add, in juſtice to the King, that he diſapproved of Wriotheſely's conduct, and commended the lieutenant.

preſume

preſume to differ from him, made complaints of her obſtinacy to Gardiner, who gladly laid hold of the opportunity to inflame the quarrel. He praiſed the King's anxious care for preſerving the orthodoxy of his ſubjects, and repreſented, that the more elevated the perſon was who was chaſtiſed, and the more near to his perſon, the greater terror would the example ſtrike into every one, and the more glorious would the ſacrifice appear to all poſterity: The chancellor, being conſulted, was engaged by religious zeal to ſecond theſe topics; and Henry, hurried by his own impetuous temper, and encouraged by his counſellors, went ſo far as to order articles of impeachment to be drawn up againſt his conſort. Wriotheſely executed his commands; and ſoon after brought the paper to him to be ſigned: For as it was high treaſon to throw ſlander upon the Queen, he might otherwiſe have been queſtioned for his temerity. In going home, he chanced to drop this important paper from his pocket; and as ſome perſon of the Queen's party found it, it was immediately carried to her. She was ſenſible of the extreme danger to which ſhe was expoſed: but did not deſpair of being able, by her prudence and addreſs, ſtill to elude the efforts of her enemies. She paid her uſual viſit to the King, and found him in a more ſerene diſpoſition than ſhe had reaſon to expect. He entered on the ſubject which was ſo familiar to him, and he ſeemed to challenge her to an argument in divinity. She gently declined the converſation, and obſerved, that ſuch profound ſpeculations were ill ſuited to the natural imbecility of her ſex. Women, ſhe ſaid, by their firſt creation, were made ſubject to men: The male was created after the image of God; the female after the image of the male: It belonged to the huſband to chooſe principles for his wife; the wife's duty was, in all caſes, to adopt implicitly the ſentiments of her huſband: And as to herſelf, it was doubly her duty, being bleſt with a huſband, who was qualified, by his judgment and learning, not only to chooſe principles for his own family, but for the moſt wiſe and knowing of every nation. "Not "ſo! by St. Mary," replied the King, "you are now become a doctor, Kate; "and better fitted to give than receive inſtructions." She meekly replied, that ſhe was ſenſible how little ſhe was intitled to theſe praiſes; that tho' ſhe uſually declined not any converſation, however ſublime, when propoſed by his majeſty, ſhe well knew, that her conceptions could ſerve to no other purpoſe than to give him a little momentary amuſement; that ſhe found the converſation apt to languiſh when not revived by ſome oppoſition, and had ventured ſometimes to feign a contrariety of ſentiments, in order to give him the pleaſure of refuting her: and that ſhe alſo propoſed, by this innocent artifice, to engage him into topics, whence, ſhe had obſerved, by frequent experience, that ſhe reaped profit and inſtruction. "And is it ſo, ſweet-heart?" replied the King, "then are

Chap. VII. 1546.

Chap. VII. 1546. "we perfect friends again." He embraced her with great affection, and ſent her away with aſſurances of his protection and kindneſs. Her enemies, who knew nothing of this turn, prepared next day to convey her to the Tower, purſuant to the King's warrant. Henry and Catherine were converſing amicably in the garden, when the chancellor appeared with forty of the purſuivants. The King ſpoke to him at ſome diſtance from her; and ſeemed to expoſtulate with him in the ſevereſt manner: She even overheard the terms of *knave*, *fool*, and *beaſt*, which he very liberally beſtowed upon that magiſtrate; and then ordered him to depart his preſence. She afterwards interpoſed to mitigate his anger: He ſaid to her, "Poor ſoul! you know not how little intitled this man is to your "good offices." From thenceforth, the Queen, having narrowly eſcaped ſo great a danger, was careful not to offend Henry's humour by any contradiction; and Gardiner, whoſe malice had endeavoured to widen the breach, could never afterwards recover his favour and good opinion *.

But Henry's tyrannical diſpoſition, ſoured by ill health, burſt out ſoon after to the deſtruction of a man, who poſſeſſed a much ſuperior rank to Gardiner. The duke of Norfolk and his father, during this whole reign, and even a great part of the foregoing, had been regarded as the greateſt ſubjects in the kingdom, and had rendered very conſiderable ſervices to the crown. The duke himſelf had in his youth diſtinguiſhed himſelf by naval enterprizes: He had much contributed to the victory over the Scots at Flouden: He had ſuppreſſed a dangerous rebellion in the North: And he had always done his part with honour in all the expeditions againſt France. Fortune ſeemed to conſpire with his own induſtry, in raiſing him to the higheſt elevation. By the favours heaped on him from the crown, he had acquired an immenſe eſtate: The King had ſucceſſively been married to two of his nieces; and the King's ſon, the duke of Richmond, had married his daughter: Beſides his deſcent from the antient family of the Moubrays, by which he was allied to the throne, he had eſpouſed a daughter of the duke of Buckingham, who was deſcended by a female from Edward the third: And as he was believed ſtill to adhere ſecretly to the antient religion, he was regarded, abroad and at home, as the head of the catholic party. But all theſe circumſtances, in proportion as they exalted the duke, provoked the jealouſy of Henry; and he foreſaw danger, during his ſon's minority, both to the public tranquillity, and to the new eccleſiaſtical ſyſtem, from the attempts of ſo potent a ſubject. But nothing tended more to expoſe Norfolk to the King's vengeance,

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 344. Herbert, p. 560. Speed, p. 780. Fox's Acts and Monuments, vol. ii. p. 58.

than

than the prejudices, which Henry had entertained againſt the earl of Surrey, ſon to that nobleman. Chap. VII. 1546.

SURREY was a young man of the moſt promiſing hopes, and had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by every accompliſhment, which became a ſcholar, a courtier, and a ſoldier. He excelled in all the military exerciſes, which were then in requeſt: He encouraged the fine arts by his patronage and example: He had made ſome ſucceſsful attempts in poetry; and being ſmit with the romantic gallantry of that age, he celebrated the praiſes of his miſtreſs by his pen and his lance, in every maſk and tournament. His ſpirit and ambition were equal to his talents and his quality; and he did not always regulate his conduct by that caution and reſerve, which his ſituation required. He had been left governor of Boulogne, when that town was taken by Henry; but tho' his perſonal bravery was unqueſtioned, he had been unfortunate in ſome rencounters with the French. The King, ſomewhat diſpleaſed with his conduct, had ſent over Hertford to command in his place; and Surrey was ſo imprudent as to drop ſome menacing expreſſions againſt the miniſters, on account of this affront, which was put upon him. And as he had refuſed to marry Hertford's daughter, and even waved every propoſal of marriage, which was made him; Henry imagined, that he had entertained views of eſpouſing the lady Mary; and he was inſtantly determined to repreſs, by the moſt ſevere expedients, ſo dangerous an ambition.

ACTUATED by all theſe motives, and perhaps too influenced by that old diſguſt, with which the ill conduct of Catherine Howard had inſpired him againſt all her family, he gave private orders to arreſt Norfolk and Surrey; and they were on the ſame day confined to the Tower. Surrey being a commoner, his trial was the more expeditious; and as to proofs, neither parliaments nor juries ſeem ever to have given the leaſt attention to them in any cauſe of the crown, during this whole reign. He was accuſed, that he had entertained in his family ſome Italians who were *ſuſpected* to be ſpies; a ſervant of his had paid a viſit to cardinal Pole in Italy, whence he was *ſuſpected* of entertaining a correſpondence with that obnoxious prelate; he had quartered the arms of Edward the Confeſſor on his ſcutcheon, which made him be *ſuſpected* of aſpiring to the crown, tho' both he and his anceſtors had openly, during the courſe of many years, maintained that practice; and the heralds had even juſtified it by their authority. Theſe were the crimes, for which a jury, notwithſtanding his eloquent and ſpirited defence, condemned this nobleman for high treaſon; and their ſentence was ſoon after executed upon him. 12th of December. 1547. Execution of the earl of Surrey.

THE innocence of the Duke of Norfolk was ſtill, if poſſible, more apparent than that of his ſon; as his ſervices to the crown had been much greater. His Attainder of the duke of Norfolk.

Chap. VII. 1547. dutcheſs, with whom he lived on bad terms, had been ſo baſe as to carry intelligence to his enemies of all ſhe knew againſt him: Elizabeth Holland, a miſtreſs of his, had been equally ſubſervient to the deſigns of the court: Yet with all theſe advantages his accuſers diſcovered no greater crime, than that he had once ſaid, that the King was ſickly, and could not hold out long, and the kingdom was likely to fall into diſorders, thro' the diverſity of religious opinions. He wrote a moſt pathetic letter to the King, pleading his paſt ſervices, and proteſting his innocence: Soon after he embraced a more proper expedient for appeaſing Henry, by making a ſubmiſſion and confeſſion, ſuch as his enemies required: But nothing could mollify the unrelenting temper of the King. He 14th January. aſſembled the parliament, as the ſureſt and moſt expeditious inſtrument of his tyranny; and the houſe of peers, without examining the priſoner, without trial or evidence, paſſed a bill of attainder againſt him, and ſent it down to the commons. Cranmer, tho' engaged for many years in an oppoſite party to Norfolk, and tho' he had received many and great injuries from him, would have no hand in ſo unjuſt a proſecution, and he retired to his ſeat at Croydon *. The King was now approaching faſt towards his end; and fearing leſt Norfolk ſhould eſcape him, he ſent a meſſage to the commons, by which he deſired them to haſten the bill, on pretence, that Norfolk enjoyed the dignity of earl marſhal, and it was neceſſary to appoint another, who might officiate at the enſuing ceremony of inſtalling his ſon, prince of Wales. The obſequious commons obeyed his directions, tho' founded on ſo frivolous a pretence; and the King, having affixed the royal aſſent to the bill by commiſſioners, iſſued orders for the execution of Norfolk on the morning of the twenty ninth of January. But news being carried to the Tower, that the King himſelf had expired that night, the lieutenant deferred the execution of the warrant, and it was not thought adviſable by the council, to begin a new reign by the death of the greateſt nobleman in the kingdom, who had been condemned by a ſentence ſo unjuſt and tyrannical.

THE King's health had been long in a very declining condition; but for ſeveral days all thoſe near him plainly ſaw his end approaching. He was become ſo froward, that no one durſt inform him of his condition; and as ſome perſons, during this reign, had undergone the puniſhment of traitors for foretelling the King's death †, every one was afraid, leſt, in the tranſports of his fury, he might, on this pretence, inflict death on the author of ſuch friendly intelligence. At laſt, Sir Anthony Denny ventured to diſcloſe to him the fatal ſecret, and exhorted him to prepare for the fate which was awaiting him. He expreſſed his reſigna-

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 348. Fox.

† Lanquet's Epitome of chronicles in the year 1541.

tion;

tion ; and desired that Cranmer might be sent for : But before that prelate arrived, he was speechless, tho' he seemed still to retain his senses. Cranmer desired him to give some sign of his dying in the faith of Christ : He squeezed his hand, and immediately expired, after a reign of thirty-seven years and nine months ; and in the fifty-sixth year of his age. Chap. VII. 1547. Death of the King.

The King had made his will near a month before his decease ; where he confirmed the destination of Parliament, in leaving the crown first to prince Edward, then to the lady Mary, next to the lady Elizabeth : The two princesses he obliged, under the penalty of forfeiting their title to the crown, not to marry without the consent of the council, which he appointed for the government of his minor son. After his own children, he settled the succession on Frances Brandon, marchioness of Dorset, eldest daughter to his sister, the French Queen ; then on Eleonor, countess of Cumberland, the second daughter. In passing over the posterity of the Queen of Scots, his eldest sister, he made use of the power obtained from Parliament ; but as he subjoined, that after the failure of the French Queen's posterity, the crown should descend to the next lawful heir, it afterwards became a question, whether these words could be applied to the Scottish line. It was thought, that these princes were not the next heirs after the house of Suffolk, but before that house, and that Henry, by expressing himself in this manner, meant entirely to exclude them. The late injuries which he had received from the Scots, had irritated him extremely against that nation ; and he maintained to the last that character of violence and caprice, by which his life had been so much distinguished. Another circumstance of his will may suggest the same reflection with regard to the strange contrarieties of his temper and conduct : He left money for masses to be said for delivering his soul from purgatory ; and tho' he destroyed all those institutions, established by his ancestors, and others, for the benefit of *their* souls, and had even left the doctrine of purgatory doubtful in all the articles of faith which he published during his latter years, he was yet determined, when matters came to the last, to take care, at least, of his own future repose, and to adhere to the safer side of the question *.

It is difficult to give a just summary of this prince's qualities : He was so different from himself in different parts of his reign, that, as is well remarked by lord Herbert, his history is his best character and description. The absolute, uncontrouled authority which he maintained at home, and the regard which he acquired among foreign nations, are circumstances which entitle him to the appellation of a *great* prince ; while his tyranny, and cruelty, seem to exclude him His character.

* See his will in Fuller, Heylin, and Rymer, p. 110. There is no reasonable ground to suspect its authenticity.

from

Chap. VII. 1547. from the character of a *good* one. He poſſeſſed, indeed, great vigour of mind, which qualified him for exerciſing dominion over men; courage, intrepidity, vigilance, inflexibility: And tho' theſe qualities lay not always under the guidance of a regular and ſolid judgment, they were accompanied with good parts, and an extenſive capacity; and every one dreaded a conteſt with a man who was known never to yield, or to forgive, and who, in every controverſy, was determined, either to ruin himſelf or his antagoniſt. A catalogue of his vices would comprehend many of the worſt qualities incident to human nature: Violence, cruelty, profuſion, rapacity, injuſtice, obſtinacy, arrogance, bigotry, preſumption, caprice: But neither was he ſubject to all theſe vices in the moſt extreme degree, nor was he, at intervals, altogether devoid of virtues: He was ſincere, open, gallant, liberal, and capable at leaſt of a temporary friendſhip and attachment. In this reſpect he was unfortunate, that the incidents of his times ſerved to diſplay his faults in their full light: The treatment which he met with from the court of Rome provoked him to violence; the danger of a revolt from his ſuperſtitious ſubjects, ſeemed to require the moſt extreme ſeverity. But it muſt, at the ſame time, be acknowledged, that his ſituation tended to throw an additional luſtre on what was great and magnanimous in his character: The emulation between the emperor and the French King, rendered his alliance, notwithſtanding his impolitic conduct, of great importance in Europe: The extenſive powers of his prerogative, and the ſubmiſſive, not to ſay ſlaviſh, diſpoſition of his Parliament, made it the more eaſy for him to aſſume and maintain that entire dominion by which his reign is ſo much diſtinguiſhed in the Engliſh hiſtory.

It may ſeem a little extraordinary, that notwithſtanding his cruelty, his extortion, his violence, his arbitrary adminiſtration, this prince not only acquired the regard of his ſubjects; but never was the object of their hatred: He ſeems even in ſome degree to have poſſeſſed, to the laſt, their love and affection *. His exterior qualities were advantageous, and fit to captivate the multitude: His magnificence and perſonal bravery rendered him illuſtrious in vulgar eyes: And it may be ſaid, with truth, that the Engliſh in that age, were ſo thoroughly ſubdued, that, like eaſtern ſlaves, they were inclined to admire even thoſe acts of violence and tyranny, which were exerciſed over themſelves, and at their own expence.

With regard to foreign ſtates, Henry appears long to have ſupported an intercourſe of friendſhip with Francis, more ſincere and diſintereſted than uſually takes place between neighbouring princes. Their common jealouſy of the emperor Charles, and ſome reſemblance in their characters, (tho' the compariſon is

* Strype, vol. i. p. 389.

extremely

extremely to the advantage of the French monarch) ſerved as the cement of their mutual amity. Francis is ſaid to have been affected with the King's death, and to have expreſſed much regret for the loſs. His own health began to decline: He foretold, that he ſhould not long ſurvive his friend *: And he died in about two months after him. Chap. VII. 1547.

THERE were ten Parliaments ſummoned by Henry the eighth, and twenty-three ſeſſions held. The whole time in which theſe Parliaments ſat during this long reign, exceeded not three years and a half. It amounted not to a year during the firſt twenty years. The innovations in religion obliged him afterwards to call theſe aſſemblies more frequently: But tho' theſe were the moſt important tranſactions that ever fell under the cognizance of Parliament, their devoted attachment to Henry's will, joined to their earneſt deſire of returning ſoon to their country ſeats, produced a very quick diſpatch of the bills, and made the ſeſſions of ſhort duration. All the King's caprices were, indeed, blindly complied with, and no regard was payed to the ſafety or liberty of the ſubject. Beſides the violent proſecution of whatever he was pleaſed to call hereſy, the laws of treaſon were multiplied beyond all former precedent. Even words to the diſparagement of the King, Queen, or royal iſſue, were ſubjected to that penalty; and ſo little care was taken in framing theſe rigorous ſtatutes, that they contain obvious contradictions; inſomuch, that, had they been ſtrictly executed, every man, without exception, muſt have fallen under the penalty of treaſon. By one ſtatute †, for inſtance, it was declared treaſon to aſſert the validity of the King's marriage, either with Catherine of Arragon, or Anne Boleyn: By another ‡, it was treaſon to ſay any thing to the diſparagement or ſlander of the princeſſes, Mary and Elizabeth; and to call them ſpurious, would, no doubt, be conſtrued to their ſlander. Nor would even a profound ſilence with regard to theſe delicate points, be able to ſave a perſon from ſuch penalties. For by the former ſtatute, whoever refuſed to anſwer upon oath to any point contained in that act, was ſubjected to the pains of treaſon. The King, therefore, needed only to propoſe to any one a queſtion with regard to the legality of either of his firſt marriages: If the perſon was ſilent, he was a traytor by law: If he anſwered, either in the negative or in the affirmative, he was no leſs a traytor. So monſtrous were the inconſiſtencies, which aroſe from the furious paſſions of the King, and the ſlaviſh obedience of his Parliaments. It is hard to ſay, whether theſe contradictions were owing to Henry's precipitancy, or to a formed deſign of tyranny.

IT may not be improper to recapitulate whatever is memorable in the ſtatutes of this reign, whether with regard to police or commerce: Nothing can better His laws.

* Le Thou. † 28 Hen. VIII. c. 7. ‡ 34, 35 Hen. VIII. c. 1.

Chap. VII. 1547.

ſhow the genius of the age than ſuch a review of the laws. The abolition of the ancient religion contributed much to the regular execution of juſtice. While the catholic ſuperſtition ſubſiſted, there was no poſſibility of puniſhing any crimes in the clergy: The church would not allow the magiſtrate to try the offences of her members, and ſhe could not herſelf inflict any civil penalties upon them. But Henry reſtrained theſe pernicious exemptions: The privilege of clergy was aboliſhed for the crimes of petty treaſon, murder, and felony, to all under the degree of a ſubdeacon *. But the former ſuperſtition not only protected crimes in the clergy: It exempted alſo the laity from puniſhment, by affording them ſhelter in the churches and ſanctuaries. The Parliament reſtrained theſe abuſes. It was firſt declared, that no ſanctuaries were allowed in caſes of high treaſon †; next, in thoſe of murder, felony, rapes, burglary, and petty treaſon ‡: And it limited them in other particulars §. The only expedient employed to ſupport the military ſpirit during this age, was the reviving and extending ſome old laws, enacted for the encouragement of archery, on which the defence of the kingdom was ſuppoſed very much to depend. Every man was ordered to have a bow ‖: Buts were ordered to be erected in every pariſh ¶: And every bowyer was ordered, for each bow of yew which he made, to make two of elm or wich, for the ſervice of the common people **. The uſe of croſs-bows and hand-guns was alſo prohibited ††. What rendered the Engliſh bowmen more formidable was, that they carried halberts with them, by which they were enabled, upon occaſion, to engage in cloſe fight with the enemy ‡‡. Frequent muſters or arrays were alſo made of the people, even during time of peace; and all men of ſubſtance were obliged to have a compleat ſuit of armour or harneſs, as it was called §§. The martial ſpirit of the Engliſh, during that age, rendered this precaution, it was thought, ſufficient for the defence of the nation; and as the King had then an abſolute power of commanding the ſervice of all his ſubjects, he could preſently, in caſe of danger, appoint new officers, and levy regiments, and collect an army as numerous as he pleaſed. Where no faction or diviſion prevailed among the people, there was no foreign power that ever dared to think of invading England. There is a ſaying of Francis the firſt, which ſhows the eſtimation in which the nation was held in Europe. That magnanimous prince boaſted, that notwithſtanding the combination of Charles and Henry againſt him, in the year 1524, he ſhould be able to defend himſelf. Spain, ſays he, has

* 23 Hen. VIII. c. 1. † 26 Hen. VIII. c. 13. ‡ 32 Hen. VIII. c. 12.
§ 22 Hen. VIII. c. 14. ‖ 3 Hen. VIII. c. 3. ¶ Ibid. ** Ibid.
†† 3 Hen. VIII. c. 13. ‡‡ Herbert. §§ Hall, fol. 234. Stowe, p. 515. Hollingſhed, p. 947.

no money; the Low Countries have no ſoldiers: And as to England, my frontier is ſtrong on that ſide *. The city of London alone could muſter fifteen thouſand men †. Diſcipline, however, was an advantage wanting to theſe troops; tho' the garriſon of Calais was a nurſery of officers; and Tournay firſt ‡, Boulogne afterwards, ſerved to increaſe the number. Every one, who ſerved abroad, was allowed to alienate his lands without paying any fees §. A general permiſſion was granted to diſpoſe of land by will ‖. The Parliament were ſo little jealous of their privileges, (which indeed were at that time ſcarce worth preſerving) that there is an inſtance of one Strode, who, becauſe he introduced into the lower houſe ſome bill regarding tin, was very ſeverely treated by the Stannery courts of Cornwal: Heavy fines were impoſed on him; and upon his refuſal to pay, he was thrown into a dungeon, loaded with irons, and uſed in ſuch a manner as brought his life in danger: Yet all the notice which the Parliament took of this enormity, even in ſuch an inferior court, was to enact, that no man could be queſtioned afterwards for his conduct in parliament **. This prohibition, however, muſt only be extended to the inferior courts: For as to the King and privy council, and ſtar-chamber, they were ſcarce bound by any law. There is a bill of tonnage and poundage, which ſhows what uncertain ideas the Parliament had formed both of their own privileges and of the rights of the ſovereign ††. This duty had been voted to every King ſince Henry the fourth, during the term of his own life: Yet Henry VIII. had already been allowed to levy it ſix years without any law; and tho' there had been four parliaments aſſembled, no attention had been given either to grant it to him regularly, or reſtrain him from levying it. At laſt, the Parliament reſolved to give him that ſupply; but even in this conceſſion, they ſhow themſelves plainly at a loſs to determine whether they grant it, or whether he has a right of himſelf to levy it. They ſay, that the impoſition was made to endure during the natural life of the late King, and no longer: They yet blame the merchants who had not paid to the preſent King that duty: They obſerve, that the law for tonnage and poundage was expired; yet make no ſcruple to call that impoſition the King's due: They affirm, that he had ſuſtained great and manifold loſſes by thoſe who had defrauded him of his duty: And to provide a remedy, they vote him that ſupply during his life, and no longer. It is remarkable, that notwithſtanding this laſt clauſe, all his ſucceſſors, for more than a century, continued in the like irregular practice: If a practice may deſerve that epithet, which all the world acquieſced

* P. Daniel. † Hall, fol. 235. Hollingſhed, p. 547. Stowe, p. 577. ‡ Hall, fol. 68. § 14 and 15 Hen. VIII. c. 15. ‖ 34 and 35 Hen. VIII. c. 5. ** 4 Hen. VIII. c. 8. †† 6 Hen. VIII. c. 14.

Chap. VII. 1547.

in, and which gave no offence. But when Charles the firſt attempted to continue in the ſame courſe, which had now received the ſanction of many generations, ſo much were the opinions of men altered, that a furious tempeſt was excited by it, and hiſtorians, partial or ignorant, ſtill repreſent that meaſure as a moſt violent and unprecedented enormity in that unhappy prince.

THE King was allowed to make laws for Wales without conſent of Parliament *. With regard to England, the reſtraint was little more than a formality.

THE foreign commerce of England, during this age, was moſtly confined to the Netherlands. The inhabitants of the Low Countries bought the Engliſh commodities, and diſtributed them into the other parts of Europe. Hence the mutual dependance of theſe countries on each other; and the great loſs ſuſtained by both, in caſe of a rupture. During all the variations of politics, the ſovereigns uſually avoided the coming to this extremity; and tho' the King bore a much greater friendſhip to Francis, the propenſity of the nation always lay towards the emperor.

IN 1528, hoſtilities commenced between England and the Low Countries; but were ſoon ſtopt by mutual agreement. While the Flemings were not allowed to purchaſe cloth in England, the Engliſh merchants could not buy it of the cloathiers, and the cloathiers were obliged to diſmiſs their workmen, who began to be tumultuous for want of bread. The cardinal, to appeaſe them, ſent for the merchants, and ordered them to buy cloth as uſual: They told him, that they could not diſpoſe of it as uſual; and notwithſtanding all his menaces, he could get no other anſwer from them †. An agreement was at laſt made to continue the commerce between the ſtates, even during war.

THE foreign artificers in general much ſurpaſſed the Engliſh in dexterity, induſtry, and frugality; and hence the violent animoſity, which the latter, on many occaſions, expreſſed againſt any of the former who were ſettled in England. They had the aſſurance to complain, that all their cuſtomers went to foreign tradeſmen; and in the year 1517, being moved by the ſeditious ſermons of one Dr. Bele, and the intrigues of Lincoln, a broker, they raiſed an inſurrection. The apprentices, and others of the poorer ſort, in London, began by breaking up the priſons, where ſome perſons were confined for inſulting foreigners. They next proceeded to the houſe of Meutas, a Frenchman, much hated by them; where they committed great diſorders; killed ſome of his ſervants, and plundered his goods. The mayor could not appeaſe them; nor Sir Thomas More, late under ſheriff, tho' extremely reſpected in the city. They alſo threatned cardinal

* 34 Hen. VIII. † Hall, folio 174.

Wolſey

Wolſey with ſome inſult; and he thought it neceſſary to fortify his houſe, and put himſelf on his guard. Tired at laſt with theſe diſorders, they diſperſed themſelves; and the earls of Shrewſbury and Surrey ſeized ſome of them. A proclamation was iſſued, that women ſhould not meet together to babble and talk, and that all men ſhould keep their wives in their houſes. Next day the duke of Norfolk came into the city, at the head of thirteen hundred armed men, and made enquiry into the tumult. Bele and Lincoln, and ſeveral others, were ſent to the Tower, and condemned for treaſon. Lincoln, and thirteen more were executed. The other criminals, to the number of four hundred, were brought before the King with ropes about their necks, fell on their knees, and cried for mercy. Henry knew at that time how to pardon; he diſmiſſed them all without further puniſhment *. Chap. VII. 1547.

So great was the number of foreign artizans in the city, that at leaſt fifteen thouſand Flemings alone were at one time obliged to leave it, by an order from the council, when Henry became jealous of their favour for Queen Catherine †. Henry himſelf confeſſes, in an edict of the ſtar-chamber, printed among the ſtatutes, that the foreigners ſtarved the natives; and obliged them from idleneſs to have recourſe to theft, murder, and other enormities ‡. He alſo aſſerts, that the vaſt multitudes of the foreigners raiſed the price of grain and bread §. And to prevent the increaſe of the evil, all foreign artificers were prohibited to have above two foreigners in their houſe, either journeymen or apprentices. A like jealouſy aroſe againſt the foreign merchants; and to comply with it, a law was enacted obliging all denizens to pay the duties impoſed upon aliens ‖. The Parliament had done better to have encouraged foreign merchants and artizans to come over to England; which might have excited the emulation of the natives, and have improved their ſkill. The priſoners in the kingdom, for debts and crimes, are aſſerted, in an act of parliament, to be ſixty thouſand perſons and above **.

There is a remarkable clauſe in a ſtatute paſſed near the beginning of this reign ††, by which we might be induced to believe, that England was extremely decayed from the flouriſhing condition which it had attained in former times. It had been enacted in the reign of Edward the ſecond, that no magiſtrate in town or borough, who by his office ought to keep aſſize, ſhould, during the continuance of his magiſtracy, ſell either in wholeſale or retail, any wine or victuals. This law ſeemed very equitable, in order to prevent fraud or

* Stowe, 505. Hollingſhed, 840. † Le Grand, vol. iii. p. 232. ‡ 21 Hen. VIII. § Ibid. ‖ 22 Hen. VIII. c. 8. ** 3 Hen. VIII. c. 15. †† 3 Hen. VIII. c. 8.

Chap. VII. 1547. private views in fixing the aſſize: Yet the law is repealed in this reign. The reaſon aſſigned is, that "ſince the making of that ſtatute and ordinance, many and "the moſt part of all the cities, boroughs, and towns corporate, within the "realm of England, are fallen in ruin and decay, and are not inhabited by mer-"chants, and men of ſuch ſubſtance as at the time of making that ſtatute: For "at this day, the dwellers and inhabitants of the ſame cities and boroughs are "commonly bakers, vintners, fiſhmongers, and other victualers, and there re-"main few others to bear the offices." Men have ſuch a propenſity to exalt paſt times above the preſent, that it ſeems dangerous to credit this reaſoning of the Parliament, without further evidence to ſupport it. So different are the views in which the ſame object appears, that ſome may be inclined to draw an oppoſite inference from this fact. A more regular police was eſtabliſhed in the reign of Henry the eighth, than in any former period, and a ſtricter adminiſtration of juſtice; an advantage which induced the men of landed property to leave the provincial towns, and to retire into the country. Cardinal Wolſey, in a ſpeech to the parliament, repreſented it as a proof of the increaſe of riches, that the cuſtoms had increaſed beyond what they were formerly *.

But if there was really a decay of commerce and induſtry, and populouſneſs in England, the ſtatutes of this reign, except by aboliſhing monaſteries, and retrenching holidays, a circumſtance of conſiderable moment, were not in other reſpects well calculated to revive them. The fixing the wages of artificers was attempted †. Luxury in apparel was prohibited, by repeated ſtatutes ‡; and probably without ſucceſs. The chancellor and other miniſters were empowered to fix the price of poultry, cheeſe, and butter §. A ſtatute was even paſſed to fix the price of beef, pork, mutton, and veal ‖. Beef and pork were ordered to be ſold at a halfpenny a pound: Mutton and veal at a halfpenny half a farthing. The preamble of the ſtatute ſays, that theſe four ſpecies of butcher's meat were the food of the poorer ſort. This act was afterwards repealed **.

The practice of depopulating the country, by abandoning tillage, and throwing the lands into paſturage, ſtill continued ††; as appears by the new laws which were enacted againſt that practice. The King was entitled to half the rents of the land, where any farm houſes were allowed to go to decay ‡‡. The unſkilful huſbandry was probably the cauſe why the proprietors found no profit in tillage. The number of ſheep allowed to be kept in one flock, was reſtrained to

* Hall, folio 110.
** 33 Hen. VIII. c. 11. 7 Hen. VIII. c. 1.
† 6 Hen. VIII. c. 3.
‡ 1 Hen. VIII. c. 14. 6 Hen. VIII. c. 1. 7 Hen. VIII. c. 7.
§ 25 Hen. VIII. c. 2.
‖ 24 Hen. VIII. c. 3.
†† Strype, vol. i. p. 392.
‡‡ 6 Hen. VIII. c. 5.

two

two thouſand *. Sometimes, ſays the ſtatute, one proprietor or farmer would keep a flock of twenty-four thouſand. It is remarkable, that the Parliament aſcribes the increaſing price of ſheep and mutton, to this increaſe of ſheep: Becauſe, ſay they, the commodity being got into few hands, the price of it is raiſed at pleaſure †. It is probable, that the effect proceeded from the daily increaſe of money: For it is impoſſible, that ſuch a commodity could be monopolized. Intereſt was fixed during this reign at ten per cent ‡. Chap. VII. 1547.

Some laws were made with regard to beggars and vagabonds §; one of the circumſtances in government, which humanity would moſt powerfully recommend to a benevolent legiſlator; which ſeems, at firſt ſight, the moſt eaſily adjuſted; and which is yet the moſt difficult to ſettle in ſuch a manner, as to attain the end without deſtroying induſtry. The convents formerly were a ſupport to the poor; but at the ſame time tended to encourage idleneſs and beggary.

Henry, as he poſſeſſed himſelf ſome talents for letters, was an encourager of them in others. He founded Trinity college in Cambridge, and gave it very ample endowments. Wolſey founded Chriſt Church in Oxford, and intended to call it Cardinal college: But upon his fall, which happened before he had entirely finiſhed his ſcheme, the King ſeized all the revenues; and this violence, above all the other misfortunes of that great miniſter, is ſaid to have given him the greateſt anxiety and concern ‖. But Henry afterwards reſtored the revenues of the college, and only changed the name. The cardinal founded in Oxford the firſt chair for teaching Greek; and this novelty rent that univerſity into the moſt violent factions, which frequently came to blows. The ſtudents divided themſelves into parties, which bore the names of Greeks and Trojans, and ſometimes fought with as great animoſity as was formerly exerciſed by thoſe hoſtile nations. A new and more correct method of pronouncing Greek being introduced into the univerſities, it divided alſo the Grecians themſelves into parties; and it was remarked that the catholics favoured the former pronunciation, the proteſtants gave countenance to the new. Gardiner employed the authority of the King and Council to ſuppreſs innovations in this particular, and to preſerve the old ſound to the greek alphabet. The riſe of the Greek language in Oxford, excited the emulation of Cambridge **. Wolſey intended to have enriched the library of his college at Oxford, with copies of all the manuſcripts that were in the Vatican ††. The countenance given to letters by this King and his miniſters,

* 25 Hen. VIII. c. 13. † Ibid. ‡ 37 Hen. VIII. c. 9. § 22 Hen. VIII. c. 12. 22 Hen. VIII. c. 5. ‖ Strype, vol. i. p. 117. ** Wood's hiſt. & ant. Oxon. lib. I. p. 245. †† Ibid. 249.

contri-

Chap. VII. 1547. contributed to render learning fashionable in England; and Erasmus speaks with great satisfaction of the general regard paid by the nobility and gentry of that kingdom to men of knowledge *. It is needless to be particular in mentioning the writers of this reign, or of the preceeding. There is no man in that age, who had the least pretension to be ranked among our classics. Sir Thomas More, tho' he wrote in Latin, seems to come the nearest to that character.

* Epist. ad Banisium. Also epist. p. 368.

THE

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

UNDER THE

HOUSE of TUDOR.

EDWARD VI.

CHAP. I.

State of the regency.——Innovations in the regency.——Somerset protector.——Reformation compleated.——Gardiner's oppoſition.——Foreign affairs.——Progreſs of the reformation in Scotland.——Aſſaſſination of cardinal Beaton.——Conduct of the war with Scotland.——Battle of Pinkey.——A Parliament.——Farther progreſs of the reformation.——Affairs of Scotland.——Young Queen of Scots ſent into France.——Cabals of Lord Seymour.——Dudley earl of Warwick.——A Parliament.——Attainder of Lord Seymour.——His execution.——Eccleſiaſtical affairs.

THE late King, by the regulations, which he impoſed on the government of his infant ſon, as well as by the limitations of the ſucceſſion, had projected to reign even after his deceaſe; and he imagined, that his miniſters, who had always been ſo obſequious to him during his life-time, would never afterwards depart from the plan which he had traced out to them. He fixed the majority of the Prince at the completion of his eighteenth year; and as Edward was at preſent only a few months paſt nine, he appointed ſixteen executors; to whom, during the minority, he entruſted the go- 1547. State of the regency.

Chap. I. 1547.

vernment of the King and kingdom. Their names were Cranmer, archbiſhop of Canterbury; lord Wriotheſely, chancellor; lord St. John, great maſter; lord Ruſſel, privy ſeal; the earl of Hertford, chamberlain; viſcount Liſle, admiral; Tonſtal, biſhop of Durham; Sir Anthony Brown, maſter of horſe; Sir William Paget, ſecretary of ſtate: Sir Edward North, chancellor of the court of augmentations; Sir Edward Montague, chief juſtice of the common pleas; judge Bromley, Sir Anthony Denny, and Sir William Herbert, chief gentleman of the privy chamber; Sir Edward Wotton, treaſurer of Calais; Dr. Wotton, dean of Canterbury. To theſe ſixteen executors, with whom was entruſted the whole regal authority, were added twelve counſellors, who poſſeſſed no immediate power, and could only aſſiſt with their advice, when any affair was laid before them. The council was compoſed of the Earls of Arundel and Eſſex; Sir Thomas Cheyney, treaſurer of the houſehold; Sir John Gage comptroller; Sir Anthony Wingfield, vice chamberlain; Sir William Petre, ſecretary of ſtate; Sir Richard Rich, Sir John Baker, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Thomas Seymour, Sir Richard Southwel, and Sir Edmund Peckham*. The uſual caprice of Henry appears ſomewhat in this nomination; while he appointed ſeveral perſons of inferior ſtation among his executors, and gave only the place of counſellor to a perſon of ſuch high rank as the earl of Arundel, and to Sir Thomas Seymour, the King's uncle.

Innovations in the regency.

BUT the firſt act of the executors and counſellors was to depart from the deſtination of the late King in a material article. No ſooner were they met, than it was ſuggeſted, that the government would loſe its dignity, for want of ſome head, who might repreſent the royal majeſty, who might receive addreſſes from foreign ambaſſadors, to whom diſpatches from Engliſh miniſters abroad might be carried, and whoſe name might be employed in all orders and proclamations: And as the king's will ſeemed to labour under a defect in this particular, it was concluded neceſſary to ſupply it by chuſing a protector: who, tho' he ſhould poſſeſs all the exterior ſymbols of royal dignity, ſhould yet be bound, in every exerciſe of power, to follow the opinion of the executors †. This propoſal was very diſagreeable to chancellor Wriotheſely. That magiſtrate, a man of an active ſpirit and high ambition, found himſelf, by his office, entitled to the firſt rank in the regency after the primate: and, as he knew that that prelate had no talent nor inclination for ſtate affairs, he hoped, that the direction of public buſineſs would of courſe devolve in a great meaſure upon himſelf. He oppoſed, therefore, this propoſal of chuſing a protector; and repreſented that innovation as an infringement of the King's will, which, being corroborated by act of parliament, ought

* Strype's Memor. vol. ii. p. 457. † Burnet, vol. ii. p. 5.

in

Chap. I. 1547.

in every thing to be a law to them, and could not be altered but by the ſame authority, which had eſtabliſhed it. The executors and counſellors were moſtly courtiers, who had been raiſed by Henry's favour, not men of high birth or great dependances; and as they had been ſufficiently accuſtomed to ſubmiſſion during the reign of the late monarch, and had no pretenſions to govern the nation by their own authority, they acquieſced the more willingly in a propoſal, which ſeemed calculated for preſerving public peace and tranquillity. It being therefore agreed to name a protector, the choice fell of courſe on the earl of Hartford, who, as he was the King's maternal uncle, was ſtrongly intereſted in his ſafety; and having no claims to inherit the crown, could never have any ſeparate intereſt, which might engage him to endanger Edward's perſon or his authority *. The public were informed by proclamation of this change in the adminiſtration; and diſpatches were ſent to all foreign courts to give them intimation of it. All thoſe poſſeſſed of any office, reſigned their former commiſſions, and took out new ones in the name of the young King. The biſhops themſelves were conſtrained to make a like ſubmiſſion. Care was taken to inſert in their new commiſſions, that they held their office during pleaſure †: And it is there expreſly affirmed, that all manner of authority and juriſdiction, as well eccleſiaſtical as civil, is originally derived from the crown ‡.

Somerſet protector.

The executors ſhowed in their next meaſure, a more ſubmiſſive deference to Henry's will: becauſe many of them found their own account in it. The late King had intended, before his death, to make a new creation of nobility, in order to ſupply the place of thoſe who had fallen by former attainders, or the failure of iſſue; and that he might enable the perſons to ſupport their new dignity, he had reſolved either to beſtow eſtates on them, or advance them to higher offices. He had even gone ſo far as to inform them of this reſolution; and in his will, he charged his executors to make good all his promiſes §. That they might aſcertain his intentions in the moſt authentic manner, Sir William Paget, Sir Anthony Denny, and Sir William Herbert, with whom Henry had always converſed in a familiar manner, were called before the board of regency: and having given evidence of what they knew concerning the King's promiſes, their teſtimony was relied on, and the executors proceeded to the fulfilling theſe engagements. Hartford was created duke of Somerſet, marſchal and lord treaſurer; Wriotheſely, earl of Southampton; the earl of Eſſex, marquiſs of Northampton; viſcount Liſle, earl of Warwick; Sir Thomas Seymour, lord Seymour of Sudley,

17th of February.

* Heylin, Hiſt. Ref. Edw. VI. † Collier, vol. ii. p. 218. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 6. Strype's Mem. of Cranm. p. 141. ‡ Strype's Mem. of Cranm. p. 141. § Fuller, Heylin, and Rymer.

Chap. I. 1547.

ley, and admiral: Sir Richard Rich, Sir William Willoughby, Sir Edward Sheffield, accepted the title of baron *: Several, to whom the ſame dignity was offered, refuſed it; becauſe the other part of the King's promiſe, the beſtowing eſtates on theſe new noblemen, was deferred till a more convenient opportunity. Some of them, however, particularly Somerſet the protector, were, in the mean time, endowed with ſpiritual preferments, deaneries and prebends. For, among many other invaſions of eccleſiaſtical privileges and properties, this irregular practice, of beſtowing ſpiritual benefices on laymen, began now to prevail.

THE earl of Southampton had always been engaged in an oppoſite party to Somerſet; and it was not likely that factions, which had ſecretly prevailed, even during the arbitrary reign of Henry, ſhould be ſuppreſſed in the weak adminiſtration, which uſually attends a minority. The former nobleman, that he might have the greater leiſure for attending to ſtate-affairs, had, of himſelf, and from his own authority, put the great ſeal in commiſſion, and had impowered four lawyers, Southwel, Tregonel, Oliver, and Bellaſis, to execute in his abſence, the office of chancellor. This meaſure ſeems very exceptionable; and the more ſo, as two of the commiſſioners being canoniſts, the lawyers ſuſpected, that, by this nomination, the chancellor had intended to diſcredit the common law. Complaints were made to the council; who, influenced by the protector, gladly laid hold of this opportunity to depreſs Southampton. They conſulted the judges with regard to ſo unuſual a caſe, and received for anſwer, that the commiſſion was illegal, and that the chancellor, by his preſumption in granting it, had juſtly forfeited the ſeals, and was even liable to puniſhment. The council ſummoned him to appear before them; and tho' he maintained, that he held his office by the late King's will, founded on an act of parliament, and could not loſe it without a trial before the Parliament; that if the commiſſion, which he had granted, was found illegal, it might be declared null and void, and all the ill conſequences of it be eaſily remedied; and that the depriving him of the ſeals for an error of this nature, was a precedent by which any other innovation might be authorized; the council, notwithſtanding all theſe topics of defence, declared that he had forfeited his office; that a fine ſhould be impoſed upon him; and that he ſhould be confined to his own houſe during pleaſure †.

THO' the removal of Southampton increaſed the protector's authority, as well as tended to ſuppreſs factions in the regency: yet was not Somerſet contented with this advantage: His ambition carried him to ſeek ſtill farther acquiſitions. On pretence, that the vote of the executors, chuſing him protector, was not a ſuffi-

* Stowe's Annals, p. 594. † Hollingſhed, p. 979.

cient

cient foundation for his authority, he procured a patent from the young King, by which he intirely overturned the will of Harry the eighth, produced a total revolution in the government, and may ſeem even to have ſubverted all the laws of the kingdom. He named himſelf protector with full regal power, and appointed a council, conſiſting of all the former counſellors, and all the executors except Southampton: He reſerved a power of naming any other counſellors at pleaſure: And he was bound to conſult with ſuch only as he thought proper. The protector and his council were likewiſe impowered to act at diſcretion, and to execute whatever they thought ſerviceable to the government, without incurring any penalty or forfeiture from any law, ſtatute, proclamation, or ordinance whatſoever *. Even had this patent been leſs exorbitant in its conceſſions, and had it been drawn by directions from the executors appointed by Henry, its legality might juſtly be queſtioned; ſince it ſeems eſſential to a truſt of this nature to be exerciſed by the perſons intruſted, and not to admit of a delegation to others: But as the patent, by its very tenor, where the executors are not ſo much as mentioned, appears to have been ſurreptitiouſly obtained from a minor King, the protectorſhip of Somerſet was a plain uſurpation, which it is impoſſible by any arguments to juſtify. The connivance, however, of the executors, and their preſent acquieſcence in the new eſtabliſhment, made it be univerſally ſubmitted to; and as the young King diſcovered an extreme attachment to his uncle, who was alſo, in the main, a man of moderation and probity, no objections were made to his power and title. All men of ſenſe, likewiſe, who ſaw the nation divided by the religious zeal of the oppoſite ſects, thought it the more neceſſary to intruſt the government to one perſon, who might check the exorbitancies of party, and inſure the public tranquillity. And tho' ſome clauſes of the patent ſeemed to imply a formal ſubverſion of all liberty or limited government, ſo little jealouſy was then uſually entertained on that head, that no exception was ever taken at bare claims or pretenſions of this nature, advanced by any perſon poſſeſſed of ſovereign power. The actual exerciſe alone of arbitrary adminiſtration, and that in many and great and flagrant and unpopular inſtances, was able ſometimes to give ſome umbrage to the nation.

Chap. I. 1547. 12 March.

THE extenſive authority and imperious character of Henry, had retained the partizans of both religions in ſubjection; but upon his deceaſe, the hopes of the proteſtants, and the fears of the catholics began to revive, and the zeal of theſe parties produced every where diſputes and animoſities, the uſual preludes of more fatal diviſions. The protector had long been regarded as the ſecret partizan of the reformers; and being now freed from reſtraint, he ſcrupled not to expreſs his in-

Reformation compleated.

* Burnet, vol. ii. Records, N°. 6.

tention

Chap. I. 1547.

tention of correcting all the abuſes of the ancient religion, and of adopting ſtill more of the proteſtant innovations. He took care, that all the perſons, to whom he intruſted the King's education, ſhould be attached to the ſame principles; and as the young Prince diſcovered a zeal for every kind of literature, eſpecially the theological, far beyond his tender years, all men foreſaw, in the courſe of his reign, the total abolition of the catholic faith; and they early began to declare themſelves in favour of thoſe tenets, which were likely to become in the end entirely prevalent. After Southampton's fall, few members of the council ſeemed to retain any attachment to the Romiſh communion; and moſt of the counſellors appeared even ſanguine in forwarding the progreſs of the reformation. The riches which moſt of them had acquired from the ſpoils of the clergy, induced them to widen the breach between England and Rome; and by eſtabliſhing a contrariety of ſpeculative tenets, as well as of diſcipline and worſhip, to render a coalition with the mother church altogether impracticable *. Their rapacity alſo, the chief ſource of their reforming ſpirit, was excited by the proſpect of pillaging the ſecular, as they had already done the regular clergy; and they knew, that, while any ſhare of the old principles remained, or any regard to the eccleſiaſtics, they never could hope to ſucceed in their pretenſions.

THE numerous and burthenſome ſuperſtitions, with which the Romiſh church was loaded, had thrown many of the reformers, by the ſpirit of oppoſition, into an enthuſiaſtic ſtrain of devotion; and all rites, ceremonies, pomp, order, and exterior obſervances were zealouſly aboliſhed by them, as hindrances of their ſpiritual contemplations, and obſtructions to their immediate converſe with heaven. Many circumſtances concurred to inflame this daring ſpirit; the novelty itſelf of their doctrines, the triumph of making proſelytes, the furious perſecutions to which they were expoſed, their animoſity againſt the antient tenets and practices, and the neceſſity of procuring the concurrence of the laity, by depreſſing the hierarchy, and by tendering to them the plunder of the eccleſiaſtics. Wherever the reformation prevailed over the oppoſition of civil authority, this genius of religion appeared in its full extent, and was attended with conſequences, which, tho' leſs durable, were, for ſome time, no leſs dangerous than thoſe which were connected with the ancient ſuperſtition. But as the magiſtrate took the lead in England, the tranſition was more gradual; much of the ancient religion was ſtill preſerved; and a reaſonable degree of ſubordination was retained in diſcipline, as well as ſome pomp, order, and ceremony in public worſhip.

THE protector, in his ſchemes for advancing the reformation, had always recourſe to the councils of Cranmer, who, being a man of moderation and pru-

* Goodwin's Annals, Heylin.

dence,

dence, was averſe to all violent changes, and determined to bring over the people, by inſenſible innovations, to that ſyſtem of doctrine and diſcipline, which he deemed the moſt pure and perfect. He probably alſo foreſaw, that a ſyſtem, which carefully avoided the extremes of reformation, was likely to be moſt laſting; and that a devotion, merely ſpiritual, was fitted only for the firſt fervours of a new ſect, and upon the relaxation of theſe naturally gave place to the inroads of ſuperſtition. He ſeems therefore to have intended the eſtabliſhment of a hierarchy, which, being ſuited to a great and ſettled government, might ſtand as a perpetual barrier againſt Rome, and might retain the reverence of the people, even after their enthuſiaſtic zeal was diminiſhed or entirely evaporated. Chap. I. 1547.

THE perſon, who oppoſed, with greateſt authority, any farther advances towards reformation, was Gardiner, biſhop of Wincheſter, who, tho' he had not obtained a place in the counſel of regency, on account of ſome late diſguſts, which he had given to Henry, was entitled, by his age, experience, and capacity, to the higheſt truſt and confidence of his party. This prelate continued ſtill to magnify the great wiſdom and learning of the late King, which were generally and ſincerely admired by the nation; and he inſiſted on the prudence of perſevering, at leaſt till the young King's majority, in the eccleſiaſtical model, eſtabliſhed by that great monarch. He defended the uſe of images, which were now very openly attacked by the proteſtants; and he repreſented them as ſerviceable in maintaining a ſenſe of religion among the illiterate multitude *. He even deigned to write an apology for *holy water*, which biſhop Ridley had decried in a ſermon; and he maintained, that, by the power of the Almighty, it might be rendered an inſtrument of doing good; as much as the ſhadow of St. Peter, the hem of our Saviour's garment, or the ſpittle and clay laid upon the eyes of the blind †. Above all, he inſiſted, that the laws ought to be obſerved, that the conſtitution ought to be preſerved inviolate, and that it was dangerous to follow the will of the ſovereign, in oppoſition to an act of parliament ‡. Gardiner's oppoſition.

BUT tho' there remained at that time in England an idea of laws and a conſtitution, ſufficient at leaſt to furniſh a topic of argument to ſuch as were diſcontented with the preſent exerciſe of authority; this plea could ſcarcely, in the preſent caſe, be maintained with any plauſibility by Gardiner. An act of parliament had inveſted the crown with a legiſlative power; and royal proclamations, even during a minority, were armed with the force and authority of laws. The protector, finding himſelf ſupported by this ſtatute, was determined to employ his influence in favour of the reformers; and having ſuſpended, during the interval, the authority of the biſhops, he appointed a general viſitation to be

* Fox, vol. ii. p. 712. † Fox, vol. ii. p. 724. ‡ Collier, vol. ii. p. 228. Fox, vol. ii.

Chap. I. 1547. made in all the dioceſes of England *. The viſitors conſiſed of a mixture of clergy and laity, and had ſix circuits aſſigned them. The chief purpoſe of their inſtructions was, beſides correcting immoralities and irregulaities in the clergy, to aboliſh the antient ſuperſtitions, and to bring the diſciplineand worſhip ſomewhat nearer the practice of the reformed churches. The moderation of Somerſet and Cranmer is apparent in the conduct of this delicate affir. The viſitors were enjoined to retain for the preſent all images which had notbeen abuſed to idolatry; and to inſtruct the people not to deſpiſe ſuch ceremonies as were not yet abrogated, but only to beware of ſome particular ſuperſtitions, ſuch as the ſprinkling their beds with holy water, the ringing of bells, or uſing of bleſſed candles, in order to drive away the devil †.

BUT nothing required more the correcting hand of authority than the abuſe of preaching, which was now generally employed, throughout England, in defending the antient practices and ſuperſtitions. The court of augmentations, in order to eaſe the King of the annuities paid to monks, had commonly placed them in the vacant churches; and theſe men were led by intereſt, aswell as inclination, to ſupport thoſe principles, which had been invented for the profit of the clergy. Orders therefore were given to reſtrain the topics of their ſermons: Twelve homilies were publiſhed, which they were enjoined to read to the people: And all of them were prohibited, without expreſs permiſſion, to preach any where but in their pariſh churches. The deſign of this injunction was to throw a reſtraint on the catholic divines; while the proteſtant, by the grant of particular licences, ſhould be allowed unbounded liberty.

BONNER made ſome oppoſition to theſe meaſures; but ſoon after retracted and acquieſced. Gardiner was more high-ſpirited and more ready. He repreſented the peril of perpetual innovations, and the neceſſity of adhering to ſome ſyſtem. "'Tis a dangerous thing," ſaid he, "to uſe too much freedom, in "reſearches of this kind. If you cut the old canal, the water is apt to run fur"ther than you have a mind to. If you indulge the humour of novelty, you "cannot put a ſtop to people's demands, nor govern their indiſcretions at plea"ſure. For my part," ſaid he, on another occaſion, "my ſole concern is to "manage the third and laſt act of my life with decency, and to make a hand"ſome exit off the ſtage. Provided this point is ſecured, I am not ſolicitous "about the reſt. I am already by nature condemned to death: No man can "give me a pardon from this ſentence; nor ſo much as procure me a reprieve. "To ſpeak my mind, and to act as my conſcience directs, are two branches of "liberty, which I can never part with. Sincerity in ſpeech, and integrity in

* Mem. Cranm. p. 146, 147, &c. † Burnet, vol. ii. p. 28.

"action,

" action, are entertaining qualities: They will ſtick by a man, when every thing " elſe takes its leave; and I muſt not reſign them upon any conſideration. The " beſt on it is, if I do not throw them away myſelf, no man can force them from " me: But if I give them up, then am I ruined by myſelf, and deſerve to loſe " all my preferments *." This oppoſition of Gardiner drew on him the indignation of the council; and he was ſent to the Fleet, where he was uſed with ſome harſhneſs and ſeverity. Chap. I. 1547.

ONE of the chief objections, urged by Gardiner againſt the new homilies, was that they defined with the moſt metaphyſical preciſion the doctrine of grace, and of juſtification by faith; points, he thought, which it was ſuperfluous for any man to know exactly, and which certainly much exceeded the comprehenſion of the vulgar. A famous martyrologiſt calls Gardiner, on account of this opinion, " an in- " ſenſible aſs, and one that had no feeling of God's ſpirit in the matter of juſtifi- " cation †." The meaneſt proteſtant imagined at that time, that he had a full comprehenſion of all thoſe myſterious doctrines, and he heartily deſpiſed the moſt learned and knowing perſon of the antient religion, who acknowledged his ignorance with regard to them. It is indeed certain, that the reformers were very fortunate in their doctrine of juſtification, and might venture to expect its ſucceſs, in oppoſition to all the ceremonies, ſhows, and ſuperſtitions of popery. By exalting Chriſt and his ſufferings, and renouncing all claim to independent merit in ourſelves, it was calculated to become popular, and coincided with thoſe principles of panegyric and of ſelf-abaſement, which generally have place in religion.

TONSTAL, biſhop of Durham, having, as well as Gardiner, made ſome oppoſition to the new regulations, was diſmiſſed the council-board; but no farther ſeverity was, for the preſent, exerciſed againſt him. He was a man of perfect moderation, and of the moſt unexceptionable character in the kingdom.

THE ſame religious zeal which engaged Somerſet to promote the reformation at home, led him to carry his attention to foreign countries; where the intereſts of the proteſtants were now expoſed to the moſt imminent danger. The Roman pontiff, with much reluctance and after long delays, had at laſt ſummoned a general council, which was aſſembled at Trent, and was employed in correcting the abuſes of the church, and in aſcertaining her doctrines. The emperor, who deſired to repreſs the power of the court of Rome, as well as gain over the proteſtants, promoted the former object of the council; the pope, who found his own greatneſs ſo deeply intereſted, deſired rather to employ them in the latter. He Foreign affairs.

* Collier, vol. ii. p 228. ex MS. Col. C. C. Cantab. Bibliotheca Britannica, article GARDINER.
† Fox, vol. ii.

Chap. I. 1547. gave inſtructions to his legates, who preſided in the council, toprotract the debates, and to engage the theologians in altercations, and arguments, and diſputes concerning the nice points of faith, canvaſſed before them: A policy, which was ſo eaſy to be executed, that the legates found it rather neceſſary to interpoſe, in order to appeaſe the animoſity of the divines, and bring them a laſt to ſome deciſion *. The more difficult taſk for the legates was to moderateor divert the zeal of the council for reformation, and to repreſs the ambition of he prelates, who deſired to exalt the epiſcopal authority on the ruins of the ſovereign pontiff. Finding this humour become intractable, the legates, on pretence tht the plague had broke out at Trent, transferred of a ſudden the council to Bologna, where, they hoped, it would be more under the direction of his holineſs.

THE emperor, no leſs than the pope, had learned to make religion ſubſervient to his ambition and policy. He was reſolved to employ the imputation of hereſy as a pretence for ſubduing the proteſtant princes, and oppreſſing the liberties of Germany; but found it requiſite to cover his intentions undr a deep artifice, and to prevent the combination of his adverſaries. He ſeparated the Palatine and the elector of Brandenburgh from the proteſtant confederacy: He took arms againſt the elector of Saxony, and the landgrave of Heſſe: By the fortune of war he made the former priſoner: He employed treachery and prevarication againſt the latter, and detained him captive, by breaking a ſafe-conduct which he had granted him. He ſeemed to have reached the ſummitof his ambition; and the German princes, who were aſtoniſhed with his ſucceſs, were farther diſcouraged by the intelligence, which they had received, of the death firſt of Henry the eighth, then of Francis the firſt, their uſual reſources in every calalamity †.

HENRY the ſecond, who ſucceeded to the crown of France, was a prince of vigour and ability; but leſs prompt in his reſolutions than Francis, and leſs enflamed with rivalſhip and animoſity againſt the emperor, Charles. Tho' he ſent ambaſſadors to the princes of the Smalcaldic League, and promiſed them his protection, he was unwilling, in the commencement of his reign, to hurry into a war againſt ſo great a power as that of the empero, and he thought that the alliance of theſe princes was a ſure reſource, which hecould at any time lay hold of ‡. He was much governed by the duke of Guiſe and the cardinal of Lorraine, brothers to the Queen dowager of Scotland, and he hearkened to their counſel, in chuſing rather to give immediate aſſiſtance to that ancient ally, which, even before the death of Henry the eighth, had loudly claimed the protection of the French monarchy.

* Father Paul, lib. 2. † Sleidan. ‡ Pere Daniel.

THE

Chap. I. 1547.

Progreſs of the Reformation in Scotland.

THE hatred between the two factions, the partizans of the antient and thoſe of the new religion, became every day more violent in Scotland; and the reſolution, which he cardinal primate had taken to employ the moſt rigorous puniſhments againſt the reformers, brought matters to a quick deciſion. There was one Wiſhart, a gentleman by birth, who employed himſelf with great zeal in preaching againſt theantient ſuperſtitions, and began to give alarm to the clergy, who were juſtly terified with the danger of ſome fatal revolution in religion. This man was much celebrated for the purity of his morals, and for his extenſive learning: But heſe praiſes cannot be much depended on; becauſe, we know, that, among the reformers, ſeverity of manners ſtood in place of many virtues; and the age was in genral ſo ignorant, that moſt of the prieſts in Scotland imagined the New Teſtament to be a compoſition of Luther's, and aſſerted that the Old alone was the word of God *. But however the caſe may have been with regard to thoſe eſtimable qualities aſcribed to Wiſhart, he was ſtrongly poſſeſſed with a deſire of innovation; and he enjoyed thoſe talents, which qualified him for becoming a popular preacher, and for ſeizing the attention and affections of the multitude. The magiſtrates of Dundee, where he exerciſed his miſſion, were alarmed with his progreſs; and being unable or unwilling to treat him with rigour, they contented themſelves with denying him the liberty of preaching, and with diſmiſſinghim the bounds of their juriſdiction. Wiſhart, moved with indignation, that thy had dared to reject the word of God, menaced them, in imitation of the antent prophets, with ſome imminent calamity; and he withdrew to the weſt country, where he daily increaſed the number of his proſelytes. Meanwhile, a plague broke out in Dundee; and all men exclaimed, that the town had drawn down the vengeance of Heaven by baniſhing the pious preacher, and that the peſtilence would never ceaſe till they had made him attonement for their

* Spotſwood, p75. The ſame author, p. 92, tells us a ſtory, which confirms this character of the popiſh clergy in Scotland. It became a great diſpute in the univerſity of St. Andrews, whether the *pater* ſhould be ſaid to God or the ſaints. The friars, who knew in general that the reformers neglected the ſaints, were deterrined to maintain their honour with great obſtinacy, but they knew not upon what topics to found ther doctrine. Some held that the *pater* was ſaid to God *formaliter*, and to ſaints *materialiter*; others, to God *principaliter*, and to ſaints *minus principaliter*; others would have it *ultimate* and *non ultimate*: but the majority ſeemed to hold, that the *pater* was ſaid to God *capiendo ſtricte*, and to ſaints *capiendo large*. A ſimple fellow, who ſerved the ſub-prior, thinking there was ſome great matter in hand, tht made the doctors hold ſo many conferences together, aſked him one day what the matter was; th ſub-prior anſwering, *Tom*, that was the fellow's name, *we cannot agree to whom the pater-noſter ſhould b ſaid.* He ſuddenly replied, *To whom, Sir, ſhould it be ſaid, but unto God?* Then ſaid the ſub-prior *what ſhall we do with the ſaints?* He anſwered, *Give them Aves and Creeds enow in the devil' name; for that may ſuffice them.* The anſwer going abroad, many ſaid, *that he had given a wiſer eciſion than all the doctors had done with all their diſtinctions.*

Chap. I. 1547. offence againſt him. No ſooner did Wiſhart hear of this change in their diſpoſition, than he returned to them, and made them a new tender of his doctrine: But leſt he ſhould ſpread the contagion by bringing multitudes together, he erected his pulpit on the top of a gate: The infected ſtood within; the others without. And the preacher failed not, in ſuch a ſituation, to take advantage of the immediate terrors of the people, and to enforce his evangelical miſſion †.

THE aſſiduity and ſucceſs of Wiſhart became an object of attention to cardinal Beaton; and he reſolved, by the puniſhment of ſo celebrated a preacher, to ſtrike a terror into all other innovators. He engaged the earl of Bothwel to arreſt him in his retirement; and to deliver him into his hands, contrary to a promiſe given by Bothwel to that unhappy man: And being poſſeſſed of his prey, he conducted him to St. Andrews, where, after a trial, he condemned him to the flames for hereſy. Arran, the regent, was very irreſolute in his temper; and the cardinal, though he had gained him to his party, found that he would not concur in the condemnation and execution of Wiſhart. He determined therefore, without the aſſiſtance of the ſecular arm, to bring that heretic to puniſhment; and he himſelf beheld from his windows the diſmal ſpectacle. Wiſhart ſuffered with the uſual patience; but could not forbear remarking the triumph of his inſulting enemy. He foretold, that in a few days he would in the very ſame place lie as low, as now he was exalted aloft, in oppoſition to true piety and religion ‡.

THIS propheſy was probably the immediate cauſe of the event which it foretold. The diſciples of this martyr, enraged at the cruel execution, formed a conſpiracy againſt the cardinal; and having aſſociated to them Norman Leſly, who was diſguſted on account of ſome private quarrel, they conducted their enterprize with great ſecrecy and ſucceſs. Early in the morning they entered the cardinal's palace, which he had ſtrongly fortified; and though they were not above ſixteen perſons, they thruſt out an hundred tradeſmen and fifty ſervants, whom they ſeized ſeparately, before any ſuſpicion aroſe of their intentions; and having ſhut the gates, they proceeded very deliberately to execute their purpoſe on the cardinal. That prelate had been alarmed with the noiſe which he heard in the caſtle; and had barricadoe'd the door of his chamber: But finding that they had brought fire in order to force their way, and having obtained, as is believed, a promiſe of life, he opened the door; and reminding them, that he was a prieſt, he conjured them to ſpare him. Two of the aſſaſſins ruſhed upon him with drawn ſwords; but a third, James Melvil, more calm and more conſiderate in

Aſſaſſination of cardinal Beaton.

† Knox's Hiſt. of Ref. p. 44. Spotſwood. ‡ Spotſwood, Buchanan.

villany,

villany, ſtopped their career, and bid them reflect, that this ſacrifice was the work and judgment of God, and ought to be executed with the utmoſt deliberation and gravity. Then turning the point of his ſword towards Beaton, he called to him, "Repent thee, thou wicked cardinal, of all thy ſins and iniquities, but "eſpecially of the murder of Wiſhart, that inſtrument of God for the conver- "ſion of theſe lands: It is his death, which now cries vengeance upon thee: We "are ſent by God to inflict the deſerved puniſhment. For here, before the Al- "mighty, I proteſt, that it is neither hatred of thy perſon, nor love of thy "riches, nor fear of thy power, which moves me to ſeek thy death: But only "becauſe thou haſt been, and ſtill remaineſt, an obſtinate enemy to Chriſt Jeſus, "and his holy goſpel." Having ſpoke theſe words, without giving him leiſure to finiſh that repentance, to which he exhorted him, he thruſt him thro' the body; and the cardinal fell dead at his feet *. This murther was executed on the 28th of May 1546. The aſſaſſins being reinforced by their friends to the number of an hundred and forty perſons, prepared themſelves for the defence of the caſtle, and ſent a meſſenger to London, craving aſſiſtance from Henry. That prince, tho' Scotland was comprehended in his peace with France, would not reject this opportunity of diſturbing the government of that kingdom; and he agreed to take them under his protection. Chap. I. 1547.

It was the peculiar misfortune of Scotland, that five ſhort reigns had been ſucceſſively followed by as many long minorities; and the execution of juſtice, which the prince was beginning to introduce, had been continually interrupted by the cabals, factions, and animoſities of the great. But beſides theſe inveterate and ancient evils, a new ſource of diſorder had ariſen, the diſputes and contentions of theology, which were ſufficient to diſturb the moſt ſettled government; and the death of the cardinal, who was poſſeſſed of ability and vigour, ſeemed much to weaken the hands of the adminiſtration. But the Queen dowager was a woman of uncommon talents and virtues; and ſhe did as much to ſupport the government, and ſupply the weakneſs of Arran, the governor, as could be expected in her ſituation. A ſtipulation was made with the garriſon of St. Andrews, that they ſhould ſurrender the caſtle upon receiving a pardon, together with an abſolution from the pope; and that they ſhould never afterwards be

* The famous Scots reformer, John Knox, calls James Melvil, p. 65, a man moſt gentle, and moſt modeſt. It is very horrid, but at the ſame time, ſomewhat amuſing, to conſider the joy and alacrity and pleaſure, which that hiſtorian diſcovers in his narration of this aſſaſſination: And it is remarkable, that in the firſt edition of his work, theſe words were printed on the margin of the page, *The godly Fact and Words of James Melvil.* But the following editors retrenched them. Knox himſelf had no hand in the murder of Beaton; but he afterwards joined the aſſaſſins, and aſſiſted them in holding out the caſtle. See Keith's Hiſt. of the Ref. of Scotland, p. 43.

Chap. I. 1547. called in queſtion for Beaton's aſſaſination. Meanwhile, till the pope's abſolution ſhould arrive, ſhe applied to France for ſuccours; and Henry ſent her ſome gallies, with a train of artillery, commanded by Strozzi, prior of Capua. Before the ſiege of St. Andrews was opened, the abſolution was ſent to the garriſon, and they were required to ſurrender; but becauſe the pope, among other exaggerations of the cardinal's murder, had ſaid, that he pardoned an unpardonable crime, the garriſon, fearing that this expreſſion was employed in order to enſnare them, refuſed to open their gates*. They were, however, ſoon obliged to depart from their obſtinacy: A great breach was made in the walls: The plague broke out among them: And ſeeing no hopes of ſuccour from England, they ſurrendered to the French upon conditions, which werenot very ſcrupulouſly obſerved to them.

Conduct of the war with Scotland.

THE protector of England, ſo ſoon as the government was brought to ſome compoſure, made preparations for the attack of Scotland; and he was determined to execute, if poſſible, that project, of uniting the two kingdoms by marriage, on which the late King had been ſo intent, and which he had recommended with his dying breath to his executors. He raiſed an army of 18,000 men, and equipped a fleet of ſixty ſail, one half of which were ſhips of war, the other loaded with proviſions and ammunition. He gave the command of the fleet to lord Clinton: He himſelf marched atthe head of the army, attended by the earl of Warwic. Theſe hoſtile meaſures were covered with a pretence of revenging ſome depredations committed by the borderers; but beſides, that the protector revived the ancient claim of the ſuperiority of the Engliſh crown over that of Scotland, he refuſed to enter into negotiation on any other conditions than the marriage of the young Queen with Edward.

THE protector publiſhed a manifeſto, in which he inforced all the arguments for that meaſure. He ſaid, that nature ſeemed originally to have intended this iſland for one empire; and having cut it off from all communication with foreign ſtates, and guarded it by the ocean, ſhe had pointed out to the inhabitants the road to happineſs and ſecurity: That the education and cuſtoms of the people concurred with nature; and by giving them the ſame language, and laws, and manners, had invited them to a thorough union and coalition: That fortune had at laſt removed all obſtacles, and had prepared an expedient, by which they might become one people, without leaving any place for that jealouſy, either of honour or of intereſt, to which rival nations are naturally ſo much expoſed: That the crown of Scotland had devolvedto a female; that of England to a male; and happily, the two ſovereigns, as of rank, were alſo of an age, the moſt ſuitable to

* Knox, p. 75. Spotſwood, Buchanan.

each

each other: That the hoſtile diſpoſition, which prevailed between the nations, and which aroſe from paſt injuries, would ſoon be extinguiſhed, after a long and ſecure peace had eſtabliſhed confidence between them: That the memory of former miſeries, which at preſent inflamed their mutual animoſity, would then ſerve only to make them cheriſh, with more paſſion, a ſtate of happineſs and tranquillity, ſo long unknown to their anceſtors: That, when hoſtilities had ceaſed between the kingdoms, the Scots nobility, who were at preſent obliged to remain perpetually in a warlike poſture, would learn to cultivate the arts of peace, and would ſoften their minds to a love of domeſtic order and obedience: That as this ſituation was deſirable to both kingdoms, ſo particularly to Scotland, which had been expoſed to the greateſt miſeries from inteſtine and foreign wars, and ſaw herſelf every moment in danger of loſing her independency, by the efforts of a richer and more powerful people: That tho' England had claims of ſuperiority, ſhe was willing to reſign every pretenſion for the ſake of future peace, and deſired an union, which would be the more ſecure, as it would be concluded on terms intirely equal: And that beſides all theſe motives, poſitive engagements had been taken for the compleating this alliance, and the honour and good faith of the nation were pledged to fulfil what her intereſt and ſafety ſo loudly demanded *. Chap. I. 1547.

SOMERSET ſoon found, that theſe remonſtrances would have no influence; and that the Queen dowager's attachments to France, and to the catholic religion, would render ineffectual all negotiations for the intended marriage. He found himſelf therefore obliged to try the force of arms, and to conſtrain the Scots by neceſſity to ſubmit to a meaſure, for which they ſeemed to have entertained the moſt incurable averſion. He paſſed the borders at Berwic, and advanced towards Edinburgh, without meeting any reſiſtance for ſome days, except from ſome ſmall caſtles, which were conſtrained to ſurrender at diſcretion. The protector intended to have puniſhed the governor and garriſon of one of thoſe caſtles for their temerity in reſiſting ſuch unequal force: But they eluded his anger by aſking only a few hours reſpite till they ſhould prepare themſelves for death; after which they found his ears more open to their applications for mercy †. 2d September.

THE governor of Scotland had ſummoned together the whole force of the kingdom; and his army, double the number of the Engliſh, had taken poſt on very advantageous ground, guarded by the banks of the Eſke, about four miles from Edinburgh. The Engliſh came within ſight of them at Faſide; and after a ſkirmiſh between the horſe, where the Scots were worſted, and lord Hume dangerouſly wounded, Somerſet prepared himſelf for a more deciſive action. But having

* Sir John Hayward in Kenneth, p. 279. Heylin, p. 42.

† Hayward, Patten.

Chap. I. 1547.

having taken a view of the Scots camp with the earl of Warwic, he found it difficult to make any attempt upon it with a probability of ſucceſs. He wrote therefore another letter to Arran; and offered to retire out of the kingdom, as well as to repair all damages which he had committed, provided that the Scots would ſtipulate not to contract the Queen to any foreign prince, but to keep her at home, till ſhe reached the age of chuſing a huſband for herſelf. Such moderate terms were rejected by the Scots, merely on account of their moderation; and they begot an opinion, that the protector muſt either be reduced to great diſtreſs, or be influenced by fear, that he was now contented to abate ſo much of his former pretenſions. Actuated alſo by their prieſts, who had come to the camp in great numbers, they believed that the Engliſh were deteſtable heretics, abhorred of God, and expoſed to divine vengeance; and that no ſucceſs could ever crown their arms. They were confirmed in this fond conceit, when they ſaw the protector change his ground, and move towards the ſea; nor did they any longer doubt that he intended to embark his army, and make his eſcape on board the ſhips, which at that very time moved into the bay oppoſite to him *. Determined therefore to cut off his retreat, they quitted their camp; and paſſing the river Eſke, advanced into the plain. They were divided into three bodies: Angus commanded the vanguard; Arran the main body; Huntley the rear: Their cavalry conſiſted only of light horſe, which were placed on their left flank, ſtrengthened by ſome Iriſh archers, whom Argyle had brought over for this ſervice.

10th September.

SOMERSET was pleaſed when he ſaw this movement of the Scots army; and as the Engliſh had uſually been ſuperior in pitched battles, he conceived great hopes of ſucceſs. He arranged his van on his left, fartheſt from the ſea; and ordered them to remain on the high grounds on which he placed them, till the enemy ſhould approach: He placed his main battle and his rear towards the right; and beyond the van he poſted lord Gray at the head of the men at arms, and ordered him to take the Scots van in flank, but not till they ſhould be engaged in cloſe fight with the van of the Engliſh.

The battle of Pinkey.

WHILE the Scots were advancing on the plain, they were galled with the artillery from the Engliſh ſhips: The maſter of Graham was killed: The Iriſh archers were thrown into diſorder: and even the other troops began to ſtagger: When the lord Gray, perceiving their ſituation, neglected his orders, left his ground, and at the head of his heavy-armed horſe made an attack on the Scots infantry, in hopes of gaining all the honour of the victory. On advancing, he

* Hollingſhed, p. 985.

found

found a ſlough and ditch in his way; and behind were ranged the Scots infantry armed with ſpears, and the field, on which they ſtood, was fallow ground, broken with ridges, which lay croſs their front, and diſordered the movements of the Engliſh cavalry. From all theſe accidents, the ſhock of this body of horſe was feeble and irregular; and as they were received on the points of the Scottiſh ſpears, which were longer than the lances of the Engliſh horſemen, they were in a moment pierced, overthrown and diſcomfited. Gray himſelf was dangerouſly wounded: Lord Edward Seymour, ſon to the protector, loſt his horſe: The ſtandard was near being taken: And had the Scots poſſeſſed any good body of cavalry, who could have purſued the advantage, the whole Engliſh army had been expoſed to great danger *. Chap. I. 1547.

The protector meanwhile, aſſiſted by Sir Ralph Sadler, and Sir Ralph Vane, employed himſelf with diligence and ſucceſs, in rallying the cavalry. Warwic ſhowed great preſence of mind in maintaining the ranks of the foot on which the horſe had recoiled: He made Sir Peter Meutas advance, captain of the foot hackbutters, and Sir Peter Gamboa, captain of ſome Italian and Spaniſh hackbutters on horſeback; and ordered them to ply the Scots infantry with their ſhot. They marched to the ſlough, and diſcharged their pieces full in the face of the enemy: The ſhips galled them from the flank: The artillery, planted on a height, infeſted them from the front: The Engliſh archers poured in a ſhower of arrows upon them: And the vanguard, deſcending from the hill, advanced, leiſurely and orderly, towards them. Diſmayed with all theſe circumſtances, the Scots van began to retreat: The retreat ſoon changed into a flight; which was begun by the Iriſh archers. The panic of the van communicated itſelf to the main body, and paſſing thence to the rear, rendered the whole field a ſcene of confuſion, terror, flight and conſternation. The Engliſh army perceived from the heights the condition of the Scots, and began the purſuit with loud ſhouts and acclamations, which added ſtill more to the diſmay of the vanquiſhed. The horſe in particular, eager to revenge the affront which they had received in the beginning of the day, performed the moſt bloody execution on the flying enemy; and from the field of battle to Edinburgh, for the ſpace of five miles, the whole ground was ſtrowed with dead bodies. The prieſts above all, and the monks received no quarter; and the Engliſh made ſport of ſlaughtering men, who, from their extreme zeal and animoſity, had engaged in an enterprize ſo ill ſuited to their profeſſion. Few victories have been more deciſive, or gained with ſmaller loſs to the conquerors. There fell not two hundred of the Engliſh; and according to the moſt moderate computation, there periſhed above ten thouſand of the Scots. About fifteen hun-

* Patten, Hollingſhed, p. 986.

Chap. I. 1547. dred were taken priſoners. This action was called the battle of Pinkey, from a nobleman's ſeat of that name in the neighbourhood.

The Queen dowager and Arran fled to Stirling, and were ſcarce able to collect ſuch a body of forces as could check the incurſions of ſmall parties of the Engliſh. About the ſame time, the earl of Lenox and lord Wharton entered the Weſt Marches, at the head of five thouſand men, and after taking and plundering Annan, they ſpread devaſtation over all the neighbouring counties *. Had Somerſet proſecuted his advantage, he might have impoſed what terms he pleaſed on the Scots nation: But he was impatient to return to England, where he heard ſome counſellors, and even his own brother, the admiral, were carrying on cabals againſt his authority. Having taken the caſtles of Hume, Dunglaſs, Eymouth, Faſtcaſtle, Roxborough, and ſome other ſmall places; and having received the ſubmiſſion of ſome counties on the borders, he retired out of Scotland. The fleet, beſides deſtroying all the ſhips along the coaſt, took Broughty in the Firth of Tay, and having fortified it, they left there a garriſon. Arran deſired leave to ſend commiſſioners in order to treat of a peace; and Somerſet, having appointed Berwic for the place of meeting, left Warwic with full powers to negociate: But no commiſſioners from Scotland ever appeared. The overture of the Scots was an artifice, to gain time, till ſuccours ſhould arrive from France.

4 November.

The protector, on his arrival in England, ſummoned a parliament: And being ſomewhat elated with his ſucceſs againſt the Scots, he procured from his nephew, a patent, appointing him to ſit on the throne, upon a ſtool or bench at the right hand of the King, and to enjoy the ſame honours and privileges which had uſually been poſſeſſed by any princes of the blood, or uncles of the Kings of England. In this patent, the King diſpenſed with the ſtatute of precedency, enacted during the former reign †. But if Somerſet gave offence by aſſuming too much ſtate, he deſerves the higheſt praiſe on account of the laws paſſed this ſeſſion, by which the rigour of former ſtatutes was much mitigated, and ſome ſecurity given to the freedom of the conſtitution. All laws were repealed which extended the crime of treaſon beyond the ſtatute of the twenty-fifth of Edward the third ‡; all laws enacted during the late reign, extending the crime of felony; all the former laws againſt Lollardies or hereſy, together with the ſtatute of the ſix articles. None were to be accuſed of words but within a month after they were ſpoken. By theſe repeals ſeveral of the moſt rigorous laws that ever were paſſed in England, were annulled, and ſome dawnings, both of civil and reli-

A Parliament.

* Hollingſhed, p. 992. † Rymer, vol. xv. p. 164. ‡ 1 Edw. VI. c. 12.

gious

gious liberty, began to appear to the people. Hereſy, however, was ſtill a capital crime by the common law, and was ſubjected to the penalty of burning. Only there remained no preciſe ſtandard by which that crime could be defined or determined: A circumſtance which might either be advantageous or hurtful to public ſecurity, according to the diſpoſition of the judges. Chap. I. 1547.

A REPEAL alſo paſſed of that law, the deſtruction of all laws, by which the King's proclamation was made of equal force with a ſtatute *. That other law was likewiſe mitigated, by which the King was empowered to annul all laws paſſed before the four and twentieth year of his age: He could prevent their future execution; but could not recall any paſt effects which had enſued from them †.

SOME ſtatutes too were paſſed which were of the utmoſt importance, becauſe they promoted the principles and practices of the reformers, tho' they may not, all of them, appear to be attended with any material conſequences to civil ſociety. The cup was reſtored to the laity; private maſſes were aboliſhed; the King was empowered to create biſhops by letters patent, without any fictitious election of the chapter; the biſhops were ordered to iſſue their writs, and hold their courts in the King's name ‡; vagabonds were adjudged to be ſlaves for two years, and to be marked with a red-hot iron §; an act commonly ſuppoſed to be levelled againſt the ſtrolling prieſts and friars.

THE chantries and free chapels had been given by act of parliament to the late King; and he had appointed commiſſioners to take poſſeſſion of the revenues; but as they had not proceeded far in the execution of their office, it was found neceſſary to make a renewal of the grant. The preamble to the ſtatute promiſes, that theſe funds ſhould be employed to good and godly uſes, in erecting grammar ſchools, in farther augmenting the univerſities, and in making better proviſion for the poor and needy ‖. But the rapacious courtiers had already devoured the prey in their imaginations; and it was not long before it was ſhared out among them.

IT was alſo enacted, that all who denied the King's ſupremacy, or aſſerted the pope's, ſhould, for the firſt offence, forfeit their goods and chattels, and ſuffer impriſonment during pleaſure; for the ſecond offence, ſhould incur the pain of *præmunire*; and for the third offence be attainted of treaſon. But if any, after the firſt of March next, endeavoured, by writing, printing, or any overt act or deed, to deprive the King of his eſtate or titles, particularly of his ſupremacy,

* 1 Edw. VI. c. 2. † Ibid. ‡ Ibid. § 1 Edw. VI. c. 3.
‖ 1 Edw. VI. c. 14.

Chap. I. 1547. or to confer them on any other, he was to be adjudged guilty of treaſon. If any of the heirs of the crown ſhould uſurp upon another, or endeavour to break the order of ſucceſſion, it was declared treaſon in them, their aiders and abetters. Theſe were the moſt conſiderable acts paſſed during this ſeſſion. The members diſcovered a very paſſive diſpoſition with regard to religion: Some few appeared zealous for the reformation: Others harboured ſecretly a ſtrong inclination to the catholic faith: But the greateſt part appeared willing to take any impreſſion which they ſhould receive from intereſt, authority, or the reigning faſhion *.

THE convocation met at the ſame time with the Parliament; and as it appeared, that their debates were at firſt cramped by the rigour of the ſtatute of the ſix articles, the King granted them a diſpenſation from that law, before it was repealed by Parliament †. The lower houſe of convocation applied to have liberty of ſitting with the commons in Parliament; or, if this privilege was refuſed them, which they claimed as their ancient right, they deſired that no law regarding religion, might paſs in Parliament without their conſent and approbation. But the principles which now prevailed, were more advantageous to the civil than the eccleſiaſtical power.

1548. THE protector had permitted the repeal of that law, which gave to the King's proclamations the authority of ſtatutes; but he did not intend to renounce that arbitrary or diſcretionary exerciſe of power, which had ever been aſſumed by the crown, and which it is difficult to diſtinguiſh exactly from the power of making laws. He even continued to exert this authority in ſome particulars, which were regarded as the moſt momentuous. Orders were iſſued by council, that candles ſhould no longer be carried about on Candlemas-day, aſhes on Aſh-wedneſday, palms on Palm-ſunday ‡. Theſe were ancient religious practices, now denominated ſuperſtitions; tho' it is very fortunate for mankind, when ſuperſtition happens to take a direction ſo innocent and inoffenſive. The ſevere diſpoſition which naturally attends all reformers, prompted likewiſe the council to aboliſh ſome gay and ſhowy ceremonies, which belonged to the ancient religion §.

Farther progreſs of the reformation.

AN order was alſo iſſued by the council for the removal of all images from the churches: An innovation which was much deſired by all the reformers, and which alone, with regard to the populace, amounted almoſt to a total change of the eſtabliſhed religion ‖. An attempt had been made to ſeparate the uſe of images

* Heylin, p. 48. † Antiq. Britan. p. 339.
‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 59. Collier, vol. ii. p. 241. Heylin, p. 55.
§ Burnet, vol. ii. Heylin, p. 55.
‖ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 60. Collier, vol. ii. p. 241.

from

from their abuſe, the reverence from the worſhip of them; but the execution of this deſign was found, upon trial, very difficult, if not wholly impracticable. Chap. I. 1548.

As private maſſes were aboliſhed by law, it became neceſſary to frame a new communion-office; and the council went ſo far, in the preface which they had prefixed to this work, as to leave the practice of auricular confeſſion wholly indifferent *. This was a prelude to the entire abolition of that invention, one of the moſt powerful engines that ever was contrived for degrading the laity, and giving their ſpiritual guides an entire aſcendant over them. And it may juſtly be ſaid, that tho' the prieſt's abſolution, which attends confeſſion, ſerves ſomewhat to eaſe weak minds from the immediate agonies of ſuperſtitious terror, it operates only by enforcing ſuperſtition itſelf, and thereby preparing the mind for a more violent relapſe into the ſame diſorders.

The people were at that time extremely diſtracted, by the oppoſite opinions of their preachers; and as they were totally incapable to judge of the reaſons advanced on either ſide, and naturally regarded every thing which they heard at church, as of equal authority, a great confuſion and fluctuation reſulted from this uncertainty. The council firſt endeavoured to remedy that inconvenience, by laying ſome reſtraints on preaching; but finding this expedient ineffectual, they impoſed a total ſilence on the preachers, and thus put an end at once to all the polemics of the pulpit †. By the nature of things, this reſtraint could only be temporary. For in proportion as the ceremonies of public worſhip, its ſhows and exterior obſervances, were retrenched by the reformers, the people were inclined to contract a ſtronger attachment to ſermons, whence alone they received any occupation or amuſement. The ancient religion, by giving its votaries ſomething to do, freed them from the trouble of thinking: Sermons were only delivered in the principal churches, and at ſome particular faſts and feſtivals: And the practice of haranguing the populace, which, if abuſed, is ſo powerful an incitement to faction and ſedition, had much leſs ſcope and influence during thoſe ages.

The greater progreſs was made towards a reformation in England, the further did the protector find himſelf from all proſpect of compleating the union with Scotland; and the Queen-dowager, as well as the clergy, became the more averſe to all alliance with a nation which had departed ſo far from all ancient principles. Somerſet, having taken the town of Haddington, had ordered it to be ſtrongly garriſoned and fortified, by lord Gray: He alſo erected ſome fortifica- Affairs of Scotland.

* Burnet, vol. ii. † Fuller, Heylin, Burnet.

tions

Chap. I. 1548. tions at Lauder: And he hoped, that these two places, together with Broughty and some smaller fortresses, which were in the hands of the English, would serve as a curb to Scotland; and would give him access into the heart of the country.

ARRAN, being disappointed in some attempts on Broughty, relied chiefly on the succours expected from France, for the recovery of these places; and they arrived at last in the Firth, to the number of six thousand men; one half of whom were Germans. They were commanded by D' Essé, and under him by Andelot, Strozzi, Meilleraye, count Rhingrave. The Scots were at that time so sunk by their misfortunes, that five hundred English horse were able to ravage the whole country without resistance; and make inroads to the gates of the capital *: But on the appearance of the French succours, they collected more courage; and having joined D' Essé with a considerable reinforcement, they laid siege to Haddington †. This was an undertaking for which they were themselves totally unfit; being only practised in a kind of desultory war, where they served without pay, and with a few weeks provisions, which they brought along with them. Even with the assistance of the French, they placed their chief hopes of success in starving the garrison; and after some vain attempts to take the place by a regular siege, the blockade of Haddington was formed. The garrison were repulsed with loss in several sallies which they made upon the besiegers.

THE hostile attempts which the late King and the protector had made against Scotland, not being steady, regular, nor pushed to the last extremity, had served only to irritate the nation, and to inspire them with the strongest aversion to that confederacy which was courted in so violent a manner. Even those who were inclined to the English alliance, were displeased to have it imposed on them by force of arms; and the earl of Huntley in particular, said pleasantly, that he disliked not the match, but he hated the manner of wooing ‡. The Queen-dowager, finding these sentiments to prevail, called a Parliament, in an abbey near Haddington; and it was there proposed, that the young Queen, for her greater security, should be sent to France, and be committed to the protection of that ancient ally. Some objected, that this measure was desperate, allowed no resource in case of miscarriage, exposed the Scots to be subjected by foreigners, involved them in perpetual war with England, and left them no expedient by which they could conciliate the friendship of that powerful nation. It was answered, on the other hand, that the Queen's presence was the very cause of war with England; that that nation would desist when they found that their views

* Beagué, hist. of the Campaigns, 1548 and 1549, p. 6. † Hollingshed, p. 993.

‡ Heylin, p. 46. Patten.

of

of forcing a marriage had become altogether impracticable; and that Henry, being engaged by ſo high a mark of confidence, would take their ſovereign under his guardianſhip, and uſe his utmoſt efforts to defend the kingdom. Theſe arguments were aided by French gold, which was plentifully diſtributed among the nobles. The governor had a penſion conferred on him of twelve thouſand livres a year, received the title of duke of Chatelrault, and obtained for his ſon the command of an hundred men at arms*. And as all the clergy dreaded the conſequences of the Engliſh alliance, they ſeconded this meaſure with all the zeal and induſtry which either principles or intereſt could inſpire. It was accordingly determined to ſend the Queen to France; and what was underſtood to be the neceſſary conſequence, to marry her to the dauphin. Villegaignon, commander of four French gallies lying in the Firth of Forth, ſet ſail as if he intended to return home; but when he reached the open ſea, he turned northwards, paſſed by the Orkneys, and came in on the weſt coaſt at Dunbarton: A very extraordinary voyage for ſhips of that fabric†. The young Queen was there committed to him; and being attended with the lords Areſkine and Livingſtone, ſhe put to ſea, and after meeting with ſome tempeſtuous weather, arrived ſafely at Breſt, whence ſhe was conducted to Paris, and ſoon after ſhe was betrothed to the dauphin.

Chap. I. 1548.

Young Queen of Scots ſent into France.

Somerset, preſſed by many difficulties at home, and deſpairing of ſucceſs in his enterprize againſt Scotland, was deſirous of compoſing the differences with that kingdom, and he offered the Scots a ten years truce; but as they inſiſted on his reſtoring all the places which he had taken, the propoſal came to nothing. The Scots took the fortreſſes of Hume and Faſt caſtle, by ſurprize, and put the garriſon to the ſword: They repulſed, with loſs, the Engliſh, who, under the command of lord Seymour, made a deſcent, firſt in Fife, and then at Montroſe: In the former action, James Stuart, natural brother to the Queen, acquired honour; in the latter, Areſkine of Dun. An attempt was made by Sir Robert Bowes and Sir Thomas Palmer, at the head of a conſiderable body, to throw relief into Haddington; but theſe troops falling into an ambuſcade, were almoſt wholly cut in pieces‡. And tho' a ſmall body of two hundred men eſcaped all the vigilance of the French, and arrived ſafely in Haddington, with ſome ammunition and proviſions, the garriſon was reduced to ſuch difficulties, that the protector found it neceſſary to provide more effectually for their relief. He raiſed an army of eighteen thouſand men, and adding three thouſand Germans, who, on the diſſolution of the proteſtant alliance, had offered

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 83. Buchanan, lib. xv. Keith, p. 55. Thuanus, lib. v. c. 15.
† Thuanus, lib. v. c. 15. ‡ Stowe, p. 595. Hollingſhed, p. 994.

Chap. I. 1548. their ſervice to England, he gave the command of the whole to the earl of Shrewſbury *. D' Eſſé raiſed the ſiege on the approach of the Engliſh; and with great difficulty made good his retreat to Edinburgh, where he poſted himſelf advantageouſly. Shrewſbury, who had loſt the opportunity of attacking him on his march, durſt not give him battle in his preſent ſituation; and contenting himſelf with the advantage already gained of ſupplying Haddington, he retired into England.

While the French troops remained in Scotland, many complaints had ariſen between them and the natives; and a ſmall accident † having excited a tumult in Edinburgh, the provoſt and his ſon were unfortunately killed by the French ſoldiers. This event increaſed the animoſity between the two nations: But D' Eſſé, in order to make atonement for that act of violence, led his troops haſtily to Haddington, and in the night-time attempted to ſurprize the town. He found the garriſon unprepared to reſiſt him; and had already entered the outer court: But a French deſerter firing a cannon, which pointed towards the gates, the ſhot fell among the thickeſt of the enemy, and made ſuch havoc as threw the whole into confuſion, and enabled the Engliſh to repulſe them. It is pretended, that no leſs than a hundred perſons fell by this ſingle ſhot.

The French general was a man of ability and experience; but as he had not the good fortune to be acceptable to the Scots nation, it was thought proper to recall him, and to ſend over De Thermes in his place. D' Eſſé, before his departure, fortified Leith, which, from a ſmall village, ſoon became a conſiderable town, by the concourſe of inhabitants, who found there a ſecurity, which they could no where elſe enjoy in Scotland. He alſo attacked an Engliſh garriſon in Inch-keith, an iſland oppoſite to that harbour, and made them priſoners. After theſe exploits, he reſigned his command to De Thermes, who brought over with him Monluc, biſhop of Valence, a man celebrated for wiſdom and ability. This prelate was named chancellor of the kingdom; and it was probably intended, by his means, to inſpire the nation with ſome greater attachment to the principles of law and equity: But the Scots, impatient of reſtraint, and jealous of a foreigner, expreſſed ſuch diſcontent, that it was thought more prudent ſoon after to recall him ‡.

Tho' the protection of France was of great conſequence to the Scots, in ſupporting them againſt the invaſions of England, they reaped ſtill more benefit from the diſtractions and diviſions which had crept into the councils of that latter

* Hayward, p. 201. Thuanus, lib. v. c. 15.

† Beagué, p. 68. Knox, p. 81.

‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 85.

kingdom.

kingdom. Even the two brothers, the protector and admiral, not contented with the high ſtations which they ſeverally enjoyed, and the great eminence to which they had riſen, had entertained the moſt violent jealouſy of each other's authority; and they divided the whole court and kingdom, by their oppoſite cabals and pretenſions. Lord Seymour was a man of inſatiable ambition, arrogant, aſſuming, implacable; and tho' eſteemed of ſuperior capacity to the protector, he poſſeſſed not to the ſame degree the confidence and regard of the people. By his flattery and addreſs, he had ſo inſinuated himſelf into the good graces of the Queen-dowager, that, forgetting her uſual prudence and decency, ſhe married him immediately upon the deceaſe of the late King: Inſomuch, that, had ſhe ſoon proved pregnant, it might have been doubtful to which huſband the child belonged. The credit and riches of this alliance ſupported the ambition of the admiral; but gave umbrage to the dutcheſs of Somerſet, who, uneaſy that the younger brother's wife ſhould have the precedency, employed all her intereſt with her huſband, which was too great, firſt to create, and then to widen a breach between the two brothers *. Chap. I. 1548. Cabals of lord Seymour.

The firſt ſymptoms of this miſunderſtanding appeared when the protector commanded the army in Scotland. The ſecretary, Paget, a man devoted to Somerſet, remarked, that Seymour was forming ſeparate intrigues among the counſellors; was corrupting, by preſents, the King's ſervants; and even endeavouring, by improper indulgencies and liberalities, to captivate the affections of the young monarch. Paget repreſented to him the danger of this conduct; deſired him to reflect on the numerous enemies whom the ſudden elevation of their family had created; and warned him that any diſſenſion between him and the protector, would be greedily laid hold of, to draw on the ruin of both. Finding his remonſtrances ineffectual, he conveyed intelligence of the danger to Somerſet, and engaged him to leave the enterprize upon Scotland unfiniſhed, in order to guard againſt the attempts of his domeſtic enemies. In the enſuing Parliament, the admiral's projects appeared ſtill more hazardous to public tranquillity; and as he had acquired many partizans and retainers, he made a direct attack upon his brother's authority. He repreſented to his friends, that formerly, during a minority, the office of protector of the kingdom had been kept ſeparate from that of governor of the king's perſon; and that the preſent union of theſe two important truſts, conferred on Somerſet an authority which could not ſafely be lodged in any ſubject †. He even prevailed on the young King, to write a letter to the Parlia-

* Hayward, p. 301. Heylin, p. 72. Camden. Thuanus, lib. vi. c. 5. Haynes, p. 69.
† Haynes, p. 82, 90.

Chap. I. 1548. ment, desiring that Seymour might be appointed his governor; and he had formed a party in the two houses, by which he hoped to have effected his purpose. The design was discovered before its execution; and some common friends were sent to remonstrate with him, but had so little influence, that he threw out many menacing expressions, and rashly threatened, that, if he was thwarted in his attempt, he would make this Parliament the blackest that ever was in England *. The council sent for him, to answer for his conduct; but he refused to attend: They then began to threaten in their turn, and informed him, that the King's letter, instead of availing him any thing to the execution of his purpose, would be imputed to him as a criminal enterprize, and be construed a design to disturb the government, by forming a separate interest with a child and minor. They even let fall some menaces of sending him to the Tower for his temerity; and the admiral, finding himself prevented in his design, was obliged to submit, and to desire a reconciliation with his brother.

THE mild and moderate temper of Somerset made him willing to forget these enterprises of the admiral; but the ambition of that turbulent spirit could not be so easily appeased. His spouse, the Queen-dowager, died in child-bed; but so far from regarding this event as a check to his aspiring views, he founded on it the scheme of a more extraordinary elevation. He made his addresses to the lady Elizabeth, then in the sixteenth year of her age; and that princess, whom even the hurry of business, and the pursuits of ambition, could not, in her more advanced years, disengage entirely from the tender passions, seems to have listened to the insinuations of a man who possessed every talent proper to captivate the affections of the fair †. But as Henry the eighth had excluded his daughters from all hopes of succession, if they married without the consent of his executors, which Seymour could never hope to obtain; it was concluded, that he proposed to effectuate his purpose by expedients still more rash and more criminal. All the other measures of the admiral tended to confirm this suspicion. He continued to attack, by presents, the fidelity of all those who had more immediate access to the King's person: He endeavoured to seduce that young prince into his interests: He found means of holding a private correspondence with him: He openly decried his brother's administration; and asserted, that by enlisting Germans, and other foreigners, he intended to form a mercenary army, which endangered the King's authority, and the liberty of the people: By promises and persuasion he brought over to his party many of the principal nobility; and had distributed his interest all over England: He neglected not even the most

* Haynes, p. 75. † Ibid. 95, 96, 102, 108.

popular

popular perſons of inferior rank; and had computed, that he could, on occaſion, command the ſervice of ten thouſand men, among his ſervants, tenants, and retainers *: He had already provided arms for their uſe; and having engaged in his intereſts Sir John Sharington, a very corrupt man, maſter of the mint at Briſtol, he flattered himſelf that money would not be wanting. Somerſet was well informed of all theſe alarming circumſtances, and endeavoured by the moſt friendly expedients, by intreaty, reaſon, and even by heaping new favours upon his brother, to make him depart from his precipitant councils: But finding all his endeavours ineffectual, he began to think of more ſevere remedies. The earl of Warwic was an ill inſtrument between the brothers; and had formed the deſign, by inflaming the quarrel, to raiſe his own fortune on the ruins of both. Chap. I. 1548.

DUDLEY, earl of Warwic, was the ſon of that Dudley, miniſter to Henry the ſeventh, who having, by rapine, extortion, and perverſion of law, incurred the hatred of the public, had been ſacrificed to popular animoſity, in the beginning of the ſubſequent reign. The late King, ſenſible of the iniquity, at leaſt illegality of the ſentence, had afterwards reſtored young Dudley's blood by act of parliament; and finding him endowed with ability, induſtry, and enterprize, he had entruſted him with many important commands, and had ever found him ſucceſsful in all his undertakings. He raiſed him to the dignity of viſcount Liſle, conferred on him the office of admiral, and gave him by his will a place among his executors. Dudley made ſtill farther progreſs during the minority; and having obtained the title of earl of Warwic, and undermined the credit of Southampton, he bore the firſt rank among the protector's counſellors. The victory, gained at Pinkey, was much aſcribed to his courage and conduct; and he was univerſally regarded as a man equally endowed with the talents of peace and war. But all theſe virtues were obſcured by ſtill greater vices; an exorbitant ambition, an inſatiable avarice, a neglect of decency, a contempt of juſtice: And as he found, that lord Seymour, whoſe ability and enterprize he chiefly dreaded, was involving himſelf in ruin, by his raſh councils, he was determined to puſh him over the precipice; and thereby remove the chief obſtacle to his own projected greatneſs. Dudley, earl of Warwic.

WHEN Somerſet found that the public peace was expoſed by his brother's ſeditious, if not rebellious, ſchemes, he was the more eaſily perſuaded, by Warwic, to employ the extent of royal authority againſt him; and after depriving him of the office of admiral, he ſigned a warrant for committing him to the Tower. Some of his accomplices were alſo taken into cuſtody; and three privy counſellors, being ſent to examine them, made a report, that they had met with very full

* Haynes, p. 105, 106.

Chap. I. 1548. and important discoveries. Yet still the protector suspended the blow, and showed a reluctance to ruin his brother. He offered to depart from the prosecution, if Seymour would promise him a cordial reconcilement; and relinquishing all ambitious hopes, be contented with a private life, and retire into the country. But as Seymour made no other answer to these friendly offers than menaces and defiances, he ordered a charge to be drawn up against him, consisting of thirty-three articles *; and the whole to be laid before the privy-council. It is pretended, that every particular was so incontestibly proved, both by witnesses and his own hand-writing, that there was no room for doubt; yet did the council think proper to go in a body to the Tower, in order more fully to examine the prisoner. He was not daunted by the appearance; but boldly demanded a fair trial; required to be confronted with the witnesses; desired that the charge might be left with him, in order to be considered; and refused to answer any interrogatories, by which he might ensnare himself.

It is apparent, that notwithstanding what is pretended, there must have been some deficiency in the evidence against Seymour, when such demands, founded on the plainest principles of law and equity, were absolutely rejected. We shall indeed conclude, if we carefully examine the charge, that many of the articles were general, and scarce capable of any proof; many of them, if true, susceptible of a more favourable interpretation; and that, tho' on the whole, Seymour appears to have been a very dangerous subject, yet he had not advanced far in those treasonable projects imputed to him. The chief part of his guilt seems to have consisted in some unwarrantable practices in the admiralty, by which pyrates were protected, and illegal impositions laid upon the merchants.

A Parliament. 4 November. 1549. Attainder of lord Seymour.

But the administration had, at that time, an easy instrument of vengeance, to wit, the Parliament; and needed not to give themselves any concern with regard either to the guilt of the persons whom they prosecuted, or the evidence which could be produced against them. A session of Parliament being held, it was proposed to proceed against Seymour by bill of attainder; and much persuasion being employed to engage the young King to consent to it, a considerable weight was put on his approbation. The matter was first laid before the upper house; and several peers, rising up in their places, gave an account of what they knew concerning lord Seymour's conduct, and his criminal words or actions. These narratives were received for undoubted evidence; and tho' the prisoner had formerly engaged many friends and partizans among the nobility, no one had either the courage or equity to move, that he might be heard in his own defence, that the testimony against him should be delivered in a legal manner, and that he

* Burnet, vol. ii. Coll. 31. 2 & 3 Edw. VI. c. 18.

should

Chap. I. 1549.

ſhould be confronted with the witneſſes. A little more ſcruple was made in the houſe of commons: There were even ſome members who objected againſt the whole method of proceeding by bills of attainder, paſſed in abſence; and required, that a formal trial ſhould be given to every man before his condemnation. But upon receiving a meſſage from the King, requiring them to proceed, and offering that the ſame narratives ſhould be laid before them which had ſatisfied the peers, they were eaſily prevailed on to acquieſce *. The bill paſſed in a very full houſe. Near four hundred voted for it, and not above nine or ten againſt it †. The ſentence was ſoon after executed, and the priſoner was beheaded on Tower-hill. The warrant was ſigned by Somerſet, who was expoſed to much blame, on account of the violence of theſe proceedings. The attempts of the admiral ſeemed chiefly to be levelled againſt his brother's uſurped authority; and tho' his ambitious, enterprizing character, encouraged by a marriage with the lady Elizabeth, might have proved dangerous to public tranquillity, the prudence of foreſeeing dangers at ſuch a diſtance, was deemed too great, and the remedy was plainly illegal. It could only be ſaid, that this bill of attainder was ſomewhat more tolerable than the preceding ones, to which the nation had been accuſtomed. For here, at leaſt, ſome ſhadow of evidence was produced.

20th March.

His execution.

All the other conſiderable buſineſs tranſacted this ſeſſion, beſides the attainder of lord Seymour, regarded eccleſiaſtical matters; which were now the chief concern of the nation. A committee of biſhops and divines had been appointed by the council, to frame a liturgy for the ſervice of the church; and they had executed the work committed to them. They proceeded with great moderation in this delicate undertaking: They retained as much of the ancient maſs as the principles of the reformers would permit: They indulged nothing to the ſpirit of contradiction, which ſo naturally takes place in all great innovations: And they flattered themſelves, that they had framed a ſervice, in which every denomination of Chriſtians might, without ſcruple, concur. The maſs had been always celebrated in Latin; a practice which might have been deemed abſurd, had it not been found uſeful to the clergy, by impreſſing the people with an idea of ſome myſterious unknown virtue in thoſe rites, and by checking all their pretenſions to be familiarly acquainted with their religion. But as the reformers pretended in ſome few particulars to encourage private judgment in the laity, the tranſlation of the liturgy, as well as of the ſcriptures, into the vulgar tongue, ſeemed more conformable to the genius of their ſect; and this innovation, with the retrenchment of prayers to ſaints, and of ſome ſuperſtitious ceremonies, was the chief differ-

Eccleſiaſtical affairs.

* 2 & 3 Edw. VI. c. 18. † Burnet, vol. ii. p. 99.

ence

Chap. I. 1549. ence between the old maſs and the new liturgy. The parliament eſtabliſhed this form of worſhip in all the churches, and ordered an uniformity to be obſerved in all the rites and ceremonies *.

THERE was another very material act, which paſſed this ſeſſion. The former canons had eſtabliſhed the celibacy of the clergy; and though this practice be uſually aſcribed to the policy of the court of Rome, who thought, that the eccleſiaſtics would be more devoted to their ſpiritual head, and leſs dependant on the civil magiſtrate, when freed from the powerful ties of wives and children; yet was this inſtitution much forwarded by the principles of ſuperſtition inherent in human nature. Theſe principles had rendered the panygerics of an inviolate chaſtity ſo frequent among the ancient fathers, long before the eſtabliſhment of celibacy. And even the Engliſh parliament, though they framed a law permitting the marriages of prieſts, yet confeſs in the preamble, "that it were better for "prieſts and the miniſters of the church to live chaſte and without marriage, and "it were much to be wiſhed they would of themſelves abſtain." The inconveniences, which had ariſen from compelling chaſtity and prohibiting marriage, are the reaſon aſſigned for indulging a liberty in this particular †. The ideas of pennance alſo were ſo much retained in other particulars, that an act of parliament paſſed, prohibiting the uſe of fleſh meat, during Lent and the other times of abſtinence ‡.

THE

* 2 & 3 Edw. VI. cap. 1. † 2 & 3 Edw. VI. cap. 21.

‡ 2 & 3 Edw. VI. cap. 19. Another act, paſſed this ſeſſion, takes notice in the preamble, that the city of York, formerly well inhabited, was now much decayed: Inſomuch that many of the cures could not afford a competent maintainance to the incumbents. To remedy this inconvenience, the magiſtrates were empowered to unite as many pariſhes as they thought proper. An eccleſiaſtical hiſtorian, Collier, vol. ii. p. 230, thinks, that this decay of York is chiefly to be aſcribed to the diſſolution of monaſteries, by which the revenues fell into the hands of perſons who lived at a diſtance.

A very grievous tax was impoſed this ſeſſion upon the whole ſtock and monied intereſt of the kingdom, and even upon its induſtry. It was a ſhilling in the pound yearly, during three years, on every perſon worth ten pounds or upwards: The double on aliens and denizens. Theſe laſt, if above twelve years of age, and if worth leſs than twenty ſhillings, were to pay eight-pence yearly. Every wether was to pay two-pence yearly; every ewe three-pence. The woollen manufactures were to pay eight-pence a pound on the value of all the cloth they made. Theſe exorbitant taxes on money are a proof, that few people lived on the money lent out at intereſt: For this tax amounts to the half of the yearly income of all money-holders, during three years, eſtimating their intereſt at the rate allowed by law; and it was too grievous to be born, if many perſons had been affected by it. It is remarkable, that no tax at all was laid upon land this ſeſſion. The profits of merchandiſe were commonly ſo high, that it was ſuppoſed it could bear this impoſition. The moſt abſurd part of the law ſeems to be the tax upon the woollen manufacture. See 2 & 3 Edw. VI. cap. 36. The ſubſequent Parliament repealed the

THE principal tenets and practices of the catholic religion were now abolished, and the reformation, such as we enjoy it at present, was almost entirely compleated in England. But the doctrine of the real presence, though tacitly condemned by the new communion-service and by the prohibition of many ancient rites, still retained some hold of the minds of men; and it was the last doctrine of popery, which was wholly abandoned by the people*. The extreme attachment of the late King to that tenet might be some ground for this obstinacy; but the chief cause was really the extreme absurdity of the principle itself, and the profound veneration, which of course, it impressed on the mind. The priests likewise were much inclined to favour an opinion, which attributed to them so miraculous a power; and the people, who believed that they participated of the very body and blood of their Saviour, were loth to renounce so extraordinary, and as they imagined, so salutary a privilege. The general attachment to this dogma was so violent, that the Lutherans, notwithstanding their separation from Rome, had thought proper, under another name, still to retain it: And the catholic preachers, in England, when restrained in every other particular, could not forbear, on every occasion, from inculcating that tenet. Bonner, for this offence among others, had been tried by the council, had been deprived of his see, and had been committed to custody. Gardiner also, who had recovered his liberty, appeared anew refractory to the authority, which established the late innovations; and he seemed willing to countenance that opinion, much favoured by all the English catholics, that the King was indeed supreme head of the church, but not the council, during a minority. Having declined giving full satisfaction on this head, he was sent to the Tower, and threatened with farther effects of the council's displeasure.

THESE severities being exercised against men, possessed of office and authority, seemed a necessary policy, in order to inforce an uniformity in public worship and discipline: But there were other instances of persecution, which were derived from no other origin than the bigotry of theologians; a malady, which seems almost incurable. Tho' the protestant divines had ventured to renounce opinions, deemed certain during so many centuries, they regarded, in their turn, the new system as so certain, that they could bear no contradiction

the tax on sheep and woollen cloth. 3 & 4 Edw. VI. cap. 23. But they continued the other tax a year longer. Ibid.

The clergy taxed themselves at six shillings in the pound to be paid in three years. This taxation was ratified in Parliament, which had been the common practice since the reformation, as if the clergy had no legislative power, even over themselves. See 2 & 3 Edw. VI. cap. 35.

* Burnet, vol. ii. cap. 104.

with

Chap. I. 1549. with regard to it; and they were ready to burn in the ſame flames, from which they themſelves had ſo narrowly eſcaped, every one who had the aſſurance to oppoſe them. A commiſſion by act of council was granted to the primate and ſome others, to examine and ſearch after all anabaptiſts, heretics, or contemners of the book of common prayer *. They were injoined to reclaim them, if poſſible; to impoſe pennance on them; and to give them abſolution: Or, if they were obſtinate, to excommunicate and impriſon them, and to deliver them over to the ſecular arm: And in the execution of this charge, the commiſſioners were not bound to obſerve the ordinary methods of trial; the forms of law were diſpenſed with, and if any ſtatutes happened to interfere with the powers in the commiſſion, they were over-ruled and abrogated by the council. Some tradeſmen in London were brought before theſe commiſſioners, and were accuſed of maintaining, among other opinions, that a man regenerate could not ſin, and that though the outward man might offend, the inward was incapable of all guilt. They were prevailed on to abjure and were diſmiſſed. But there was a woman accuſed of heretical pravity, called Joan Bocher, or Joan of Kent, who was ſo extremely obſtinate, that the commiſſioners could gain nothing upon her. Her doctrine was, "that Chriſt "was not truly incarnate of the virgin, whoſe fleſh, being the outward man, was "ſinfully begotten, and born in ſin; and conſequently he could take none of it: "But the word, by the conſent of the inward man of the virgin, was made "fleſh †." This opinion, it would ſeem, is not orthodox; and there was a neceſſity for delivering the woman to the flames for maintaining it. But the young King, tho' in ſuch tender years, had more ſenſe than all his counſellors and preceptors; and he long refuſed to ſign the warrant for her execution. Cranmer was employed to perſuade him to compliance; and he ſaid, that there was a great difference between errors in other points of divinity, and thoſe which were directly contradictory to the Apoſtles creed: Theſe latter were impieties againſt God, which the prince, being God's deputy, ought to repreſs; in like manner, as the King's deputies were bound to puniſh offences againſt the King's perſon. Edward, overcome by importunity more than reaſon, at laſt ſubmitted, tho' with tears in his eyes; and he told Cranmer, that, if any wrong was done, the guilt ſhould lie intirely on his head. The primate, after making a new effort to reclaim the woman from her errors, and finding her obſtinate againſt all his arguments, at laſt committed her to the flames. Some time after, a Dutchman, called Van Paris, accuſed of the hereſy which has received the name of Arianiſm, was condemned to the ſame puniſhment. He ſuffered with ſo much

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 3. Rymer, tom. xv. p. 181.

† Burnet, vol. ii. col 35. Strype's Mem. Cranm. p. 181.

ſatisfaction,

satisfaction, that he hugged and caressed the faggots, which were consuming him; a species of frenzy of which there is more than one instance among the martyrs of this age *. Chap. I. 1549.

These rigorous methods of proceeding soon brought the whole nation to a conformity with the new doctrine and the new liturgy. The lady Mary alone continued to adhere to the mass, and refused to admit the established modes of worship. When pressed and menaced on this head, she applied to the emperor; who, using his interest with Sir Philip Hobby, the English ambassador, procured her a temporary connivance from the council †.

CHAP. II.

Discontents of the people.——Insurrections.——Conduct of the war with Scotland.——With France.——Factions in the council.——Conspiracy against Somerset.——Somerset resigns the protectorship.——A Parliament.——Peace with France and Scotland.——Boulogne surrendered.——Persecution of Gardiner.——Warwic created duke of Northumberland.——His ambition.——Trial of Somerset.——His execution.——A Parliament.—— A new Parliament.——Succession changed.——The King's sickness——and death.

THERE is no abuse so great, in civil society, as not to be attended with a great variety of beneficial consequences; and in the beginnings of reformation, the loss of these advantages is always felt very sensibly, while the benefit, resulting from the change, is the slow effect of time, and is seldom perceived by the bulk of a nation. Scarce any institution can be imagined less favourable, in the main, to the interests of mankind than that of monks and friars; yet was it followed by many good effects, which, having ceased by the suppression of monasteries, were very much regretted by the people of England. The monks, residing always in their convents, in the heart of their estates, spent their money in the provinces and among their tenants, afforded a ready market for commodities, were a sure resource to the poor and indigent; and though their hospitality and charity gave but too much encouragement to idleness, and prevented the increase of public riches, yet did it provide to many a remedy against 1549. Discontents of the people.

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 112. Strype's Mem. Cranm. p. 181. † Heylin, p. 102.

Chap. II. 1549. the extreme preſſures of want and neceſſity. It is alſo obſervable, that, as the friars were limited by the rules of their inſtitution, to a certain train of life, they had not equal motives for avarice with other men; and they were acknowledged to have been in England, as they ſtill are in Roman catholic countries, the beſt and moſt indulgent landlords. The abbots and priors were allowed to give leaſes at an under-value, and to receive, in return, a large preſent from the tenant; in the ſame manner as is ſtill practiſed by the biſhops and colleges. But when the abbey-lands were diſtributed among the great nobility and courtiers, they fell under a different management: The rents of farms were raiſed, while the tenants found not the ſame facility in diſpoſing of the produce; the money was ſpent in the capital; and the farmers, living at a diſtance, were expoſed to all the oppreſſions of their new maſters, or to the ſtill greater rapacity of the ſtewards.

THESE complaints of the common people were at that time heightened by other cauſes. The arts of manufacture were much more advanced in other European countries than in England; and even in England theſe arts had made greater progreſs than the knowledge of agriculture; a profeſſion, which of all mechanical employments, requires the moſt reflection and experience. A great demand aroſe for wool both abroad and at home: Paſturage was found more profitable than unſkilful tillage: Whole eſtates were laid waſte by incloſures: The tenants, regarded as a uſeleſs burthen, were expelled their habitations: Even the cottagers, deprived of the commons, on which they formerly fed their cattle, were reduced to miſery: And a great decay of people, as well as diminution of the former plenty, was remarked in the kingdom *. This grievance was now of an old date; and Sir Thomas More, alluding to it, obſerves in his Utopia, that a ſheep had become in England a more ravenous animal than a lion or a wolf, and devoured whole villages, cities and provinces.

THE general increaſe alſo of gold and ſilver in Europe, after the diſcovery of the Weſt-Indies, had a tendency to inflame theſe complaints. The growing demand, in the more commercial countries, had every where heightened the price of commodities, which could eaſily be tranſported thither; but in England, the labour of men, who could not ſo eaſily change their habitation, ſtill remained nearly at the ancient rates; and the poor people complained that they could no longer gain a ſubſiſtence by their induſtry. It was by an addition alone of toil and application they were enabled to provide a maintenance; and though this increaſe of induſtry was at laſt the effect of the preſent ſituation, and an effect very

* Strype, vol. ii. Repoſtory, Q beneficial

beneficial to ſociety, yet it was difficult for the people to ſhake off their former habits of indolence; and nothing but neceſſity could compel them to that exertion of their faculties. Chap. II. 1549.

It muſt alſo be remarked, that the profuſion of Henry the eighth, had reduced him, notwithſtanding his rapacity, to ſuch difficulties, that he had been obliged to remedy a preſent neceſſity, by the pernicious expedient of debaſing the coin; and the wars, in which the protector had been involved, had induced him to carry ſtill farther the ſame abuſe. The uſual conſequences enſued: The good coin was hoarded or exported; baſe metal was coined at home, or imported from abroad in great abundance; the common people, who received their wages in it, could not purchaſe commodities at the uſual rates; an univerſal diffidence and ſtagnation of commerce took place; and loud complaints were heard in every part of England.

The protector, who loved popularity, and compaſſionated the condition of the people, encouraged theſe complaints by his endeavours to remedy them. He appointed a commiſſion for making inquiry concerning incloſures; and iſſued a proclamation, ordering all late incloſures to be laid open by a day aſſigned. The populace, meeting with ſuch countenance from the government, began to riſe in ſeveral places, and to commit diſorders; but were quieted by remonſtrances and perſuaſion. In order to give them greater ſatisfaction, Somerſet appointed new commiſſioners, whom he ſent every where, with an unlimited power to hear and determine all cauſes about incloſures, high-ways, and cottages *. As the object of this commiſſion was very diſagreeable to the gentry and nobility, they called the commiſſion arbitrary and illegal; and the common people, fearing it would be eluded, and being impatient for immediate redreſs, could no longer contain their fury, but ſought for a remedy by force of arms. The riſing began at once in ſeveral parts of England, as if an univerſal conſpiracy had been formed by the commonalty. The rebels in Wiltſhire were diſperſed by Sir William Herbert: Thoſe in the neighbouring counties, Oxford and Gloceſter, by lord Gray of Wilton. Many of the rioters were killed in the field: Others were executed by martial law. The commotions in Hampſhire, Suſſex, Kent, and other counties, were quieted by gentler methods; but the diſorders in Devonſhire and Norfolk threatened the moſt fatal conſequences. Inſurrections.

The commonalty in Devonſhire began with the uſual pretence of incloſures and of oppreſſions from the gentry; but the pariſh prieſt of Stampford-Courtenay, had the addreſs to give their diſcontents a direction towards religion; and the delicacy of this ſubject, in the preſent emergency, made the inſurrection imme-

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 115. Strype, vol. ii. p. 171.

Chap. II. 1549. diately appear dangerous. In other counties, the gentry had kept closely united with the government; but here many of them took part with the populace; among others, Humphrey Arundel, governor of St Michael's Mount. The rioters were brought to the form of a regular army, and amounted to the number of 10,000 men. Lord Russel had been sent against them at the head of a small force; but finding himself too weak to encounter them in the field, he kept at a distance, and began to treat and negotiate with them; in hopes of eluding their fury by delay, and of dispersing them by the difficulty of their subsisting in a body. Their demands were, that the mass should be restored, half of the abbey-lands resumed, the law of the six articles executed, holy water and holy bread respected, and all other particular grievances redressed *. The council, to whom Russel transmitted these demands, sent a haughty answer; exhorted the rebels to disperse; and promised them pardon upon their immediate submission. Enraged at this disappointment, they marched to Exeter, carrying before them crosses, banners, holy water, candlesticks, and other implements of the ancient superstition; together with the host, which they covered with a canopy †. The inhabitants of Exeter shut their gates; and the rebels, as they had no cannon, endeavoured to take the place, first by scalade, then by mining, but were repulsed in all their attempts. Russel meanwhile lay at Honiton, till reinforced by Sir William Herbert, and lord Gray, with some German horse, and some Italian arquebusiers under Battista Spinola. He then resolved to attempt the relief of Exeter, which was now reduced to extremities. He attacked the rebels, drove them from all their posts, committed great slaughter upon them both in the action and pursuit ‡, and took many prisoners. Arundel and the other leaders were sent to London, tried and executed. Many of the inferior sort were put to death by martial law §: The vicar of St. Thomas, one of the principal incendiaries, was hanged on the top of his own tower, arrayed in his popish weeds, with his beads at his girdle ‖.

THE insurrection in Norfolk rose still to a greater height, and was attended with greater violences. The populace were at first excited, as in other places, by the complaints against inclosures; but finding their numbers amount to twenty thousand men, they grew insolent on their force, and proceeded to more exorbitant pretensions. They required the suppression of the gentry, the placing new counsellors about the King, and the re-establishment of the ancient rites. One Ket, a tanner, had assumed the government of them; and he exercised his authority

* Hayward, p. 292. Hollingshed, p. 1003. Fox, vol. ii. p. 666. Mem. Cranm. p. 186.
† Heylin, p. 76. ‡ Stowe's Annals, p. 597. Hayward, p. 295. § Hayward, p. 295, 296.
‖ Heylin, p. 76. Hollingshed, p. 1026.

with

with the utmoſt inſolence and outrage. Having taken poſſeſſion of Mouſhold-Hill near Norwich, he erected his tribunal under an old oak, thence called the oak of reformation; and ſummoning the gentry to appear before him, he gave ſuch decrees as might be expected from his character and ſituation. The marquis of Northampton was firſt ordered againſt him; but met with a repulſe, in an action, where lord Sheffield was killed *. The protector affected popularity, and cared not to appear in perſon againſt the rebels: He therefore ſent next the earl of Warwic at the head of 6000 men, levied for the wars againſt Scotland; and he thereby afforded his mortal enemy an opportunity of augmenting his reputation and character. Warwic, having tried ſome ſkirmiſhes with the rebels, at laſt made a general attack upon them, and put them to flight. Two thouſand of them fell in the fight and purſuit: Ket was hanged at Norwich caſtle; nine of his followers on the boughs of the oak of reformation; and the inſurrection was entirely ſuppreſſed. Some rebels in Yorkſhire, hearing of the fate of their companions, accepted the offers of pardon, and threw down their arms. A general indemnity was ſoon after publiſhed by the protector †. Chap. II. 1549.

But tho' the inſurrections were thus quickly ſubdued in England, and no traces of them ſeemed to remain, they were attended with very bad conſequences with regard to the foreign intereſts of the nation. The forces of the earl of Warwic, which might have made a great impreſſion on Scotland, were diverted from that enterprize; and De Thermes had leiſure to reduce that country to ſome ſettlement and compoſure. He took the fortreſs of Broughty, and put the garriſon to the ſword. He ſtraitened the Engliſh at Haddington; and though lord Dacres found means to throw relief into the place, and to reinforce the garriſon, it was experienced to be very chargeable, and even impracticable to keep poſſeſſion of that fortreſs. The whole country in the neighbourhood was laid waſte by the inroads both of the Scots and Engliſh, and could afford no ſupply to the garriſon: The place lay above thirty miles from the borders; ſo that a regular army was neceſſary to eſcort thither any proviſions: And as the plague had broke out among the troops, they periſhed daily, and were reduced to a ſtate of great weakneſs. For theſe reaſons, orders were given to diſmantle Haddington, and to convoy the artillery and garriſon to Berwic; and the earl of Rutland, now created warden of the eaſt marches, executed the orders. Conduct of the war with Scotland.

The King of France alſo took advantage of the diſtractions of the Engliſh, in order to recover Boulogne, and that territory, which Henry the eighth had conquered from France. On other pretences, he aſſembled an army; and falling With France.

* Stowe, p. 597. Hollingſhed, 1030——34. Strype, vol. ii. p. 174.
† Hayward, p. 297, 298, 299.

Chap. II. 1549. ſuddenly upon the Boullonois, took the caſtles of Sellacque, Blackneſs, and Ambleteuſe, tho' well ſupplied with garriſons, ammunition, and proviſions *. He attempted to ſurprize Boulenberg, and was repulſed; but the garriſon, not thinking the place tenable after the loſs of the other fortreſſes, deſtroyed the works, and retired to Boulogne. The rains, which fell in great abundance during the autumn, and a peſtilential diſtemper, which broke out in the French camp, deprived Henry of all hopes of ſucceſs againſt Boulogne itſelf; and he retired to Paris †. He left the command of the army to Gaſpar de Coligny, lord of Chatillon, ſo famous afterwards under the name of admiral Coligny; and he gave him orders to form the ſiege early in the ſpring. The active diſpoſition of this general engaged him to make, during the winter, ſeveral attempts againſt the place; but they proved all unſucceſsful.

STROZZI, who commanded the French fleet and galleys, endeavoured to make a deſcent on Jerſey; but meeting there with an Engliſh fleet, an action enſued, which ſeems not to have been deciſive, ſince the hiſtorians of the two nations differ ſo widely in their accounts of the event ‡.

As ſoon as the French war broke out, the protector endeavoured to fortify himſelf with the alliance of the emperor; and he ſent over ſecretary Paget to Bruſſels, where Charles then reſided, in order to aſſiſt Sir Philip Hobby, the ordinary ambaſſador, in this negotiation. But that prince had formed a deſign of extending his dominions by acting the part of champion for the catholic religion; and though extremely deſirous of fortifying himſelf by the Engliſh alliance againſt France, his capital enemy, he thought it unſuitable to his other pretenſions to enter into ſtrict confederacy with a nation, which had broke off all connexions with the church of Rome. He therefore declined all advances of friendſhip from England; and eluded the applications of the ambaſſadors. An exact account is preſerved of this negotiation in a letter of Hobby; and it is remarkable, that the emperor, in a converſation with the Engliſh miniſters, aſſerted, that the prerogatives of a King of England were more extenſive than thoſe of a King of France §. Burnet, who preſerves this letter, ſubjoins, as a parallel inſtance, that one objection which the Scots made to marrying their Queen with Edward, was that all their privileges would be ſwallowed up by the great prerogative of the Kings of England ‖.

SOMERSET, finding no aſſiſtance from the emperor, was inclined to conclude a peace with France and Scotland; and beſides that he was not in a condition to maintain ſuch ruinous wars, he thought, that there no longer remained any ob-

* Thuanus, lib. vi. c. 6. † Hayward, p. 300. ‡ Thuanus. King Edward's Journal, Stowe, p. 597. § Burnet, vol. ii. p. 132, 175. ‖ Id. p. 133.

ject

ject of hoſtilities. The Scots had ſent away their Queen; and could not, if ever ſo much inclined, compleat the marriage contracted with Edward: And as Henry the eighth had ſtipulated to reſtore Boulogne in 1554, it ſeemed a matter of ſmall conſequence to anticipate a few years, the term of the treaty. But when he propoſed theſe reaſons to the council, he met with ſtrong oppoſition from his enemies, who, ſeeing him unable to ſupport the war, were determined, for that very reaſon, to oppoſe all propoſals for a pacification. The factions ran very high in the court of England; and matters were drawing to an iſſue, fatal to the authority of the protector. Chap. II. 1549.

AFTER Somerſet obtained the patent, inveſting him with regal authority, he no longer paid any attention to the opinion of the other counſellors; and being elated with his high dignity, as well as with his victory at Pinkey, he thought, that every one ought, in every thing, to yield to his ſentiments. All thoſe who were not entirely devoted to him, were ſure to be neglected; whoever oppoſed his will received marks of anger or contempt *; and while he ſhowed a reſolution to govern every thing, his capacity appeared not, in any reſpect, proportioned to his ambition. Warwic, more ſubtle and artful, covered more exorbitant views under fairer appearances; and having aſſociated himſelf with Southampton, who had been readmitted into the council, he formed a ſtrong party, who were determined to free themſelves from the ſlavery, impoſed on them by the protector. Factions in the council.

THE malecontent counſellors found the diſpoſition of the nation very favourable to their deſigns. The nobility and gentry were in general diſpleaſed with the preference, which Somerſet ſeemed to have given the people; and as they aſcribed all the inſults to which they had been lately expoſed, to his procraſtination, and to the encouragement given the multitude, ſo they apprehended a renewal of the ſame diſorders from his preſent affectation of popularity. He had erected a court of requeſts in his own houſe for the relief of the people †, and he interpoſed with the judges in their behalf; a meaſure which might be denominated illegal, if any exertion of prerogative, at that time, could with certainty deſerve that appellation. And this attempt, which was a ſtretch of power, ſeemed the more unpolitic, becauſe it diſguſted the nobility, the ſureſt ſupport of monarchical authority.

BUT tho' Somerſet courted the people, the intereſt, which he had formed with them, was in no degree anſwerable to his expectations. The catholic party, who retained influence with the multitude, were his declared enemies; and took advantage of every opportunity to decry his conduct. The attainder and execution of his brother bore an odious aſpect: The introduction of foreign troops into the

* Strype, vol. ii. p. 181. † Ib. p. 183.

kingdom,

Chap. IV. 1549.

kingdom, was repreſented in very invidious colours: The great eſtate which he had ſuddenly acquired, at the expence of the church and of the crown, rendered him obnoxious: And the palace which he was building in the Strand, ſerved, by its magnificence, and ſtill more by other circumſtances which attended it, to expoſe him to the cenſures of the public. The pariſh church of St. Mary, with three biſhops houſes, were pulled down, to furniſh ground and materials for this ſtructure: Not contented with that ſacrilege, an attempt was made to demoliſh St. Margaret's, Weſtminſter, and to employ the ſtones to the ſame purpoſe; but the pariſhioners roſe in a tumult, and chaced away the protector's tradeſmen. He then laid his hands on a chapel in St. Paul's Church-yard, with a cloiſter, and charnel-houſe belonging to it; and theſe edifices, together with a church of St. John of Jeruſalem, were made uſe of to raiſe his palace. What rendered the matter more odious to the people, was, that the tombs, and other monuments of the dead were defaced; and the bones carried away, and buried in unconſecrated ground *.

6th October. Conſpiracy againſt Somerſet.

ALL theſe imprudences were remarked by Somerſet's enemies, who reſolved to take advantage of them. The lord St. John, preſident of the council, the earls of Warwic, Southampton, and Arundel, with five counſellors more, met at Ely-houſe; and aſſuming to themſelves the whole power of the council, began to act independent of the protector, whom they repreſented as the author of every public grievance and misfortune. They wrote letters to the chief nobility and gentry in England, informing them of the preſent meaſures, and requiring their aſſiſtance: They ſent for the mayor and aldermen of London, and enjoined them to obey their orders, without regard to any contrary orders which they ſhould receive from the duke of Somerſet. They laid the ſame injunctions on the lieutenant of the tower, who expreſſed his reſolution to comply with them. Next day, Rich, lord chancellor, the marquis of Northampton, the earl of Shrewſbury, Sir Thomas Cheney, Sir John Gage, Sir Ralph Sadler, and the lord chief juſtice Montague, joined the malecontent counſellors; and every thing bore a bad aſpect for the protector's authority. Secretary Petre, whom he had ſent to treat with the council, choſe rather to remain with them; and the common council of the city, being applied to, declared with one voice their approbation of the new meaſures, and their reſolution of ſupporting them †.

THE protector had no ſooner heard of the defection of the counſellors, than he removed the King from Hampton-court, where he then reſided, to the caſtle

* Heylin, p. 72, 73. Stowe's Survey of London. Hayward, p. 303. 598. Hollinſhed, 1057.

† Stowe, p. 597,

of

of Windſor; and, arming his friends and ſervants, ſeemed reſolute to defend himſelf againſt all his enemies. But finding, that no man of rank, except Cranmer and Paget, adhered to him, that the people did not riſe at his ſummons, that the City and Tower had declared againſt him, that even his beſt friends and confidents had deſerted him, he loſt all hopes of ſucceſs, and began to apply to his enemies for pardon and forgiveneſs. No ſooner was this deſpondency known, than lord Ruſſel, Sir John Baker, ſpeaker of the houſe of commons, and three counſellors more, who had hitherto remained neuters, joined Warwic's party, whom every body now regarded as maſters. The council informed the public, by proclamation, of their actions and intentions; they wrote to the princeſſes Mary and Elizabeth, to the ſame purpoſe; they made addreſſes to the King, in which, after the humbleſt proteſtations of duty and obedience, they informed him, that they were the council appointed by his father, for the government of the kingdom during his minority; that they had choſen the duke of Somerſet protector, with the expreſs condition that he ſhould guide himſelf by their advice and direction; that he had uſurped the whole authority to himſelf, and had neglected, and even in every thing oppoſed, their advice; that he had proceeded to that height of preſumption, as to levy forces againſt them, and place theſe forces about his majeſty's perſon: They therefore begged, that they might be admitted to his royal preſence, that he would be pleaſed to reſtore them to his confidence, and that Somerſet's ſervants might be diſmiſſed. Their requeſt was complied with: Somerſet capitulated only for gentle treatment, which was promiſed him. He was, however, ſent to the Tower *, with ſome of his friends and partizans, among whom was Cecil, who was afterwards ſo much diſtinguiſhed. Articles of charge were exhibited againſt him †; of which the chief, at leaſt the beſt founded, is his uſurpation of the government, and his taking into his own hands the whole adminiſtration of affairs. The clauſe of his patent, which inveſted him with abſolute power, unlimited by any law, was never objected to him; plainly, becauſe, according to the ſentiments of thoſe times, that power was, in ſome degree, involved in the very idea of regal authority.

Chap. II. 1549.

Somerſet reſigns the protectorſhip.

The catholics were extremely elevated with this revolution; and as they had aſcribed all the late innovations to Somerſet's councils, they hoped, that his fall would prepare the way for the return of the ancient religion. But Warwic, who now bore chief ſway in the council, was entirely indifferent with regard to all theſe points of controverſy; and finding, that the principles of the reformation

* Stowe, p. 600. † Burnet, vol. ii. book i. coll. 46. Hayward, p. 308. Stowe, p. 601. Hollingſhed, p. 1059.

Chap. II. 1549. had ſunk deeper into the young prince's mind than to be eaſily eradicated, he was determined to comply with his inclinations, and not to hazard his new acquired power by any dangerous councils. He took care very early to expreſs his intentions of ſupporting the reformation; and he threw ſuch diſcouragements on Southampton, who ſtood at the head of the Romaniſts, and whom he conſidered as a dangerous rival, that the high-ſpirited nobleman retired from the council, and ſoon after died of vexation and diſappointment. The other counſellors, who had concurred in bringing about the revolution, received their reward, by promotions and new honours. Ruſſel was created earl of Bedford: The marquis of Northampton obtained the office of great chamberlain; and lord Wentworth, beſides the office of chamberlain of the houſhold, got two large manors, Stepney and Hackney, which were torne from the ſee of London *. A council of regency was formed, not that which Henry's will had appointed for the government of the kingdom, and which, being founded on an act of parliament, was the only legal one; but compoſed chiefly of members who had formerly been appointed by Somerſet, and who derived their ſeats from an authority which was now declared uſurped and illegal. But ſuch niceties were, during that age, little underſtood, and ſtill leſs regarded, in England.

4 November. A Parliament. A SESSION of Parliament was held; and as it was the uſual maxim of that aſſembly to acquieſce in every adminiſtration which was eſtabliſhed, the council dreaded no oppoſition from that quarter, and had reaſon rather to look for a corroboration of their authority. Somerſet had been prevailed with to confeſs, on his knees, before the council, all the articles of charge againſt him; and he imputed theſe miſdemeanors to his own raſhneſs, folly, and indiſcretion, not to any malignity of his intentions †. He even ſubſcribed this confeſſion; and the paper was given in to the Parliament, who, after ſending a committee to examine him, and hear him acknowlege it to be authentic, paſſed a vote, by which they deprived him of all his offices, and fined him in two thouſand pounds a year of land. Lord St. John was created treaſurer in his place, and Warwic earl marſhal. The proſecution againſt him was carried no farther. His fine was remitted by the King: He recovered his liberty: And Warwic, thinking that he was now ſufficiently humbled, and that his authority was much leſſened by his late tame and abject behaviour, readmitted him into the council, and even agreed to an alliance between their families, by the marriage of his ſon, lord Dudley, with the lady Jane Seymour, daughter to Somerſet ‡.

23 December.

* Heylin, p. 85. Rymer, tom. xv. p. 226. Stowe, p. 603.

† Heylin, p. 84. Heyward, p. 309.

‡ Heyward, p. 309.

DURING this ſeſſion a ſevere act was paſſed againſt riots *; that if any, to the number of twelve perſons, ſhould meet together for any matter of ſtate, and being required by any lawful magiſtrate, ſhould not diſperſe themſelves, it ſhould be treaſon; and if any broke hedges, or violently pulled up pales about incloſures, without lawful authority, it ſhould be felony: Any attempt to kill a privy counſellor, was ſubjected to the ſame penalty. The biſhops had made an application, complaining, that they were deprived of all their power, by the encroachments of the civil courts, and the preſent ſuſpenſion of the canon law; that they could ſummon no offenders before them, puniſh no vice, nor exert the diſcipline of the church: From which diminution of their authority, they pretended, immorality had every where received great encouragement and increaſe. The deſign of ſome was, to receive the penitentiary rules of the primitive church: But others thought, that ſuch an authority committed to the biſhops, would prove more oppreſſive than confeſſion, penance, and all the clerical inventions of the ancient ſuperſtition. The Parliament, for the preſent, contented themſelves with empowering the King to appoint thirty-two commiſſioners to frame a body of canon laws, which were to be valid though never ratified by parliament. Such implicit truſt did they repoſe in the crown, though all their liberties and properties might be effected by theſe canons †. The King died before the canons received the royal ſanction. Sir John Sharington, whoſe crimes and malverſations had appeared ſo egregious at the condemnation of lord Seymour, obtained from parliament a reverſal of his attainder ‡. This man ſought favour with the moſt zealous of the reformers; and biſhop Latimer aſſerted, that though formerly he was a moſt notorious knave, he was now ſo penitent, that he had become a very honeſt man. Chap. II. 1549.

WHEN Warwic and the council of regency began to exerciſe their power, they found themſelves involved in the ſame difficulties which had embarraſſed the protector. The wars with France and Scotland could not be ſupported by an exhauſted exchequer, ſeemed dangerous to a divided nation, and were now acknowledged not to have any object, which even the greateſt and moſt uninterrupted ſucceſs could attain. The project of peace which Somerſet entertained, had ſerved them as a pretence of clamour againſt his adminiſtration; yet after ſending Sir Thomas Cheney to the emperor, and making again a fruitleſs effort to engage him in the protection of Boulogne, they found themſelves obliged to liſten to the advances which Henry made them, by means of Guidotti, a Florentine merchant. 1550. Peace with France and Scotland.

* 3 & 4 Edw. VI. c. 5. † Ibid. cap. 2. ‡ Ibid. c. 13.

Chap. II. 1550.

The earl of Bedford, Sir John Maſon, Paget, and Petre, were ſent over to Boulogne, with full powers to negociate. The French King abſolutely refuſed to pay the two millions of crowns which his predeceſſor had acknowledged to be due to the crown of England, as arrears of penſions; and ſaid, that he never would conſent to render himſelf tributary to any prince: But he offered a ſum for the immediate reſtitution of Boulogne; and four hundred thouſand crowns were at laſt agreed on, one half to be paid immediately, the other in Auguſt following. Six hoſtages were given for the performance of this article. Scotland was comprehended in the treaty: The Engliſh ſtipulated to reſtore Lauder and Dunglas, and to demoliſh the fortreſſes of Roxburgh and Eymouth *. No ſooner was peace concluded with France, than a project was entertained of a cloſe union with that kingdom; and Henry very willingly embraced a propoſal ſo ſuitable both to his intereſts and inclinations. An agreement, ſome time after, was formed for a marriage between Edward and Elizabeth, a daughter of France; and all the articles were, after a little negociation, fully ſettled †: But this project never took effect.

Boulogne ſurrendered. 24 March.

THE intention of marrying the King to a daughter of Henry, who was a violent perſecutor of the proteſtants, was nowiſe acceptable to that party in England: But, in all other reſpects, the council was very ſteady in promoting the reformation, and in enforcing the laws againſt the Romaniſts. Many of the prelates were ſtill addicted to that communion; and though they made ſome compliances, in order to ſave their biſhoprics, they retarded, as much as they ſafely could, the execution of the new laws, and gave countenance to ſuch as were negligent or refractory. A reſolution was therefore taken to ſeek pretences for depriving them; and the execution of this intention was the more eaſy, as they had all of them been obliged to take commiſſions, in which it was declared, that they held their ſees only during the King's pleaſure. It was thought proper to begin with Gardiner, in order to ſtrike a terror into the reſt. The method of proceeding againſt him was extremely violent, and had ſcarce any colour of law or juſtice. It had been preſcribed him, to inculcate in a ſermon, the duty of obedience to a King even during his minority; and becauſe he had neglected this topic, he had been thrown into priſon, and had been there detained during two years, without being accuſed of any crime, except diſobedience to this arbitrary command. The duke of Somerſet, ſecretary Petre, and ſome others of the council, were now ſent, in order to try his temper, and endeavour to find ſome

Proſecution of Gardiner.

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 148. Heyward, 310, 311, 312. Rymer, vol. xv. p. 211. † Heyward, p. 318. Heylin, p. 104. Rymer, tom. xv. p. 293.

ground

ground for depriving him: He profeſſed to them his intention of conforming to the government, of ſupporting the King's laws, and of officiating by the new liturgy. This was not the diſpoſition which they expected or deſired *: A new deputation was therefore ſent, who carried him ſeveral articles to ſubſcribe. He was to acknowledge his former miſbehaviour, and confeſs the juſtice of his confinement: He was likewiſe to own, that the King was ſupreme head of the church; that the power of making and diſpenſing with holidays, was part of the prerogative; that the common-prayer book was a godly and commendable form; that the King was a compleat ſovereign in his minority; that the act of the ſix articles was juſtly repealed; and that the King had full authority to correct and reform what was amiſs in eccleſiaſtical diſcipline, government or doctrine. The biſhop was willing to put his hand to all the articles except the firſt: He maintained his conduct to have been inoffenſive; and declared, that he would not own himſelf guilty of faults which he had never committed †. Chap. II. 1550.

THE council, finding that he had gone ſuch lengths, were determined to prevent his full compliance, by multiplying the difficulties upon him, and ſending him new articles to ſubſcribe. A liſt was ſelected of ſuch points as they thought would be moſt hard of digeſtion; and not content with theſe, they inſiſted ſtill on his ſubmiſſion, and an acknowlegement of paſt errors. To make this ſubſcription more mortifying, they required a promiſe, that he would recommend and publiſh all theſe articles from the pulpit: But Gardiner, who ſaw, that they intended either to ruin or diſhonour him, or perhaps both, determined not to gratify his enemies by any farther compliances: He ſtill inſiſted on his innocence; deſired a fair trial; and refuſed to ſubſcribe more articles till he ſhould recover his liberty. For this pretended offence his biſhopric was put under ſequeſtration for three months; and as he then appeared no more compliant than at firſt, a commiſſion was appointed to try, or, more properly ſpeaking, to condemn him. The commiſſioners were, the primate, the biſhops of London, Ely, and Lincoln, ſecretary Petre, Sir James Hales, and ſome other lawyers. Gardiner objected to the legality of the commiſſion, which was not founded on any ſtatute or precedent; and he appealed from the commiſſioners to the King. His appeal was not regarded: Sentence was pronounced againſt him: He was deprived of his biſhopric: And committed to cloſe cuſtody: His books and papers were ſeized: All company was denied him; and it was not allowed him either to ſend or receive any letters or meſſages ‡.

* Heylin, p. 99. † Collier, vol. ii. p. 305. from the council books. Heylin, p. 99.
‡ Fox, vol. ii. p. 734, & ſeq. Burnet, Heylin, Collier.

GARDINER,

Chap. II. 1551.

GARDINER, as well as the other prelates, had agreed to hold his office during the King's pleaſure: But the council, unwilling to make uſe of a conceſſion which had been ſo illegally and arbitrarily exacted, choſe rather to employ ſome forms of juſtice; a reſolution which led them to commit ſtill greater iniquities and ſeverities. But the violence of the reformers did not ſtop there. Day, biſhop of Chicheſter, Heathe of Worceſter, and Voiſey of Exeter, were deprived of their biſhoprics, on pretence of diſobedience. Even Kitchen of Landaff, Capon of Saliſbury, and Sampſon of Coventry, tho' they had complied in every thing, yet not being ſuppoſed cordial or hearty in their obedience, were obliged to ſeek protection, by ſacrificing the moſt conſiderable revenues of their ſee, to the rapacious courtiers *.

THESE plunderers neglected not even ſmaller profits. An order was iſſued by council, for purging the library of Weſtminſter of all miſſals, legends, and other ſuperſtitious volumes, and delivering their garniture to Sir Anthony Aucher †. Many of theſe books were plaited with gold and ſilver, and curiouſly emboſſed; and this finery was probably the ſuperſtition that deſtroyed them. Great havoc was likewiſe made on the libraries of Oxford. Books and manuſcripts were deſtroyed without diſtinction: The volumes of divinity ſuffered for their rich binding: Thoſe of literature were condemned as uſeleſs: Thoſe of geometry and aſtronomy were ſuppoſed to contain nothing but necromancy ‡. The univerſity had not power to oppoſe theſe barbarous violences: They were in danger of loſing their own revenues; and expected every moment to be ſwallowed up by the earl of Warwick and his aſſociates.

THO' every thing beſide yielded to the authority of the council, the lady Mary could never be brought to compliance; and ſhe ſtill continued to adhere to the maſs, and to reject the new liturgy. Her behaviour was, during ſome time, connived at; but, at laſt, her two chaplains, Mallet and Berkeley, were thrown into priſon §; and the princeſs was remonſtrated with for her diſobedience. The council wrote her a letter, by which they endeavoured to make her change her ſentiments, and to perſuade her, that her religious faith was very ill grounded. They aſked her, what warrant there was in ſcripture for prayers in an unknown tongue, the uſe of images, or offering up the ſacrament for the dead; and they deſired her to peruſe St. Auſtin, and the other ancient doctors, who would convince her of the errors of the Romiſh ſuperſtition, and prove that it was founded merely on falſe miracles and lying ſtories ‖. The lady Mary remained obſtinate againſt

* Goodwin de præſul. Angl. Heylin, p. 100. † Collier, vol. ii. p. 307. from the council books. ‡ Wood. Hiſt. & Antiq. Oxon. lib. 1. p. 271, 272. § Strype, vol. ii. p. 249.
‖ Fox, vol. ii. Collier, Burnet.

all

all this advice, and proteſted herſelf willing to endure death rather than relinquiſh her religion: She only feared, ſhe ſaid, that ſhe was not worthy to ſuffer in ſo holy a cauſe: And as for proteſtant books, ſhe thanked God, that, as ſhe never had, ſo ſhe hoped never to read any of them. Dreading farther violence, ſhe endeavoured to make her eſcape to her kinſman Charles; but her deſign was diſcovered and prevented *. The emperor remonſtrated in her behalf, and even threatned hoſtilities, if liberty of conſcience was refuſed her: But tho' the council, ſenſible that the kingdom was in no condition to ſupport, with honour, ſuch a war, was deſirous to comply; they found great difficulty to overcome the ſcruples of the young King. He had been educated in ſuch a violent abhorrence of the maſs, and other popiſh rites, which he regarded as impious and idolatrous, that he ſhould participate, he thought, in the ſin, if he allowed its commiſſion: And when at laſt the importunity of Cranmer, Ridley, and Poinet, prevailed ſomewhat over his oppoſition, he burſt into tears, lamenting his ſiſter's obſtinacy, and bewailing his own fate, that he muſt ſuffer her to continue in ſuch an abominable mode of worſhip. Chap. II. 1551.

THE great object, at this time, of antipathy among the proteſtant ſects, was popery, or, more properly ſpeaking, the papiſts. Theſe they regarded as the common enemy, who threatened every moment to overwhelm the evangelical faith, and deſtroy its partizans by fire and ſword: They had not as yet had leiſure to attend to the other minute diviſions among themſelves, which afterwards became the object of ſuch furious quarrels and animoſities, and threw the whole kingdom into confuſion. Several Lutheran divines, who had reputation in thoſe days, Bucer, Peter Martyr, and others, were induced to take ſhelter in England, from the perſecutions which the emperor exerciſed in Germany; and they received protection and encouragement. John A-laſco, a Poliſh nobleman, being expelled his country by the rigours of the catholics, ſettled, during ſome time, at Embden in Eaſt-Friezland, where he became preacher to a congregation of the reformed. Foreſeeing the perſecutions which enſued, he removed to England, and brought his congregation along with him. The council, who regarded them as induſtrious, uſeful people, and deſired to invite over others of the ſame character, not only gave them Auguſtine friars church for the exerciſe of their religion, but granted them a charter, by which they were erected into a corporation, conſiſting of a ſuperintendant and four aſſiſting miniſters. This eccleſiaſtical eſtabliſhment was quite independant of the church of England, and differed from it in ſome rites and ceremonies †.

* Heyward, p. 315. † Mem. Cranm. p. 234.

THESE

Chap. II. 1551.

THESE differences among the proteſtants were matter of triumph to the catholics, who inſiſted, that the moment men departed from the authority of the church, they loſt all criterion of truth and falſehood in matters of religion, and muſt be carried away by every wind of doctrine. The continual variations of every ſect of proteſtants, afforded them the ſame topic of reaſoning. The book of common prayer ſuffered in England a new reviſal, and ſome rites and ceremonies, which had given offence, were omitted *. The ſpeculative doctrines, or the metaphyſics of the religion, were alſo fixed in forty-two articles. Theſe articles were intended to obviate further diviſions and variations; and the framing them had been poſtponed till the eſtabliſhment of the liturgy, which was regarded as a more material object to the people. The eternity of hell torments is aſſerted in the articles; and care is alſo taken to inculcate, not only that no heathen, however virtuous, can eſcape an endleſs ſtate of the moſt exquiſite miſery, but alſo that every one who preſumes to maintain, that any pagan can poſſibly be ſaved, is himſelf expoſed to the penalty of eternal perdition †.

THE theological zeal of the council, tho' ſeemingly fervent, went not ſo far as to make them neglect their own temporal concerns, which ſeem to have been ever uppermoſt in their thoughts: They even found leiſure to attend to the public intereſt; nay, to the commerce of the nation, which was, at that time, very little the object of general ſtudy or attention. The trade of England had anciently been carried on altogether by foreigners, chiefly the inhabitants of the Hanſe-towns, or Eaſterlings, as they were called; and in order to encourage theſe merchants to ſettle in England, they had been erected into a corporation by Henry the third, had obtained a patent, were endowed with privileges, and were exempted from ſeveral heavy duties paid by aliens. So ignorant were the Engliſh of commerce, that this company, commonly denominated the merchants of the Steel-yard, engroſſed almoſt the whole foreign trade of the kingdom; and as they naturally employed the ſhipping of their own country, the navigation of England was alſo in a very languiſhing condition. It was therefore thought proper by the council to find pretences for annulling the privileges of this corporation, privileges which put them nearly on an equal footing with Engliſhmen in the duties which they paid; and as ſuch patents were, during that age, granted by the abſolute power of the King, men were the leſs ſurprized to find them recalled by the ſame authority. Several remonſtrances were made againſt this innovation, by Lubec, Hamburgh, and other Hanſe-towns; but the council perſevered in their reſolution, and the good effects of it became ſoon viſible to the nation. The Engliſh merchants, by their very ſituation as natives, had advantages

* Mem. Cranm. p. 289. † Article xviii.

above foreigners, in the purchaſe of cloth, wool, and other commodities; tho' theſe advantages had not been ſufficient to rouſe their induſtry, or engage them to become rivals to this opulent company: But when aliens duty was alſo impoſed upon all foreigners indiſcriminately, the Engliſh were tempted to enter into commerce, and a ſpirit of induſtry began to appear in the kingdom *. Chap. II. 1551.

About the ſame time a treaty was made with Guſtavus Ericſon, King of Sweden, by which it was ſtipulated, that if he ſent bullion into England, he might carry away Engliſh commodities without paying cuſtom, that he ſhould carry bullion to no other prince, that if he ſent ozimus, ſteel, copper, &c. he ſhould pay cuſtom for Engliſh commodities as an Engliſhman, and that if he ſent other merchandize, he ſhould have free intercourſe, paying cuſtom as a ſtranger †. The bullion ſent over by Sweden ſet the mint to work: Good ſpecie was coined: And much of the baſe metal, formerly iſſued, was recalled: A circumſtance which tended extremely to the encouragement of commerce.

But all theſe ſchemes for the improvement of induſtry were like to prove abortive, by the fear of domeſtic convulſions, ariſing from the exorbitant ambition of Warwic. That nobleman, not contented with the ſtation which he had attained, carried farther his pretenſions, and had gained to himſelf partizans who were diſpoſed to ſecond him in every enterprize. The laſt earl of Northumberland died without iſſue; and as Sir Thomas Piercy, his brother, had been attainted on account of the ſhare which he had in the Yorkſhire inſurrection during the late reign, the title was at preſent extinct, and the eſtate was veſted in the crown. Warwic now procured to himſelf a grant of thoſe ample poſſeſſions, which lay chiefly in the North, the moſt warlike part of the kingdom; and he was dignified with the title of duke of Northumberland. His friend, Paulet, lord St. John, the treaſurer, was created firſt earl of Wiltſhire, then marqueſs of Wincheſter: Sir William Herbert was made earl of Pembroke. Warwic created duke of Northumberland.

But the ambition of Northumberland made him regard all increaſe of poſſeſſions and titles, either to himſelf or partizans, as ſteps only to further acquiſitions. Finding that Somerſet, tho' degraded from his dignity, and even leſſened in the public opinion by his ſpiritleſs conduct, ſtill enjoyed a conſiderable ſhare of popularity, he determined to ruin a man whom he regarded as the chief obſtacle to the attainment of his hopes. The alliance which had been formed between the families had produced no cordial union, and only enabled Northumberland to compaſs with more certainty the deſtruction of his rival. He ſecretly gained many of the friends and ſervants of that unhappy nobleman: He ſome- His ambition.

* Heyward, p. 326. Heylin, p. 108. Strype's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 295. † Heylin, p. 109.

Chap. II. 1551. times terrified him by the appearance of danger: Sometimes provoked him by ill uſage. The unguarded Somerſet often broke out into menacing expreſſions againſt Northumberland: At other times he formed raſh projects, which he immediately abandoned: His treacherous confidents carried to his enemy every paſſionate word which dropped from him: They revealed the ſchemes, which they themſelves had firſt ſuggeſted *: And Northumberland, thinking that the proper ſeaſon was now come, began to act in an open manner againſt him.

16th October. In one night, the duke of Somerſet, the lord Grey, David and John Seymour, Hammond and Neudigate, two of the duke's ſervants, Sir Ralph Vane, and Sir Thomas Palmer, were arreſted and committed to cuſtody. Next day, the dutcheſs of Somerſet, with her favourites, Crane and his wife, Sir Miles Partridge, Sir Michael Stanhope, Banniſter, and others were thrown into priſon. Sir Thomas Palmer, who had all along acted the part of a ſpy upon Somerſet, accuſed him of having formed a deſign to raiſe an inſurrection in the north, to attack the gens d'armes on a muſter-day, to ſecure the Tower, and to excite a rebellion in London: But what was the only probable accuſation, he aſſerted, that Somerſet had once laid a project for murdering Northumberland, Northampton, and Pembroke at a banquet, which was to be given them by lord Paget. Crane and his wife confirmed Palmer's teſtimony with regard to this laſt deſign; and it appears that ſome raſh ſcheme of that nature had been mentioned; tho' no regular conſpiracy had been formed, nor means prepared for its execution. Hammond confeſſed, that the duke had armed men to guard him one night in his houſe at Greenwich.

Trial of Somerſet. Somerset was brought to his trial before the marquis of Wincheſter, who acted as high ſteward. Twenty-ſeven peers ſat as the jury, among whom were Northumberland, Pembroke, and Northampton, whom decency ſhould have hindered from acting as judges in the trial of a man, who appeared to be their capital enemy. Somerſet was accuſed of high treaſon on account of the projected inſurrections, and of felony in forming a deſign to murder privy counſellors.

We have a very imperfect account of all ſtate trials during that age, which is a ſenſible defect in our hiſtory: But it appears, that ſome more regularity was obſerved in the management of this proſecution than had been uſually employed in like caſes. The witneſſes were at leaſt examined by the privy council; and tho' they were neither produced in court, nor confronted with the priſoner (circumſtances required by the ſtrict principles of equity) their depoſitions were given in to the jury. The proof ſeems to have been very lame with

1st December.

* Heylin, p. 112.

regard

regard to the treaſonable part of the charge; and Somerſet's defence was ſo ſatiſfactory, that the peers gave verdict in his favour: The intention alone of aſſaulting the privy counſellors was ſupported by any tolerable evidence; and the jury brought him in guilty of felony. The priſoner himſelf confeſſed, that he had mentioned the deſign of murdering Northumberland and the other lords; but had not formed any reſolution on that head: And when he received ſentence, he aſked pardon of thoſe peers for the deſigns which he had hearkened to againſt them. The people, by whom Somerſet was beloved, hearing the firſt part of his ſentence, by which he was abſolved from treaſon, expreſſed their joy by loud acclamations: But their ſatisfaction was ſuddenly damped, on finding that he was condemned to death for felony *. Chap. II. 1551.

CARE had been taken by Northumberland's emiſſaries, to prepoſſeſs the young King againſt his uncle; and leſt he ſhould relent, no acceſs was given to any of Somerſet's friends, and the prince was kept from reflection by a continued ſeries of occupations and amuſements. At laſt the priſoner was brought to the ſcaffold on Tower-hill, amidſt great crouds of ſpectators, who bore him ſuch ſincere kindneſs, that they entertained, to the laſt moment, the fond hopes of his pardon †. Many of them ruſhed in to dip their handkerchiefs in his blood, which they long preſerved as a precious relique; and ſome of them ſoon after, when Northumberland met with a like doom, upbraided him with this cruelty, and diſplayed to him theſe ſymbols of his crime. Somerſet indeed, tho' many actions of his life were very exceptionable, ſeems, in general, to have merited a better fate; and the faults, which he committed, were owing to weakneſs, not to any bad intentions. His virtues were better calculated for private than for public life; and by his want of penetration and firmneſs, he was ill-fitted to extricate himſelf from thoſe cabals and violences to which that age was ſo much addicted. Sir Thomas Arundel, Sir Michael Stanhope, Sir Miles Partridge, and Sir Ralph Vane, all of them Somerſet's friends, were brought to their trial, condemned and executed: Great injuſtice ſeems to have been uſed in their proſecution. Lord Paget, chancellor of the dutchy, was, on ſome pretence, tried in the Star-chamber, and condemned in a fine of 6000 pounds, with the loſs of his office. To mortify him the more, he was degraded from the order of the garter; as unworthy, on account of his mean birth, to ſhare that honour ‡. Lord Rich, chancellor, was alſo compelled to reſign his office, on the diſcovery of ſome friendſhip which he had ſhewn to Somerſet. 1552. His execution. 22d January.

* Hayward, p. 320, 321, 322. Stowe, p. 606. Hollingſhed, p. 1067.

† Hayward, p. 324, 325. ‡ Stowe, p. 608.

Chap. II. 1552.

23d January. A Parliament.

THE day after the execution of Somerſet, a ſeſſion of parliament was held, where farther advances were made for the eſtabliſhment of the reformation. The new liturgy was authorized; and penalties were enacted againſt all ſuch as abſented themſelves from public worſhip *. To uſe the maſs had already been prohibited under very ſevere penalties; ſo that the reformers, it appears, whatever ſcope they had given to their own private judgment, in diſputing the tenets of the ancient religion, were reſolved not to allow the ſame privilege to others; and the practice, nay the very doctrine of toleration, was, at that time, equally unknown to all ſects and parties. To diſſent from the religion of the magiſtrate was univerſally conceived to be as criminal as to queſtion his title, or rebel againſt his authority.

A LAW was enacted againſt uſury; that is, againſt taking any intereſt for money †. This act was the effect of ancient ſuperſtitions; but being found extremely iniquitous in itſelf, as well as prejudicial to commerce, it was afterwards repealed in the twelfth of Elizabeth. The common rate of intereſt, notwithſtanding the law, was at that time 14 per cent. ‡

A BILL was introduced by the miniſtry into the houſe of lords, renewing thoſe rigorous ſtatutes of treaſons, which had been abrogated in the beginning of this reign; and tho' the peers, by their high ſtation, ſtood moſt expoſed to theſe tempeſts of ſtate, yet had they ſo little regard to public ſecurity, or even to their own true intereſts, that they paſſed the bill with only one diſſenting voice §. But the commons rejected it, and prepared a new bill, that paſſed into a law, by which it was enacted, that whoever ſhould call the King or any of his heirs, named in the ſtatute of the 35th of the laſt reign, heretic, ſchiſmatic, tyrant, infidel, or uſurper of the crown, ſhould forfeit, for the firſt offence, their goods and chattels, and be impriſoned during pleaſure; for the ſecond, ſhould incur a *præmunire*; for the third, ſhould be attainted of treaſon. But if any ſhould unadviſedly advance ſuch a ſlander in writing, printing, painting, carving or graving, he was, for the firſt offence, to be held a traitor ‖. It may be worthy of notice, that the King, and his next heir, the lady Mary, were profeſſedly of different religions; and religions, which threw on each other the imputation of hereſy, ſchiſm, idolatry, prophaneneſs, blaſphemy, wickedneſs, and all the opprobrious epithets that religious zeal has invented. It was almoſt impoſſible, therefore, for the people, if they ſpoke on theſe ſubjects at all, not to fall into the crime, ſo ſeverely puniſhed by this ſtatute; and the jealouſy of the commons

* 5 & 6 Edw. VI. c. 1. † Ib. c. 20. ‡ Hayward, p. 318. § Parliamentary Hiſt. vol. iii. p. 258. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 190. ‖ 5 & 6 Edw. VI. cap. 2.

for liberty, tho' it led them to diſſent from the lords, appears not to have been very active, vigilant or clear-ſighted.

THE commons annexed to this bill a clauſe which was of much more importance than the bill itſelf, that no one ſhould be convicted of any kind of treaſon, unleſs the crime was proved by the oaths of two witneſſes, who were confronted with the priſoner. The lords ſcrupled to paſs this clauſe; tho' required by the moſt obvious principles of equity, and tho' their own intereſt was fully as much concerned as that of the commons. But the members of that houſe truſted for protection to their preſent perſonal intereſt and power, and neglected the nobleſt and moſt permanent ſecurity, that of the laws.

A BILL was introduced into the houſe of peers for making a proviſion for the poor; but the commons, not chuſing that a money-bill ſhould begin in the upper-houſe, framed a new bill to the ſame purpoſe. By this bill, the church-wardens were empowered to collect charitable contributions for the poor, and if any refuſed to contribute, or diſſuaded others from that charity, the biſhop of the dioceſe was empowered to proceed againſt them. Such large diſcretionary powers, entruſted to the prelates, ſeem as proper an object of jealouſy as the authority aſſumed by the peers *.

THERE was another occaſion in which the Parliament repoſed an unuſual confidence in the biſhops. They empowered them to proceed againſt ſuch as neglected the Sundays and holydays †. But theſe were unguarded conceſſions granted to the church: The general humour of the times led men to bereave the eccleſiaſtics of all their power, and even to pillage them of all their property: Many clergymen were obliged for a ſubſiſtence to turn carpenters or taylors, and ſome kept alehouſes ‡. The biſhops themſelves were generally reduced to poverty, and held both their revenues and ſpiritual office by a very precarious and uncertain tenure.

TONSTAL, biſhop of Durham, was one of the moſt eminent prelates of that age, ſtill leſs for the dignity of his ſee, than for his own perſonal merit, his learning, moderation, humanity, and beneficence. He had oppoſed, by his vote and authority, all the innovations in religion; but ſo ſoon as they were enacted, he had always ſubmitted, and had paid conformity to each ſyſtem of religion, which was eſtabliſhed. His known probity had made this compliance be aſcribed, not to an intereſted or time-ſerving ſpirit, but to a ſenſe of duty, which led him to think that all private opinions ought to be ſacrificed to the great concerns of public peace and tranquillity. That general regard which

* 5 & 6 Edw. VI. cap. 2. † Ib. cap. 3. ‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 202.

was

Chap. II. 1552. was paid his character, had preſerved him from any ſevere treatment during the protectorſhip of Somerſet; but when Northumberland gained the aſcendant, he was thrown into priſon; and as that rapacious nobleman had laid a deſign of appropriating the revenues of the ſee of Durham, and of forming to himſelf a principality in the northern counties, he was reſolved, in order to effectuate his purpoſe, to deprive Tonſtal of his biſhopric. A bill of attainder, therefore, on pretence of miſpriſion of treaſon, was introduced into the houſe of peers againſt that prelate; and it paſſed with the oppoſition only of Lord Stourton, a zealous catholic, and of Cranmer, who always bore a cordial and ſincere friendſhip to the biſhop of Durham. But when the bill was ſent down to the commons, they required that witneſſes ſhould be examined, that Tonſtal ſhould be allowed to defend himſelf, and that he ſhould be confronted with his accuſers. And when theſe demands were refuſed, they rejected the bill.

THIS equity, ſo unuſual in the parliament during that age, was aſcribed by Northumberland and his partizans, not to any regard for liberty and juſtice, but to the prevalence of Somerſet's faction in a houſe of commons, which, being choſen during the adminiſtration of that nobleman, had been almoſt entirely filled with his creatures. They were confirmed in this opinion, when they found, that a bill ratifying the attainder of Somerſet and his accomplices was alſo rejected by the commons, tho' it had paſſed the upper houſe. A reſolution was therefore taken
15th April. to diſſolve the Parliament, which had ſat during this whole reign; and ſoon after to ſummon a new one.

A new Parliament. NORTHUMBERLAND, in order to enſure to himſelf a houſe of commons entirely obſequious to his will, ventured on an expedient which could no have been practiſed, or even thought of, in an age, when there was any idea or comprehenſion of liberty. He engaged the King to write circular letters to all the ſheriffs, in which he enjoined them to inform the freeholders and voters, that they were required to chooſe men of knowledge and experience for their repreſentatives. After this general exhortation, the King continued in theſe words. "And yet, nevertheleſs, our pleaſure is, that where our privy council, or any of "them ſhall, in our behalf, recommend, within their juriſdiction, men of learn-"ing and wiſdom; in ſuch caſes, their directics ſhall be regarded and followed, "as tending to the ſame end which we deſire, that is, to have his aſſembly "compoſed of the perſons in our realm the moſt fitted to give advice and good "council*." Several letters were ſent from the King, recommending members to particular counties, Sir Richard Cotton for Hampſhire; Sir William Fitzwilliams and Sir Henry Neville for Berkſhire; Sir William Drury and Sir Henry

* Strype's Eccleſ. Memorials, vol. ii. p. 394.

Benningfield

Beningfield for Suffoll, &c. But tho' ſome counties only received this ſpecies of *congé d'elire* from the King; the recommendations from the privy council and the councellors, we may fairly preſume, would extend to the greateſt part, if not to the whole, of the kingdom. Chap. II. 1552.

It is remarkable, that this attempt was made during the reign of a minor King, when the royal authority is uſually weakeſt; that it was patiently ſubmitted to; and that it gave ſo little embrage as ſcarce to be taken notice of by any hiſtorian. The painful and laborious collector above cited, who never omits the moſt trivial matters, is the only perſon, that has thought this memorable letter worthy of being tranſmitted to poſterity.

The Parliament anſweed Northumberland's expectations. As Tonſtal had in the interval been deprived of his biſhopric after a very arbitrary manner, by the ſentence of lay commiſſioners, appointed to try him, the ſee of Durham was by act of Parliament divided into two biſhoprics, which had certain portions of the revenue aſſigned them. The regalities of the ſee, which included the juriſdiction of a count palatine, were given by the King to Northumberland; and it was not to be doubted but that no leman had alſo propoſed to make rich plunder of the revenue, as was then the uſual practice of the courtiers, whenever a biſhopric became vacant. 1553. 1st March.

The commons gave the miniſtry another mark of attachment, which was at that time the moſt ſincere, the moſt cordial, and the moſt difficult to be obtained: They granted a ſupply of two ſubſidies and two fifteenths. To render this preſent the more acceptable they voted a preamble, containing a long accuſation of Somerſet, "for involving the King in wars, waſting his treaſure, ingaging "him in much debt, embaſing the coin, and giving occaſion for a moſt terrible "rebellion *."

The debts of the crown were at this time very conſiderable. The King had received from France 40,000 crowns on delivering Boulogne; he had reaped profits from the ſale of ſome chantry lands; the churches had been deſpoiled of all their plate and rich ornaments, which, by a decree of council, without any pretence of law or equity, had been converted to the King's uſe †: Yet ſuch had been the rapacity of the courtiers, that the crown owed about 300,000 pounds ‡; and great dilapidations were, at the ſame time, made of the royal demeſnes. The young prince ſhowed, among other virtues, a diſpoſition to frugality, which, had he lived, would ſoon have retrieved theſe loſſes: But as his health was declining very faſt, the preſent emptineſs of the exchequer was a

* 7 Edw. VI. cap. 12. † Heylin, p. 95, 132. ‡ Strype's Eccleſ. Mem. vol. ii. p. 344.

ſenſible

Chap. II. 1553. ſenſible obſtacle to the execution of thoſe projects, which the ambition of Northumberland had founded on the proſpect of Edward's approaching end.

Succeſſion changed.

THAT nobleman repreſented to the prince, whom youth and an infirm ſtate of health made ſuſceptible of every impreſſion, that his two ſiſters, Mary and Elizabeth, had both been declared illegitimate by act of Parliament, and tho' Henry by his will had reſtored them to a place in the ſucceſſion, the nation would never bear to ſee the throne of England filled by a baſtard: That they were only the King's ſiſters by the half-blood; and even if they were legitimate, could not enjoy the crown as his heirs and ſucceſſors: That the Queen of Scots ſtood excluded by the king's will; and being an alien, loſt by the law all right of inheriting; not to mention, that, as ſhe was betrothed to the dauphin, ſhe would, by her ſucceſſion, render England, as ſhe had already done Scotland, a province to France: That the certain conſequence of his ſiſter Mary's ſucceſſion, or that of the Queen of Scots, was the abolition of the proteſtant religion, the repeal of thoſe laws enacted in favour of the reformation, and the re-eſtabliſhment of the uſurpations and idolatry of the church of Rome: That fortunately for England, the ſame order of ſucceſſion, which juſtice required, was alſo the moſt conformable to public intereſt; and there was not on any ſide any juſt ground for doubt or deliberation: That when theſe three princeſſes were excluded by ſuch ſolid reaſons, the ſucceſſion devolved to the marchioneſs of Dorſet, eldeſt daughter to the French Queen and the duke of Suffolk: That the next heir of the marchioneſs was the lady Jane Gray, a lady of the moſt amiable virtue, accompliſhed by the beſt education, both in literature and religion; and every way worthy of a throne: And that even, if her title by blood ſhould be doubtful, which there was no juſt reaſon to pretend, the King was poſſeſſed of the ſame power, which his father enjoyed; and might leave her the crown by letters patent. Theſe reaſonings made impreſſion on the young prince; and above all, his zealous affection for the proteſtant religion made him apprehend the conſequences, if ſo bigoted a catholic as his ſiſter Mary ſhould ſucceed to the throne. And tho' he bore a tender affection to the lady Elizabeth, who was liable to no ſuch objection, means were found to perſuade him, that he could not exclude the one ſiſter, on account of illegitimacy, without alſo giving an excluſion to the other.

NORTHUMBERLAND, finding that his arguments were likely to operate on the King, began to prepare the other parts of that political fabric, which he intended to raiſe. Two ſons of the duke of Suffolk by a ſecond venter having died, this ſeaſon, of the ſweating ſickneſs, that title was extinct; and Northumberland engaged the King to beſtow it on the marquis of Dorſet. By means of this

this favour and of others, which he conferred upon him, he perſuaded the new duke of Suffolk and the dutcheſs, to give their daughter, the lady Jane, in marriage to his fourth ſon, the lord Guilford Dudley. In order to fortify himſelf by farther alliances, he negotiated a marriage between the lady Catherine Gray, ſecond daughter to Suffolk, and lord Herbert, eldeſt ſon to the earl of Pembroke. He alſo married his own daughter to lord Haſtings, eldeſt ſon to the earl of Huntingdon*. Theſe marriages were ſolemnized with great pomp and feſtivity; and the people, who hated Northumberland, could not forbear expreſſing their indignation at ſeeing theſe public demonſtrations of joy, during the languiſhing ſtate of the young prince's health. Chap. II. 1553.

EDWARD had been ſeized in the foregoing year, firſt with the meaſles, then with the ſmallpox; but having perfectly recovered from both theſe diſtempers, the nation entertained hopes, that they would only ſerve to confirm his health; and he had afterwards made a progreſs thro' ſome parts of the kingdom. It was ſuſpected, that he had there over-heated himſelf in exerciſes: He was ſeized with a cough, which proved obſtinate, and gave way neither to regimen or medicines: Several fatal ſymptoms of a conſumption appeared; and tho' it was hoped, that, as the ſeaſon of the year advanced, his youth and temperance might get the better of the malady, men ſaw with great concern his bloom and vigour inſenſibly decay. The general attachment to the young prince, joined to the hatred borne the Dudleys, made it be remarked, that Edward had every moment declined in health, from the time that lord Robert Dudley had been put about him, in the quality of gentleman of the bedchamber. The King's ſickneſs.

THE languiſhing ſtate of Edward's health made Northumberland the more intent on the execution of his project. He removed all, except his own emiſſaries, from about the King: He himſelf attended him with the greateſt aſſiduity: He pretended the moſt anxious concern for his health and welfare: And by all theſe artifices, he prevailed on him to give his final conſent to the ſettlement projected. Sir Edward Montague, chief juſtice of the Common Pleas, Sir John Baker and Sir Thomas Bromley, two judges, with the attorney and ſollicitor general were ſent for to the council; where, after the minutes of the intended deed were read to them, the King required them to draw them up in the form of letters patent. They heſitated in obeying this order; and deſired time to conſider of it. The more they reflected, the greater danger they found in compliance. The ſettlement of the crown by Henry the eighth had been made in conſequence of an act of Parlament; and by another act, paſſed in the beginning of this reign, it was declared treaſon in any of the heirs, their aiders or abettors, to attempt on the

* Heylin, p. 109. Stowe, 609.

Chap. II. 1553. right of another, or change the order of ſucceſſion. The judges pleaded theſe reaſons before the council. They urged, that ſuch a patent as was intended would be entirely invalid; that it would ſubject, not only the judges who drew it, but every counſellor who ſigned it, to the pains of treaſon; and that the only proper expedient, both to give force to the new ſettlement, and free its partizans from danger, was to ſummon a Parliament, and obtain the conſent and ſanction of that aſſembly. The King ſaid, that he intended afterwards to follow that method, and would call a Parliament, in which he propoſed to have his ſettlement ratified; but in the mean time, he required the judges, on their allegiance, to draw the patent in the form required. The council told the judges, that their refuſal would ſubject them all to the pains of treaſon. Northumberland gave to Montague the appellation of traitor; and ſaid that he would fight in his ſhirt with any man in ſo juſt a cauſe as that of the lady Jane's ſucceſſion. The judges were reduced to great difficulties between the dangers of the law, and thoſe ariſing from the violence of preſent power and authority *.

THE arguments were canvaſſed in ſeveral different meetings between the council and the judges; and no ſolution could be found of the preſent difficulties. At laſt, Montague propoſed an expedient, which ſatisfied both his brethren and the counſellors. He deſired, that a ſpecial commiſſion ſhould be paſſed by the King and council, requiring the judges to draw a patent for the new ſettlement of the crown; and that a pardon ſhould immediately after be granted them for any offence which they might have incurred by their compliance. When the patent was drawn and brought to the biſhop of Ely, chancellor, in order to paſs the great ſeal, that prelate required, that all the judges ſhould ſign it. Goſnald at firſt refuſed; and it was with much difficulty, that he was prevailed on, by the violent menaces of Northumberland, to comply; but the conſtancy of Sir James Hales, who, tho' a zealous proteſtant, preferred juſtice on this occaſion to the prejudices of his party, could not be ſhaken by any expedient. The chancellor next required, for his greater ſecurity, that all the privy counſellors ſhould ſet their hands to the patent: The intrigues of Northumberland or the fears of his violence were ſo prevalent, that the counſellors complied with his demand. Cranmer alone heſitated during ſome time, but yielded at laſt to the earneſt and pathetic entreaties of the King †. Cecil, at that time ſecretary of ſtate, pretended afterwards that he only ſigned as a witneſs to the King's ſubſcription. And thus, by the King's letters patent, the two princeſſes, Mary and Elizabeth, were ſet aſide; and the crown was ſettled on the heirs of the dutcheſs of Suffolk: For the dutcheſs herſelf was content to be poſtponed to her daughters.

21ſt June.

* Fuller, book viii. p. 2. † Cranm. Mem. p. 295.

AFTER

Chap. II. 1553.

AFTER this ſettlement was made, with ſo many inauſpicious circumſtances, Edward declined viſibly every day in his health; and ſmall hopes were entertained of his recovery. To make the matter worſe, his phyſicians were diſmiſſed by Northumberland's advice and by an order of council; and he was put into the hands of an ignorant woman, who undertook, in a little time, to reſtore him to his former ſtate of health. After the uſe of her medicines, all the bad ſymptoms increaſed to the moſt violent degree: He felt a difficulty of ſpeech and breathing; his pulſe failed, his legs ſwelled, his colour became livid; and many other ſymptoms appeared of his approaching end. He expired at Greenwich in the ſixteenth year of his age, and the ſeventh of his reign.

And death. 6th July.

ALL the Engliſh hiſtorians dwell with pleaſure on the excellencies of this young prince; whom the flattering promiſes of hope, joined to many real virtues, had made an object of the moſt tender affections of the public. He poſſeſſed mildneſs of diſpoſition, application to ſtudy and buſineſs, a capacity to learn and judge, and an attachment to equity and juſtice. He ſeems only to have contracted from his education and from the age in which he lived, too much of a narrow prepoſſeſſion in matters of religion, which made him incline ſomewhat to bigotry and perſecution: But as the bigotry of proteſtants, leſs governed by prieſts, lies under more reſtraints than that of catholics, the effects of this malignant quality were the leſs to be apprehended, if a longer life had been granted to young Edward.

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, UNDER THE HOUSE of TUDOR.

MARY.

CHAP. I.

Lady Jane Gray proclaimed Queen.——Deserted by the people.——The Queen proclaimed and acknowledged.——Northumberland executed. Catholic religion restored.——A Parliament.——Deliberations with regard to the Queen's marriage.——Queen's marriage with Philip. ——Wyat's insurrection.——Suppressed.——Execution of lady Jane Gray.——A Parliament.——Philip's arrival in England.

THE title of the princess Mary to the crown, after the decease of her brother, was not liable to any considerable difficulty; and the objections started by the lady Jane's partizans, were new and unheard of by the nation. Tho' all the protestants, and even many of the catholics, believed the marriage of Henry the eighth with Catherine of Arragon to be unlawful and invalid; yet as it had been contracted by the parties without any criminal intention, had been avowed by their parents, recognized by the nation, and seemed founded on those principles of law and religion, which then prevailed, very few imagined, that their issue ought on that account to be regarded as illegitimate. A declaration to that purpose had indeed been extorted from the Parliament by the usual violence and caprice of Henry; but as that monarch had afterwards been induced to restore his daughter to the right of succession, her 1553

Chap. I. 1553. title was now become as legal and parliamentary as it was ever eſteemed juſt and natural. The public had been long familiarized to theſe ſentiments: During all the reign of Edward, the princeſs was conſidered as his lawful ſucceſſor: And tho' the proteſtants dreaded the effects of her prejudices, the extreme hatred, univerſally entertained againſt the Dudleys *, who, men foreſaw, would, under the name of Jane, be the real ſovereigns, was more than ſufficient to counterballance, even with that party, the attachment to religion. This laſt attempt, to violate the order of ſucceſſion, had diſplayed Northumberland's ambition and injuſtice in a full light; and when the people reflected on the long train of fraud, iniquity and cruelty, by which that project had been conducted; that the lives of the two Seymours, as well as the title of the princeſſes, had been ſacrificed to it; they were moved by indignation to exert themſelves in oppoſition to ſuch criminal enterprizes. The general veneration alſo, paid to the memory of Henry the eighth, prompted the nation to defend the rights of his poſterity; and the miſeries of the ancient civil wars were not ſo entirely forgotten, that men were willing, by a departure from the lawful heir, to incur the danger of like bloodſhed and confuſion.

NORTHUMBERLAND, ſenſible of the oppoſition which he muſt expect, had carefully concealed the deſtination made by the King; and in order to bring the two princeſſes into his power, he had had the precaution to engage the council, before Edward's death, to write to them in that prince's name, deſiring their attendance, on pretence that his infirm ſtate of health required the aſſiſtance of their counſel, and the conſolation of their company †. Edward expired before their arrival; but Northumberland, in order to make the princeſſes fall into the ſnare, kept the king's death ſtill ſecret; and the lady Mary had already reached Hoddeſden, within half a day's journey of the court. Happily, the earl of Arundel ſent her private intelligence, both of her brother's death, and of the conſpiracy formed againſt her ‡: She immediately made haſte to retire; and arrived by quick journeys, firſt at Kenning hall in Norfolk, then at Framlingham in Suffolk; where ſhe propoſed to embark and retire to Flanders, in caſe ſhe ſhould find it impoſſible to defend her right of ſucceſſion. She wrote letters to the nobility and moſt conſiderable gentry in every county of England; commanding them to aſſiſt her in the defence of her crown and perſon. And ſhe diſpatched a meſſage to the council; by which ſhe notified to them, that her brother's death was no longer a ſecret to her, promiſed them pardon for paſt offences, and required them immediately to give orders for proclaiming her acceſſion in London §.

* Sleidan, lib. 25. † Heylin, p. 154. ‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 233. § Fox, vol. iii. p. 14.

NORTH-

NORTHUMBERLAND found that farther diſſimulation was fruitleſs: He went to Sion-houſe *, accompanied with the duke of Suffolk, the earl of Pembroke, and others of the nobility; and he approached the lady Jane, who reſided there, with all the reſpect uſually paid to the ſovereign. Jane was, in a great meaſure, ignorant of all theſe tranſactions; and it was with equal grief and ſurprize, that ſhe received intelligence of them †. She was a lady of the moſt amiable perſon, the moſt engaging diſpoſition, the moſt accompliſhed parts; and being of an equal age with the late King, ſhe had received all her education with him, and ſeemed even to poſſeſs a greater facility in acquiring every part of manly and polite literature. She had attained a knowledge of the Roman and Greek languages, beſide modern tongues; had paſſed moſt of her time in an application to learning; and expreſſed a great indifference for other occupations and amuſements uſual with her ſex and ſtation. Roger Aſcham, tutor to the lady Elizabeth, having at one time paid her a viſit, found her employed in reading of Plato, while the reſt of the family were engaged in a party of hunting in the park; and upon his admiring the ſingularity of her choice, ſhe told him, that ſhe received more pleaſure from that author than the others could reap from all their ſport and gaity. Her heart, full of this paſſion for literature and the elegant arts, and of tenderneſs towards her huſband, who was deſerving of her affection, had never opened itſelf to the flattering allurements of ambition; and the information of her advancement to the throne, was by no means agreeable to her. She even refuſed to accept of the preſent; pleaded the preferable right of the two princeſſes; expreſſed her dread of the conſequences attending an enterprize ſo dangerous, not to ſay ſo criminal; and deſired to remain in that private ſtation in which ſhe was born. Overcome at laſt with the intreaties, rather than reaſons, of her father and father-in-law, and above all of her huſband, ſhe ſubmitted to their will, and was prevailed on to relinquiſh her own judgment. It was then uſual for the Kings of England, after their acceſſion, to paſs the firſt days in the Tower; and Northumberland immediately conveyed thither the new ſovereign ‡. All the counſellors were obliged to attend her to that fortreſs; and by this means became, in ſome meaſure, priſoners in the hands of Northumberland, whoſe will they were neceſſitated to obey. Orders were given by the council, to proclaim Jane throughout the kingdom; but theſe orders were executed only in London, and in the neighbourhood. No applauſe enſued: The people heard the proclamation with ſilence and concern: Some even expreſſed their ſcorn and contempt: And one Pot, a vintner's prentice, was ſeverely puniſhed for this offence §.

Chap. I. 1553.

Lady Jane Gray proclaimed Queen.

* Thuanus, lib. xiii. c. 2. † Godwin in Kennet, p. 329. Heylin, p. 149. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 234. ‡ Heylin, p. 159. § Ibid. p. 160.

Chap. I. 1553. The proteſtant teachers themſelves, who were employed to convince the people of Jane's title, found their eloquence fruitleſs *; and Ridley, biſhop of London, who preached a ſermon to that purpoſe, wrought no effect upon his audience †.

THE people of Suffolk, meanwhile, paid their attendance on Mary. As they were much attached to the reformed communion, they could not forbear, amidſt their tenders of duty, to expreſs their apprehenſion for the proteſtant religion; but when ſhe aſſured them, that ſhe never meant to change the laws of King Edward ‡, they enliſted themſelves in her cauſe with zeal and affection. The nobility and gentry flocked to her daily, and brought her reinforcement. The earls of Bath and Suſſex, the eldeſt ſons of lord Wharton and lord Mordaunt, Sir William Drury, Sir Henry Benningfield, Henry Jerningham, perſons whoſe intereſt lay in the neighbourhood, appeared at the head of their tenants and retainers §. Sir Edward Haſtings, brother of the earl of Huntingdon, having received a commiſſion from the council to make levies for the lady Jane in Buckinghamſhire, carried over his troops, which amounted to four thouſand men, and joined Queen Mary. Even a fleet, which had been ſent by Northumberland to lie off the coaſt of Suffolk, being forced into Yarmouth by a ſtorm, were engaged to declare for that princeſs.

NORTHUMBERLAND, who had hitherto been blinded by ambition, ſaw at laſt the danger gather round him, and knew not to what hand to turn himſelf. He had levied forces, which were aſſembled at London; but dreading the cabals of the courtiers and counſellors, whoſe compliance, he knew, had been entirely the reſult of fear or artifice, he was reſolved to keep near the perſon of the lady Jane, and ſend Suffolk to command the army. But the counſellors, who wiſhed to remove him ‖, working on the filial tenderneſs of Jane, magnified to her the danger to which her father would be expoſed, and repreſented, that Northumberland, who had gained reputation by ſuppreſſing formerly a rebellion in thoſe parts, was much more proper to command in that enterprize. The Duke himſelf, who knew the ſlender capacity of Suffolk, began to think that none but himſelf was able to encounter the preſent danger; and he agreed to take on him the command of the troops. The counſellors attended on him at his departure with the higheſt proteſtations of attachment, and none more than Arundel, his mortal enemy **. As he went along, he remarked the diſaffection of the people, which foreboded a fatal iſſue to his ambitious hopes. "Many," ſaid he to lord Grey,

* Godwin, p. 330. Heylin, p. 162. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 236, 238. † Stowe, p. 611. Hollingſhed, p. 1087. Strype's Mem. vol iii. p. 3. ‡ Fox, vol. iii. p. 15. Baker, p. 314. Speed, p. 816. § Heylin, p. 160. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 237. ‖ Godwin, p. 330. Heylin, p. 159. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 239. Fox, vol. iii. p. 15. ** Heylin, p. 161. Baker, p. 315. Hollingſhed, p. 1086.

who

who attended him, "come out to look at us, but I find not one who cries, *God* "*ſpeed you* *." Chap. I. 1553.

THE duke had no ſooner reached St. Edmund's-bury, than he found his army, which never exceeded ſix thouſand men, too weak to encounter the Queen's †, which amounted to double the number. He wrote to the council, deſiring them to ſend him a reinforcement; and the counſellors immediately laid hold of this pretence to free themſelves from their confinement. They left the Tower, as if they meant to execute Northumberland's commands; but being aſſembled in Baynard's-caſtle, a houſe belonging to Pembroke, they deliberated concerning the method of ſhaking off his uſurped tyranny. Arundel began the conference, by repreſenting the injuſtice and cruelty of Northumberland, the exorbitancy of his ambition, the criminal enterprize which he had projected, and the guilt in which he had involved the whole council: and he aſſerted, that the only method of making atonement for their paſt offences, was by a prompt return to the duty which they owed their lawful ſovereign ‡. This motion was ſeconded by Pembroke, who, clapping his hand to his ſword, ſwore he was ready to fight any man who expreſſed himſelf of a contrary ſentiment. The mayor and aldermen of London were immediately ſent for, who diſcovered great alacrity in obeying the orders they received to proclaim Mary. The people expreſſed their approbation by ſhouts of applauſe. Even Suffolk, who commanded in the Tower, finding reſiſtance fruitleſs, opened the gates, and declared for the Queen. The lady Jane, after wearing the vain pageantry of a crown during ten days, returned to a private life with much more ſatisfaction than ſhe felt when the royalty was tendered to her §: And the meſſengers who were ſent to Northumberland, with orders to lay down his arms, found that he had deſpaired of ſucceſs, was deſerted by all his followers, and had already proclaimed the Queen, with exterior marks of joy and ſatisfaction ‖. The people every where, on the Queen's approach to London, gave ſenſible expreſſions of their loyalty and attachment. And the lady Elizabeth met her at the head of a thouſand horſe, which that princeſs had levied, in order to ſupport their joint title againſt the uſurper **.

Lady Jane deſerted by the people.

The Queen proclaimed and acknowledged.

THE Queen gave orders for taking into cuſtody the duke of Northumberland, who fell on his knees to the earl of Arundel that arreſted him, and abjectly begged his life ††. At the ſame time were committed, the Earl of Warwic, his eldeſt ſon, Ambroſe and Henry Dudley, two of his younger ſons, Sir Andrew Dudley

* Speed, p. 816. † Godwin, p. 331. ‡ Ibid. p. 331, 332. Thuanus, lib. xiii. § Godwin, p. 332. Thuan. lib. xiii. c. 2. p. 240. Heylin, p. 19. Stowe, p. 613. Baker, p. 315. Hollingſhed, p. 1088. ‖ Stowe, p. 612. ** Burnet, vol. ii. †† Burnet, vol. ii. p. 239. Stowe, p. 612.

Chap. I. 1553.

his brother, the marquefs of Northampton, the earl of Huntingdon, Sir Thomas Palmer, and Sir John Gates. The Queen afterwards confined the duke of Suffolk, the lady Jane Gray, and lord Guilford Dudley. But Mary was deſirous, in the beginning of her reign, to acquire popularity by the appearance of clemency; and becauſe the counſellors pleaded conſtraint, as an excuſe for their treaſon, ſhe extended her pardon to moſt of them. Suffolk himſelf recovered his liberty; and he owed this indulgence, in a great meaſure, to the contempt entertained of his capacity. But the guilt of Northumberland was too great, as well as his ambition and courage too dangerous, to permit him to entertain any reaſonable hopes of life. When brought to his trial, he only deſired permiſſion o aſk two queſtions of the peers who were appointed to ſit on his jury; whethera man could be guilty of treaſon who obeyed orders given him by the council under the great ſeal? and whether thoſe who were involved in the ſame guilt with himſelf, could act as his judges? Being told, that the great ſeal of an uſurperwas no authority, and that perſons who lay not under any ſentence of attainder, were ſtill innocent in the eye of the law, and might be admitted on any jury *; he acquieſced, and pleaded guilty. At his execution, he made profeſſion of the catholic religion, and told the people, that they never would enjoy tranquillity till they returned to the faith of their anceſtors: Whether that ſuch were his real ſentiments, which he had formerly concealed, from intereſt and ambition, or that he hoped, by this declaration, to render the Queen more favourable tohis family †. Sir Thomas Palmer, and Sir John Gates, ſuffered with him; and ths was all the blood ſpilt on account of ſo dangerous and criminal an enterprize againſt the rights of the ſovereign. Sentence was pronounced againſt the lady Jne and lord Guilford; but without any preſent intention of putting it in executon. The youth and innocence of the perſons, neither of whom had reached their ſeventeenth year, pleaded ſufficiently in their favour.

22 Auguſt. Northumberland executed.

When Mary firſt arrived in the Tower, the duke of Norfolk, who had been detained priſoner during all the laſt reign; Courtney, ſon to the marquefs of Exete, who, without being charged with any crime, had been ſubjected to the ſame puniſhment ever ſince his father's attainder; Gardiner, Tonſtal, and Bonner, who had been confined for their adherence to the catholic cauſe, appeared before her, and implored her clemency and protection ‡. They were all of them reſtored to their liberty, and immediately admitted to her confidence and favour.

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 243. Heylin, p. 18. Baker, p. 316. Hollingſhed, p. 1089. † Heylin, p. 19. Burnet, vol. iii. p. 243. Stowe, p. 614. ‡ Heylin, p. 20. Stowe, p. 613. Hollingſhed, p. 1088.

Norfolk's

Norfolk's attainder, notwithſtanding that it had paſſed in Parliament, was repreſented as null and invalid; becauſe, among other informalities, no ſpecial matter had been alleged againſt him, except wearing a coat of arms, which he and his anceſtors, without giving any offence, had always made uſe of in the face of the court and of the whole nation. Courtney received the title of earl of Devonſhire; and tho' educated in ſuch cloſe confinement, that he was altogether unacquainted with the world, he ſoon acquired all the accompliſhments of a courtier and a gentleman, and made a conſiderable figure during the few years which he lived after he recovered his liberty. Beſides performing all thoſe popular acts, which, tho' they only regarded individuals, were very acceptable to the nation, the Queen endeavoured to ingratiate herſelf with the public, by granting a general pardon, tho' with ſome exceptions, and by remitting the ſubſidy voted to her brother by the laſt Parliament *. Chap. I. 1553.

THE joy ariſing from the ſucceſſion of the lawful heir, and from the gracious demeanour of the ſovereign, hindered not the people from being agitated with great anxiety concerning the ſtate of religion; and as the bulk of the nation inclined to the proteſtant communion, apprehenſions were generally entertained of the principles and prejudices of the new Queen. The legitimacy of May's birth had appeared to be ſomewhat connected with the papal authority; and as that princeſs was educated with her mother, ſhe had imbibed the ſtrongeſt atachment to the catholic communion, and the higheſt averſion to thoſe new tenets, whence, ſhe believed, all the misfortunes of her family had originally ſprung. The diſcouragements which ſhe lay under from her father, tho' at laſt they brought her to comply with his will, tended ſtill more to increaſe her diſguſt to the reformers; and the vexations which the protector and the council gave her, during Edward's reign, had no other effect than to confirm her farther in her prejudices. Naturally of a ſour and obſtinate temper, and irritated by contradictions and misfortunes, ſhe poſſeſſed all the qualities fitted to compoſe a bigot; and her extreme ignorance rendered her utterly incapable of doubt in her own belief, or of indulgence to the opinions of others. The nation, therefore, had great reaſon to dread, not only the abolition, but the perſecution of the eſtabliſhed religion from the zeal of Mary; and it was not long before ſhe diſcovered her intentions.

GARDINER, Bonner, Tonſtal, Day, Heath, Veſey, were reinſtated in their ſees, either by a direct act of power, or, what is nearly the ſame, by the ſentence of commiſſioners, who were appointed to review their proceſs and condem- Catholic religion reſtored.

* Stowe, p. 616.

Chap. I. 1553. nation. Tho' the biſhopric of Durham had been diſſolved by authority of Parliament, the Queen erected it anew by letters-patent, and replaced Tonſtal in his regalities as well as in his revenue. On pretence of diſcouraging controverſy, ſhe ſilenced, by her prerogative, all the preachers throughout England, except ſuch as ſhould obtain a particular licence *; and it was eaſy to foreſee that none but the catholics would be favoured with this privilege. Holgate, archbiſhop of York, Coverdale, biſhop of Exeter, Ridley of London, and Hooper of Gloceſter, were thrown into priſon; whither old Latimer alſo was ſent ſoon after †. The zealous biſhops and prieſts were encouraged in their forwardneſs to revive the maſs, tho' contrary to the preſent laws. Judge Hales, who had diſcovered ſuch conſtancy in defending the Queen's title, loſt all his merit by an oppoſition to thoſe illegal practices; and being committed to cuſtody, was treated with ſuch ſeverity, that he fell into frenzy, and killed himſelf ‡. The men of Suffolk were brow-beaten, when they preſumed to plead the promiſe which the Queen, when they inliſted themſelves in her ſervice, had given them, of maintaining the reformed religion: One, in particular, was ſet in the pillory, becauſe he had been too peremptory in recalling to her memory the engagements which ſhe had taken on that occaſion. And tho' the Queen ſtill promiſed, in a public declaration before the council, to tolerate thoſe who differed from her ‖, men foreſaw, that this engagement, like the former, would prove but a feeble ſecurity, when ſet in oppoſition to religious prejudices.

THE merits of Cranmer towards the Queen, during the reign of Henry, had been conſiderable; and he had ſucceſsfully employed his good offices in mitigating the ſevere prejudices which that monarch had entertained againſt her **. But the active part which he had borne in promoting her mother's divorce, as well as in conducting the reformation, had made him the object of her hatred; and tho' Gardiner had been equally forward in ſoliciting and defending the divorce, he had afterwards made ſufficient atonement by his ſufferings in defence of the catholic cauſe. The primate, therefore, had reaſon to expect little favour during the preſent reign; but it was by his own indiſcreet zeal, that he brought on himſelf the firſt violence and perſecution. A report being ſpread, that Cranmer, in order to make his court to the Queen, had promiſed to officiate in the Latin ſervice, the archbiſhop, to wipe off this aſperſion, drew up a manifeſto in his own defence. Among other expreſſions, he there ſaid, that as the devil was a lyar-

* Heylin, p. 23. Fox, vol. iii. p. 16. Strype's Mem. vol. iii. p. 26. † Godwin, p. 336. ‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 247. Fox, vol. iii. p. 15, 19. Baker, p. 317. ‖ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 245. ** Ibid. p. 240, 241. Heylin, p. 25. Godwin, p. 336.

from

from the beginning, and the father of lies, ſo he had at this time ſtirred up his ſervants to perſecute Chriſt and his true religion: That that infernal ſpirit now endeavoured to reſtore the Latin ſatisfactory maſſes, a thing of his own invention and device; and in order to effectuate his purpoſe, had falſely made uſe of Cranmer's name and authority: And that the maſs is not only without foundation, either in the ſcriptures or the practice of the primitive church, but likewiſe diſcovers a plain contradiction to antiquity and the inſpired writings, and is beſides replete with many horrid blaſphemies *. On the publication of this inflammatory paper, Cranmer was thrown into priſon, and was tried for the part which he had acted, in concurring with the lady Jane, and oppoſing the Queen's acceſſion. Sentence of high treaſon was pronounced againſt him; and tho' his guilt was ſhared with the whole privy council, and was even leſs than that of moſt of the others, this ſentence, however ſevere, muſt be allowed entirely legal. The execution of it, however, did not follow; and Cranmer was reſerved for a more cruel puniſhment. Chap. I. 1553.

PETER MARTYR, ſeeing a perſecution gathering againſt the reformers, deſired leave to withdraw †; and while ſome zealous catholics moved for his commitment, Gardiner both pleaded, that he had come over by an invitation from the government, and generouſly furniſhed him with ſupplies for his journey: But as bigotted zeal ſtill increaſed, his wife's body, which had been interred at Oxford, was afterwards dug up by public order, and buried in a dunghill ‡. The bones of Bucer and Fagius, two foreign reformers, were about the ſame time committed to the flames at Cambridge ‖. John a Laſco was firſt ſilenced, and then ordered to depart the kingdom with his congregation. The greater part of the foreign proteſtants followed him; and the nation thereby loſt many uſeful hands for arts and manufactures. Several Engliſh proteſtants alſo took ſhelter in foreign parts, and every thing bore a diſmal aſpect for the reformation.

DURING this revolution of the court, no protection was expected by the proteſtants from the Parliament, which was ſummoned to aſſemble. A zealous reformer ⸸ pretends, that great violence and iniquity were uſed in the elections; but beſides that the authority of this writer is inconſiderable, that practice, as the neceſſities of government ſeldom required it, had not hitherto been often employed in England. There ſtill remained ſuch numbers devoted, by opinion or affection, 5th October. A Parliament.

* Fox, vol. iii. p. 94. Heylin, p. 25. Godwin, p. 336. Burnet, vol. ii. Coll. N° 8. Cranm. Mem. p. 305. Thuanus, lib. xiii. c. 2. † Heylin, p. 26. Godwin, p. 336. Cranm. Mem. p. 317. ‡ Heylin, p. 26. ‖ Saunders de Schiſm. Anglic. ⸸ Beale. But Fox, who lived at the time, and is very minute in his narratives, ſays nothing of the matter. See vol. iii. p. 16.

to

Chap. I. 1553. to many principles of the ancient religion, that the authority of the crown was able to give ſuch candidates the prevalence in moſt elections; and all thoſe who ſcrupled compliance with the court religion, rather declined taking a ſeat in the houſe, which, while it rendered them obnoxious to the Queen, could afterwards afford them no protection againſt the violence of prerogative. It ſoon appeared, therefore, that a majority of the commons would be obſequious to Mary's deſigns; and as the peers were moſtly attached to the court, from intereſt or expectation, little oppoſition was expected from that quarter.

In opening the Parliament, the court ſhowed a very ſignal contempt of the laws, by celebrating, before the two houſes, a maſs of the Holy Ghoſt, in the Latin tongue, attended with all the ancient rites and ceremonies, tho' aboliſhed by act of parliament *. Taylor, biſhop of Lincoln, having refuſed to kneel at this ſervice, was very ſeverely handled, and was violently thruſt out of the houſe †. The Queen, however, ſtill retained the title of ſupreme head of the church of England; and it was generally pretended, that the intention of the court was only to reſtore religion to the ſame condition in which it had been left by Henry; but that the other abuſes of popery, which were chiefly grievous to the nation, would never be revived.

The firſt bill paſſed by the Parliament, was of a very popular nature, and aboliſhed every ſpecies of treaſon which was not contained in the ſtatute of Edward the third, and every ſpecies of felony which did not ſubſiſt before the firſt of Henry the eighth ‡. The Parliament next declared the Queen to be legitimate, ratified the marriage of Henry with Catherine of Arragon, and annulled the divorce pronounced by Cranmer ‖, whom they greatly blamed on that account. No mention, however, is made of the pope's authority, as any ground of the marriage. All the ſtatutes of King Edward with regard to religion, were repealed by one vote §; and thereby the national religion was replaced on the ſame footing on which it ſtood at the death of Henry. The attainder of the duke of Norfolk was reverſed; and this act of juſtice was much more reaſonable than the declaring that attainder invalid, without farther authority. Moſt of the clauſes of the riot act, paſſed in the late reign, were revived: A ſtep which eluded, in a great meaſure, the popular ſtatute enacted at the firſt meeting of the Parliament.

Notwithstanding the compliance of the two houſes with the Queen's inclinations, they had ſtill a reſerve in certain articles; and her choice of a huſband

* Fox, vol. iii. p. 19. † Burnet, vol. ii. p. 252. ‡ Mariæ, ſeſſ. 1. c. 1. By this repeal, tho' it was in general popular, the clauſe of 5 and 6 Edw. c. 11. was loſt, which required the confronting two witneſſes, in order to prove any treaſon. ‖ Mariæ, ſeſſ. 2. c. 1.
§ 1 Mariæ, ſeſſ. 2. c. 12.

was, in particular, of such importance to national interest, that they determined not to submit tamely, in that respect, to her will and pleasure. There were three marriages *, concerning which it was supposed that Mary had deliberated after her accession to the crown. The first person proposed to her, was Courtney, earl of Devonshire, who, being an Englishman, nearly allied to the crown, could not fail to be acceptable to the nation; and as he was of an engaging person and address, he had gained visibly on the Queen's affections, and hints were dropt him of her favourable dispositions towards him †. But that nobleman neglected these overtures; and seemed rather to attach himself to the lady Elizabeth, whose youth and agreeable conversation he preferred to all the power and grandeur of her sister. This choice occasioned a great coldness of Mary towards Devonshire; and made her break out in a declared animosity against Elizabeth. The ancient quarrel between their mothers had sunk deep into the malignant heart of the Queen; and after the declaration made by Parliament in favour of Catherine's marriage, she wanted not a pretence for representing the birth of her sister as illegitimate. The attachment of Elizabeth to the reformed religion offended Mary's bigotry; and as the young princess had made some difficulty of disguising her sentiments, very violent menaces had been employed to bring her to compliance. But when the Queen found that Elizabeth had obstructed her views in a point, which, perhaps, touched her still more nearly, her resentment, excited by pride, knew no longer any bounds; and the princess was visibly exposed to the greatest danger ‡. Chap. I. 1553.

Cardinal Pole, who had never taken priest's orders, was another party proposed to the Queen; and there appeared many reasons to induce her to make choice of this prelate. The high character of Pole for virtue and generosity; the great regard paid him by the catholic church, of which he had nearly reached the highest dignity on the death of Paul the third ‖; the Queen's affection for the countess of Salisbury, his mother, who had once been her governess; the violent animosity to which he had been exposed on account of his attachment to the Romish communion; all these considerations had a powerful influence on Mary. But the cardinal was now in the decline of life; and having contracted habits of study and retirement, he was represented as unqualified for the bustle of a court, and the hurry of business §. The Queen, therefore, dropt all views of that alliance: But as she entertained a great regard for Pole's wisdom and virtue, she still proposed to reap the benefit of his advice in the administration of her

* Thuan. lib. ii. c. 3. † Godwin, p. 339. ‡ Heylin, p. 31. Burnet, vol. ii p. 255. ‖ Father Paul, book iii. § Heylin, p. 31.

govern-

Chap. I. 1553.

government. She secretly entered into a negociation with Commendone, an agent of cardinal Dandino, legate at Brussels; she sent assurances to the pope, then Julius the third, of her earnest desire to reconcile herself and her kingdoms to the holy see; and she desired that Pole might be appointed legate for the performance of that pious office *.

These two marriages being rejected, the Queen cast her eye towards the emperor's family, from which her mother was descended, and which, during her own distresses, had always afforded her countenance and protection. Charles the fifth, who a few years before was almost absolute master of Germany, had exercised his power in such an arbitrary manner, that he gave extreme disgust to the nation, who apprehended the total extinction of their liberties and privileges from the encroachments of that monarch †. Religion had served him as a pretence for his usurpations; and from the same principle he met with that opposition which overthrew his grandeur, and dashed all his ambitious hopes. Maurice, elector of Saxony, enraged that the landgrave of Hesse, who, by his advice, and on his assurances, had put himself into the emperor's hands, should be unjustly detained prisoner, formed a secret conspiracy among the protestant princes; and covering his intentions with the most artful disguises, he suddenly marched his forces against Charles, and narrowly missed becoming master of his person. The protestants flew to arms in every quarter; and their insurrection, aided by an invasion from France, reduced the emperor to such extremity, that he was obliged to submit to articles of peace, which ensured the independency of Germany. To retrieve his honour, he made an attack on France; and laying siege to Metz, with an army of an hundred thousand men, he conducted the enterprize in person, and seemed determined, at all hazards, to succeed in an undertaking which had attracted the attention of all Europe. But the duke of Guise, who defended Metz, with a garrison composed of the bravest nobility of France, exerted such vigilance, conduct, and valour, that the siege was protracted to the depth of winter; and the emperor found it dangerous to persevere any longer. He retired with the remains of his army, into the Low Countries, much dejected with that reverse of fortune which, in his declining years, had so fatally overtaken him.

No sooner did Charles hear of the death of Edward, and the accession of his kinswoman, Mary, to the crown of England, than he formed the scheme of acquiring that kingdom to his family; and he hoped, by this incident, to balance all the losses which he had suffered in Germany. His son, Philip, who

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 258. † Thuanus, lib. iv. c. 17.

was

was a widower, had but one ſon by his former marriage; and tho' he was only twenty-ſeven years of age, eleven years younger than the Queen, this objection, it was thought, might eaſily be overlooked, and there was no reaſon to deſpair of her having ſtill a numerous iſſue. The emperor, therefore, immediately ſent over an agent to ſignify his intentions to Mary, who, pleaſed with the ſupport of ſo powerful an alliance, and glad to unite herſelf more cloſely with her mother's family, to which ſhe was ever ſtrongly attached, readily embraced the propoſal. Norfolk, Arundel, and Paget, gave their advice for the match: And Gardiner, who was become prime miniſter, and who had been promoted to the office of chancellor, finding how Mary's inclinations lay, ſeconded the project of the Spaniſh alliance; and repreſented, both to her and the emperor, the neceſſity of ſtopping all farther innovations in religion, till the completion of the marriage. He obſerved, that the Parliament, amidſt all their compliances, had diſcovered evident ſymptoms of jealouſy, and ſeemed at preſent determined, to grant no further conceſſions in favour of the catholic religion: That tho' they might make a ſacrifice to their ſovereign of ſome ſpeculative principles, which they did not well comprehend, or of ſome rites, which ſeemed not of any immediate importance, they had imbibed ſuch ſtrong prejudices againſt the pretended uſurpations and exactions of the court of Rome, that they would with great difficulty be again brought to ſubmit to its authority: That the danger of making a reſumption of the abbey lands, would alarm the nobility and gentry, and induce them to encourage the prepoſſeſſions which were but too general among the people, againſt the doctrine and worſhip of the catholic church: That much pains had been taken to prejudice the nation againſt the Spaniſh alliance; and if that point was urged, at the ſame time with further changes in religion, it would hazard a general revolt and inſurrection: That the marriage, being once compleated, would give authority to the Queen's meaſures, and enable her afterwards to forward that pious work, in which ſhe was engaged: And that it was even neceſſary previouſly to reconcile the people to the marriage, by rendering the conditions extremely favourable to the Engliſh, and ſuch as would ſeem to enſure to them their independency, and the entire poſſeſſion of their ancient laws and privileges *.

Chap. I. 1553.

The emperor, well acquainted with the prudence and experience of Gardiner, aſſented to all theſe reaſons; and he endeavoured to temper the zeal of Mary, by repreſenting the neceſſity of proceeding gradually in the great work of converting the nation. Hearing that cardinal Pole, more ſincere in his religious opinions, and leſs guided by the maxims of civil policy, after having ſent oppo-

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 261.

Chap. I. 1553. site advice to the Queen, had set out on his journey to England, where he was to exercise his legantine commission; he thought proper to stop him at Dillinghen, a town on the Danube; and he afterwards obtained Mary's consent for this detention. The negociation for the marriage mean-while proceeded apace; and Mary's intentions to espouse Philip became generally known to the nation. The commons, who hoped that they had gained the Queen by the concessions which they had already made, were alarmed to hear, that she was resolved to contract a foreign alliance; and they sent a committee to remonstrate against that dangerous measure. To prevent farther applications of the same kind, she thought proper to dissolve them.

6th of December.

A CONVOCATION had been summoned at the same time with the Parliament; and the majority here also appeared to be of the court religion. An offer was very frankly made by the Romanists, to dispute concerning the points controverted between the two communions; and as transubstantiation was the article which, of all others, they deemed the clearest, and founded on the most irresistible argument, they chose to try their strength by defending it. The protestants pushed the dispute as far as the clamour and noise of their antagonists would permit; and they fondly imagined, that they had obtained some advantage, when, in the course of the debate, they obliged the catholics to avow, that, according to their doctrine, Christ had, in his last supper, held himself in his hand, and had swallowed and eat himself *. This triumph, however, was confined only to their own party: The Romanists maintained, that their champions had clearly the better of the day; that their adversaries were blind and obstinate heretics; that nothing but the most extreme depravity of heart could induce men to contest such self-evident principles; and that the severest punishments were due to their perverse wickedness. So pleased were they with their superiority in this favorite point, that they soon after renewed the dispute at Oxford; and to show, that they feared no force of learning or capacity, where reason was so evidently on their side, they sent thither Cranmer, Latimer, and Ridley, under a guard, to try whether these renowned controversialists could find any appearance of argument to defend their baffled principles †. The issue of the debate was very different from what it appeared to be a few years before, in a famous conference held at the same place during the reign of Edward.

1554. AFTER the parliament and convocation were broke up, the new laws with regard to religion, tho' they had been anticipated, in most places, by the zeal of

* Collier, vol. ii. p. 356. Fox, vol. iii. p. 22. † Mem. of Cranm. p. 334. Heylin, p. 50.

the catholics, countenanced by the government, were ſtill more openly put in execution: The maſs was every where re-eſtabliſhed; and marriage was declared to be incompatible with any ſpiritual office. It has been aſſerted by ſome writers, that three fourths of the clergy were, at this time, deprived of their livings; tho' other hiſtorians, more accurate †, have eſtimated the number of ſufferers to be far ſhort of this proportion. Could any principles of law, juſtice or reaſon be attended to, where ſuperſtition predominates; the prieſts would never have been expelled for their paſt marriages, which at that time were permitted by the laws of the kingdom. A viſitation was appointed, in order to reſtore more perfectly the maſs and the antient rites. Among other articles the commiſſioners were enjoined to forbid the oath of ſupremacy to be taken by the clergy on their receiving any benefice ‡. It is to be obſerved, that this oath had been eſtabliſhed by the laws of Henry the eighth, which were ſtill in force. Chap. I. 1554.

THIS violent and ſudden change of religion inſpired the proteſtants with great diſcontent; and even affected indifferent ſpectators with concern, by the hardſhips, to which ſo many individuals were on that account expoſed. But the Spaniſh match was a point of more general concern, and diffuſed univerſal apprehenſions for the liberty and independance of the nation. To obviate all clamour, the articles of marriage were drawn as favourable as poſſible for the intereſt and ſecurity, and even grandeur of England. It was agreed, that tho' Philip ſhould have the title of King, the adminiſtration ſhould be entirely in the Queen; that no foreigner ſhould be capable of enjoying any office in the Kingdom; that no innovation ſhould be made in the Engliſh laws, cuſtoms and privileges; that Philip ſhould not carry the Queen abroad without her conſent, nor any of her children without the conſent of the nobility; that ſixty thouſand pounds a year ſhould be ſettled on her as her jointure; that the male iſſue of this marriage ſhould inherit, together with England, both Burgundy and the Low Countries; and that, if Don Carlos, Philip's ſon by his former marriage, ſhould die and his line be extinct, the Queen's iſſue, whether male or female, ſhould inherit Spain, Sicily, Milan, and all the other dominions of Philip *. Such was the treaty of marriage ſigned by count Egmont, and four other ambaſſadors ſent over to England by the emperor. Queen's marriage with Philip. 15th January.

THESE articles, when publiſhed, gave no ſatisfaction to the nation: It was univerſally ſaid, that the emperor, in order to get poſſeſſion of England, would verbally agree to any terms; and the greater advantage there appeared in the

† Harmer, p. 138. Sleidan, lib. 25.

‡ Collier, vol. ii. p. 364. Fox, vol. iii. p. 38. Heylin, p. 35.

* Rymer, xv. p. 377.

Chap. I. 1554. conditions which he granted, the more certainly might it be concluded, that he had no ſerious intention of obſerving them: That the uſual fraud and ambition of that monarch might aſſure the nation of ſuch a conduct; and his ſon Philip, while he inherited theſe vices from his father, added to them tyranny, ſullenneſs, pride, and barbarity, more dangerous vices of his own: That England would become a province, and a province to a kingdom which uſually exerciſed the moſt violent authority over all her dependant dominions: That the Netherlands, Milan, Sicily, Naples groaned under the burthen of Spaniſh tyranny; and throughout all the new conqueſts in America there had been diſplayed ſcenes of unrelenting cruelty, hitherto unknown in the hiſtory of mankind: That the inquiſition was a tribunal invented by that tyrannical nation; and would infallibly, with all their other laws and inſtitutions, be introduced into England: And that the divided ſentiments of the people with regard to religion would ſubject multitudes to this iniquitous tribunal, and would reduce the whole nation to the moſt abject ſervitude *.

THESE complaints, being diffuſed thro' the whole people, prepared the nation for a rebellion; and had any foreign power given them encouragement, or any great man appeared to head them; the conſequences might have proved fatal to the Queen's authority. But the King of France, tho' engaged in hoſtilities with the emperor, refuſed to concur in any propoſal for an inſurrection; leſt he ſhould afford Mary a pretence for declaring war againſt him. And the more prudent part of the nobility thought, that, as the evils of the Spaniſh alliance were only dreaded at a diſtance, matters were not yet fully prepared for a general revolt. Some perſons, however, more turbulent than the reſt, believed, that it would be ſafer to prevent than to redreſs grievances; and they framed a conſpiracy to riſe in arms, and declare againſt the Queen's marriage with Philip. Sir Thomas Wiat propoſed to raiſe Kent, Sir Peter Carew, Devonſhire; and they engaged the duke of Suffolk, by the hopes of recovering the crown for the lady Jane, to attempt raiſing the midland counties †. Carew's impatience or apprehenſions engaged him to break the concert, and to riſe in arms before the day appointed: He was ſoon ſuppreſſed by the earl of Bedford, and adviſed to fly into France. On this intelligence, Suffolk, dreading an arreſt, ſuddenly left the town, with his brothers, the lord Thomas, and lord Leonard Gray; and endeavoured to raiſe the people in the counties of Warwic and Leiceſter; where his intereſt lay: But he was ſo cloſely purſued by the earl of Huntingdon, at the head of 300 horſe, that he was obliged to diſperſe his retainers, and being diſcovered in his retreat, he was

Wiat's inſurrection.

* Heylin, p. 32. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 268. Godwin, p. 339.

† Heylin, p. 33. Godwin, p. 340.

led

led prisoner to London ‡. Wiat was at first more successful in his attempt; and having published a declaration at Maidstone in Kent, against the Queen's evil counsellors and against the Spanish match, without any mention of religion, the people began to gather under his standard. The duke of Norfolk with Sir Henry Jernegan was sent against him, at the head of the guards and some other troops, reinforced with 500 Londoners commanded by Bret: And he came within sight of the rebels at Rochester, where they had fixed their head quarters. Sir George Harper here pretended to desert from them; but having secretly gained Bret, these two persons so wrought on the Londoners, that that whole body deserted to Wiat, and declared that they would not contribute to enslave their native country. Norfolk, dreading the contagion of this example, immediately retreated with his troops, and took shelter in London *. Chap. I. 1554.

After this proof of the dispositions of the people, especially of the Londoners, who were mostly protestants, Wiat was encouraged to proceed; and he led his forces to Southwark, where he required of the Queen, that she should put the Tower into his hands, should deliver four counsellors as hostages, and in order to ensure the liberty of the nation, should immediately marry an Englishman. Finding that the bridge was secured against him, and that the city was overawed, he marched up to Kingston, where he passed the river with 4000 men; and returning towards London, hoped to encourage his partizans, who had engaged to declare for him. He had imprudently wasted so much time at Southwark, and in his march from Kingston, that the critical season, on which all popular commotions depend, was entirely lost; and tho' he entered Westminster without resistance, his followers, finding that no person of note joined him, insensibly fell off, and he was at last seized near Temple-Bar by Sir Maurice Berkley †. Above seventy persons suffered for this rebellion: Four hundred were conducted before the Queen with ropes about their necks; and falling on their knees, received a pardon, and were dismissed. Wiat was condemned and executed; and as it had been reported, that, on his examination, he had accused the lady Elizabeth and the earl of Devonshire, as accomplices, he took care on the scaffold, before the whole people, fully to acquit them of having any share in his rebellion. 6th February. Insurrection suppressed.

The lady Elizabeth had been, during some time, treated with great harshness by her sister; and many studied instances of discouragement and disrespect had been practised against her. She was ordered to take place at court after the countess of Lenox, and the dutchess of Suffolk, as if she were not legitimate:

‡ Fox, vol. iii. p. 30. p. 318. Hollingshed, p. 1094. p. 270. Stowe, p. 621.

* Heylin, p. 33. Godwin, p. 341. Stowe, p. 619. Baker,

† Fox, vol. iii. p. 31. Heylin, p. 34. Burnet, vol ii.

Her

Chap. I. 1554. Her friends were discountenanced on every occasion: And while her virtues, which were now become very eminent, drew to her the attendance of all the young nobility, and rendered her the favourite of the nation, the malevolence of the Queen still discovered itself every day by fresh symptoms, and obliged the princess to retire into the country. Mary seized the opportunity of this rebellion; and hoping to involve her sister in some appearance of guilt, sent for her under a strong guard, committed her to the Tower, and ordered her to be very strictly examined by the council. But the public declaration made by Wiat rendered it impracticable to employ against her any false evidence, which might have offered; and the princess made so good a defence, that the Queen found herself under a necessity of dismissing her *. In order to send her out of the kingdom, a marriage was proposed to her with the duke of Savoy; and when she declined giving her consent, she was committed to custody under a very strong guard, at Wodestoke. The earl of Devonshire, tho' equally innocent, was confined in Fotheringay castle.

But this rebellion proved still more fatal to the lady Jane Gray, as well as to her husband: The duke of Suffolk's guilt was imputed to her; and tho' the rebels and malecontents seemed chiefly to rest their hopes on the lady Elizabeth and the earl of Devonshire, the Queen, incapable of generosity or clemency, determined to remove every person, from whom the least danger could be apprehended. Warning was given the lady Jane to prepare for death; a doom which she had long expected, and which the innocence of her life, as well as the misfortunes to which she had been exposed, rendered no unwelcome news to her. The Queen's bigotted zeal, under colour of tender mercy to the prisoner's soul, induced her to send divines, who molested her with perpetual disputation; and even a reprieve of three days was granted her, in hopes that she would be persuaded, during that time, to pay, by a timely conversion, some regard to her eternal welfare. The lady Jane had presence of mind, in those melancholy circumstances, not only to defend her religion by all the topics then in use, but also to write a letter to her sister † in the Greek language; in which, besides sending her a copy of the scriptures in that tongue, she exhorted her to maintain, in every
12th February fortune, a like steddy perseverance. On the day of her execution, her husband, the lord Guilford, desired permission to see her; but she refused her consent, and sent him word, that the tenderness of their parting would overcome the fortitude of both, and would too much unbend their minds from that constancy, which their approaching end required of them: Their separation, she said, would be

* Godwin, p. 343. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 273. Fox, vol. iii. p. 99, 105. Strype's Mem. vol. iii, p. 85. † Fox, vol. iii. p. 35. Heylin, p. 166.

only

only for a moment; and they would ſoon rejoin each other in a ſcene, where their affections would be for ever united, and where death, diſappointment, and misfortunes could no longer have acceſs to them, or diſturb their eternal felicity ‡. Chap. I. 1554.

It had been intended to execute the lady Jane and lord Guilford together on the ſame ſcaffold at Tower-hill; but the council, dreading the compaſſion of the people for their youth, beauty, innocence, and noble birth, changed their orders, and gave directions that ſhe ſhould be beheaded within the verge of the Tower. She ſaw her huſband led to execution; and having given him from the window ſome token of her remembrance, ſhe waited with tranquillity till her own appointed hour ſhould bring her to a like fate. She even ſaw his headleſs body carried back in a cart, and found herſelf more confirmed by the reports, which ſhe heard of the conſtancy of his end, than ſhaken by ſo tender and melancholy a ſpectacle. Sir John Gage, conſtable of the Tower, when he led her to execution, deſired her to beſtow on him ſome ſmall preſent, which he might keep as a perpetual memorial of her: She gave him her table-book, where ſhe had juſt wrote three ſentences on ſeeing her huſband's dead body; one in Greek, another in Latin, a third in Engliſh *. The purport of them was, that human juſtice was againſt his body, but the divine mercy would be favourable to his ſoul; and that if her fault deſerved puniſhment, her youth at leaſt, and her imprudence were worthy of excuſe; and that God and poſterity, ſhe truſted, would ſhow her favour. On the ſcaffold, ſhe made a ſpeech to the bye-ſtanders, in which the mildneſs of her diſpoſition led her to take the blame entirely on herſelf, without uttering one complaint againſt the ſeverity, with which ſhe had been treated. She ſaid, that her offence was not the having laid her hand upon the crown, but the not rejecting it with ſufficient conſtancy: That ſhe had leſs erred thro' ambition than thro' reverence to her parents, whom ſhe had been taught to reſpect and obey: That ſhe willingly received death, as the only ſatisfaction which ſhe could now make to the injured ſtate; and tho' her infringement of the laws had been conſtrained, ſhe would ſhow, by her voluntary ſubmiſſion to their ſentence, that ſhe was deſirous to attone for that diſobedience, into which too much filial piety had betrayed her: That ſhe had juſtly deſerved this puniſhment for being made the inſtrument, tho' the unwilling inſtrument, of the ambition of others: And that the ſtory of her life, ſhe hoped, might at leaſt be uſeful, by proving that innocence excuſes not great miſdeeds, if they tend any way to the deſtruction of the commonwealth. After uttering theſe words, ſhe cauſed herſelf to be diſrobed by her women; and with a ſteddy ſerene countenance ſubmitted herſelf to the executioner †. Execution of lady Jane Gray.

‡ Heylin, p. 167. Baker, p. 319. Fox, vol. iii. p. 36, 37. Hollingſhed, p. 1099.

* Heylin, p. 167.

† Heylin, p. 167.

The

Chap. I. 1554. THE duke of Suffolk was tried, condemned, and executed ſoon after; and would have met with more compaſſion, had not his temerity been the cauſe of his daughter's untimely death. The lord Thomas Gray loſt his life for the ſame crime. Sir Nicholas Throckmorton was tried in Guildhall; but there appearing no ſatisfactory evidence againſt him, he was able, by making an admirable defence, to obtain a verdict of the jury in his favour. The Queen was ſo enraged at this diſappointment, that, inſtead of releaſing him as the law required, ſhe recommitted him to the Tower, and kept him in cloſe confinement during ſome time. But her reſentment ſtopped not here: The jury, being ſummoned before the council, were all of them ſent to priſon, and afterwards fined, ſome of them a thouſand pounds, others two thouſand a-piece *. This illegal violence proved fatal to ſeveral, among others to Sir John Throckmorton, brother to Sir Nicholas, who was condemned on no better evidence than had been formerly rejected. The Queen filled the Tower, and all the priſons with nobility and gentry, whom their intereſt with the people, rather than any appearance of guilt, had made the objects of her ſuſpicion. And finding, that ſhe was become extremely odious to the nation, ſhe was reſolved to diſable them from reſiſtance, by ordering general muſters, and directing the commiſſioners to ſeize their arms, and lay them up in forts and caſtles.

THO' the government laboured under ſo general an odium, the Queen's authority had received ſuch an increaſe from the ſuppreſſion of Wiat's rebellion, that the miniſtry hoped to find a very compliant diſpoſition in the new Parliament, which was ſummoned to aſſemble. The emperor alſo, in order to facilitate the ſame end, had borrowed no leſs a ſum than 400,000 pounds which he had ſent over to England, to be diſtributed in bribes and penſions among the members: A pernicious practice, of which there had not hitherto been any inſtance in England. And not to give the public any alarm with regard to the church lands, the Queen, notwithſtanding her bigotry, reſumed her legal title of ſupreme head of the church, which ſhe had dropped three months before. Gardiner, the chancellor, opened the ſeſſion by a ſpeech; in which he aſſerted the Queen's hereditary title to the crown; maintained her right to chooſe a huſband for herſelf; obſerved how proper an uſe ſhe had made of that right, by preferring an old ally, deſcended from the houſe of Burgundy; and remarked the failure of Henry the eighth's poſterity, of whom there now remained none but the Queen and the lady Elizabeth. He added, that, in order to obviate the in-

A Parliament. 5th April.

* Fox, vol. iii. p. 99. Stowe, p. 624. Baker, p. 320. Hollingſhed, p. 1104, 1121. Strype, vol. iii. p. 120.

conveniences, which might ariſe from different pretenders, it was neceſſary to inveſt the Queen, by law, with a power of diſpoſing of the crown, and of appointing her ſucceſſor: A power, he ſaid, which was not to be regarded as a new thing in England, ſince it had formerly been conferred on Henry the eighth †. Chap. I. 1554.

THE Parliament were much diſpoſed to gratify the Queen in all her deſires; but when the liberty, independency, and very being of the nation were brought into ſuch viſible danger, they could not by any means be brought to compliance. They knew both the inveterate hatred which ſhe bore the lady Elizabeth, and her devoted attachment to the houſe of Auſtria: They were acquainted with her extreme bigotry, which would lead her to poſtpone all conſiderations of juſtice or national intereſt to the eſtabliſhment of the catholic religion: They remarked, that Gardiner had carefully avoided, in his ſpeech, the giving to Elizabeth the appellation of the Queen's ſiſter; and they thence concluded, that a deſign was formed of excluding her as illegitimate: They expected, that Mary, if inveſted with ſuch a power as ſhe required, would make a will in her huſband's favour, and thereby render England for ever a province of the Spaniſh monarchy: And they were the more alarmed with theſe projects, when they heard, that Philip's deſcent from the houſe of Lancaſter was carefully inſiſted on, and that he was publickly repreſented as the true and only heir by right of inheritance.

THE Parliament, therefore, aware of their danger, were determined to keep at a diſtance from the precipice, which lay before them. They could not avoid ratifying the articles of marriage *, which were drawn very favourable for England; but they declined paſſing any ſuch law as the chancellor pointed out to them: They would not ſo much as declare it treaſon to imagine or attempt the death of the Queen's husband, while ſhe was alive; and a bill introduced for that purpoſe was laid aſide after the firſt reading. The more effectually to cut off Philip's hopes of exerting any authority in England, they paſſed a law, in which they declared, "that her majeſty as their only Queen, ſhould ſolely and as a "ſole Queen, enjoy the crown and ſovereignty of her realms, with all the pre-"eminences, dignities, and rights thereto belonging, in as large and ample a "manner after her marriage as before, without any title or claim accruing to the "prince of Spain, either as tenant by courteſy of the realm, or by any other "means ‡."

A LAW paſſed in this Parliament for re-erecting the biſhopric of Durham, which had been diſſolved by the laſt Parliament of Edward §. The Queen had

† Carte, vol. iii. p. 310. from Ambaſſ. de Noailles.
* 1 Mar. Parl. 2. cap. 2.
‡ Ibid. cap. 1.
§ Ib. cap. 3.

Chap. I. 1554. already, by an exertion of her abſolute power, put Tonſtal in poſſeſſion of that ſee: But tho' it was uſual at that time for the crown to aſſume authority which might ſeem entirely legiſlative, it was always deemed more ſafe and ſatisfactory to procure the ſanction of Parliament. Bills were introduced for ſuppreſſing erroneous opinions contained in books, and for reviving the law of the ſix articles, together with thoſe againſt the Lollards, againſt hereſy and erroneous preaching: But none of theſe laws could paſs the two houſes. A proof, that the Parliament had reſerves even in their conceſſions with regard to religion; about which they ſeem to have been leſs ſcrupulous. The Queen, therefore, finding that they 5th May. would not ſerve all her purpoſes, finiſhed the ſeſſion by diſſolving them.

MARY's thoughts were now entirely employed about receiving Don Philip, whoſe arrival ſhe hourly expected. This princeſs, who had lived ſo many years in a very reſerved and private manner, without any proſpect or hopes of a huſband, was ſo ſmit with affection for her young ſpouſe, whom ſhe had never ſeen, that ſhe waited with the utmoſt impatience for the completion of the marriage; and every obſtacle was to her a ſource of anxiety and diſcontent *. She complained of Philip's delays as affected; and ſhe could not conceal her vexation, that, tho' ſhe brought him a kingdom as a dowry, he treated her with ſuch neglect, that he had never yet favoured her with a ſingle letter. Her fondneſs was but the more encreaſed by this ſupercilious treatment; and when ſhe found that her ſubjects had entertained the greateſt averſion for the event, to which ſhe directed her fondeſt wiſhes, ſhe made the whole Engliſh nation the object of her reſentment. A ſquadron, under the command of lord Effingham, had been fitted out to convoy Philip from Spain, where he then reſided; but the admiral informing her, that the diſcontents ran very high among the ſeamen, and that it was not ſafe for Philip to entruſt himſelf into their hands, ſhe gave orders to diſmiſs them. She then dreaded, that the French fleet, being maſters of the ſea, might intercept her huſband; and every rumour of danger, every blaſt of wind, threw her into panics and convulſions. Her health, and even her underſtanding, were viſibly impaired by this extreme impatience; and ſhe was ſtruck with a new apprehenſion, leſt her perſon, impaired by time, and blaſted by ſickneſs, ſhould render her leſs acceptable to her future ſpouſe. Her glaſs diſcovered to her how hagard ſhe was become, and when ſhe remarked the decay of her perſon, ſhe knew not whether ſhe ought more to deſire or apprehend the arrival of Philip.

* Strype, vol. iii. p. 125.

AT

Chap. I. 1554.

AT laſt came the moment ſo impatiently expected; and news were brought the Queen of Philip's arrival at Southampton *. A few days after, they were married in Weſtminſter; and having made a pompous entry into London, where Philip diſplayed his wealth with great oſtentation, ſhe carried him to Windſor, the palace in which they afterwards reſided. The prince's behaviour was ill calculated to cure the prejudices, which the Engliſh nation had entertained againſt him. He was diſtant and reſerved in his addreſs; took no notice of the ſalutes even of the moſt conſiderable noblemen; and ſo entrenched himſelf in forms and ceremonies, that he was in a manner inacceſſible †: But this circumſtance rendered him the more acceptable to the Queen, who deſired to have no company but her huſband's, and who was impatient when ſhe met with any interruption to her fondneſs. The ſhorteſt abſence gave her vexation; and when he ſhowed civilities to any other woman, ſhe could not conceal her jealouſy and reſentment.

19th July. Philip's arrival in England.

THE Queen ſoon found, that Philip's ruling paſſion was ambition; and that the only method of gratifying him and ſecuring his affections was to render him maſter of England. The intereſt and liberty of her people were conſiderations of ſmall moment, in compariſon of her obtaining this favourite point. She ſummoned a new Parliament, in hopes of finding them entirely compliant; and that ſhe might acquire the greater authority over them, ſhe imitated the precedent of the former reign, and wrote circular letters directing a proper choice of members ‡. The zeal of the catholics, the influence of Spaniſh gold, the powers of prerogative, the diſcouragement of the gentry, particularly of the proteſtants; all theſe cauſes, ſeconding the intrigues of Gardiner, had procured her a houſe of commons which was, in a great meaſure, to her ſatisfaction; and it was thought, from the diſpoſition of the nation, that ſhe might now ſafely omit, in her ſummons of the Parliament, the title of *ſupreme head of the church*, tho' inſeparably annexed by law to the crown of England §. Cardinal Pole was arrived in Flanders, inveſted with legantine power from the pope: In order to prepare the way for his arrival in England, the Parliament paſſed an act reverſing his attainder, and reſtoring his blood; and the Queen, diſpenſing with the old ſtatute of proviſors, granted him permiſſion to act as legate. The

12th November.

* Fox, vol. iii. p. 99. Heylin, p. 39. Burnet, vol. iii. p. 392. Godwin, p. 345. We are told by Sir William Monſon, p. 225, that the admiral of England fired at the Spaniſh navy, when Philip was on board; becauſe they had not lowered their topſails, as a mark of deference to the Engliſh navy in the narrow ſeas. A very ſpirited behaviour, and very unlike thoſe times.

† Baker, p. 320. ‡ Mem. of Cranm. p. 344. Strype's Eccl. Mem. vol. iii. p. 154, 155. § Burnet, vol. ii. p. 291. Strype, vol. iii. p. 155.

Chap. I. 1554. cardinal came over to London; and after being introduced to the King and Queen, he invited the Parliament to reconcile themſelves and the kingdom to the apoſtolic ſee, from which they had been ſo long and ſo unhappily ſeparated. This meſſage was taken in good part; and both houſes voted an addreſs to Philip and Mary, acknowledging that they had been guilty of a moſt horrible defection from the true church; profeſſing a ſincere repentance for their paſt tranſgreſſions; declaring their reſolution to repeal all laws enacted in prejudice of the church of Rome; and praying their majeſties, that ſince they were happily uninfected with that criminal ſchiſm, they would intercede with the holy father for their abſolution and forgiveneſs ‖. Their requeſt was eaſily granted. The legate, in name of his holineſs, gave the Parliament and kingdom abſolution, freed them from all cenſures, and received them again into the boſom of the church. The pope, then Julius the third, being informed of theſe tranſactions, ſaid, that it was an unexampled inſtance of his felicity, to receive thanks from the Engliſh, for allowing them to do what he ought to give them thanks for performing §.

NOTWITHSTANDING the extreme zeal of thoſe times, for and againſt popery, the object always uppermoſt with the nobility and gentry, was their money and eſtates; and they were not brought to make theſe conceſſions in favour of Rome, till they had received repeated aſſurances, from the pope as well as the Queen, that the plunder which they had made of the eccleſiaſtics, ſhould never be enquired into; and that the abbey and church lands ſhould remain with the preſent poſſeſſors *. But not truſting altogether to theſe promiſes, the Parliament took care, in the law itſelf †, by which they repealed the former ſtatutes enacted againſt the pope's authority, to inſert a clauſe, in which, beſides beſtowing validity on all marriages celebrated during the ſchiſm, and fixing the right of incumbents to their benefices, they gave ſecurity to the poſſeſſors of church lands, and freed them from all danger of eccleſiaſtical cenſures. The convocation alſo, in order to remove all apprehenſions on that head, were induced to preſent a petition to the ſame purpoſe ‡; and the legate, in his maſter's name, ratified all theſe tranſactions. It now appeared, that, notwithſtanding the efforts of the Queen and King, the power of the papacy was effectually ſuppreſſed, and invincible barriers fixed againſt its re-eſtabliſhment. For tho' the juriſdiction of the eccleſiaſtics was, for the preſent, reſtored, their property, on which their power much

‖ Fox, vol. iii. p. 3. Heylin, p. 42. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 293. Godwin, p. 247.
§ Father Paul, lib. iv. * Heylin, p. 41. † 1 & 2 Phil. & Mar. c. 8.
‡ Heylin, p. 43. 1 & 2 Phil. & Mar. c. 8. Strype, vol. iii. p. 159.

depended,

depended, was irretrievably loſt, and no hopes remained of recovering it. Even theſe arbitrary, powerful, and bigotted princes, while the tranſactions were yet recent, could not regain to the church her poſſeſſions ſo lately raviſhed from her; and no expedients were left the clergy for enriching themſelves, but thoſe which they had at firſt practiſed, and which had required many ages of ignorance, barbariſm, and ſuperſtition to operate their effect on mankind ||. Chap. I. 1554.

THE Parliament having ſecured their own poſſeſſions, were more indifferent with regard to religion, or even the lives of their fellow citizens; and they revived the old ſanguinary laws againſt heretics *, which had been rejected in the former Parliament. They alſo enacted ſeveral laws againſt ſeditious words and rumours †; and they made it treaſon to imagine or attempt the death of Philip, during his marriage with the Queen ‡. Each Parliament hitherto had been induced to go a ſtep farther than their predeceſſors; but none of them had entirely loſt all regard to national intereſts. Their hatred againſt the Spaniards, as well as their ſuſpicion of Philip's pretenſions, ſtill prevailed; and tho' the Queen attempted to get her huſband declared preſumptive heir of the crown, and to have the adminiſtration put into his hands; ſhe failed in all her hopes, and could not ſo much as procure the Parliament's conſent to his coronation §. All attempts likewiſe to obtain ſubſidies from the commons, in order to ſupport the emperor in his war againſt France, proved fruitleſs; and the uſual animoſity and jealouſy of the Engliſh againſt that kingdom, ſeemed to have given place, for the preſent, to like paſſions againſt Spain. Philip, ſenſible of the prepoſſeſſions entertained againſt him, endeavoured to acquire popularity, by procuring the releaſe of ſeveral priſoners of diſtinction; the lord Henry Dudley, Sir George Harper, Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, Sir Edmond Warner, Sir William St. Lo, Sir Nicholas Arnold, Harrington, Tremaine, who had been confined from the ſuſpi-

|| The pope at firſt gave cardinal Pole powers to tranſact only with regard to the paſt fruits of the church lands; but being admoniſhed of the danger attending any attempt towards a reſumption of the lands, he enlarged the cardinal's power, and granted him authority to enſure the future poſſeſſion of the church lands to the preſent proprietors. There was only one clauſe in the cardinal's powers that has given occaſion for ſome ſpeculation. An exception was made of ſuch caſes as Pole ſhould think important enough to merit the being communicated to the holy ſee. But Pole ſimply ratified the poſſeſſion of the whole church lands; and his commiſſion had given him full powers to that purpoſe. See Harleyan Miſcellany, vol. vii. p. 264, 266. It is true, ſome councils have declared, that it exceeds even the power of the pope to alienate any church lands; and the pope, according to his convenience, may either adhere to or recede from this declaration.

* 1 & 2 Phil. & Mar. c. 6. † Ibid. c. 3, 9. ‡ 1 & 2 Phil. & Mar. c. 10.
§ Godwin, p. 348. Baker, p. 322.

cions

Chap. I. 1554. cions or reſentment of the court ‖. But nothing was more agreeable to the nation than his protection of the lady Elizabeth, from the ſpite and malice of the Queen, and the reſtoring her to liberty. This meaſure was not the effect of any generoſity in Philip, a ſentiment of which he was wholly incapable; but of a refined policy, which made him foreſee, that, if that princeſs were put to death, the next lawful heir was the Queen of Scots, whoſe ſucceſſion would for ever annex England to the crown of France. The earl of Devonſhire alſo reaped ſome benefit from the affected popularity of Philip, and recovered his liberty: But that nobleman finding himſelf expoſed to ſuſpicion, begged permiſſion to travel *; and he ſoon after died in Padua, from poiſon, as is pretended, given him by the imperialiſts. He was the eleventh and laſt earl of Devonſhire of that noble family, allied to the royal family of France.

THE Queen's extreme deſire of having iſſue, had made her fondly give credit to any appearance of her pregnancy; and when the legate was introduced to her, ſhe fancied, that ſhe felt the embryo ſtir in her womb. Her flatterers compared this motion of the infant to that of John the Baptiſt, who leaped in his mother's belly at the ſalutation of the virgin †. Diſpatches were immediately ſent to inform foreign courts of this event: Orders were iſſued to give public thanks: Great rejoicings were made: The family of the young prince was already ſettled ‡; for the catholics held themſelves aſſured that the child was to be a male: And Bonner, Biſhop of London, made public prayers be ſaid, that Heaven would pleaſe to render him beautiful, vigorous and witty. But the nation remained ſtill ſomewhat incredulous; and men were perſuaded that the Queen laboured under infirmities, which rendered her incapable of having children. Her infant proved only the commencement of a dropſy, which the diſordered ſtate of her health had brought upon her. The belief, however, of her pregnancy was ſtill maintained with all poſſible care; and was one artifice, by which Philip endeavoured to ſupport his authority in the kingdom. The Parliament paſſed a law, which, in caſe of the Queen's death, appointed him protector during the minority; and the King and Queen, finding they could obtain no further conceſſions, came unexpectedly to Weſtminſter-Hall, and diſſolved them.

1555.

16 January.

THERE happened a remarkable affair this ſeſſion, which muſt not be paſſed over in ſilence. Several members of the lower houſe, diſſatisfied with the meaſures of the Parliament, but finding themſelves unable to prevent them, made a

‖ Heylin, p. 39. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 287. Stowe, p. 626. * Heylin, p. 40. Godwin, p. 349. † Burnet, vol. ii. p. 292. Godwin, p. 348. ‡ Heylin, p. 46.

ſeceſſion,

seceſſion, in order to ſhow their diſapprobation, and refuſed any longer to attend the houſe ‖. For this inſtance of contumacy, they were indicted in the King's-bench after the diſſolution of the Parliament: Six of them ſubmitted to the mercy of the court, and paid their fines: The reſt traverſed; and the Queen died before the affair was brought to an iſſue. Judging of the matter by the ſubſequent pretenſions of the houſe of commons, and, indeed, by the true principles of a free government, this attempt of the Queen's miniſters muſt be regarded as a breach of privilege; but it gave little umbrage at that time, and was never called in queſtion by any future houſe of commons which ſat during this reign. Chap. I. 1555.

CHAP. II.

Reaſons for and againſt Toleration.——Perſecutions.——A Parliament.——The Queen's extortions.——The emperor reſigns his crown.——Execution of Cranmer.——War with France.——Battle of St. Quintin.——Calais taken by the French.——Affairs of Scotland.——Marriage of the Dauphin and the Queen of Scots.——A Parliament.——Death of the Queen.

THE ſucceſs which Gardiner, from his cautious and prudent conduct, had met with in governing the Parliament, and engaging them both to approve of the Spaniſh alliance, and the re-eſtabliſhment of the ancient religion, two points, to which, it was believed, they bore an extreme averſion, had ſo raiſed his character for wiſdom and policy, that his opinion was received as an oracle in the Queen's councils; and his authority, as it was always great in his own party, no longer ſuffered any oppoſition or controul. Cardinal Pole himſelf, tho' more beloved on account of his virtue and candour, and tho' ſuperior in birth and ſtation, had not equal weight in public deliberations; and while his learning, piety and humanity were extremely reſpected, he was repreſented more as a good man than a great miniſter. A very important queſtion was frequently debated, before the Queen and council, by theſe two eccleſiaſtics; whether the laws lately revived againſt heretics ſhould be put in execution, or ſhould only be employed to reſtrain, by terror, the bold attempts of theſe zealots. Pole was very ſincere in his religious principles; and tho' his moderation had made Chap. II. 1555.

‖ Coke's Inſtitutes, part iv. p. 17. Strype's Memor. vol. iii. p. 165.

Chap. II. 1555.

him be ſuſpected at Rome of a tendency towards Lutheraniſm; he was ſeriouſly perſuaded of the catholic doctrines, and thought that no conſideration of human policy ought ever to come in competition with ſuch important intereſts. Gardiner, on the contrary, had always made his religion ſubſervient to his ſchemes of ſafety or advancement; and by his unlimited complaiſance to Henry, he had ſhown, that, had he not been puſhed to extremity under the late minority, he was ſufficiently diſpoſed to make a ſacrifice of his principles to the eſtabliſhed theology. This was the well known character of theſe two great counſellors; yet ſuch is the prevalence of temper above ſyſtem, that the benevolent diſpoſition of Pole led him to adviſe a toleration of the heretical tenets which he highly blamed; while the ſevere manners of Gardiner inclined him to ſupport, by perſecution, that religion which, at the bottom, he regarded with great indifference *. This circumſtance of public conduct was of the higheſt importance; and from being the object of deliberation in the council, it ſoon became the ſubject of diſcourſe throughout the nation. We ſhall repreſent, in a few words, the topics by which each ſide ſupported, or might have ſupported, their ſcheme of policy; and ſhall diſplay the oppoſite reaſons which have been employed, with regard to an argument that ever has been, and ever will be ſo much canvaſſed.

Reaſons for and againſt toleration.

THE practice of perſecution, ſaid the defenders of Pole's opinion, is the ſcandal of all religion; and the theological animoſity, ſo fierce and violent, far from being an argument of mens conviction in their oppoſite tenets, is a certain proof, that they have never reached any ſerious perſuaſion with regard to theſe remote and ſublime ſubjects. Even thoſe who are the moſt impatient of contradiction in other controverſies, are mild and moderate in compariſon of polemical divines; and wherever a man's knowledge and experience give him a perfect aſſurance of his own opinion, he regards with contempt, rather than anger, the oppoſition and miſtakes of others. But while men zealouſly maintain what they neither clearly comprehend, nor entirely believe, they are ſhaken in their imagined faith, by the oppoſite perſuaſion, or even doubts of other men; and vent on their antagoniſts that impatience which is the natural reſult of ſo diſagreeable a ſtate of the underſtanding. They then embrace eaſily any pretence for repreſenting opponents as impious and prophane; and if they can alſo find a colour for connecting this violence with the intereſts of civil government, they can no longer be reſtrained from giving uncontrouled ſcope to vengeance and reſentment. But ſurely never enterprize was more unfortunate than that of founding perſecution upon policy, or endeavouring, for the ſake of peace, to ſettle an entire uniformity of opinion, in queſtions which, of all others, are leaſt ſubjected to

* Heylin, p. 47.

the

the criterion of human reaſon. The univerſal and uncontradicted prevalence of one opinion in religious ſubjects, can only be owing at firſt to the ſtupid ignorance and barbariſm of the people, who never indulge themſelves in any ſpeculation or enquiry; and there is no other expedient for maintaining that uniformity, ſo fondly ſought after, but by baniſhing for ever all curioſity and all improvement in ſcience and cultivation. It may not, indeed, appear difficult to check, by a ſteady ſeverity, the firſt beginnings of controverſy; but beſides that this policy expoſes for ever the people to all the abject terrors of ſuperſtition, and the magiſtrate to the endleſs encroachments of eccleſiaſtics, it alſo renders men ſo delicate, that they can never endure to hear of oppoſition; and they will ſome time pay dearly for that falſe tranquillity in which they have been ſo long indulged. As healthful bodies are ruined by too nice a regimen, and are thereby rendered incapable of bearing the unavoidable incidents of human life; a people who never were allowed to imagine, that their principles could be conteſted, fly out into the moſt outrageous violence when any event (and ſuch events are common) produces a faction among their clergy, and gives riſe to any difference in tenet or opinion. But whatever may be ſaid in favour of ſuppreſſing, by perſecution, the firſt beginnings of hereſy, no ſolid argument can be alledged for extending ſeverity towards multitudes, or endeavouring, by capital puniſhments, to extirpate an opinion, which has diffuſed itſelf thro' men of every rank and ſtation. Beſides the extreme barbarity of ſuch an attempt, it proves commonly ineffectual to the purpoſe intended; and ſerves only to make men more obſtinate in their perſuaſion, and to encreaſe the number of their proſelytes. The melancholy with which the fear of death, torture, and perſecution inſpires the ſectaries, is the proper diſpoſition for foſtering religious zeal: The proſpect of eternal rewards, when brought near, overpowers the dread of temporal puniſhment: The glory of martyrdom ſtimulates all the more furious zealots, eſpecially the leaders and preachers: Where a violent animoſity is excited by oppreſſion, men paſs naturally from hating the perſons of their tyrants, to a more violent abhorrence of their doctrines: And the ſpectators, moved with pity towards the ſuppoſed martyrs, are naturally ſeduced to embrace thoſe principles which can inſpire men with a conſtancy that appears almoſt ſupernatural. Open the door to toleration, the mutual hatred relaxes among the ſectaries; their attachment to their particular religion decays; the common occupations and pleaſures of life ſucceed to the acrimony of diſputation; and the ſame man, who, in other circumſtances, would have braved flames and tortures, is engaged to change his religion from the ſmalleſt proſpect of favour and advancement, or even from the frivolous hopes of becoming more faſhionable in his principles. If any exception can be admitted to this

Chap. II. 1555.

Chap. II. 1555. maxim of toleration, it will only be where a theology altogether new, nowiſe connected with the ancient religion of the ſtate, is imported from foreign countries, and may eaſily, at one blow, be eradicated, without leaving the ſeeds of future innovations. But as this inſtance would involve ſome apology for the ancient pagan perſecutions, or for the extirpation of Chriſtianity in China and Japan; it ought ſurely, on account of this deteſted conſequence, to be rather buried in eternal ſilence and oblivion.

THO' theſe arguments appear entirely ſatisfactory, yet ſuch is the ſubtilty of human wit, that Gardiner, and the other enemies to toleration, were not reduced to ſilence, and they ſtill found topics on which to ſupport the controverſy. The doctrine, ſaid they, of liberty of conſcience is founded on the moſt flagrant impiety, and ſuppoſes ſuch an indifference among all religions, ſuch an obſcurity in theological doctrines, as to render the church and magiſtrate incapable of diſtinguiſhing with certainty, the dictates of Heaven from the mere fictions of human imagination. If the Divinity reveals principles to mankind, he will ſurely give a criterion by which they may be aſcertained; and a prince, who knowingly allows theſe principles to be perverted, or adulterated, is infinitely more criminal than if he gave permiſſion for the vending of poiſon, under the ſhape of bread, to all his ſubjects. Perſecution may, indeed, ſeem better calculated to make hypocrites than converts; but experience teaches us, that the habits of hypocriſy often turn into reality; and the children at leaſt, ignorant of their parents diſſimulation, may happily be educated in more orthodox tenets. It is abſurd, in oppoſition to conſiderations of ſuch unſpeakable importance, to plead the temporal and frivolous intereſts of civil ſociety; and if matters be thoroughly examined, even that topic will not appear ſo certain and univerſal in favour of toleration as by ſome it is repreſented. Where ſects ariſe, whoſe fundamental principle on all ſides, is to execrate, and abhor, and damn, and extirpate each other; what choice has the magiſtrate left but to take party, and by rendering one ſect entirely prevalent, reſtore, at leaſt for a time, the public tranquillity? The political body, being here ſickly, muſt not be treated as if it were in a ſtate of ſound health; and an affected neutrality in the prince, or even a cool preference, may ſerve only to encourage the hopes of all the ſects, and keep alive their animoſity. The proteſtants, far from tolerating the religion of their anceſtors, regard it as an impious and deteſtable idolatry; and during the late minority, when they were entirely maſters, enacted very ſevere, tho' not capital, puniſhments againſt all exerciſe of the catholic worſhip, and even againſt ſuch as barely abſtained from their profane rites and ſacraments. Nor are inſtances wanting of their endeavours to ſecure an imagined orthodoxy by the moſt rigorous executions: Calvin has

burned Servetus at Geneva: Cranmer brought Arians and Anabaptiſts to the ſtake: And if perſecution of any kind is to be admitted, the moſt bloody and violent will ſurely be allowed the moſt juſtifiable, as the moſt effectual. Impriſonments, fines, confiſcations, whippings, ſerve only to irritate the ſects, without diſabling them from reſiſtance: But the ſtake, the wheel, or the gibbet, muſt ſoon terminate in the extirpation or baniſhment of all the heretics, who are inclined to give diſturbance, and in the entire ſilence and ſubmiſſion of the reſt. Chap. II. 1555.

THE arguments of Gardiner being more agreeable to the cruel bigotry of Mary and Philip, were better received; and tho' Pole pleaded, as is affirmed *, the advice of the emperor, who recommended it to his daughter-in-law, not to practice violence againſt the proteſtants, and deſired her to conſider his own example, who, after endeavouring thro' his whole life to extirpate hereſy, had, in the end, reaped nothing but confuſion and diſappointment, the ſcheme of toleration was entirely rejected. It was determined to let looſe the laws in their full rigour againſt the reformed religion; and England was ſoon filled with ſcenes of horror, which have ever ſince rendered the catholic religion the object of general deteſtation, and which prove, that no human depravity can equal revenge and cruelty, covered with the mantle of religion.

THE perſecutors began with Rogers, who was prebendary of St. Pauls, and a man eminent in his party for virtue as well as for learning. Gardiner's plan was firſt to attack men of that character, whom, he hoped, terror would bend to ſubmiſſion, and whoſe example, either of puniſhment or recantation, would naturally have influence on the multitude: But he found a perſeverance and courage in Rogers, which it may ſeem ſtrange to find in human nature, and of which all ages, and all ſects, do notwithſtanding furniſh many examples. Rogers, beſide the care of his own preſervation, lay under other very powerful temptations to compliance: He had a wife, whom he tenderly loved, and ten children; yet ſuch was his ſerenity after his condemnation, that the jailors, it is ſaid, waked him from a ſound ſleep, when the hour of his execution approached. He had deſired to ſee his wife before he died; but Gardiner told him, that he was a prieſt; he could not poſſibly have a wife: Thus joining inſult to cruelty. Rogers was burnt in Smithfield †. Violent perſecution in England.

HOOPER, biſhop of Gloceſter, had been tried at the ſame time with Rogers; but was ſent to his own dioceſe to be executed. This circumſtance was contrived to

* Burnet, vol. ii. Heylin, p. 47. It is not likely, however, that Charles gave any ſuch advice: For he himſelf was at this very time proceeding with great violence in perſecuting the reformed in Flanders. Bentivoglio, part i. lib. i.

† Fox, vol. iii. p. 119. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 302.

Chap. II. 1555. ſtrike the greater terror into his flock; but it was a ſource of ſatisfaction to Hooper, who rejoiced in giving teſtimony, by his death, to that doctrine which he had formerly taught them. When he was tied to the ſtake, a ſtool was ſet before him, and the Queen's pardon laid upon it, which it was ſtill in his power to merit by his recantation: But he ordered it to be removed; and chearfully prepared himſelf for that dreadful puniſhment to which he was ſentenced. He ſuffered it in its full ſeverity: The wind, which was vehement, blew the flame of the reeds from his body: The faggots were green, and did not kindle eaſily: All his lower parts were conſumed before his vitals were attacked: One of his hands dropt off: With the other he continued to beat his breaſt: He was heard to pray and exhort the people, till his tongue, ſwoln with the violence of his agony, could no longer permit him utterance. He was three quarters of an hour in torture, which he bore with inflexible conſtancy ‡.

SANDERS was burned at Coventry: A pardon was alſo offered him; but he rejected it, and embraced the ſtake, ſaying, "Welcome the croſs of Chriſt; "welcome everlaſting life." Taylor, parſon of Hadley, was conſumed by flames in that place, amidſt his ancient friends and pariſhioners. When tied to the ſtake, he repeated a pſalm in Engliſh: One of his guards ſtruck him on the mouth, and bid him ſpeak Latin: Another, in a rage, gave him a blow on the head with his halbert, which happily put an end to his torments.

THERE was one Philpot, archdeacon of Wincheſter, poſſeſſed of ſuch zeal for orthodoxy, that having been engaged in a diſpute with an Arian, he ſpit in his adverſary's face, to ſhow the great deteſtation which he had entertained againſt that hereſy. He afterwards wrote a treatiſe to juſtify this unmannerly expreſſion of zeal; and he ſaid, that he was led to it, in order to relieve the ſorrow conceived from ſuch horrid blaſphemy, and to ſignify how unworthy ſuch a miſcreant was of being admitted into the ſociety of any chriſtian ‖. Philpot was a proteſtant; and falling now into the hands of people as zealous as himſelf, but more powerful, he was condemned to the flames, and ſuffered at Smithfield. It ſeems to be almoſt a general rule, that, in all religions except the true, no man will ſuffer martyrdom, who would not alſo inflict it willingly on all who differ from him. The ſame zeal for ſpeculative opinions is the cauſe of both.

THE article upon which almoſt all the proteſtants were condemned, was, their refuſal to acknowledge the real preſence. Gardiner, who had vainly expected, that a few examples would ſtrike a terror into the reformers, finding the work daily multiply upon him, devolved the invidious office on others, chiefly on Bon-

‡ Fox, vol. iii. p. 145, &c. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 302. Heylin, p. 48, 49. Godwin, p. 349.
‖ Strype, vol. iii. p. 261. and Coll. N°. 58.

ner,

ner, a man of profligate manners, and of a brutal character, who ſeemed to rejoice in the torments of the unhappy ſufferers *. He ſometimes whipped the priſoners with his own hands, till he was tired with the violence of the exerciſe: He tore out the beard of a weaver, who refuſed to relinquiſh his religion; and that he might give him a ſpecimen of burning, he held his hand to the candle, till the ſinews and veins ſhrunk and burſt †. Chap. II. 1555.

It is needleſs to be particular in enumerating all the horrid cruelties practiſed in England during the courſe of three years that theſe perſecutions laſted: The ſavage barbarity on the one hand, and the patient conſtancy on the other, are ſo ſimilar in all theſe martyrdoms, that the narration, very little agreeable in itſelf, would never be relieved by any variety. Human nature appears not, on any occaſion, ſo deteſtable, and at the ſame time ſo abſurd, as in theſe religious perſecutions, which ſink men below infernal ſpirits in wickedneſs, and below the beaſts in folly. A few inſtances only may be worth preſerving, in order, if poſſible, to warn zealous bigots, for ever to avoid ſuch odious and ſuch fruitleſs barbarity.

Ferrar, biſhop of St. David's, was burned in his own dioceſe; and his appeal to cardinal Pole was not attended to ‡. Ridley, biſhop of London, and Latimer, formerly biſhop of Worceſter, two prelates celebrated for learning and virtue, periſhed together in the ſame flames at Oxford, and ſupported each others conſtancy by their mutual exhortations. Latimer, when tied to the ſtake, called to his companion, "Be of good cheer, brother, we ſhall this day kindle ſuch "a torch in England, as, I truſt in God, ſhall never be extinguiſhed." The executioners had been ſo merciful (for that clemency may more naturally be aſcribed to them than to the religious zealots) as to tie bags of gunpowder about theſe prelates, in order to put a ſpeedy period to their tortures: The exploſion immediately killed Latimer, who was in an extreme old age: Ridley continued alive during ſome time in the midſt of the flames ‖.

One Hunter, a young man of nineteen, an apprentice, having been ſeduced by a prieſt into a diſpute, had unwarily denied the real preſence. Senſible of his danger, he immediately concealed himſelf; and Bonner laying hold of his father, threatened him with the greateſt ſeverities, if he did not produce the young man to ſtand his trial. Hunter, hearing the vexations to which his father was expoſed, voluntarily delivered himſelf up to Bonner, and was condemned to the flames by that barbarous prelate.

Thomas Haukes, when conducted to the ſtake, agreed with his friends, that if he found the torture tolerable, he would make them a ſignal to that purpoſe in

* Heylin, p. 47, 48. † Fox, vol. iii. p. 187. ‡ Ibid. p. 216.
‖ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 318. Heylin, p. 52.

the

Chap. II. 1555. the midſt of the flames. His zeal for the cauſe in which he ſuffered, ſo ſupported him, that he ſtretched out his arms, the ſignal agreed on; and in that poſture he expired *. This example, with many others of like conſtancy, encouraged multitudes, not only to ſuffer, but even to aſpire to martyrdom.

THE tender ſex itſelf, as they have commonly a greater propenſity to religion, produced many inſtances of the moſt inflexible courage in ſupporting the profeſſion of it, againſt all the fury of the perſecutors. One execution in particular was attended with circumſtances which, even at that time, excited aſtoniſhment, by reaſon of their unuſual barbarity. A woman in Guernſey, being near the time of her labour when brought to the ſtake, was thrown into ſuch agitation by the torture, that her belly burſt, and ſhe was delivered in the midſt of the flames. One of the guards immediately ſnatched the infant from the fire, and attempted to ſave it: But a magiſtrate who ſtood by, ordered it to be thrown back; being determined, he ſaid, that nothing ſhould ſurvive which ſprung from ſuch an obſtinate and heretical parent †.

THE perſons condemned to theſe puniſhments were not convicted for teaching, or dogmatizing, contrary to the eſtabliſhed religion: They were ſeized merely on ſuſpicion; and articles being offered them to ſubſcribe, they were immediately, upon their refuſal, condemned to the flames ‡. Theſe inſtances of barbarity, ſo unuſual in the nation, excited horror; the conſtancy of the martyrs was the object of admiration; and as men have a principle of equity engraven in their minds, which even falſe religion is not able totally to obliterate, they were ſhocked to ſee perſons of probity, of honour, of pious diſpoſitions, expoſed to puniſhments more ſevere than were inflicted on the greateſt ruffians, for crimes ſubverſive of civil ſociety. To exterminate the whole proteſtant party, was known to be impoſſible; and nothing could appear more iniquitous, than to ſubject to torture, the moſt conſcientious and courageous among them; and allow the cowards and hypocrites to eſcape. Each martyrdom, therefore, was equivalent to a hundred ſermons againſt popery; and men either avoided ſuch horrid ſpectacles, or returned from them full of a violent, tho' ſecret, indignation againſt the perſecutors. Repeated orders were ſent from the council, to quicken the diligence of the magiſtrates in ſearching after heretics; and, in ſome places, the gentry were obliged to countenance, by their preſence, theſe barbarous executions. Theſe violences tended only to render the Spaniſh government daily more odious; and Philip, ſenſible of the hatred which he incurred, endeavoured to remove the reproach from himſelf by a very groſs artifice: He ordered his con-

* Fox, vol. iii. p. 265.
‡ Ibid. p. 306.
† Ibid. p. 747. Heylin, p. 57. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 337.

feſſor

feſſor to deliver in his preſence a ſermon in favour of toleration: A doctrine ſomewhat extraordinary in the mouth of a Spaniſh friar ‖. But the court, finding that Bonner, however ſhameleſs and ſavage, would not bear alone the whole infamy, ſoon threw off the maſk; and the unrelenting temper of the Queen, as well as of the King, appeared without controul. A bold ſtep was even taken towards the introduction of the inquiſition into England. As the biſhops' courts, tho' extremely arbitrary, and not confined by any ordinary forms of law, appeared not to be inveſted with ſufficient power, a commiſſion was appointed, by authority of the Queen's prerogative, more effectually to extirpate hereſy. Twenty-one perſons were named; but any three were armed with the powers of the whole. The commiſſion runs in theſe terms: "That ſince many falſe rumours were publiſhed "among the ſubjects, and many heretical opinions were alſo ſpread among them, "therefore they were to enquire into thoſe, either by preſentments by witneſſes, "or any other political way they could deviſe, and to ſearch after all hereſies; "the bringers in, the ſellers, the readers of all heretical books: They were to "examine and puniſh all miſbehaviours or negligences, in any church or chap-"pel; and to try all prieſts that did not preach the ſacrament of the altar; all "perſons that did not hear maſs, or come to their pariſh church to ſervice, that "would not go in proceſſions, or did not take holy bread or holy water: And "if they found any that did obſtinately perſiſt in ſuch hereſies, they were to put "them into the hands of their ordinaries, to be puniſhed according to the ſpiri-"tual laws: Giving the commiſſioners full power to proceed, as their diſcre-"tions and conſciences ſhould direct them, and to uſe all ſuch means as they "would invent for the ſearching of the premiſes; empowering them alſo to call "before them ſuch witneſſes as they pleaſed, and to force them to make oath of "ſuch things as might diſcover what they ſought after *." Some civil powers were alſo given the commiſſioners to puniſh vagabonds and quarrelſome perſons. Chap. II. 1555.

To bring the methods of proceeding in England ſtill nearer the practice of the inquiſition, letters were written to the lord North, and others, enjoining them, "To put to the torture ſuch obſtinate perſons as would not confeſs, and there to "order them at their diſcretion †." Secret ſpies alſo, and informers, were employed, according to the practice of that iniquitous tribunal. Inſtructions were given to the juſtices of peace, "That they ſhould call ſecretly before them one "or two honeſt perſons within their limits, or more, at their diſcretion, and "command them by oath, or otherwiſe, that they ſhall ſecretly learn and ſearch "out ſuch perſons as ſhall evil-behave themſelves in church, or idly, or ſhall "deſpiſe openly by words, the King's or Queen's proceedings, or go about to

‖ Heylin, p. 56. * Burnet, vol. ii. Coll. 32. † Burnet, vol. iii. p. 243.

"make

Chap. II. 1555.

" make any commotion, or tell any ſeditious tales or news. And alſo, that the " ſame perſons ſo to be appointed, ſhall declare to the ſame juſtices of peace, " the ill behaviour of lewd diſordered perſons, whether it ſhall be for uſing un- " lawful games, and ſuch other light behaviour of ſuch ſuſpected perſons: And " that the ſame information ſhall be given ſecretly to the juſtices; and the ſame " juſtices ſhall call ſuch accuſed perſons before them, and examine them, with- " out declaring by whom they were accuſed. And that the ſame juſtices ſhall, " upon their examination, puniſh the offenders, according as their offences ſhall " appear, upon the accuſement and examination, by their diſcretion, either by " open puniſhment or by good abearing ‡." In ſome reſpects, this tyrannical edict even exceeded the oppreſſion of the inquiſition; by introducing into every part of government, the ſame iniquities which that tribunal practiſes only for the extirpation of hereſy, and which are, in ſome meaſure, neceſſary, wherever that end is earneſtly purſued.

BUT the court had deviſed a more expeditious and ſummary method of ſuppreſſing hereſy than even the inquiſition itſelf. They iſſued a proclamation againſt books of hereſy, treaſon, and ſedition; and declared, " That whoſoever had " any of theſe books, and did not preſently burn them, without reading them, " or ſhewing them to any other perſon, ſhould be eſteemed rebels; and without " any farther delay, be executed by martial law ‖." From the ſtate of the Engliſh government, during that period, it is not ſo much the illegality of theſe proceedings, as their violence and their pernicious tendency, which ought to be the object of our cenſure.

WE have thrown together almoſt all the tranſactions againſt heretics, tho' carried on during a courſe of three years; that we may be obliged, as little as poſſible, to return to ſuch ſhocking violences and barbarities. It is computed, that in that time two hundred and ſeventy-ſeven perſons ſuffered by fire; beſides thoſe puniſhed by impriſonment, fines, and confiſcations. Among thoſe who ſuffered by fire, were five biſhops, twenty-one clergymen, eight lay gentlemen, eighty-four tradeſmen, one hundred huſbandmen, ſervants, and labourers, fifty-five women, and four children. This perſevering cruelty appears aſtoniſhing; yet is it much inferior to what has been practiſed in other countries. A great author * computes, that in the Low Countries alone, from the time that the edict of Charles the fifth was promulgated againſt the reformers, there had been fifty thouſand perſons hanged, beheaded, buried alive, or burnt, on account of reli-

‡ Burnet, vol. iii. p. 246, 247.
‖ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 363. Heylin, p. 79.
* Father Paul, lib. 5.

gion;

gion; and that in France the number had alſo been conſiderable. Yet in both countries, as the ſame author ſubjoins, the progreſs of the new opinions, inſtead of being checked, was rather forwarded by theſe perſecutions. Chap. II. 1555.

THE burning of heretics was a very natural method of reconciling the kingdom to the church of Rome, and little ſolicitation was requiſite to engage the pope to receive the ſtrayed flock, from which he reaped ſuch profit: Yet was there a ſolemn embaſſy ſent to Rome, conſiſting of Sir Anthony Brown, created viſcount Montacute, the biſhop of Ely, and Sir Edward Carne; in order to carry the ſubmiſſions of England, and beg to be readmitted into the boſom of the catholic church *. Paul the fourth, after a ſhort interval, now filled the papal chair; the moſt haughty pontiff, that during ſeveral ages had been elevated to that dignity. He was offended, that Mary ſtill retained among her titles, that of Queen of Ireland; and he affirmed that it belonged to him alone, as he ſaw proper, either to erect new kingdoms or aboliſh the old: But to avoid all diſpute with the new converts, he thought proper to erect Ireland into a kingdom, and then admitted the title, as if it had been aſſumed from his own conceſſion. This was an uſual artifice of the popes to give allowance to what they could not prevent †, and afterwards pretend, that perſons, while they exerciſed their own power, were only acting by authority from the papacy. And tho' Paul had at firſt intended to oblige Mary formally to recede from this title, before he would beſtow it upon her; he found it wiſer to proceed in a more political, and leſs haughty manner ‡.

THE other point of diſcuſſion between the pope and the Engliſh ambaſſadors was not ſo eaſily terminated. Paul inſiſted, that the property and poſſeſſions of the church ſhould be reſtored even to the uttermoſt farthing: That whatever belonged to God, could never by any law be converted to profane uſes, and every perſon who detained ſuch poſſeſſions was in a ſtate of eternal damnation: That he would willingly, in conſideration of the humble ſubmiſſions of England, make them a preſent of theſe eccleſiaſtical revenues; but ſuch a conceſſion exceeded his power, and the people might be certain that ſo great a profanation of holy things would be a perpetual anathema upon them, and would blaſt all their future felicity: That if they would truly ſhow their filial piety, they muſt reſtore all the privileges and emoluments of the Roman church, and Peter's pence among the reſt; nor could they expect, that that apoſtle would open to them the gates of Paradiſe, while they detained from him his poſſeſſions on earth §.

* Heylin, p. 45. † Heylin, p. 45. Father Paul, lib. 5. ‡ Father Paul, lib. 5.
§ Father Paul, lib. 5. Heylin, p. 45.

Chap. II. 1555. These earneſt remonſtrances, being tranſmitted to England, tho' they had little influence on the nation, operated powerfully on the Queen; and ſhe was determined, in order to eaſe her conſcience, to reſtore all the church-lands which were ſtill in the poſſeſſion of the crown; and the more to expreſs her zeal, ſhe erected anew ſome convents and monaſteries, notwithſtanding the low condition of the public revenues. When this meaſure was debated in council, ſome members objected, that if ſuch a conſiderable part of the revenue was diſmembered, the dignity of the crown would fall to decay: But the Queen replied, that ſhe preferred the ſalvation of her ſoul to ten ſuch kingdoms as England †. Theſe imprudent meaſures would not probably have taken place ſo eaſily, had it not been for the death of Gardiner, which happened about this time: The ſeals were given to Heathe, archbiſhop of York; that an eccleſiaſtic might ſtill be poſſeſſed of that high office, and be better enabled by his authority to forward the perſecutions againſt the reformed.

21ſt October. A Parliament. THESE perſecutions were now become extremely odious to the nation; and the effects of the public diſcontents appeared in the new Parliament, which was ſummoned to meet at Weſtminſter ‡. A bill was paſſed * reſtoring to the church the tenths and firſt fruits, and all the impropriations which remained in the hands of the crown; but tho' this matter directly concerned none but the Queen herſelf, great oppoſition was made to the bill in the houſe of commons. An application being made for a ſubſidy during two years, and for two fifteenths, the latter was refuſed by the commons; and many members ſaid, that while the crown was thus deſpoiling itſelf of its revenues, it was in vain to beſtow riches upon it. The Parliament rejected a bill for obliging the exiles to return under certain penalties, and another for incapacitating ſuch as were remiſs in the proſecution of hereſy to be juſtices of the peace. The Queen finding the intractable humour of the commons, thought proper to diſſolve the Parliament.

9th December.

THE ſpirit of oppoſition, which began to prevail in Parliament, was likely to be the more vexatious to Mary, as ſhe was otherwiſe in very bad humour on account of her huſband's abſence, who, tired of her importunate love and jealouſy, and finding his authority extremely limited in England, had laid hold of the firſt opportunity to leave her, and had gone over laſt ſummer to the emperor in Flanders. The indifference and neglect of her huſband, added to the diſappointment in her imagined pregnancy, threw her into a deep melancholy; and ſhe

† Heylin, p. 53. 65. Hollingſhed, p. 1127. Speed, p. 826. ‡ Burnet, vol. ii. p. 322.
* 2 and 3 Phil. and Mar. cap. 4.

gave

gave vent to her ſpleen by enforcing daily the perſecutions againſt the proteſtants, and even by expreſſions of rage againſt all her ſubjects, by whom ſhe knew herſelf to be hated, and whoſe oppoſition, in refuſing an entire compliance with Philip, was the cauſe, ſhe believed, why he had alienated his affections from her, and afforded her ſo little of his company. The leſs return her love met with, the more it encreaſed; and ſhe paſſed moſt of her time in ſolitude, where ſhe gave vent to her paſſion, either in tears, or in writing fond epiſtles to Philip, who ſeldom returned her any anſwer, and ſcarce deigned to counterfeit any ſentiment of love or even of gratitude towards her. The chief part of government, to which ſhe attended, was the extorting money from her people, in order to ſatisfy his demands; and as the Parliament had granted her but a ſmall ſupply, ſhe had recourſe to expedients the moſt violent and moſt irregular. She levied a loan of 60,000 pounds upon a thouſand perſons, of whoſe compliance, either on account of their riches or their affections to her, ſhe held herſelf beſt aſſured: But that ſum not ſufficing, ſhe exacted a general loan of an hundred pounds apiece on every one who poſſeſſed twenty pounds a year. This grievous impoſition lay very heavy on the gentry, who were obliged, many of them, to retrench their expences, and diſmiſs their ſervants, in order to enable them to comply with her commands: And as theſe ſervants, accuſtomed to idleneſs, and having no means of ſubſiſtance, betook themſelves very commonly to theft and robbery, the Queen publiſhed a proclamation, by which ſhe obliged their former maſters to take them back to their ſervice. She levied 60,000 marks from 7000 yeomen, who had not contributed to the former loan; and ſhe exacted 36,000 pounds more from the merchants. In order to engage ſome Londoners to comply the more willingly with her multiplied extortions, ſhe paſſed an edict, prohibiting, for four months, the exporting any Engliſh cloths or kerſeys for Flanders; an expedient which procured a good market for ſuch as had already ſent any quantity of cloth thither. Her rapaciouſneſs engaged her to give endleſs diſturbance and interruption to commerce. The Engliſh company ſettled in Antwerp having refuſed her a loan of 40,000 pounds, ſhe diſſembled her reſentment, till ſhe found, that they had bought and ſhipped great quantities of cloth for Antwerp fair, which was approaching: She then laid an embargo on the ſhips, and obliged the merchants to grant her a loan of the 40,000 pounds at firſt demanded, to engage for the payment of 20,000 pounds more at a limited time, and to ſubmit to an arbitrary impoſition of twenty ſhillings on each piece. Some time after, ſhe was informed, that the Italian merchants had ſhipped above 40,000 pieces of cloth for the Levant, for which they were to pay a crown a piece, the uſual impoſition: She ſtruck a bargain with the merchant adventurers in London;

Chap. II. 1555.

The Queen's extortions.

Chap. II. 1555. don; prohibited entirely the foreigners to make any exportation; and received, from the Engliſh merchants, in conſideration of this iniquity, the ſum of 50,000 pounds, and an impoſition of four crowns on each piece of cloth which they ſhould export. She attempted to borrow great ſums abroad; but her credit ran ſo low, that, tho' ſhe offered 14 per cent. to the city of Antwerp for a loan of 30,000 pounds, ſhe could not obtain it, till ſhe conſtrained the city of London to be ſurety for her *. All theſe violent expedients were employed while ſhe herſelf was in profound peace with all the world, and had viſibly no other occaſion for money but to ſupply the demands of a huſband, who attended only to his own convenience, and ſhowed himſelf entirely indifferent about her intereſts.

The emperor reſigns his crown.

PHILIP was now become maſter of all the wealth of the Indies, and of the richeſt and moſt extenſive dominions in Europe, by the voluntary reſignation of the emperor, Charles the fifth, who, tho' ſtill in the vigour of his age, had taken a diſguſt to the world, and was determined to ſeek, in the tranquillity of retreat, for that happineſs, which he had in vain purſued, amidſt the tumults of war, and the reſtleſs projects of ambition. He ſummoned the ſtates of the Low 25th October. Countries; and ſeating himſelf on the throne for the laſt time, explained to his ſubjects the reaſons of his reſignation, abſolved them from all oaths of allegiance, and devolving his authority on Philip, told him, that his paternal tenderneſs made him weep, when he reflected on the burthen which he impoſed upon him †. He inculcated on him the great and only duty of a prince, the ſtudy of his people's happineſs; and repreſented how much preferable it was to govern, by affection rather than fear, the nations ſubjected to his dominion. The cool reflections of age now diſcovered to him the emptineſs of his former purſuits; and he found, that the vain ſchemes of extending his empire had been the ſource of endleſs oppoſition and diſappointment, had kept himſelf, his neighbours, and his ſubjects in perpetual inquietude, and had fruſtrated the ſole end of government, the felicity of the nations committed to his care; an object which meets with no oppoſition, and which, if ſteadily purſued, can alone convey a laſting and ſolid ſatisfaction.

1556. A FEW months after, he reſigned to Philip his other dominions; and embarking on board a fleet, ſailed to Spain, and took his journey to St. Juſt, a monaſtery in Eſtremadura, which, being ſituated in a happy climate, and amidſt the greateſt beauties of nature, he had choſen for the place of his retreat.

* Godwin, p. 359. Cowper's Chronicle. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 359. Carte, p. 330, 333, 337, 341. Strype's Memor. vol. iii. p. 428, 558. Annals, vol. i. p. 15.

† Thuan. lib. xvi. c. 20.

When

When he arrived at Burgos, he found, by the thinneſs of his court, and the negligent attendance of the Spaniſh grandees, that he was no longer emperor; and tho' this obſervation might convince him ſtill more of the vanity of the world, and make him more heartily deſpiſe what he had renounced, he ſighed to find that all the former adulation and obeiſance had been paid to his fortune, not to his perſon. With better reaſon was he ſtruck with the ingratitude of his ſon Philip, who allowed him to wait a long time for the payment of the ſmall penſion which he had reſerved; and this diſappointment in his domeſtic enjoyments gave him a very ſenſible concern. He purſued however his reſolution with inflexible conſtancy; and ſhutting himſelf up in his retreat, he exerted ſuch ſelf-command, that he reſtrained even his curioſity from any enquiry concerning the tranſactions of the world, which he had entirely abandoned. The fencing againſt the pains and infirmities under which he laboured, occupied a great part of his time; and during the intervals, he employed his leiſure hours either in examining the controverſies of theology, with which his age had been ſo much agitated, and which he had hitherto conſidered only in a political light, or in imitating the works of renowned artiſts, particularly in mechanics, of which he had always been a great admirer and encourager. He is ſaid to have here diſcovered a propenſity to the new doctrines; and to have frequently dropped hints of this unexpected alteration in his ſentiments. Having amuſed himſelf with the conſtruction of clocks and watches, he thence remarked how impracticable the object was, in which he had ſo much employed himſelf during his grandeur; and how impoſſible that he, who never could frame two machines that would go exactly alike, could ever be able to make all mankind concur in the ſame belief and opinion. He ſurvived his retreat two years. Chap. II. 1556.

THE emperor Charles had very early, in the beginning of his reign, found the difficulty of governing ſuch diſtant dominions; and he had made his brother Ferdinand be elected King of the Romans; with a view of his ſucceeding to the imperial dignity, as well as to his German dominions. But having afterwards enlarged his views, and formed plans of aggrandizing his family, he regreted, that he muſt diſmember ſuch conſiderable ſtates; and he endeavoured to engage Ferdinand, by the moſt tempting offers, and moſt earneſt ſolicitations, to yield up his pretenſions in favour of Philip. Finding his attempts fruitleſs, he had reſigned the imperial crown with his other dignities; and Ferdinand, according to common form, applied to the pope for his coronation. The arrogant pontiff refuſed the demand; and pretended, that, tho', on the death of an emperor, he was obliged to crown the prince elected, yet in the caſe of a reſignation, the right devolved to the holy ſee, and it belonged to the pope alone to appoint an emperor.

Chap. II. 1556.

emperor. The conduct of Paul was in every thing conformable to these lofty pretensions. He thundered always in the ears of all ambassadors, that he stood in no need of the assistance of any prince, that he was above all potentates of the earth, that he would not accustom monarchs to pretend to a familiarity or equality with him, that it belonged to him to alter and regulate kingdoms, that he was successor of those who had deposed kings and emperors, and that, rather than submit to any thing below his dignity, he would set fire to the four corners of the world. He went so far, as at table, in the presence of many persons, and even openly, in a public consistory, to say, that he would not admit any Kings for his companions; they were all his subjects, and he would hold them under these feet: So saying, he stamped the ground with his old and infirm limbs: For he was now past fourscore years of age *.

The world could not forbear the making a comparison between Charles the fifth, a prince, who, tho' educated amidst wars and intrigues of state, had prevented the decline of age, and had descended from the throne, in order to set apart an interval for thought and reflection, and a priest, who in the extremity of old age exulted in his dominion, and from restless ambition and revenge was throwing all nations into combustion. Paul had entertained the most inveterate animosity against the house of Austria; and tho' a truce of five years had been concluded between France and Spain, he excited Henry by his solicitations to break it, and he promised to assist him in recovering Naples and the dominions to which he laid claim in Italy; a project which had ever proved fatal to his predecessors. He himself engaged in hostilities with the duke of Alva, viceroy of Naples; and the duke of Guise being sent with forces to support him, the renewal of war between the two crowns seemed almost inevitable. Philip, tho' less warlike than his father, was no less ambitious; and he trusted, that by the intrigues of the cabinet, where, he believed, his caution and secrecy and prudence gave him the superiority, he should be able to subdue all his enemies, and extend his authority and dominion. For this reason, as well as from the desire of settling his new empire, he was desirous to maintain peace with France; but when he found, that without sacrificing his honour, it was impossible for him to overlook the hostile attempts of Henry, he prepared for war with great industry. In order to give himself the more advantage, he was desirous to embark England in the quarrel; and tho' the Queen was of herself extremely averse to that design, he hoped, that the devoted fondness, which, notwithstanding repeated instances of his indifference, she still bore him, would effectually second his applications. Had the matter indeed depended solely on her, she was incapable of re-

* Father Paul, lib. 5.

sisting

sisting her husband's commands; but she had little weight with her council, still less with her people; and her government, which was every day becoming more odious, seemed unable to support itself even during the most profound tranquillity, much more if a war was kindled with France, and what seemed an inevitable consequence, with Scotland, supported by that powerful kingdom. Chap. II. 1556.

An act of barbarity was this year exercised in England, which, added to many other instances of the same kind, tended to render the government extremely unpopular. Cranmer had long been detained a prisoner; but the Queen now determined to bring him to punishment; and in order the more fully to satiate her vengeance, she resolved to punish him for heresy, rather than for treason. He was cited by the pope to stand his trial at Rome; and tho' he was known to be kept in close custody at Oxford, he was upon his not appearing, condemned as contumacious. Bonner, bishop of London, and Thirleby of Ely, were sent down to Oxford to degrade him; and the former executed that melancholy ceremony with all the joy and exultation, which suited his savage nature *. The revenge of the Queen, not satisfied with the eternal damnation of Cranmer, which she believed inevitable, and with the execution of that dreadful sentence to which he was condemned, prompted her also to seek the ruin of his honour, and the infamy of his name. Persons were employed to attack him, not in the way of disputation, against which he was sufficiently armed; but by flattery, insinuation and address; by representing the dignities to which his character still entitled him, if he would merit them by a recantation; by giving hopes of long enjoying those powerful friends, whom his beneficent disposition had attached to him during the course of his prosperity †. Overcome by the fond love of life, terrified by the prospect of those tortures which awaited him; he allowed, in an unguarded hour, the sentiments of nature to prevail over his resolution, and he agreed to sign a paper, in which he acknowleged the doctrines of the papal supremacy and of the real presence. The court, equally perfidious and cruel, were determined, that this recantation should avail him nothing; and they sent orders, that he should be required to acknowledge his errors in church before the whole people, and that he should thence be immediately led to execution. Cranmer, whether, that he had received a secret intimation of their design, or had repented of his weakness, surprized the audience by a contrary declaration. He said, that he was well apprized of the obedience which he owed to his sovereign and the laws, but this duty extended no farther than to submit patiently to their commands, and to bear without resistance whatever hardships they should impose upon him: That a superior duty, the duty which he owed his Maker, obliged him to speak truth. Execution of Cranmer. 21st March.

* Mem. of Cranm. p. 375. † Heylin, p. 55. Mem. p. 383.

Chap. VII. 1556. truth on all occaſions, and not to relinquiſh, by a baſe denial, the holy doctrine which the ſupreme Being had revealed to mankind: That there was one miſcarriage in his life, of which, above all others, he ſeverely repented; the inſincere declaration of faith, to which he had the weakneſs to conſent, and which the fear of death alone had extorted from him: That he took this opportunity of atoning for his error, by a ſincere and open recantation; and was willing to ſeal with his blood that doctrine which he firmly believed to be communicated from heaven: And that as his hand had erred by betraying his heart, it ſhould firſt be puniſhed, by a ſevere but juſt doom, and ſhould firſt pay the forfeit of its offences. He was thence led to the ſtake amidſt the inſults of the catholics; and having now ſummoned up all the force of his mind, he bore their ſcorn as well as the torture of his puniſhment with ſingular fortitude. He ſtretched out his hand, and without betraying, either by his countenance or motions, the leaſt ſign of weakneſs or even of feeling, he held it in the flames till it was entirely conſumed. His thoughts ſeemed wholly occupied with reflections on his former fault; and he called aloud ſeveral times, *This hand has offended.* Satisfied with that atonement, he then diſcovered a ſerenity in his countenance; and when the fire attacked his body, he ſeemed to be quite inſenſible of his outward ſufferings, and by the force of hope and reſolution to have collected his mind altogether within itſelf, and to repel the fury of the flames. It is pretended, that, after his body was conſumed, his heart was found entire and untouched amidſt the aſhes; an event, which, as it was the emblem of his conſtancy, was fondly believed by the zealous proteſtants. He was undoubtedly a man of merit; poſſeſſed of learning and capacity; and adorned with candour, ſincerity and beneficence, and all thoſe virtues, which were fitted to render him uſeful and amiable in ſociety. His moral qualities procured him univerſal reſpect; and the courage of his martyrdom, tho' he fell ſhort of the rigid inflexibility obſerved in many, made him the hero of the proteſtant party *.

AFTER Cranmer's death, cardinal Pole, who had now taken prieſt's orders, was inſtalled in the ſee of Canterbury; and was thus by this office, as well as his commiſſion of legate, placed at the head of the church of England. But tho' he was averſe to all the ſanguinary methods of converting heretics, and eſteemed the reformation of the clergy the more effectual, as the more laudable expedient for that purpoſe †; he found his authority too weak to oppoſe the barbarous and bigotted diſpoſition of the Queen and of her counſellors. He himſelf, he knew, had been ſuſpected of Lutheraniſm; and as Paul the reigning pope, was a furious perſecutor and his perſonal enemy, he was prompted, by the modeſty of his diſpo-

* Burnet, vol. ii. p. 331, 332, &c. Godwin, p. 352.

† Burnet, vol. ii. p. 324. 325.

ſition, to reſerve his credit for other occaſions, in which he had a greater probability of ſucceſs *. Chap. II. 1556.

THE great object of the Queen was to engage the nation in the war, which was kindled between France and Spain; and cardinal Pole, with many other counſellors, very openly and zealouſly oppoſed this meaſure. Beſides inſiſting on the marriage articles, which provided againſt ſuch an attempt, they repreſented the violence of the domeſtic factions in England, and the diſordered ſtate of the finances; and they foreboded, that the tendency of all theſe meaſures was to reduce the kingdom to a total dependance on Spaniſh councils. Philip had come to London in order to ſupport his partizans; and he told the Queen, that, if he was not gratified in ſo reaſonable a requeſt, he never more would ſet foot in England. This declaration heightened extremely her zeal for promoting his intereſts, and overcoming the inflexibility of her council. After employing other menaces of a more violent nature, ſhe threatened to diſmiſs them all from the board, and to appoint counſellors more obſequious; yet could ſhe not procure a vote for declaring war with France. At laſt, one Stafford and ſome other conſpirators were detected in a deſign of ſurprizing Scarborow †; and a confeſſion being extorted from them, that they had been encouraged by Henry in that attempt, the Queen's importunity prevailed; and it was determined to make this act of hoſtility, with others of a like ſecret and doubtful nature, the ground of the quarrel. War was accordingly declared againſt France; and preparations were every where made for attacking that kingdom. 1557. War with France.

THE revenue of England at that time little exceeded 300,000 pounds ‡. Any conſiderable ſupplies could ſcarce be expected from Parliament, conſidering the preſent diſpoſition of the nation; and as the war would ſenſibly diminiſh the branch of the cuſtoms, the finances, it was foreſeen, would fall ſhort even of the ordinary charges of the government; much more, prove unequal to the vaſt expences of war. But tho' the Queen owed great arrears to all her ſervants, beſides the loans extorted from her ſubjects; theſe conſiderations had no influence on her, and ſhe continued to levy money in the ſame arbitrary and violent manner, which ſhe had formerly practiſed. She obliged the city of London to ſupply her with 60,000 pounds on her huſband's entry; ſhe levied before the legal time the ſecond year's ſubſidy voted by Parliament; ſhe iſſued anew many privy ſeals, by which ſhe procured loans from her people; and having equipped

* Heylin, p. 68, 69. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 327. † Heylin, p. 72. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 351. Sir James Melvil's Memoirs. ‡ Roſſo, Succeſſi d'Inghilterra.

Chap. II. 1557. a fleet, which ſhe could not victual by reaſon of the dearneſs of proviſions, ſhe ſeized all the corn ſhe could find in Suffolk and Norfolk, without paying any price to the owners. By all theſe expedients, aſſiſted by the power of preſſing, ſhe levied an army of ten thouſand men, which ſhe ſent over to the Low Countries, under the command of the earl of Pembroke. Meanwhile, in order to prevent any diſturbance at home, many of the moſt conſiderable gentry were thrown into the Tower; and leſt they ſhould be known, the Spaniſh practice was followed: They were either carried thither in the night-time, or were hoodwinked and muffled by the guards who conducted them ‖.

THE King of Spain had aſſembled an army, which, after the junction of the Engliſh, amounted to above ſixty thouſand ſtrong, commanded by Philibert, duke of Savoy, one of the greateſt captains of the age. The conſtable, Montmorency, who commanded the Frency army, had not half the number to oppoſe him. The duke of Savoy, after menacing Mariembourg and Rocroy, ſat down ſuddenly before St. Quintin; and as the place was weak, and ill provided of a garriſon, he expected in a few days to become maſter of it. But the admiral Coligny, governor of the province, thinking his honour intereſted to ſave ſo important a fortreſs, threw himſelf into St. Quintin, with ſome troops of French and Scots genſdarmes; and by his exhortation and example animated the ſoldiers to a vigorous defence. He diſpatched a meſſenger to his uncle, the conſtable, deſiring a ſupply of men; and that general approached the place with
10th Auguſt. his whole army, in order to facilitate the entry of theſe ſuccours. But the duke of Savoy falling on the reinforcement, executed ſuch ſlaughter upon them, that
Battle of St. Quintin. not above five hundred men got into the place. He next made an attack on the French army, and put them to a total rout, killing four thouſand men, and diſperſing the reſt. In this unfortunate action many of the chief nobility of France were either ſlain or taken priſoners: Among the latter was the old conſtable himſelf, who fighting valiantly, and reſolute to die rather than ſurvive his defeat, was ſurrounded by the enemy, and thus fell alive into their hands. The whole kingdom of France was thrown into conſternation: Paris was attempted to be fortified in a hurry: And had the Spaniards preſently marched thither, it could not fail to have fallen into their hands. But Philip was of a cautious temper; and he determined firſt to take St. Quintin, in order to ſecure a communication with his own dominions. A very little time, it was expected, would finiſh this enterprize; but the bravery of Coligny ſtill prolonged the ſiege ſeventeen days, which proved the ſafety of France. Some

‖ Strype's Eccleſ. Memorials, vol. iii. p. 377.

troops

troops were levied and assembled. Courtiers were sent to recal the duke of Guise and his army from Italy: And the French having recovered from their first alarm, put themselves in a posture of defence. Philip, after taking Ham and Castelet, found the season so far advanced, that he could attempt no farther enterprize; and he broke up his camp and retired into winter quarters. Chap. II. 1557.

But the vigilant activity of Guise, not satisfied with securing the frontiers, prompted him, in the depth of winter, to attempt an enterprize which France, during her greatest successes, had always regarded as impossible, and had never thought of undertaking. Calais was, in that age, deemed an impregnable fortress; and as it was known to be the favourite of the English nation, by whom it could easily be succoured, the recovery of that place by France, was considered as totally desperate. But Coligny had remarked, that, as the town of Calais was surrounded with marshes, which, during the winter, were impassable, except over a dyke guarded by two castles, St. Agatha and Newnam bridge, the English were of late accustomed, on account of the lowness of their finances, to dismiss a great part of the garrison at the end of autumn, and to recal them in the spring, at which time alone they judged their attendance necessary. On this circumstance he had founded his design of making a sudden attack on the place; he had caused it to be secretly surveyed by some engineers; and a plan of the whole enterprize being found among his papers, it served, tho' he himself was made prisoner on the taking of St. Quintin, to suggest the project of that undertaking, and to direct the conduct of the duke of Guise. Calais taken by the French.

Several bodies of troops defiled towards the frontiers on various pretences; and the whole being suddenly assembled, formed an army with which the duke of Guise made an unexpected march towards Calais. At the same time a great number of French ships, being ordered into the channel, under colour of cruizing on the English, composed a fleet which made an attack by sea on the fortifications. The French assaulted St. Agatha with three thousand Harquebusiers; and tho' the garrison made a vigorous defence, they were soon obliged to abandon the place, and retreat towards Newnam bridge. The siege of this latter place was immediately undertaken, and at the same time the fleet battered the risbank, which guarded the entry of the harbour; and both these castles seemed exposed to imminent danger. The governor, lord Wentworth, was a brave officer, but finding that the greater part of his weak garrison was enclosed in Newnam or the risbank, he ordered them to capitulate, and to join him in Calais, which, without their assistance, he was utterly unable to defend. The garrison of Newnam bridge were so happy as to effectuate this purpose; but that of the risbank 1558.

Chap. II. 1558.

bank could not obtain ſuch favourable conditions, and were obliged to ſurrender themſelves priſoners.

THE duke of Guiſe, now holding the place blockaded by ſea and land, though himſelf ſecure of ſucceeding in his enterprize; but in order to prevent all accidents, he delayed not a moment the attack of the place. He pointed his batteries towards the caſtle, where he made a large breach; and having ordered Andelot, Coligny's brother, to drain the foſſée, he commanded an aſſault, which ſucceeded, and the French made a lodgment in the caſtle. On the night following Wentworth attempted to recover this poſt; but having loſt two hundred men in a furious attack which he made upon it *, he found his garriſon ſo weak, that he was obliged to capitulate. Ham and Guiſnes fell ſoon after; and thus the duke of Guiſe, in eight days, during the depth of winter, recovered this important place, that had coſt Edward the third a ſiege of eleven months, at the head of a numerous army, which had that very campaign been victorious in the battle of Creſſy. The Engliſh had held it above two hundred years; and as it gave them, whenever they pleaſed, an entry into France, it was regarded as the moſt important poſſeſſion belonging to the crown. The joy of the French was extreme, as well as the glory acquired by the duke of Guiſe, who, at the time that all Europe imagined France to be ſunk by the unfortunate battle of St. Quintin, had, in oppoſition to the Engliſh, and their allies the Spaniards, acquired poſſeſſion of a place which no former King of France, even during the diſtractions of the civil wars between the houſes of York and Lancaſter, had ever ventured to attempt. The Engliſh, on the other hand, bereaved of this valuable fortreſs, murmured loudly againſt the imprudence of the Queen and her council; who, after engaging in a fruitleſs war, for the ſake of foreign intereſts, had thus expoſed the nation to ſo ſevere a diſgrace. A treaſury exhauſted by expences, and burthened with debts; a people divided and dejected; a ſovereign negligent of her people's welfare; were circumſtances which, notwithſtanding the fair offers made by Philip, gave them ſmall hopes of recovering Calais. And as the Scots, inſtigated by French councils, began to move on the borders, they were now neceſſitated rather to look to their defence at home, than to think of foreign conqueſts.

Affairs of Scotland.

AFTER the peace, which, in conſequence of King Edward's treaty with Henry, took place between Scotland and England, the Queen-dowager, on pretence of viſiting her daughter and her relations, made a journey to France, and ſhe carried along with her the earls of Huntley, Sutherland, Mariſchal, and many of the principal nobility. Her ſecret deſign was to take meaſures for engaging the earl of Arran to reſign to her the government of the kingdom; and as her

* Thuan. lib. xx. c. 2.

brothers,

brothers, the duke of Guiſe, the cardinal of Lorraine, and the duke d'Aumale, had uncontrouled authority in the court of France, ſhe eaſily perſuaded Henry, and by his means the Scots nobles, to enter into her meaſures. Having alſo gained over Carnegy of Kinnaird, Panter, biſhop of Roſs, and Gavin Hamilton, commendator of Kilwinning, three creatures of the governor's, ſhe perſuaded him, by their means, to conſent to this reſignation †; and when every thing was thus prepared for her purpoſe, ſhe took her journey to Scotland, and paſſed thro' England in her way thither. Edward received her with great reſpect and civility; tho' he could not forbear attempting a renewal of the old treaty for his marriage with her daughter: A marriage, he ſaid, ſo happily calculated for the tranquillity, intereſt, and ſecurity of both kingdoms, and the only means of enſuring a durable peace between them. For his part, he added, he never could entertain a cordial amity for any other huſband whom ſhe ſhould chooſe; nor was it eaſy for him to forgive a man, who, at the ſame time that he diſappointed ſo natural an alliance, had bereaved him of a bride, to whom his affections, from his earlieſt infancy, had been entirely engaged. The Queen eluded theſe applications by telling him, that if any meaſures had been taken diſagreeable to him, they were entirely owing to the imprudence of the duke of Somerſet, who, inſtead of employing courteſy, careſſes, and gentle offices, the proper means of gaining a young princeſs, had had recourſe to arms and violence, and had conſtrained the Scots nobility to ſend their ſovereign into France, in order to intereſt that kingdom in protecting their liberty and independance ‡. Chap. II. 1558.

When the Queen-dowager arrived in Scotland, ſhe found the governor very unwilling to fulfil his engagements; and it was not till after many delays that he could be perſuaded to reſign his authority. But finding that the majority of the young princeſs was approaching, and that the Queen-dowager had gained the affections of all the principal nobility, he thought it more prudent to ſubmit; and having ſtipulated, that he ſhould be declared next heir to the crown, and ſhould be freed from giving any account of his paſt adminiſtration, he placed her in poſſeſſion of the power; and ſhe thenceforth aſſumed the name of regent ‖. It was an uſual ſaying of this princeſs, that provided ſhe could render her friends happy, and could enſure to herſelf a good reputation, ſhe was entirely indifferent what befel her; and tho' this ſentiment is greatly cenſured by the zealous reformers *, as being founded wholly on ſecular motives, it diſcovers a mind well calculated for the adminiſtration of kingdoms. D' Oiſel, a Frenchman, celebrated for capacity, had attended her as ambaſſador from Henry, but in

† Buchanan, lib. xiv. Keith, p. 56. Spotſwood, p. 92. ‡ Keith, p. 59.
‖ 12th April, 1554. * Knox, p. 89.

reality

Chap. II. 1558.

reality to aſſiſt her with his counſels in ſo delicate an undertaking as the government of Scotland; and this man had formed a ſcheme for laying a general tax on the kingdom, in order to ſupport a ſtanding military force, which might at once repulſe the inroads of foreign enemies, and check the turbulence of the Scots nobility. But tho' ſome of the courtiers were gained over to this project, it gave great and general diſcontent to the nation; and the Queen-regent, after ingenuouſly confeſſing, that it would prove pernicious to the kingdom, had the prudence to deſiſt from it, and to truſt entirely for her ſecurity to the good-will and affections of her ſubjects †.

THIS laudable purpoſe ſeemed to be the chief object of her adminiſtration; yet was ſhe ſometimes drawn from it by her connections with France, and by the influence which her brothers had acquired over her. When Mary declared war againſt that kingdom, Henry required the Queen-regent to take part in the quarrel; and ſhe ſummoned a convention of ſtates at Newbottle, and requeſted them to concur in a declaration of war againſt England. The Scots nobles, who were as jealous of French as the Engliſh were of Spaniſh influence, refuſed their aſſent; and the Queen was obliged to have recourſe to artifice, in order to effectuate her purpoſe. She ordered d' Oiſel to begin ſome fortifications at Eymouth, a place which had been diſmantled by the laſt treaty with Edward; and when the garriſon of Berwic, as ſhe foreſaw, made an inroad to prevent the undertaking, ſhe effectually employed this pretence to enflame the Scots nation, and to engage them in hoſtilities againſt England ‡. The enterprize, however, of the Scots proceeded no farther than ſome inroads on the borders; and when d' Oiſel, of himſelf, conducted artillery and troops to beſiege the caſtle of Werke, he was recalled and very ſharply rebuked by the council ‖.

Marriage of the dauphin and the Queen of Scots.

IN order to connect Scotland more cloſely with France, and to increaſe the influence of the latter kingdom, it was thought proper by Henry to complete the marriage between the young Queen and the dauphin; and a deputation was ſent by the Scots Parliament, to aſſiſt at this ceremony, and to ſettle the terms of the contract. This deputation conſiſted of the archbiſhop of Glaſgow, the biſhops of Roſs and the Orkneys, the earls of Rothes, and Caſſilis, the lords Fleming and Seton, James Stuart, prior of St. Andrews, natural brother to the Queen, and Erſkine of Dun. The principal conditions recommended to theſe commiſſioners, was to obtain a ſolemn engagement from the Queen and dauphin, that they would preſerve the laws and privileges of Scotland, and to procure a renewal of the French King's promiſe, to ſupport, in caſe of the Queen's death,

† Keith, p. 70. Buchan. lib. xvi.
‡ Buchan. lib. xvi. Thuan. lib. xix. c. 7.
‖ Knox, p. 93.

the

the ſucceſſion of the earl of Arran, now created duke of Chatelraut. Both theſe conditions were eaſily obtained; but the court of France took a very perfidious ſtep, directly contrary to theſe ſtipulations: They ſecretly engaged the young Queen to ſign three papers; by one of which ſhe made over the kingdom of Scotland in gift to the King of France, in caſe of her deceaſe without children; by another ſhe mortgaged it to him for a million of crowns of gold, or ſuch greater ſum as he ſhould have expended for her maintenance and ſupport; and by a third ſhe declared, that whatever deed ſhe had been obliged, or ſhould hereafter be obliged to perform relative to the ſucceſſion of the crown, ſhould be entirely invalid, and that her real ſenſe and intention was contained in the firſt paper. The marriage was ſolemnized at Paris: The commiſſioners, in the name of the ſtates of Scotland, ſwore allegiance to the Queen, and, during the continuance of the marriage, to the King-dauphin, ſo he was called: And every thing ſeemed to proceed with great unanimity and concord. But the commiſſioners being required to deliver up the crown, and other enſigns of royalty, made anſwer, that they had received no authority for that purpoſe; and they ſoon after ſet out on their journey for Scotland. It is remarkable, that before they embarked, four of the commiſſioners died, within a few days of each other; and a violent, tho' abſurd ſuſpicion prevailed, that they had been poiſoned by orders from the family of Guiſe, on account of this refuſal *. It was not conſidered, that that accident, however rare, might have happened by the courſe of nature; and that the preſent ſeaſon, tho' not attended with any peſtilential diſorder, was, to a remarkable degree, unhealthy all over Europe.

Chap. II. 1558. 24th April.

THE cloſe alliance between France and Scotland threatened very nearly the repoſe and ſecurity of England; and it was foreſeen, that, tho' the factions and diſorders which might naturally be expected in the Scots government during the abſence of their ſovereign, would make its power leſs formidable, that kingdom would at leaſt afford to the French a means of invading England. The Queen, therefore, found it neceſſary to ſummon a Parliament, and to demand of them ſome ſupplies to her exhauſted exchequer. As ſuch an emergency uſually gives great advantage to the people, and as the Parliaments, during this reign, had ſhewn, that, where the liberty and independency of the kingdom were menaced with imminent danger, they were not entirely overawed by the court; we ſhall naturally expect, that the late arbitrary methods of extorting money ſhould, at leaſt, be cenſured, and, perhaps, ſome remedy be for the future provided againſt them. But ſuch an exorbitant prerogative was at this time acknowledged to belong to the crown, that, tho' men might complain of its preſent abuſes, all attempts to retrench it would have been

20th January. A Parliament.

* Buchan. lib. xvi. Keith, p. 75. Spotſwood, p. 95.

Chap. II. 1558. regarded as the moſt criminal enterprize; and as that prerogative involved a large diſcretionary power, any parliamentary enquiry into its exerciſe, would have paſſed for inſolent and preſumptuous. The commons, therefore, without making any reflections on the paſt, voted, beſides a fifteenth, a ſubſidy of four ſhillings in the pound on land, and two ſhillings and eight pence on goods. The clergy granted eight ſhillings in the pound, payable in four years by equal portions.

The Parliament alſo paſſed an act, confirming all the ſales and grants of crown lands, which were either made already by the Queen, or ſhould be made during the ſeven enſuing years. It was eaſy to foreſee, that in the Queen's preſent diſpoſition and ſituation, this power would be followed by a great alienation of the royal demeſnes; and nothing could be more contrary to the principles of good government, than a prince armed with very extenſive authority, and yet reduced to beggary. This act met with oppoſition in the houſe of commons. One Copley expreſſed his fears leſt the Queen, under colour of the power there granted, might alienate the crown from the lawful heir: But his words were thought *irreverent* to her majeſty: He was committed to the cuſtody of the ſerjeant at arms; and tho' he expreſſed ſorrow for his offence, he was not releaſed till the Queen was applied to for his pardon.

The Engliſh nation, during this whole reign, were in continual apprehenſions with regard not only to the ſucceſſion, but the life of the lady Elizabeth. The violent hatred which the Queen bore her, broke out on every occaſion; and it required all the authority of Philip, as well as her own great prudence, to prevent the fatal effects of it. The princeſs retired into the country; and knowing that ſhe was ſurrounded with ſpies, ſhe paſt her time wholly in reading and ſtudy, intermeddled in no buſineſs, and ſaw very little company. While ſhe remained in this ſituation, which was for the preſent very melancholy, but which prepared her mind for thoſe great actions by which her life was afterwards ſo much diſtinguiſhed; propoſals of marriage were made her by the Swediſh ambaſſador, in his maſter's name. As her firſt queſtion was, whether the Queen had been informed of theſe propoſals; the ambaſſador told her, that his maſter thought, as he was a gentleman, it was his duty firſt to make his addreſſes to herſelf; and having obtained her conſent, he would next, as a King, apply to her ſiſter. But the princeſs would allow him to proceed no farther; and the Queen, after thanking her for this inſtance of duty, deſired to know how ſhe ſtood affected to the Swediſh propoſals. Elizabeth, tho' expoſed to many preſent dangers and mortifications, had the magnanimity to reſerve herſelf for better fortune; and ſhe covered her refuſal with profeſſions of a paſſionate attachment to a ſingle life, which, ſhe ſaid, ſhe infinitely

infinitely preferred before any other *. The princeſs ſhowed like prudence in concealing her ſentiments of religion, in complying with the preſent modes of worſhip, and in eluding all queſtions with regard to that delicate ſubject †. Chap. II. 1558.

The money granted by Parliament, enabled the Queen to fit out a fleet of a hundred and forty ſail, which being joined by thirty Flemiſh ſhips, and carrying ſix thouſand land forces on board, was ſent to make an attempt on the coaſt of Brittany. The fleet was commanded by lord Clinton; the land forces by the earls of Huntingdon and Rutland. But the equipment of the fleet and army was ſo dilatory, that the French got intelligence of the deſign, and were prepared to receive them. The Engliſh found Breſt too well guarded to make an attempt on that place; but landing at Conquet, they plundered and burnt the town with ſome adjoining villages, and were proceeding to commit greater diſorders, when Kerſimon, a Breton gentleman, at the head of ſome militia, fell upon them, put them to rout, and drove them to their ſhips with conſiderable loſs. But a ſmall ſquadron of ten Engliſh ſhips, had an opportunity of amply revenging this diſgrace upon the French. The Mareſchal de Thermes, governor of Calais, had made an irruption into Flanders, with an army of fourteen thouſand men; and having forced a paſſage over the river Aa, had taken Dunkirk, and Berg St. Winoc, and had advanced as far as Newport. But count Egmont coming ſuddenly upon him, with ſuperior forces, he was obliged to retire; and being overtaken by the Spaniards near Gravelines, he choſe very ſkilfully his ground for the engagement. He fortified his left-wing with all the precautions poſſible; and poſted his right along the river Aa, which, he reaſonably thought, gave him a full ſecurity from that quarter. But the Engliſh ſhips, which were accidentally on the coaſt, being drawn by the noiſe of the firing, ſailed up the river, and flanking the French,

* Burnet, vol. ii. Collect. N°. 37.

† The common net at that time, ſays Sir Richard Baker, for catching of proteſtants, was the real preſence; and this net was uſed to catch the lady Elizabeth: For being aſked one time what ſhe thought of the words of Chriſt, *This is my body*, whether ſhe thought it the true body of Chriſt that was in the ſacrament; it is ſaid, that, after ſome pauſing, ſhe thus anſwered:

Chriſt was the word that ſpake it;
He took the bread and brake it;
And what the word did make it,
That I believe and take it.

Which, tho' it may ſeem but a ſlight expreſſion, yet hath it more ſolidneſs than at firſt ſight appears; at leaſt it ſerved her turn at that time, to eſcape the net, which by direct anſwer ſhe could not have done. Baker's Chronicle, p. 320.

Chap. II. 1558.

did ſuch execution by their artillery, that they put them to flight; and the Spaniards gained a complete victory ‡.

MEANWHILE the principal army of France, under the duke of Guiſe, and that of Spain, under the duke of Savoy, approached very near each other on the frontiers of Picardy; and as the two Kings had come into their reſpective camps, attended by the flower of their nobility, men expected that ſome great and important event would follow, from the emulation of theſe warlike nations. But Philip, tho' actuated by the ambition, poſſeſſed not the enterprize, of a conqueror; and he was willing, notwithſtanding the ſuperiority of his numbers, and the two great victories which he had gained at St. Quintin and Gravelines, to put a period to the war by a treaty. Negociations were entered into for that purpoſe; and as the terms offered by the two monarchs were ſomewhat wide of each other, the armies were put into winter quarters, till the princes could come to better agreement. Among other conditions, Henry demanded the reſtitution of Navarre to its lawful owner; Philip that of Calais and its territory to England: But in the midſt of theſe negociations and debates, news arrived of the death of Queen Mary; and Philip, no longer connected with England, began to relax in his inſtances on that capital article. This was the only circumſtance which could have made the death of that princeſs a loſs to the kingdom.

MARY had been long in a very declining ſtate of health; and having miſtaken her dropſy for a pregnancy, ſhe had made uſe of an improper regimen, and her malady daily augmented. Every reflection now tormented her: The conſciouſneſs of being hated by her ſubjects, the proſpect of Elizabeth's ſucceſſion, apprehenſions of the danger to which the catholic religion ſtood expoſed, dejection for the loſs of Calais ‖, concern for the ill ſtate of her affairs, and, above all, anxiety for the abſence of her huſband, who, ſhe knew, intended ſoon to depart for Spain, and to ſettle there during the reſt of his life: All theſe melancholy circumſtances preyed upon her mind, and threw her into a lingering fever, of which ſhe died, after a ſhort and unfortunate reign of five years, four months, and eleven days.

Death of the Queen. 17 November.

IT is not neceſſary to employ many words in drawing the character of this princeſs. She poſſeſſed few qualities, either eſtimable or amiable; and her perſon was as little engaging as her behaviour and addreſs. Obſtinacy, bigotry, violence, cruelty, malignity, revenge, tyranny; every circumſtance of her character took a tincture from her bad temper and narrow underſtanding. And

‡ Hollingſhed, p. 1150.

‖ The loſs of Calais ſo much affected her, that ſhe ſaid to her attendants, that when ſhe was dead, they would find Calais at her heart.

amidſt that complication of vices, which entered into her compoſition, we ſhall ſcarce find any virtue but ſincerity; a quality, which ſhe ſeems to have maintained throughout her whole life; except in the beginning of her reign, when the neceſſity of her affairs obliged her to make ſome promiſes to the proteſtants, which ſhe certainly never intended to perform. But in theſe caſes a weak bigotted woman, under the government of prieſts, eaſily finds caſuiſtry ſufficient to juſtify to herſelf the violation of an engagement. She appears alſo, as well as her father, to have been ſuſceptible of ſome attachments of friendſhip; and that without the caprice and inconſtancy which were ſo remarkable in the conduct of that monarch. To which we may add, that, in many circumſtances of her life, ſhe gave indication of reſolution and vigour of mind; a quality, which ſeems to have been inherent in her family. Chap. II. 1558.

CARDINAL Pole had been long in a declining ſtate of health from an intermiting fever; and he died the ſame day with the Queen, about ſixteen hours after her. The benign character of this prelate, the modeſty and humanity of his deportment, made him be univerſally beloved; inſomuch that in a nation, where the moſt furious perſecution was carried on, and the moſt violent religious factions prevailed, entire juſtice, even by moſt of the informers, has been done to his merit. The haughty pontiff, Paul the fourth, had entertained ſome prejudices againſt him; and when England declared war againſt Henry, the ally of that pope, he ſeized the opportunity of revenge, and revoking Pole's legantine commiſſion, appointed in his room cardinal Peyto, an obſervantine friar and confeſſor to the Queen. But Mary would never permit the new legate to exerciſe his power; and Paul was afterwards obliged to reſtore cardinal Pole to his authority.

THERE occur few general remarks, beſides what have been already made in the courſe of our narration, with regard to the general ſtate of the kingdom during this reign. The naval power of England was then ſo inconſiderable, that fourteen thouſand pounds being ordered to be applied to the fleet by the treaſurer and admiral, both for repairing and victualling it, they computed, that, when that money was expended, ten thouſand pounds a year would afterwards anſwer all neceſſary charges *. The arbitrary proceedings of the Queen, abovementioned, joined to many monopolies granted by this princeſs, as well as by her father, checked very much the growth of trade; and ſo much the more, as all other princes in Europe either were not permitted or did not find it neceſſary to act in ſo tyrannical a manner. Acts of Parliament, both in the laſt reign and in the beginning of the preſent, had laid the ſame impoſitions on the merchants of the Steel-yard as on other aliens: Yet the Queen, immediately after her marriage, complied with the

* Burnet, vol. iii. p. 259.

ſollici-

Chap. II. ſollicitations of the emperor, and by her prerogative, ſuſpended theſe acts of Parliament †. No body in that age pretended to queſtion this exerciſe of the prerogative. The hiſtorians are entirely ſilent with regard to it; and it is only by the collection of public papers that it is handed down to us.

An abſurd law had been made in the preceding reign, by which every one was prohibited from making cloth unleſs he had ſerved an apprenticeſhip for ſeven years. This law was repealed in the firſt year of the Queen's reign; and this plain reaſon given, that it had occaſioned the decay of the woolen manufactory, and had ruined ſeveral towns ‡. It is ſtrange that Edward's law ſhould have been revived during the reign of Elizabeth; and ſtill more ſtrange, that it ſhould ſtill ſubſiſt.

A passage to Archangel had been diſcovered by the Engliſh during the laſt reign; and a beneficial trade with Muſcovy had been eſtabliſhed. A ſolemn embaſſy was ſent by the Czar to Queen Mary. The ambaſſadors were ſhipwrecked on the coaſt of Scotland; but being hoſpitably entertained there, they proceeded on their journey, and were received at London with great pomp and ſolemnity *. This ſeems to have been the firſt intercourſe, which that empire had with any of the weſtern potentates of Europe.

A law was paſſed in this reign ‖, by which the number of horſes, arms, and furniture, was fixed, which each perſon, according to the extent of his property, ſhould be provided of for the defence of the kingdom. A man of a thouſand pounds a year, for inſtance, was obliged to maintain at his own charge ſix horſes fit for demi-lances, of which three at leaſt to be furniſhed with ſufficient harneſſes, ſteel ſaddles, and weapons proper for the demi-lances; and ten light horſes, fit for light horſemen, with furniture and weapons requiſite for them: He was alſo obliged to have forty corſlets furniſhed; fifty almain rivets, or inſtead of them, forty coats of plate, corſlets or brigandines furniſhed; forty pikes, thirty long bows, thirty ſheafs of arrows, thirty ſteel capes or ſkulls, twenty black bills or halberts, twenty haquebuts, and twenty morions or ſallets. We may remark, that a man of a thouſand merks of ſtock was rated equal to one of two hundred pounds a year: A proof that few or none at that time lived on their ſtock in money, and that great profits were made by the merchants in the courſe of their trade. There is no claſs above a thouſand pounds a year.

† Rymer, vol. xv. p. 364. ‡ 1 Mar. Parl. 2. cap. 7. * Hollingſhed, p. 732. Heylin, p. 71. ‖ 4 & 5 Phil. & Mar. cap. 2.

The End of the Third Volume.

DA30
H9
1762 v.3
FOLIO

551102